THE HISTORIE, AND LIVES, OF TWENTIE KINGS OF ENGLAND.

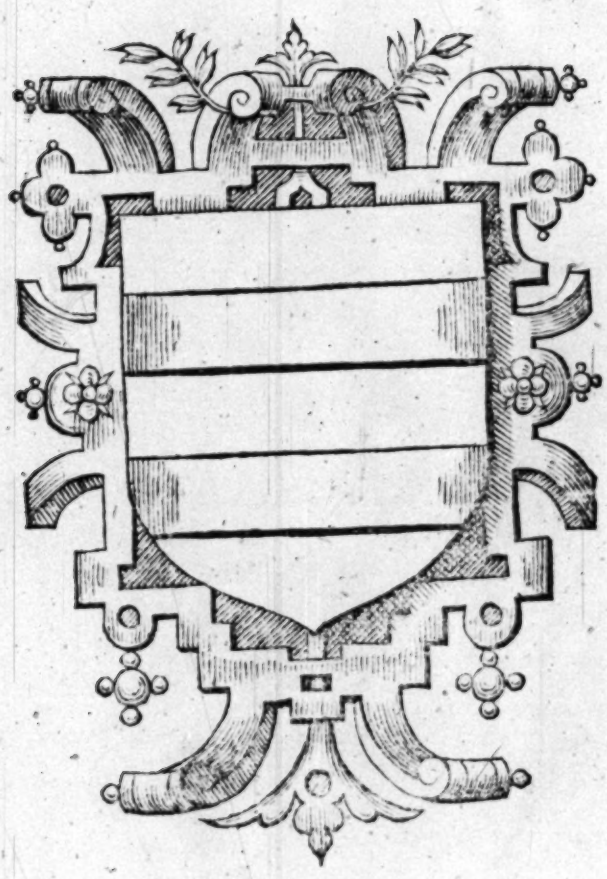
With the Succeſſions of the DVKES, and EARLES, *of this Realme; from the* CONQVEST, vntill the Twelfth yeare of the *Famous Raigne of the moſt Admired Prince* King IAMES the Firſt.

Together with the times of the Creations of the BARONS, and BARONETS, *of this Kingdome.*

By
WILLIAM MARTYN Eſquire, Recorder *of the Honorable Citie of* EXETER.

Fruſtra fit per plura, quod fieri poteſt per pauciora.

LONDON,
Printed by W. STANSBY for *Henrie Fetherſtone.*
1615.



TO THE GALLANT GENTRIE OF ENGLAND.

Worthie Gentlemen, (omitting all elaborated Eloquence, which oftentimes is vsed as a varnish, to couer vnprofitable labours; As cunning Goldsmithes doe enrich their baseſt Siluer, when they Gilt it with their pureſt Gold) I purpoſe to render to you an accompt of two reaſons, which induced me to take this paine, and to publiſh this worke.

1. *It is common among Phiſitions; That though profound Learning, and frequent Experience, haue furniſhed them with abundant skill, in their Honourable profeſſion: yet they doe ſtill*

striue to make their knowledge more perfect, in the discouerie of the imperfections of other mens bodies, then of their owne: In like sort it is the common custome of our times; that many hopefull Gentlemen (whom Nature and Arts haue beautified, with the rich treasures of their bountie) do endeauour to be more exact and refined, in knowing the Religion, Lawes, Gouernment, Maners, Strength, and Sites of forraine Countries, then of that Kingdome wherein themselues were borne.

But as that man is wise in vaine, who is not wise vnto himselfe; So it is a simple grace (nay to speake plainly, it is a foule disgrace) to a Gentleman (especially to such a one, as hath, or doth intend to spend much time abroad to know the fashions of forraine Nations) to be ignorant in the State of his owne Countrie at home. The Historie of which, affordeth as much varietie and profitable instruction, to captiuate the Readers delight in the perusall, as the faireſt Pictures doe contentment, when with their artificiall beauties, they doe allure mens eyes to looke and to gaze vpon them.

To this end therefore, that hencefoorth such worthy Gentlemen as are purposed, in long traueling, to enlarge their experience, by the view of foraine

foraine Countries, may first be furnished with a conuenient knowledge of their owne; I vndertooke this labour, and doe present it vnto you, with this my first reason which induced me thereunto.

2. The second reason of my so doing, springeth out of mine owne conceit; which (as I coniecture) deceiues me not. For, in regard that the Histories of this Kingdome, are frequently interrupted, yea blemished, by too too many interuening Occurrences, and by a multitude of extrauagant Obseruations (which doe much differ from the true Method, and Nature, of a well digested and composed Chronicle; and thereby doe extend it into a needlesse and an vnprofitable length) I am resolued that the Readers capacitie (to obserue and to remember) is much weakned thereby: And that many yong Gentlemen, who doe egerly striue to attaine to much knowledge in a short time, doe rather bend their Studies and their courses, to reade ouer the more narrowly contracted Histories of other Countries, then the voluminous Discourses of their owne.

Wherefore to inlighten their knowledge much, by reading this little; I haue thrust forth into the World this short Historie, of the Raignes, Deeds, and Actions, of twentie of our English Kings; which I will neither praise, least I

wrong

wrong it by mine owne commendation; nor diſpraiſe, leaſt you (beleeuing mee on my word) ſhould thinke your time ill ſpent, to read what I haue written.

I know that ſuch as are worthily deſcended, or who by learning are made worthy, will not only winke at ſome imperfections, becauſe ſome knowledge is to be gained by the reſt: but will alſo take in good part the preſentment of a ſmall gift; if it be deliuered with a friendly hand. To ſuch only, and to none other (which are you) doe I dedicate theſe my labors: Being confidently aſſured, that they cannot want their expected reward, which is nothing, but your kinde acceptance, and graceſull loue.

Fare you well, from my houſe in *Exeter* the twentieth of *Ianuarie*. 1615.

Your louing Friend.

WILLIAM MARTYN.

TO MY MOST DEARE Father WILLIAM MARTYN *Esquire*.

THough my vnpractis'd Muſe might well conceale
Her ſelfe from th'eye-reach of a publique view;
Yet my devoted heart, ſtir'd on with zeale,
And dutie (which are owing both to you)
Feares not the ſpleene of Criticks, but ſhall beare
Their heavieſt cenſures; *True loue ore comes feare.*

I will not ſpeake of your vnwearied paine
In gathring, and diſpoſing: 'tis a treaſure
Well worth the Readers paines, when he may gaine,
With little reading, profit mixt with pleaſure.
Theſe ruder lines, your labors little neede,
To winne the Readers liking: Let him reade.

NICHOLAS MARTYN.

To my moſt loued and deareſt Father WILLIAM MARTYN ESQVIRE.

I Could (deere Sir) haue ſpoke, with farre more eaſe,
In copious Proſe, than in ſtrict Verſe, your praiſe;
But that I knew, your fame would farre out-goe
All *foote-leſſe* Proſe; my Verſe (not full ſo ſlow
Hauing the helpe of *feete*) ſerues thus farre forth,
Though not to Vſher, yet t'attend your worth.
You neede not either, to inlarge your fame;
The Booke it ſelfe doth *Chronicle* the ſame.

WILLIAM MARTYN.

To my moſt dearly loued Father WILLIAM MARTYN *Esquire*.

WHil'ſt others ſend you Lines trickt out with Art,
My Infant yeares ſhall onely ſend mine heart:
Looke for no greater gift, from ſo ſmall ſtore;
He that giues all he has, can giue no more.

EDWARD MARTYN.

TO MY DEARLY HONORD FATHER-IN-Law

WILLIAM MARTYN
Esquire.

A Publique good, muſt quell your priuate feare.
The profit of a Writers induſtrie,
Should be imparted to a generall Eare;
For *good is better'd by communitie.*
Nor may *detraction*, or the injurie
Of ſome mens cenſures, daſh what he doth write:
If, but what only pleaſeth all mens ſight,
No worke ſhould come to light, no worke ſhould come to light.

What though you gather'd haue the ſeuerall flowr's
Of other Bookes, into this Hiſtorie?
Diſtill'd to Spirit by you, they're wholly yours:
So honie, ſuckt from the varietie
Of flowr's, is yet the honie of the Bee.
And though, in theſe dayes, *Miracles* are fled,
Yet this ſhall of your *Chronicle* be read,
It brings back Time that's paſt, and giues life to the Dead.

Peter Beuys.

THE SVMMARIES OR ABBREVIATES, OF THE RAIGNES OF THE twentie Kings, mentioned (more largely) in this Diſcourſe.

King WILLIAM the Conqueror.

AFTER *the death of King* Edward, Harold *(contrarie to his promiſe & oath) refuſeth to giue the poſſeſsion of the Crowne and kingdome of England to* William, *the ſeuenth Duke of the Normans: Wherefore (to preuent the effuſion of much bloud) the Duke challenged him to a ſingle combate, which hee refuſed: whereupon the Duke landeth, and (being aſsiſted by the Natiues of this Countrie) he obtayneth the victorie,* and claymed this Crowne by conqueſt.* Pag. 2.

He is in danger, as he trauelleth towards Douer, and makes his peace. 3.

His policies to ſuppreſſe the Engliſh Nation, and his cruelties towards them. 3, 4, 5, 6.

He taxeth them beyond meaſure: they rebell twice, and are twice ſubdued. 6.

He plucks downe Churches, Religious houſes, and Townes, (for his pleaſure in hunting) to make the New Foreſt; and enacteth tyrannicall Lawes for the preſeruing of his Game. 5.

His eldeſt ſonne Robert Curthois *rebelleth, and puts him to the worſt in Normandie, but is reconciled.* 7.

He warreth in France ſucceſſefully. 7.

He falleth ſick, and repenteth of his crueltie to the Engliſh Nation, and dyeth, but his body can hardly obtayne a place to bee buried in. pag. 8.

* 1066.

The Contents.

King WILLIAM RVFVS.

His cruelties to the Engliſh Nation. 10.

Hee flattereth them in his diſtreſſe; but requiteth them vnthankfully, when his turne is ſerued. 10, 11.

The Welſhmen doe rebel. 11, 12.

His valour. 13.

Hee pilleth and pooleth the Church. 14, 15.

He yeeldeth, when the Pope peremptorily commandeth. 15.

He is fortunate in his warres in Normandie. 15.

In the New-Foreſt, which his Father had made, by the ruine of many Churches, Religious houſes, and Townes. 5.

Hee was ſlaine, being miſtaken for a Deere, as he hunted. 16.

King HENRY the Firſt.

His policies and Lawes. 18.

He yeeldeth to the Pope, and reſtoreth Church liuings, dignities, and liberties; not for conſcience ſake, but becauſe Robert his eldeſt brother, troubled him for his Crowne. 18.

He inuadeth Normandie, and preuaileth; and plucketh out his brothers eyes. 20, 21.

Hee curbeth and ranſacketh the Church & Church-men, and makes them pay for enioying of wiues, whether they haue wiues or no. 20.

Anſelme and Thurſtone appeale againſt him to the Pope, and he yeeldeth. 20, 23.

He is patient and very thankefull. 24.

He is laſciuious, he ſurfetteth, and then dyeth. 24.

King STEPHEN.

Hee vſurpeth the Right of Mawld the Empreſſe, and breaketh his oath. 27.

He is very liberall. 28.

He refuſeth and releaſeth the paiment of Dane-gilt, and of all other taxes: he honoreth the Clergie, and giues vnto them large reſtitution, and exempteth all Clergie men from the authoritie of the Temporall Magiſtrate. 28.

Mawld the Empreſſe inuadeth and taketh him priſoner: he is enlarged for the Duke of Gloceſter.

The Empreſſe is beſieged in Oxford, and eſcapeth by a policie in the ſnow. 29.

He

He is againe inuaded by Henrie Short-Mantell, *the Sonne of* Mawld *the Empresse : Prince* Eustace *his sonne is drowned. They two compound, and King* Stephen *dyeth.* 30,31.

King HENRY the Second.

His great courage. 34.
He refineth the Lawes, and deuiseth the Circuits, in which Nisi prius, *and other law causes are decided.* 34.
He destroyeth Castles to preuent Rebellions. 35.
He reseiseth things giuen by his Predecessors. 35.
He exerciseth his people in martiall Discipline in times of Peace. 35.
Hee Conquereth Ireland. 36. 1174.
His children are rebellious, and punished by God. 36.
His Riches. 37.
His amorous affections to Rosamond. 37.
He is vexed by Thomas Becket, *who is slaine.* 37.
He is accursed. 40.
He doth Penance : He is whipt; And dyeth. 42.

King RICHARD the First.

For his valour, hee is termed Cuer de Lyon. 44.
His pitty and compassion to his Mother, and to distressed prisoners. 44.
His bountie. 45.
Hee warreth gloriously in the holy Land. 45.
He winneth Cyprus twice. pag. 46,47.
Iarres arise betwixt him, and the French King, and Leopold *Archduke of Austria, wherupon they depart, and doe leaue him.* 46,47.
He is stiled King of Ierusalem 47.
By swimming he saueth his life, but is taken Prisoner : Ransometh himselfe, and returneth into Normandie from the holy Land : Hee warreth successefully against the French King in his owne Country, and returneth into England, 48.
To pay his Ransome, and to relieue his wants, he ransacketh Religious houses, and reseiseth such things as formerly he sold to get mony. 49.
He besiegeth the Castle of Chalons, and is reuengefully wounded to death : He taketh the Castle, Pardons the offendor, slaies all the rest, and then he dyeth. 49.

The Contents.

King IOHN.

PHILIP *the French King raiſeth againſt him* Arthur Plantagenet, *who demãds the crown.* 51

The King goeth twice into Normandie, and puts the Frenchmen to flight. 52,53.

He looſeth Normandie. 53.

1202. *His quarrell and vnſpeakeable troubles with the Pope.* 53.

Hee forbiddeth all appeales to Rome. 54.

Foure of his owne Biſhops doe interdict him, and he ſeiſeth vpon their lands, and goods: Hee is accurſed, and his kingdome is by the Pope giuen to Philip *the French King: He taketh an Oath of Allegeance of his Subiects. He inuadeth the Scots, and they doe ſubmit themſelues.* 55, 56.

Philip *of France prouideth to inuade him, but looſeth three hundred ſhips.* 56.

King Iohn *(without the knowledge of his Nobilitie or Counſell) ſubmitteth himſelfe on his knees to* Pandulphus, *the Popes Legate, and reſigneth to him (to the Popes vſe) his Kingdom and his Crown, and after a few daies receiues it as a gift.* 56.

His people doe deſpiſe and forſake him. 57.

Lewys *the Dolphin (in his Fathers Right, by reaſon of the Popes donation) inuadeth England. The Pope accurſeth him, and his father, and protecteth King* Iohn, *and his kingdome: Hee alſo accurſeth ſuch of the Nobilitie of England, as ſided with the French, by reaſon whereof the Commons robbe, rifle, and forage, both their goods and lands. Miſerie makes them to ſubmit themſelues.* 57.

The Dolphin is expelled. 58.

The King hath peace, and is poiſoned by a Monke. 59.

King HENRY the third.

LEWYS *the Dolphin diſturbs him in England: The French attempt to inuade, but are ouerthrowne at Sea.* 63.

They are accurſed, abſolued, and doe leaue this kingdome: The king reſtoreth the ancient Lawes. 63.

He warreth in Angeou, and elſewhere. 63.

And concludeth a Truce. 64.

His Barons and he doe iarre, but are reconciled. 64.

The league with France is broken. 64.

King Henrie *hath the worſt in the new warres.* 65, 66.

Hee warreth with his Barons. 66.

Inſanum Parliamentum. 66.

The commiſsion of the twelue Peeres. 66.

They exerciſe their Authoritie. 67.

It

The Contents.

It is confirmed, wherefore the King ſayleth into France. 67.

* *He releaſeth his Title and his Right in Normandie, and is confirmed Duke of Guyan.* 68.

He procureth two Bulls from the Pope: The Lord chiefe Iuſtice is diſplaced. 68.

He publiſheth the Popes Bulls againſt the twelue Peeres; and the Londoners take an Oath to aſſiſt him. 69.

The Barons raiſe an Armie, and doe write vnto the King, and he anſwereth them. 69.

The Barons Armie is ioyfully receaued into London. 70.

The controuerſie is referred to the French King, who is accuſed to be partiall. 70, 71.

The Barons fight with the Prince, and do ouerthrew him. 71.

Richard *King of the Romans (being wronged) is angrie.* 71.

* *The bataile of* Lewis, *in which the Barons tooke the two Kings, and Prince* Edward *priſoners, and more then twentie thouſand men were ſlaine.* 73.

An agreement is made, and the Prince is one of the Hoſtages: The commiſsion giuen to the 12. *Peeres is confirmed, and the Hoſtages are enlarged.* 73. *1258.

A diſcord betwixt the Earles of Leiceſter and Gloceſter. 73.

Occaſioned the ouerthrow of the Barons in the battaile of Euerſham 74.

** *The Barons are executed.* 74. ** 1263.

The Commiſsion of the twelue Peeres, is by Parliament diſſolued. And the King (for reuenge) reſolued to haue burnt the Citie of London. 74.

But it is redeemed by ſute, and by money. 75.

The Earle of Gloceſter, with the baſe off-skome of London, do much miſchiefe. But by the Prince his entreatie all is pardoned. 76.

The Earle of Gloceſter is by the King furniſhed to goe a warfare in the holy land. Hee giues it ouer: *1262. *And Prince* Edward *vndertaketh it: he is trecherouſly wounded, but recouereth: The King dyeth; and he returneth with much honor into England.* 77.

King EDWARD the Firſt.

THe *French King feareth his valour, and therefore inuiteth* Lluellen *to rebell againſt him in Wales.* 79.

By promiſes, that hee ſhall marie with the Ladie Eleanor, *the baniſhed daughter of the baniſhed Earle of Leiceſter; who for ſuccour was his gueſt.* 80.

The King taketh her in her paſſage towards Wales: the King marcheth towards Lluellens *Armie, He ſubmitteth himſelfe, ſweareth to be loyall, and is wiued.* 80.

He rebelleth againe, and he and his brother are both beheaded. 81.

King Edward *is choſen (as ſoueraigne Lord) to decide the controuerſie and debate, touching the Right to the Crowne of Scotland, which many Competitors do ſtriue for.* 81.

1296. *That Kingdome is ſurrendred into his hand: and he decides the doubt, and conferres the Kingdom vpon* Iohn Bayliol. 83.

Hee ſtrippeth the Church and Church-men, and is diſliked of them, eſpecially for enacting of the Statute againſt Mortmaine. 82.

Iohn Bayliol *(being vngratefull) inuadeth England. But King* Edward *winnes from him the Caſtle and Towne of Barwike, and ſlayeth* 25000 *of his Men.* 83.

He ſurrendreth Scotland, and King Edward *gouernes it by a Lieutenant, and placeth all Officers of ſtate therein.* 84.

The Scots rebell againe, and are ſubdued. 84.

They rebell once more: Thirtie and two thouſand of them are ſlaine. 85.

They doe homage and fealtie to King Edward. 85.

Iohn Bayliol *(at the Popes requeſt) is ſet at libertie: his ſubiects doe againe rebell againſt England: The King entreth into Scotland, and the Caſtle of Eaſtervlnie (in which the Scottiſh Nobilitie, for their ſafeguard incloſed themſelues) being ſummoned, is yeelded to King* Edward. 85.

Hee ſweareth them to his obedience, and (for a monument of his victories) he bringeth from thēce the Chaire in which their Kings were vſually Crowned. 86.

Hee enquireth of the extortions done by his Officers, and correcteth them. 86.

Prince Edward *is committed to priſon, and his vnthriftie Companion* Pierce Gaueſton, *is baniſhed.* 86.

Wales and Cornwall are giuen to the Prince. 86.

The Pope claymeth the ſoueraigntie of Scotland, but King Edward *reiecteth and ſcorneth his claime.* Robert le Bruze *vſurpeth in Scotland, ſo that King* Edward, *the fourth time, goeth in his owne perſon into Scotland. The Vſurper flyeth into Norway, and King* Edward *dyeth.* 86, 87.

King Edward the Second.

He *breakes his Oath, and recals* Gaueſton. *Hee doateth on* Gaueſton: *Makes him Earle of Cornwall, and hee doth all in all: whereat the Nobles are diſpleaſed.* 89, 90.

The King (through Gaueſtons *wicked counſell) liueth lewdly, and forſaketh the Companie of the Queene.* 90.

Gaueſton

The Contents.

Gaueſton *hath the cuſtodie of the Kings Iewels, and conueies many of them into* Ireland. 90

The people murmur at Gaueſtons *authoritie and wicked courſes. The King reiects good counſell. Yet at laſt* Gaueſton *is baniſhed into* Ireland. *The King comforts him, and ſends him money and Iewels.* 91

The King is ſo ſad for his departure, that at the requeſt of the Nobilitie (in hope of amendment) he is recalled. 92

By reaſon of his inſolencie hee is againe baniſhed into Flanders, *but is recalled, and waxeth more ſcornefull then he was before.* 92

The Lords (deſpairing of redreſſe) doe ſtrike off his head. 92

The King (to deſpight his Nobilitie) entertaineth the two Spencers, *who are worſe then* Gaueſton, *and doe perſwade him to more leaud and vngratious courſes.* 92

The King and his Nobles doe not agree. Robert le Bruze *(taking aduantage by the Kings euill gouernment) vſurpeth in* Scotland. *He is againe crowned King, and ouerthroweth king* Edward. 93

Iohn Poydras *is diſcouered to be a counterfet, and is put to death.* 93

Barwike *is betraied to the* Scots. 93

The Scots *do ouerthrow King* Edward *the ſecond time.* 94

The King (being intreated) will not put the Spencers *from him.* 94

The Nobles in Parliament doe ſtand on their Guard. 95

The Spencers *are baniſhed for euer.* 95

The Nobles complaine for the younger Spencers *Piracies: but the King maketh ſport at it, and recals them from their exile. They ſcorne the Barons, who fight, but are ouerthrowen.* 96

Twentie and two Barons are beheaded. 97

The elder Spencer *is made Earle of* Winchеſter: *and Sir* Andrew Harkley *(by whoſe principall ſeruice the Barons were ouerthrowen, and who was made Earle of* Carlile) *conſorting with the* Scots, *who had almoſt taken the King, and enforced him to flie, loſt his head.* 98

The Queene (being oppreſſed by the Spencers) *goeth into* France, *and carrieth the Prince with her. Shee is well entertained by the* French *King her brother. But he is bribed by the* Spencers, *and ſo is the Pope, who conſpire her deliuerie to King* Edward. *And ſhee with her ſonne doe flie into* Arthoys. 99

The Queene and Prince doe land in England. The Nobles repaire to her with an Armie, and the King is ſtrangely taken priſoner. The Earles of Arundel *and* Winchеſter *are beheaded.* 100

And Hugh Spencer, *the younger, being carried to* London, *is diſgraced, and cruelly executed as a Traitor.* 100

The King is committed, depoſed,

The Contents.

ſed, his ſonne is crowned and the old King is murdered by the practiſe of Sir Roger Mortimer, *who was too familiar with the Queene. For which offence ſhee was honourably impriſoned thirtie yeares and more before ſhee died.* 105

King EDVVARD the third.

HE *goeth with an Armie into* Scotland, *to correct them for their inſolencie in his fathers daies. The Natiues flie into the woods, and the King returneth.* 103

Hee concludeth a diſhonourable peace with Scotland, *by the counſell of Sir* Roger Mortimer, *whom he createth Earle of* March, *and marieth his ſiſter* Iane *to the King of* Scots *ſonne named* Dauid. *He releaſeth the Tenure, Soueraigntie, homage, and the fealtie of* Scotland, *and deliuereth vp the great Charter called* Ragman, *which teſtified their tenure of the Kings of* England. 104

1326. *The Earle of* March *procureth the Kings vncle the Earle of* Kent *to be beheaded, and is himſelfe executed as a Traitor.* 104.105

* 1339. *The King and the* French *King doe iarre about the Kings homage for the Duchie of* Guyan. 105

The Kings title to the Kingdome of France *was now firſt broached.* 105

He recouereth Barwicke *from the* Scots, *and maketh* Edward Bayliol *King.* 106

In his owne perſon he ſettleth the gouernment of Scotland. 106

The King ſeekes aid of forraine Princes for his French *wars.* 107

And is (by fauour) made Vicar Generall of the Empire, and is thereby enabled to winne Iaques Dartuell, *with the* Flemings, *and the Princes of* Germanie, *to ioine with him.* 108

He filleth his coffers. 108

The French *King ſtaieth his Armie from going to the* Holy Land, *to fight with* England. 108

King Edward *tranſporteth his Armie into* Flanders, *and ioining with his conſorts, he marcheth into* France *with* 27000. *men. The* French *King takes the field.* 108

Iane *Counteſſe of* Henault *(mother to the Queene of* England, *and ſiſter to the* French *King) parts the fray without blowes.* 109

* *King* Edward *quartereth the Armes of* France, *and coines his money with the like ſtampe.* 109

Hee taxeth his people, and borroweth much money. 109

As hee paſſed towards Sluce *with his Armie, hee met with and ouerthrew the* French *Naute.* 110

Hee with his aſſociates doe beſiege Tournay. *But the ſaide Counteſſe*

The Contents.

Counteſſe procures a Truce. 111

The Scots *doe rebell. The King marcheth againſt them. A truce is made, but they doe breake it. They doe inuade, and burne* Durham. 111

The valiant exploit of Sir William Montague. *The Caſtle of* Ronsborough *is beſieged. The King marcheth againſt the* Scots, *and they flie.* 112

He concludes a truce with them. Hee returnes, proclaimes a Feaſt, and martiall exerciſes and ſports. 113

Subſidies are granted, but Commiſſioners are made to receiue and to imploy it. 114

* *Hee deuiſeth the noble Order of the Garter.* 114

Iaques Dartuell *is murdered becauſe hee would haue diſherited the Earle of* Flanders *to preferre the Blacke Prince.* 114

By his death King Edward *loſt the* Flemiſh *aide. But hee is the more reſolued in his attempts.* 116

The French *King beſiegeth* Aguilon *with* 100000. *men. The King takes* Harflew, Louiers, Cane, *and many other things, and harroweth and burneth in* Normandie *at his pleaſure.* 117

He paſſeth with his Armie ouer the Riuer of Some. 118

The battaile of Creſſey. 119

* *The numbers of ſlaine men and priſoners.* 121

King Edward *beſiegeth* Calice *and the* French *K. with* 200000. *men could not releeue it. The King winnes it, and peopleth it with his owne Nation.* 123 — 1346.

The Scots *inuade* England *in the Kings abſence, and King* Dauid *is taken priſoner.* 123

The King himſelfe ſurpriſeth the Frenchmen, *who came to receiue* Calice. 124

The Calicians *take* Guyens. 125

The Blacke Prince winneth the battaile of Poyters, *and brings King* Iohn *and his younger ſonne priſoners into* England. 126 — 1355.

The whole Engliſh *Armie is made rich.* 128 — *1344.

The Dolphin *allowes not his fathers agreements with King* Edward. 128

Hee is enforced to craue peace, which is granted vpon conditions. 129

The King relinquiſheth the French *title and right.* 129 — 1359.

A taxe leuied by the Blacke Prince, and the not paying of his Souldiers, occaſioned his great loſſes in Guyan, Aquitaine, *&c.* 130.131

Whereto ciuill diſſention muſt be added. 132

The Earle of Pembroke *is taken at Sea.* 132

The Kings euill Officers. 133

The Blacke Prince dieth. 134 — *1345.

The King dieth. 134

King

King RICHARD the second.

THe ſummarie of his euill gouernment. 135
Wat Tilars *Rebellion.* 137
Their inſolencie and madneſſe. 137
Their entertainment in London. 138
They doe burne, riſle, and commit Sacriledge. 138
Their behauiour at the Tower, and at Mile-end-greene. 139
Their Captaine is ſlaine. They prepare for reuenge, but doe flie. 140.141
Fifteene hundred of them are executed. 141
The Kings euill Counſellors. 142
Fifteenes in a Parliament are denied. 142
The Lower Houſe will depart except the King in perſon will come to them. 142
Michael de la Pole *is diſplaced from his Chancellorſhip.* 144
Commiſſioners are appointed to order the Kings Officers, and the King ſweareth to obſerue it. 144
The Commiſſioners are reputed to be Traitors. 145
The Scots and French doe make a bad voyage into Wales, and in the meane time the King with 68000. *men ſpoileth Scotland.* 145
The Frenchmen well rewarded by the Scots. 145
The French King prepares an Armie of 1200. *Ships to inuade and to conquer England, and King* Richard *makes incredible preparations to confront him.* 146
The French Armie vaniſheth, and comes to nought. 147
The petition of the Nobilitie is denied by the King. Wherefore they doe raiſe an Armie. 147
The King cannot get an Armie out of London. 148
On the Kings faire promiſes, the Armie is diſmiſſed. Hee performes nothing: ſo that a new Armie is leuied, and receiued into London. 149
The Duke of Ireland flieth, is ſlaine by a Bore, and is buried like a King. 149
The Kings fiue euill Counſellors and ſome Iudges are condemned as Traitors. 149
Iohn of Gaunts *iourney, valour, and fortunate ſucceſſe in Spaine.* 150
The King marieth the French Kings ſiſter, and deliuers vp Breſt, for which his Vncle the Duke of Gloceſter reproueth him: but his death is plotted, and hee is murdered. 151
The flattering Speaker of the Parliament groſly deifieth the King. 151
A ſtrange Commiſſion. 152
The King (in his vanitie) will be ſtiled Prince of Cheſhire. 152
The Duke of Norfolke vntruly informeth the King againſt his coſen Henrie Bollingbroke *Duke of Hartford, for which hee is challen-*

The Contents.

lenged to a ſingle combat. 153.154
They are both baniſhed. 154
Iohn of Gaunt *dieth, and his ſon* Henrie Bollingbroke *(now Duke of Lancaſter) in the Kings abſence in Ireland, landeth in England, and raiſeth an Armie. The King returneth, and leuieth his forces.* 155
But his people daily ſhrinke and ſteale away from him : by meanes whereof he ſubmitteth himſelfe to the Duke. 155
Articles are propoſed againſt him for his euill gouernment, which are by him confeſſed vnder his hand in the Parliament. Hee reſigneth his Kingdome, and is depoſed. Henrie of Bollingbroke *is crowned King. And King* Richard *(valiantly reſiſting) is wickedly murdered.* 160

King HENRY the Fourth.

IOHN *Biſhop of Carlile ſtoutly reproueth King* Henries *doing openly in the Parliament houſe.* 163
The Crowne is entailed. 164
Treaſon at Oxford. 164
The Traitors flie, and are executed. 165
Owen Glendor *rebelleth.* 166
And taketh Roger Mortimer *(the right full heire apparant to the Crowne) priſoner, and the King refuſeth to ranſome him.* 166
The Scots rebelling, are ouerthrowen by Henrie Hotſpurre, *who will not deliuer his priſoners to the King.* 167.168
The Frenchmen doe aide the Welſh Rebels in ſhew, but doe flie to their ſhips when the King commeth. 167.168
The Percies *doe ranſome* Roger Mortimer, *and ioining with* Owen Glendor, *they intend to make him King.* 169
They leuie an Armie, and doe publiſh Articles againſt K. Henry. *The Scots doe aide them, but are all ouerthrowen. And in that battaile the King himſelfe ſlew ſix and thirtie men.* 171 1401.
Dowglas *is enlarged without ranſome.* 171
Glendor *is forſaken of his companions, and is famiſhed in the woods.* 172
The Duke of Orleance his challenge is ſtoutly refuſed by King Henrie. 172
And diſgraced. 173
The Duke of Britaine is commanded by the French King to abandon the ſiege of Calice. 173
Diuers Lords doe practiſe a Treaſon, which is diſcouered, and moſt of them are put to death. 173
The King warreth againe proſperouſly in Scotland. 173
Hee was in danger to bee taken on the Thames by French Pirates. 174
Sir Ralphe Roksbie, *Sheriffe of*

of Northumberland, valiantly ouerthrew the Northerne Rebels, and chopt off their heads before the Kings comming thither. 174
He createth his younger sonnes Dukes, and prepareth to warre in the Holy Land, but falleth dangerously sicke. 174
His speech to the Prince his son when he seised on the Crowne. 174
He dieth. 175

King HENRY the Fifth.

THis King was vnmeasurably wilde in his fathers daies, and was imprisoned and disgraced for striking the Lord Chiefe Iustice on the eare. 177
But being King, he enriched his loose companions, but banished them perpetually from his Court. 177
He chose the graueſt, wiſeſt, and beſt experienced men to be of his Counsell of Estate. 177
* 1414. Hee reformeth the Clergie, and the Lay people, and erecteth Castles to curbe the Scots. 178
A motion was made in Parliament to dissolue religious houses. But the Clergie reuiuing the kings title to the kingdome of France, and being bountifully liberall, doe turne the streame into that channell. 178
The King demandeth that Crowne, but is scoffed by the Dolphin, whom he girdeth by a replie. 179
The King leuieth an Armie. The French King desireth peace. The King yeeldeth on certaine conditions, which are denied. 180
The Queene is made Regent. And as the King is ready to depart, his destruction is conspired. But the Treacherie was reuealed, and the Traitors were put to death 180
The King landeth in Normandie, and taketh Harflew. His Armie (being but 15000. men) falleth sicke, and is oppressed with many wants. Yet the King resolueth to march by land vnto Calice. 181
* He winneth the most famous and the most memorable Battaile of Agencourt. 182
The French prisoners were (vnwillingly, yet miserably) slaine. 185
He giueth God publike thankes. 186
And returneth into England with his great prisoners. 186. 187
The new Constable of France is ouerthrowen. 187
The French doe besiege Harflew, and their Nauie of 500. ships is ouerthrowen. And Iohn Duke of Bedford raiseth the siege. 188
Ciuill dissention among the French Nobilitie doth further the successe of K. Henries wars. 189

Great

The Contents.

Great ſummes of money, are cheerfully giuen to the King, to maintayne his inuaſion. 189

Nine Carricks of Genoa, and Tonque, and Cane, are taken by the Engliſh. 191

Moſt Townes in Normandie doe become Engliſh. 192

Roan is beſieged by the king. 192

A proud Roaniſt dareth him; he replies, and takes the Citie. 197

The French Nobles are outwardly reconciled, but not in heart. 198

* *Normandie is wonne by King* Henrie. 198

He marieth the Lady Katherine *ſiſter to the French King; and is made Regent of France,*[a] *& is proclaymed Heire apparant to that Crowne.* 199,200,201,202, 203,204.

The Kings brother the Duke of Clarence, Regent of Normandie, and France,[b] *is betraied, and ſlaine in the battaile of Blangy.* 205,206 — b 1420

The Earle of Mortaigne ſucceedeth in his charge. 207

The King warreth againe in France. 207

The Dolphin raiſeth his ſiege from Chartiers, and flyeth fearefully from place to place. 208

The King falleth grieuouſly ſick, exhorteth his Nobles to vnitie, and concord; and to bee eſpecially carefull to retain the friendſhip and loue of Philip, *Duke of Burgoine.* 209 — * 1416

Hee commends vnto them his yong Infant, and their King; Directs them for their proceedings in France: and then dieth. — 1419

King Henry the Sixth.

France contemneth the infancie of King Henry. 211

Iohn *Duke of Bedford is made Regent of France; and* Humfrey, *Duke of Gloceſter, is made Protector of the Kings perſon, and of the Realme of England.* 212

The Regent winneth Townes daily. 212

The Pariſians are trecherous. 213

* *The battaile of Vernoile.* 215 — * 1424

The Earle of Salisburies valour and name is feared. 216

A ſtrange ouerthrow of the French. 216

They doe bragge and runne away. 217 — 1427

Townes and victories are daily wonne by the Engliſh. 218,219

Orleance is beſieged, and offered to Philip, *Duke of Burgoine; but the Regent will not conſent thereto, and for that cauſe the ſaid Duke reuolteth to the French King.* 221

The battaile of Herings. 221

The ſiege of Orleance is abandoned. 222

The Duke of Alanſon *ouerthroweth the Engliſh; ſlayeth the Earle of Salisbury; and taketh priſoners, the Earle of Suffolke, and the*

The Contents.

the Lords Talbot, Scales, and Hungerford, and many others. 222

Charles causeth himselfe to bee crowned King of France, and is sommoned to a battaile by the Regent: hee flyeth cowardly; and is hunted from place to place, but all in vaine. 223

Diuers Nobles of France doe revolt from King Henrie. 224

The French King assaults Paris, and is well beaten. 224

The Parisians doe flatter, but are trecherous. 225

* 1466 1431 King Henrie is crowned King of France in Paris. 225

England is wondred at for her puissance. 225

Treason discouered. 226

A Rebellion in Normandie. 226

The noble Regent dieth. 228

And from the time of his death, the English gaine little, but doe loose much both in Normandie, and in France. Richard, Duke of Yorke, is made Regent. 229

1435 Paris reuolteth. 229

Calice is besieged by the Duke of Burgoine. 229

But he flyeth in the night. 230

The Earle of Warwick is made Regent. 231

The French King flyeth in the night. 233

Ponthois is taken by the English 234

A parley for peace: 234

The Articles proposed, are disliked. 235

A cruell Armie, and a huge on the French part. 235

Much is gotten daily, and much is daily lost beyond the Seas. 235

A truce with France for eighteene moneths. 237

An vnworthy marriage concluded for the King, by the Duke of Suffolke, without Commission. 237

Which was the Dukes ouerthrow 246

He will haue his Acts and Counsels registred in Parliament. 238

The cause of the losses of France, * Normandie, Aquitaine, &c. 238

The descriptions of the King and Queene. 239

The good Duke of Gloceſter is remoued by the Queen from the Protectorship, and is murdered. 240

The French wars are neglected, and the Truce is broken on both parts. 240

Townes are lost, Roan yeeldeth to the French King. 241

The English are ouerthrowne in field. 242

Cane is yeelded to the French King. 243

The Duke of Suffolke is accused of treason, and banished. 244

But is taken at Sea and beheaded. 246

The policies of the Duke of York, to attaine vnto the Crowne. Iack Cade the Rebell flyeth, and is proscribed and slaine. 247

A pacification, but fained, betwixt the King, and the Duke of Yorke. 248

The Duke is accused, & imprisoned for treason, but is enlarged. 248

Guyan

Guyan and Aquitaine are yeelded to King Henrie, *but are regained by the French.* 249

The warres betwixt the King, and the Yorkists. 249

The King is ouerthrowne, and taken prisoner in the battaile of * S. Albons, *and in Parliament the Duke of Yorke is made Protector.* 250

Marchant strangers are rifled in London. 251

A policie against the Yorkists, but it is discouered. 252

The King labours for peace; but each part dissembleth. 252

New Armies are raised. 254

The Lords doe flie in the night, and are proclaimed traitors. 255

The Kings ships, twice taken out of Sandwich by Iohn Dynham, *and the Yorkists.* 256

The battaile of a *Northampton, in which the Queen is ouerthrown, and the King is taken prisoner.* 257

The Duke of Yorks proceedings in Parliament against King Henrie. 258

The Crowne is setled by Parliament. The Scots ouerthrow, and doe slay the Duke of Yorke in the b *battaile of Wakefield.* 259

The yong Duke of York winneth the field of Queene Margaret. 260

He is by the Queen ouerthrown, and the King is enlarged. 260

The Dukes newe Armie consisting of 49000. *men: the Queens new Armie consisting of* 60000. *men. The* c *Queene is ouerthrown in the battaile of Towton.* 260

The King to winne fauour with the king of Scots, deliuereth to him the Castle, and the Towne of Barwike: and the Duke of Yorke is crowned King. 261.

* 1454
b 1460
c 1460
a 1459

King EDWARD the Fourth.

IN Parliament hee repealeth all former Acts which attainted him, and his friends, of high treason. 263

He is troubled by wars, raised against him by Queene Margaret, *in which he preuaileth.* 265

He taketh especiall * *care for the Common-weale.* 266

King Henrie *is taken prisoner.* 266

The Earle of Warwick becomes his Enimie, because he wronged him, in the choice of his wife. 267

George, *Duke of Clarence, taketh part with Warwick against his brother King* Edward. 268

The a *Yorkshire-men doe rebell.* 269

King Edward *is taken prisoner and escapeth.* 271

The discommodities of Warre. 272

A new b *Rebellion, in which the Rebells were ouerthrowne.* 273

Warwick and Clarence flie to Calice,

a 1467
* 1462
b 1468

The Contents.

lice, and finde bad entertainment. 274

Prince Edward (sonne to King Henrie the sixth) marieth the second daughter of the Earle of Warwick. 275

Clarence (secretly) revolteth to King Edward his brother. 275

Warwick landeth in England, where his forces doe so encrease, that king Edward flieth, 277

King Henrie is enlarged, and by Parliament, the crowne is intailed to him. 277

King Edward landeth in England, and breaketh his oath, made to the citizens of Yorke. 278

Hee, and his Armie are ioyfully receiued into the citie of London. 280

1470 Hee triumpheth victoriously at Barnet field. 280

The Queene Margaret leuieth another Armie, and is ouerthrown in the battaile of Tewkesbury. 282

1470 King Henrie (being murdered) is brought open faced into S. Pauls Church. 283

King Edward hath new wars in France; and the Duke of Burgoine breaks promise with him. 285

A peace for nine yeares is concluded, for which the Duke of Burgoine is angrie with the King, who cares not for it. 286

The bountie of the French King to the Englisb Armie. 288

Henrie Earle of Richmond is by the Duke of Brittaine deliuered to King Edwards Ambassadours: but Peter Landoys freeth him. 289

The Duke of Clarence (being a prisoner) is murdered. 290

King Edward changeth the forme of his gouernment; and (by executing of penall statutes) he enricheth himselfe, but looseth his peoples loue. 290

He hath new warres with Scotland, but (on certaine conditions) he grants him peace. 291

The French King breaks all his Articles, annexed to the last concluded peace; wherefore King Edward leuieth a new Armie, but falleth sick, and dyeth. 292

The Description of King Edward. 297

King Edward the Fifth.

HE was a child when his father dyed. 297

His Vncle, Richard, Duke of Gloceſter, aimeth to haue his crown. 299

He practizeth mischiefe against the Queene Mothers kindred. 300

He betrayeth them, and bereaueth them of their liues. 301, 307

The Queene Mother with her children

The Contents.

children taketh Sanctuarie. 302

The Duke of Gloceſter is made Protector. 302

By ſubtiltie he getteth the yong Duke of Yorke out of priſon, and ſends the King, and him, to the Tower, vnder pretence of greater ſafetie. 302

Hee with the Duke of Buckingham practizeth their deſtruction. 304. 305

His villany at the Tower. 306

His friend the Lord Haſtings *is beheaded, becauſe hee will not conſent to that murder.* 307

Doctor Shawes *flattering ſermon.* 308

Richard Duke of Gloceſter is made King. 309

King RICHARD the third.

King Richard *(by baſe flatterie) endeuourcth to make a bad matter good.* 311

Doctor Morton, *Biſhop of Ely, is committed to the cuſtodie of the Duke of Buckingham.* 311

King Richard *is deſpiſed by the French king.* 312

The two young Princes (by the villanous procurement of King Richard) *are murdred.* 312

The reaſons, which might haue diſſwaided him from that wickednesſe, are examined. 313

His only ſonne by death is taken from him. 315

Doctor Morton *(by flatterie) inſinuateth himſelfe into the inward loue and familiaritie of the Duke of Buckingham, and hauing with him reſolued on the deſtruction of king* Richard, *hee eſcapeth, and flyeth into Flanders, from whence hee giues good intelligence of all King* Richards *proceedings, to* Henrie *Earle of Richmond.* 315

Hee moueth him to marrie the Lady Elizabeth, *eldeſt daughter to King* Edward *the Fourth, which hee proteſteth to doe.* 317

King Richard *had almoſt gotten into his hands the Earle of Richmond, but* Peter Landoys *freeth him.* 317

The Duke of Buckingham and the K. do leuie two ſtrong Armies, but the fight is deferred by a ſodain flood: The welſhmen forſake the Duke: he flyeth: he is proſcribed: he is betraied by his owne ſeruant, and looſeth his head. 318

Peter Landoys *would haue betrayed the Earle of Richmond to king* Richard; *but hee, and his, doe eſcape hardly into France, where they are comforted and aided.* 320

King Richard *by flatterie and bribes*

bribes gets King Edward *the Fourth his children into his owne possession: and maketh loue to his owne Neece, the said Lady* Elizabeth. 322

His owne wife sodainly dyeth, and he reuiueth his incestuous sute to his said Neece, who wittily protracteth that businesse. 323

False newes from France, makes him secure. 323

The Earle of Richmond landeth in England, and the King, and he are with their Armies in Bosworth field. 323

King Richards *people cleaue not to him.* 324

Hee is desperate in fight: but is slaine by the Earle himselfe, and his body is vsed with great despight by the common people. 324,325

Henrie, *Earle of Richmond, is proclaimed, and crowned King by the souldiers, in the open field, wher his Enimie lay dead: And in the same place, Hee, with his whole Armie doe thanke* God. 325

King Henry the Seuenth.

King Henrie *the Seuenth (as he had sworne) vniteth the two diuided houses of Lancaster & Yorke, by his mariage with the Lady* Elizabeth, *King* Edward *the Fourth his eldest daughter.* 327

He causeth the Crowne to be intayled. 328

He maketh Yeomen of his Guard, and is thankfull to his friends. 327

He repaieth the French King, & the Duke of Britaigne. 328

He repealeth Acts of Attainders, makes good lawes, and granteth a generall Pardon. 328

He suppresseth Rebells. 329

Lambert, *the counterfaited Earle of Warwick, by force and policie is taken.* 329,330,331

King Henrie *the Seuenth, takes part with the Duke of Britaigne, against the French King.* 332,333

The Earle of Northumberland (leuying of a Tax) is slaine by the people. 333,334

The Rebells flie, and are punished. 334

Maximilian *(being aided by King* Henrie *the Seuenth) comes not forth, yet King* Henrie *alone warreth against the French King.* 335

The King demaunds a Benevolence. 335

He besiegeth Bullein, and granteth a peace. 336

Perkin Warbeck, *the counterfaited Duke of Yorke, vexeth king* Henrie. 337

He is supported. 337,338,339

The King wisely discouers their intentions. 339,340

The Mart is remoued to Calice 340

Sir William Stanley *is beheaded, and* Warbeck *is discomforted*

The Contents.

ted in Kent. 342
The Scots (vnder pretence to aid him) vexe England. 343
The Corniſh Rebells are ouerthrowne. 343,344
And many of them are executed. 345
The Scots inuade, and are waſted 346
The Mart is reſtored to the Flemings. 346
Exeter is beſieged, and defended valiantly. 342
King Henrie *commeth to that Citie, and giues vnto it his ſword.* 348
The Rebells flie. 349
Perkin Warbeck, *and the yong Earle of Warwick (ſon to* George *Duke of Clarence, the brother of King* Edward *the Fourth) ſeeking to eſcape, are preuented, and beheaded.* 350
Two mariages with France and Scotland. 350
Empſon *and* Dudley, *doe execute penall lawes.* 351
The King (in his death bed) doth repent it: and lends mony freely to his Marchants, and dieth. 359

King Henry the Eighth.

He *executeth* Empſon *and* Dudley. 355
And marieth his brothers wife. 355
He ſideth with the Pope againſt France. 356
His Father-in-law Ferdinando, *vſeth him ill.* 357
And trecherouſly ſurpriſeth the kingdome of Nauarre. 357
Edward Howard, *Lord Admirall, is drowned.* 359
King Henrie *hath three armies in France.* 360
Maximilian *the Emperour ſerueth him in thoſe warres.* 361
Tyrwin and Tourney are wonne. 361
Iames *the Fourth King of Scots is ſlaine in Flodden field.* 361,362
Peace is concluded with France. 364
Cardinall Wolſeys *deedes and actions, from* pag. 364. *vnto* pag. 388.
The Clergie feare the Premunire, and therefore are liberall. 388
The king is acknowledged ſupreme head of the Church. 388, 403
He marieth Anne *of Bullein.* 389
And beheadeth her. 403
Euill May-day. 390
Tournay is deliuered vpon condicions. 390
Which (by the French) were broken. 393
The Duke of Buckingham is attainted and executed. 392
The King writes a booke againſt Martin Luther. 393
He maketh warres in France. 394, 395, 396, 397

Priuie

The Contents.

Priuie ſeales being granted, are releaſed by Parliament. 395
Engliſh ſouldiers doe returne vnlicenced out of France. 397
The Emperor, the Scots, and the French doe craue peace. 398,399
The King is in danger to bee drowned. 400
He hath warres with the Emperour. 401
He curbeth the Popes authority. 401
Fiſher and Moore doe looſe their heads. 402
Petit Religious houſes are ſuppreſſed. 403
All the reſt are likewiſe ſuppreſſed. 407
The holy maid of Kent. 402
The Lancaſhire-men doe rebell. 404
The King is paſſing ſtout. 404
Rebellion by the holy Pilgrimes, miraculouſly appeaſed. 405
An other Rebellion is ſuppreſſed. 406
Cromwell is aduanced highly. 406
But is ouerthrowne by concluding a mariage for the King with Anne of Cleue, which the King diſliked. 408, 409
That mariage is pronounced to be void. 409
The King marrieth the Lady Katherine Howard. 409
And beheaded her. 410
He is made King of Ireland. 410
The Scots invade and are miſerably ouerthrowne. 413
A mariage being motioned by the Scots. 413
Is concluded, but they breake their oathes, & the match too. 415
Scotland is waſted. 415
The King ſendeth two Armies into France. 415
Bullein is wonne. 417
The King hath a Beneuolence. 417
The Frenchmen are ouerthrown 418
The Scots invade and are vanquiſhed. 419
The famous and renowned Earle of Surry is beheaded: And the King dyeth.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR.

AFTER the death of King *Edward* (who was the ſonne of *Egeldredus*, and of *Goditha* his wife) *Harold* her brother, and ſecond ſonne to the Earle *Godwin*, vſurped this kingdom, and cauſed himſelfe to be crowned King, the Crowne being formerly giuen by King *Edward* vnto *William* the ſeuenth Duke of the *Normans*, and baſe ſonne to *Robert* their ſixt Duke. To whoſe vſe and behoofe, *Harold* had formerly ſworne to keepe the ſame. Whereof, when Duke *William* was certainely enformed, Hee charged him (by his Letters, and by Meſſengers) with his promiſe, confirmed by his Oath; and required him (in friendly ſort, and without blowes) to poſſeſſe him of his Crowne. But proud Ambition (arming him with a Reſolution to remaine a King in deſpight of threats, or Fortune) made him, rather to quoine diſhonorable excuſes, then to giue ſatisfaction as hee had ſworne: And for anſwere, to returne, That promiſes, and vowes raſhly made, and by compulſion (as his was) eſpecially for a Kingdome, whereunto the State had giuen no free conſent, were not (at all) to bee regarded. And therefore (ſeeing the Dukes Rule and Dominions were as ample,

and as large elſewhere, as Nature and Art had enabled him to manage, and to command) he wiſhed him to bee contented with his owne, and not aduenture to claſpe more within his hand, then he was well able to hold faſt, Nor to couet that which hee ſhould not enioy.

As this anſwere bred Diſcontent: So rage began to reſolue on Armes. For the Duke (aſſiſted by his Martiall friends) leuied a ſtrong Armie; and furniſhed it with all abiliments and neceſſaries for the Warre: with which (through the aſſiſtance of ſome natiue Nobles, who adhered to his part) hee ſafely landed in *Suſſex:* where (hauing prouidently ſheltred himſelfe, againſt all ſuddaine ſtormes) hee challenged *Harold* to a ſingle Combat; thereby to decide the ſtrife, without much bloud. But *Harold* entertained not the Challenge; but ſent him word, That to gaine, or keepe a Kingdome, it required more blowes then two could giue. So that (within fewe dayes after) a fierce and cruell Battaile (of the continuance of one whole day) without intermiſſion, or breathing, was fought betwixt them. But in the Euening, HAROLD, being deadly wounded with an Arrow, left both his Kingdome and his life: And Duke *William* (almoſt with equall loſſe of his men) became Victor in the field.

14. *October.* 1066.

The Saxons *Raigne ended*

And thus ended the *Saxons* Raigne; which (from the firſt yeare of *Hengiſtus*, in the yeare of our Lord God foure hundred ſeuentie and fiue, vntill the time of this Conqueſt in the yeare of our Lord God one thouſand ſixtie and ſixe) had continued: (Sauing that now and then, it was interrupted by the *Danes*) the ſpace of fiue hundred foureſcore and eleuen yeares. The Duke (hauing thus ſlaine *Harold*, and gained his Kingdome) began to raigne as King: And (on Chriſtmas day then next following) hee was crowned by *Aldredus* Archbiſhop of *Yarke*, by the enforced conſents of the Engliſh Nobles: Who (with an outward applauſe, but with an inward griefe and ſorrow) ſubmitted themſelues to be his ſubiects; the *Kentiſh* men excepted. By whom (as hee trauailed to poſſeſſe himſelfe of the ſtrong Caſtle of *Douer*) he was preuented in his iourney, and compaſſed round about by valiant men of War; who (carying greene boughs in their hands, and reſembling a mooving Wood) enuironed the King, and all his followers, ere they were aware therof; And proteſted manfully to die, rather then they would (by ſeruile baſeneſſe) be depriued of thoſe ancient Lawes and Cuſtomes, whereby their Countrie was then ruled. The King (perceiuing his owne danger, and

and their reſolution) hearkned to their demaunds; and not onely granted their requeſts, but (for their bold and valorous attempt) hee honoured them with this preheminence; That euer afterwards, the *Kentiſh* inhabitants ſhould make the Vantgard of the Field.

The Conqueſtors Policies.

This gained hee that Countrie, and became ſole Lord and Soueraigne of each whole Kingdome: and ruled it as a Conqueror, with more Policie than by profitable Lawes; and with more ſeueritie than did become the Gracious diſpoſition of a fauourable King.

1 For firſt of all (becauſe he preſumed, that ſuch as were conquered, did rather feare than loue, and would no longer obey, than the yoake lay heauie ouer their neckes) by receiuing Hoſtages of the beſt and deareſt eſteeme, hee ſecured the fidelities of ſuch as were either honourable, or potent, and ſent them into *Normandie*, becauſe ſuddaine force and ſtrength ſhould not depriue him of ſo ſure a meane of his ſafetie.

2 Then (to depriue the *Engliſh* of all commaund, and to make them feeble, and his *Normans* ſtrong) he ſeized their chiefeſt Offices, both of Honour, and of Profit, into his owne hands, and conferred them vpon ſtrangers: Whereat the Engliſh grieued much, but found no remedie: for Weakeneſſe was enforced to yeeld to Power, and vſurping Policie tyrannized ouer the Oppreſſed, and bereaued them of their Right.

3 And (becauſe in thoſe daies the Clergie was had in great reuerence among the people; in regard, that their authoritie was not confined within the bounds of their Spirituall Iuriſdictions) hee reſolued to clip their wings, becauſe they ſhould no longer ſoare ſo high; and did ordaine, That from thenceforth they ſhould not commaund with anie Temporall Authoritie whatſoeuer.

4 He was not ignorant, that the hope of Libertie did oftentimes incite ſuch as vnwillingly were made ſeruile, to watch for oportunitie to procure their Freedome: and therefore (to preuent ſuch dangers as might otherwiſe enſue) he vtterly diſarmed and diſweaponed all the Natiues of the Land, turning their Hopes into Deſpaire; and preuenting their Expectations for Releaſement, with the preſent Extremitie of their Bondage. Thus weakened he ſuch as were truly valiant, and thus made he them to ſuffer much, who (if they had beene at libertie) would haue beene able to repell great force.

5 And (becauſe the concourſe of much people might giue them ſome occaſion, both to conferre of the eſtate which they were in,

and alſo to conſult of the meanes of their deliuerance from their Thraldome) he debarred the *Engliſh* from frequent and common meetings, eſpecially in the night: which to preuent, he cauſed a Bell in euerie Village, Towne, and Citie, to be rong at eight of the clocke in the euening; vpon the ſound whereof, all *Engliſh* men were enjoyned to couer their fire, and to keepe themſelues within their dores. And this ceremonie was, and is yet called, *Couer le fiew*, or the raking vp of the Fire.

6 To diminiſh the Nobilitie, he vſed to tranſport them for his Warres beyond the Seas: and if they returned backe againe, then might they well perceiue, that he rather meant their deſtruction, than regarded their ſeruice: for no reward was giuen to them, though they were valiant, nor anie ſhew at all was made, that their forwardneſſe was accepted by the King.

7 And thus dealt he likewiſe with the vulgar ſort; by whoſe manhood he fought his ſharpeſt battailes in *Normandie* and in *France*: thereby leſſening their numbers, and making his owne power more eminent among ſuch, as he enforced to lament their owne misfortunes, and in vaine to meditate vpon their preſent woe.

8 He alſo erected ſtrong Forts and Caſtles in ſundrie places of this Realme, which were commaunded by his followers; whoſe bitterneſſe was ſuch againſt the *Engliſh* Nation, as that they dared not to make ſhew, that they repined at any thing, which wickedly they did amiſſe.

9 As long as the *Engliſh* abounded in Riches, and in Wealth, he knew they were not altogether heartleſſe; and therefore he depriued them of thoſe comforts. And (to encreaſe his owne ſtore) he practiſed ſubtile trickes on both eſtates: for he robbed the Clergie of all their beſt and richeſt Plate and Ornaments (which had been conſecrated to holy vſes) alledging, That Theeues and Traiterous Rebels had hid them there, to deceiue him of his forfeitures, and ſecretly to ſupport themſelues therewith, to his great hurt.

10 He alſo enacted and eſtabliſhed ſtrait and ſeuere Lawes, and publiſhed them in his owne Language; by meanes whereof, manie (who were of great eſtate, and of much worth) through ignorance did tranſgreſſe, and their ſmalleſt offences were great enough to entitle the Conquerour to the Lands and Riches which they did poſſeſſe. All which he ſeized on, and tooke from them, without remorſe.

11 Then he diſallowed the Patents, and the Graunts of former Kings, and publiſhed them to be meerely void; and hauing ſequeſtred them into his owne hands, he ſold them againe to the true owners

owners for great ſummes of money, if they could pay them: but otherwiſe he gaue them to his *Normans*, and to the *French*.

He procured a generall view to be taken of his ſubiects Lands, and cauſed them to be juſtly meaſured, and their cattell to be numbred, and thereby he taxed them, according to ſuch proportions as he pleaſed; and (by ſuch vndue Exactions) he ſcraped and ſcratched together the Treaſure of this Realme, little regarding the wants and pouertie of his conquered people, if (by anie meanes) he could augment his owne ſtore. 12

He erected ſundrie Courts for the adminiſtration of his new Lawes, and of Iuſtice; and leaſt his Iudges ſhould beare too great a ſway, by reaſon of his abſence, he cauſed them all to follow his Court vpon all remoues: Whereby he not onely curbed their diſpoſitions, which incited them to be great, but alſo tyred out the *Engliſh* Nation with extraordinarie troubles, and exceſſiue charges in the proſecution of their Suites in Law. 13

To open a wide dore, and to giue the more free acceſſe vnto the *French* and *Normans* (if the *Engliſh* ſhould happen to rebell) he ruinated all Churches, Chappels, Villages, and Townes, which ſtood within the compaſſe of manie myles in *Hampſhire*, and made the New Foreſt there; vtterly diſpeopling thoſe places where God was formerly ſerued, and frugall Husbandrie maintained; making them an habitation for wilde and ſauage Beaſts: which act and deede he coloured with the pretence of fitneſſe, and conueniencie for his recreation in Hunting, when great affaires and important buſineſſe would giue him leaue. But God reuenged his owne cauſe by the vntimely death of *Rufus* his ſonne, and ſucceſſor; who (as he hunted) was ſlaine with an arrow in the ſame Foreſt. 14

Aboue all other pleaſures he placed his chiefeſt delight in Hunting: and for the furtherance thereof, when he had ſeized into his owne hands all the Chaſes and Foreſts of this Kingdome, then (to preſerue his Game from diſturbance, and from ſpoile) he made and executed moſt ſharpe and bitter Lawes againſt ſuch, as (vnlicenced) preſumed to hunt in them; as the loſſe of eyes, limbes, and ſuch like: But they were afterwards made more milde and gentle, by ſuch as by ſucceſſion wore his Crowne. 15

He gaue large territories and ſpatious fields vnto his fauorites; who did diuide them into Farmes, for their particular vſes and neceſſities, and the reſidue of them they graunted or leaſed to their ſlaues and ſeruants; thereby creating Manors, and entitling themſelues the Lords of them. The King alſo vpon thoſe his gifts proportioned thoſe grounds, diuiding them into Hydes of Land, euery 16

Hyde

Hyde containing twentie acres, and eight Hydes making a whole Knights fee. The Tenures which he reſerued, were Knights ſeruice *in capite:* by meanes whereof, his Tenants were enioyned to doe him manie neceſſarie and honorable Seruices, either in his Warres, or to his Royall perſon. For the performance whereof, he tooke their Oathes in publike Courts, both of Homage and of Fealtie. And by reaſon of this kinde of Tenure, he diſpoſed of the bodies of their Heires in marriage as he liſted, and retayned in his cuſtodie and Wardſhip, to his owne vſe, their whole Inheritance, vntill they accompliſhed their age of one and twentie yeares. Which Tenures are continued at this day. And, by his example, others of great poſſeſſions did the like.

And thus may we plainely ſee (as in a Mappe) the perfect Modell and Deſcription of his rigorous and ſharpe Gouernement; wherein he rather practiſed the licentious power of an inſolent Conqueror, than the gratious kindneſſe of an annointed King. By meanes whereof, many feared, few did loue him: and ſuch as pleaſed him beſt, were many times in great hazard (vpon ſmall occaſions) to be frowned on.

ANNO. 2. In the ſecond yeare of his raigne, by reaſon of his Taxes, which exceeded beyond meaſure, the inhabitants of *Northumberland*, and of *Deuon*, did rebell. But ſuch was his valour and expedition, that (ere they were aware thereof) his forces (like a loftie Sea, or a whirling Wind) ruſhed violently vpon them, and eaſily ſubdued them, to their paine.

Taxes cauſed Rebellions.

ANNO. 3. And not long after, *Swanus* then King of the *Danes* (being animated and ſet on edge by the daily perſwaſions and enticements of ſuch *Engliſh* Nobles, as to preuent their owne ruine and deſtruction were fled to him for ſuccour) arriued with a ſtrong Armie in the North: where the inhabitants (endeuoring the enjoyment of their former libertie) with bold courage aſſiſted them in their inuaſion. But the King almoſt no ſooner ſaw them) than he compelled them vpon the looſing hand) to flye vnto their ſhippes. And (to reuenge the infidelitie of the *Engliſh*) he vtterly ſpoyled and harrowed their beſt and moſt fruitfull Lands, lying betwixt *Yorke* and *Durham*. So that by reaſon thereof (for the ſpace of nine yeares after) thoſe grounds lay waſt, and vnmanured; and great numbers of people, of all ages, died miſerably, with famine, and with want.

The Danes inuade, and are put to flight.

The Engliſh are plagued.

ANNO. 4. The next yeare after he ſummoned a generall Conuocation of his Clergie. In which (with much aſperitie and bitterneſſe) he accuſed diuers and ſundrie graue and learned Biſhops, Abbots, Priors, and Religious Prelates, of many ſurmiſes, faults, and offences:

for

for which he vtterly depoſed and depriued them, both of their Dignities, Goods, and Liuings: all which he conferred vpon ſuch, as (either through his fauour, or for great ſummes of money) were able to procure them.

Theſe fearefull preſidents of inſufferable cruelties, prouoked *Marcarius*, and *Edwyn*, then Earles of *Northumberland*, and of *Mercia*, together with *Egilwynus*, then Biſhop of *Durham*, to rebell. But the King (like a Lyon encountring their weaker forces) draue *Edwyn* into *Scotland*; where trecherouſly he was murdered. He tooke *Marcarius*, and impriſoned him in the Tower of *London*: where (manie yeares after) he remained, with little hope of his deliuerance. And the Biſhop (being a priſoner in the Abbey of *Abbington*) was cruelly famiſhed to death.

Another Rebellion.

At this time great ſtrife, touching the Primacie, aroſe, betwixt the Archbiſhops of *Canterburie*, and of *Yorke*: which continued almoſt two yeares. But at length, *Thomas* was adiudged to be ſubordinate to *Lanfrank*, then Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, and the other ſubmitted himſelfe accordingly.

ANNO. 7. *The Primacie of Canterburie.*

ANNO. 9.

In the twelfth yeare of this Kings Raigne (at a great Synod holden at *Paules* Church in *London*) ſome Biſhopricks were tranſlated from one place to another: as *Selwy*, vnto *Chicheſter*; *Kyrton* vnto *Exeter*; *Wells* vnto *Bath*; *Shirborne* vnto *Salisburie*; *Dorcheſter* vnto *Lincolne*; and *Lichfield* vnto *Cheſter*.

ANNO 12. *Biſhoprickes tranſlated.*

Oſwald, Biſhop of *Salisburie*, was a moſt deuout and religious man: he deuiſed a certaine forme of Prayers to be daily vſed in his Church: which was ſo generally liked by the Clergie, that they were publiſhed in bookes, and vſed in other Churches. Whence proceeded the common ſaying of *Secundum vſum Sarum*.

ANNO 13. Secundum vſum Sarum.

In the fifteenth yeare of this Kings Raigne (by the inſtigation, and with the aſſiſtance of *Philip* the *French* King) *Robert*, his eldeſt ſonne, rebelled in *Normandie*: which occaſioned his father to goe thither with an Armie. But he was ſo ſtiffely encountred in the field, that by his ſonne he was vnhorſed, and in great perill of his life. But he reſcued him againe, reconciled himſelfe, receiued pardon, and the King (with much loſſe) returned againe into *England*.

ANNO 15.

A Rebellion in Normandie.

And within few yeares after, to be reuenged of manie iniuries and wrongs to him done by the ſaid *Philip*, from *Normandie*, hee carried a puiſſant Armie into *France*: where (with fortunate ſucceſſe, and with abundance of crueltie) he ſlew, burnt, ſpoyled, and ranſacked his People, Townes, and Countrey. But ſo much was he trauelled in thoſe affaires, and ſo extreamely did he heate himſelfe in

ANNO 20.

The Conqueror inuadeth France.

The Conqueror falleth ſicke, and dieth.

in thoſe eager conflicts, that preſently he fell ſicke, and within few daies after he died, after he had much ſorrowed and lamented for the Tyrannies which he had exerciſed on the *Engliſh* Nation: and at laſt he was buried at *Cane* in *Normandie*, in the Abbey of *S. Stephen*, which himſelfe had builded. But his Funerals were interrupted by a *Norman* Gentleman: who would not permit him to be interred there, vntill a ſatisfactorie recompence was vnto him giuen for that ſoyle, which the Conquerour had vniuſtly taken from him.

This dead dogge could not bite.

Thus this victorious Conquerour, whoſe minde was not to be confined with one Kingdome whileſt he liued, could (being dead) hardly obtaine a place to be buried in.

He left behinde him one daughter, named *Adela*, and three ſonnes: *Robert*, to whome he gaue his Duchie of *Normandie*: *William*, ſurnamed *Rufus*, becauſe his complexion was verie redde; and *Henrie*: both which ſucceſſiuely were Kings.

The deſcription of the Conqueror.

He was of an indifferent ſtature, ſtrongly compoſed in his limbs, and comely in his behauiour; ſterne of countenance, and of an vndaunted ſpirit: reſolute in all his actions; quicke in his Expeditions; wiſe, diſcreet, and politike in the managing of his affaires and buſineſſe. He banqueted, and hunted verie much; coueted all; oppreſſed ſuch as he ſubdued (to keepe them low) and alwaies held his deereſt friends in an awfull regard of his loue.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING WILLIAM RVFVS.

WHEN *William* the Conqueror died, *Robert* his eldeſt ſonne (being in *Germanie*) accommodated himſelfe (with great ſufficiencie) to thoſe affaires and buſineſſes wherewith his father had entruſted him: ſo that, by means of his abſence, the Conquerors laſt Will and Teſtament, the furtherance by *Lanfrank*, then Archbiſhop of *Canterburie* (who, by reaſon of his great learning, and ſingular vertues, was verie deere and reuerend in the peoples eyes) and by manie coſtlie gifts, enlarged with vnaccuſtomed bountie, *William* (his younger brother) was crowned King.

9. Septemb. 1087.

But not long after, Duke *Robert* (repining, that his right, by force and injuſtice, ſhould be made a prey to him that did vſurpe; and purpoſing to regaine by his preſence that which by his abſence he had loſt) came into *England*, guarded with a braue Armie of vnconquered *Normans*, and manie *French*, whome *Philip* their King had waged for his aide: But ſuch was the Dukes milde and flexible diſpoſition (though he were paſſing valorous, and bold) that he rather enclined himſelfe to a peaceable compoſition, which was gently craued by his brother, than (by the effuſion of much bloud) to poſſeſſe himſelfe of this Crowne: ſo that (in the end) being fairely promiſed,

ANNO 2. *Duke Robert warreth in England.*

A compoſition betwixt the two brothers.

promiſed, That if he ſuruiued, he ſhould ſucceede; and accepting the graunt of three thouſand marks by the yeare, he tooke a friendlie leaue, and returned, well pleaſed, and ſafelie vnto his owne Duchie.

The King oppreſſeth the Engliſh Nation by Taxes and other cruelties.

The King (by theſe meanes) more ſtrongly fixing his foote in the poſſeſſion of this Kingdome, and being better aſſured of his eſtabliſhment than he was before, began forthwith to tread in his fathers ſteppes, and (with like oppreſſions and ſeueritie) to humble the haughtie courage of the *Engliſh:* and finding by the Rules of Policie, That Plentie puffeth vp, and that Penurie robbeth ſuch as are hardie of the chiefeſt Requiſites which might enable them to reſiſt, impoſed on them manie vnuſuall Payments, and intolerable Taxes; which by his greedie miniſters and ſawcie officers were leuied with ſuch deſpight and crueltie, that thereby they might well perceiue, that he meant nothing more than to cut the nerues and ſinewes of their ſtrength.

An old Biſhop made a young Earle.

About the ſame time, *Odo* his vncle, being Biſhop of *Bayon*, repaired into *England*; where (by reaſon of the Kings regardfull affection towards him) he found ſuch welcome and friendly entertainment, that he was created Earle of *Kent*.

The old Biſhop, and young Earle, preſuming too much on his Nephewes loue, and mounting his conceits aboue the height of a conuenient pitch, tooke vpon him more authoritie to rule, than either a ſtranger, or a ſubject, in wiſedome ſhould affect: which altered the pleaſantneſſe of the Kings countenance into frownes, and made him much leſſe eſteemed, than otherwiſe he would haue beene.

The Kings vncle rebelleth.

The Biſhop (whoſe heart was haughtie, and whoſe minde aſpired to more than ordinarie greatneſſe) ſo inwardly grudged, that the Line of Soueraigne Majeſtie ſhould tye him ſhort, that openly he did rebell; and in ſuch ſort (by the helpe of the *Engliſh Normans*) diſtempered the ſoundneſſe of the Commonweales Peace with manie turbulent and dangerous mutinies, in ſundrie places of the Land, that the King (contrarie to his naturall diſpoſition, and contrarie to the former Rules of his Policie) was compelled to ſtrengthen his owne part by the *Engliſh* Nation; whome (with better vſage, fairer ſpeeches, releaſement of injurious Taxes, and great gifts) he made ſo firme and faithfull to him, that (by their aſſiſtance) he more than well hoped to preuaile. And ſuch was his new courteſie and kindneſſe to manie of the reuolted Lords, that (leauing the Biſhop and his aſſociates) they adhered firmely vnto the King.

The King through neceſſitie flattereth the Engliſh.

Theſe

These fractions and these disorders in the publike State begot new conceits in *Malcolyne* King of *Scots:* who on the suddaine raising a faire Armie of aduenturous men of warre, inuaded the *Northren* parts of this Kingdome. The newes whereof appalled not the King, but rather it inspired him with a spirit of such inuincible courage, that marching first against the Bishop and his complices, with an high hand he obtained a quicke victorie, and enforced the vnwise Bishop, his vncle, to abiure the Land.

The Scots rebell.

The Bishop is ouerthrowne.

And forthwith (being mounted aloft, vpon the wings of Furie, and scorning to be checked by resistance) he rushed with such manlike violence vpon the hardie *Scots*, that the greatest numbers of them were quickly slaine in the field; and *Malcolyne* was not onely compelled to acknowledge his subiection, by renewing of his former Oath, but willingly he became a Pentioner to the King.

ANNO. 3. *The Scots ouerthrowne.*

The Scots subiection.

In the sixt yeare of his Raigne his prosperitie was interrupted by the obstinate Rebellion of *Rees*, the last King of the *Welchmen:* who so infested him with broken warres, that, for many moneths together, being vrged to fight with Mountaines (to which vpon all enforcements they fled) in stead of combating with men, he could finde no rest. But such was his resolution, his valour, and vndaunted courage, to withstand the strongest push of all extremities, that in the end he slew their King, and (by a glorious victorie) he better secured the subjection of the *Welchmen*, than any of his predecessors had done before.

ANNO. 6. *The Welchmen rebell, and are subdued.*

Not long afterwards, *Malcolyne* the King of *Scots* (being vnkindly and disgracefully denied accesse to the *English* Court, where he intended a friendly conference vpon many matters of great weight and consequence) returned into *Scotland*; and being infected with a million of discontents, the disease of his passions published it selfe, with much danger, to the Northren parts: which he inuaded with a strong Armie; spoyling, robbing, burning, wounding, and killing (without controlment) in all places, as he listed: vntill he besieged a strong Castle; which for manie daies was valiantly defended by *Robert Mowbray*, then Earle of *Northumberland:* who at length seeming to yeeld to the frowardnesse of his disasterous fortune, and comming out of his Castle gate well mounted, with the keyes thereof fastened vnto his launce, and making low obeysance to the King in token of his submission, and dashing his spurres into his horse, he ranne vpon the King, and with his launce (in stead of tendering him the keyes) he pierced out his eye, and slew him on the place: Which hauing done, he escaped, flying like the winde, leauing the dismayed *Scots* behinde him, to lament their irrecuperable

The Scots rebell againe.

The King of Scots slaine.

rable loſſe, and with much ſorrow to returne into *Scotland* with their breathleſſe King.

As on the Sea-ſhore one waue ſucceedes another: ſo in humane affaires there is no end of troubles. No ſooner was this buſineſſe concluded, but another did begin. For *Robert* Duke of *Normandie* (conceiuing himſelfe to be much wronged, by a ſuppoſed breach of the Kings former promiſes) reſolued to tranſport a faire Armie into *England*, for the regayning of his Right: but the King (purpoſing rather to aduenture offenſiue Warres abroad, than with aſſured loſſe to defend himſelfe at home) gathered a ſtrong power of able and willing men of warre, with which he ſayled into *Normandie*. But *Philip* of *France* ſo friendly backed the Duke in thoſe employments, that the *Engliſh* forces found themſelues too weake to doe him any harme. So this vnexpected reſiſtance compelled the King to caſt his plot into a new mould, and by ſleight and policie to effect that, which by open violence he could not doe. Wherefore (not making himſelfe ouer-much beholding to long deliberation) he ſent many of his chiefeſt Commanders into *England*; who (with more than ordinarie diligence and ſpeede) in ſhort time waged a ſtrong Armie of twentie thouſand men: who (being readie to be embarked) were vnexpectedly greeted with this faire offer, That ſuch of them as would ſeuerally giue tenne ſhillings to the King, towards his leuying of new forces in *Normandie*, ſhould be diſmiſſed from that journey. This demaund (in regard of each particular giuer) was not great: but the entire value thereof, when it was collected, amounted to a good ſumme; becauſe there were few, or none, who by this payment procured not their diſcharge. And the *French* King (being ſecretly corrupted with the gift of the greater part of this money) made preſent choiſe rather to ſhrinke from his kinde friend, than to aſſiſt him at his neede: ſo that the good Duke (being left alone, and yet accompanied with the ſenſible apprehenſion of his owne defects, and making a vertue of his neceſſities) contented himſelfe to ſubſcribe to the commaund of his aduerſe fortune. For, making an enforced Peace with his brother, and pawning to him his Duchie of *Normandie* for tenne thouſand pounds; himſelfe in perſon, with other Chriſtian Princes, waged warres in the Holy Land.

A good Policie.

The French ſtrengthen Robert Duke of Normandie againſt the King.

A politike and a pleaſing Taxe.

Quid non Regina pecunia?

A compoſition

As ſoone as the King was returned into *England*, the Rebels in *Wales* ſummoned him to a new Warre; which he vndertooke with great celeritie, and with much valour. But the craggie Mountaines, the ſteepie Hils, the thicke Woods, and the watrie Mariſhes (vnto which the *Welchmen* vſed continually to flye vpon euerie feare of danger)

The Welchmen rebell.

danger) ſo toyled and tyred the *Engliſh* forces, that the King (to encreaſe his ſtrength, and to furniſh himſelfe with more fitting meanes to ſubdue thoſe Rebels) was compelled, without honour, to returne.

The Earle of Northumberland rebelleth.

But thoſe his new preparations were interrupted by another Rebellion in the North: which was occaſioned and conducted by *Robert Mowbray*, Earle of *Northumberland*; who madly expreſſed the malecontentednes of his diſordered paſſions, becauſe the King (as he conceiued) had not requited his ſeruice done vpon *Malcolyne*, the King of *Scots*, with any worthie or condigne reward. But ſuch was the haughtie ſpirit and courage of the King, that thoſe vnexpected troubles, which benummed the ſenſes of the vulgar, did ſet an edge vpon his valour, making him to ſcorne feare, and to entertaine hope; and animating him, with a ſetled reſolution, to dare fortune to doe her worſt. For he no ſooner ſaw his reuolted ſubjects of the North, but he loaded them in ſuch ſort with blowes and wounds, that ſuch as fled not he made a prey vnto death, or made them miſerable examples to their friends; who might bemoane them, but could not releaſe them, of their loſſe of Eares, Eyes, Hands, Noſes, or Feete. Thus did the King beate downe their pride, and tooke the Earle as hee fled, and ſent him to the Caſtle of *Windſour*, where hee was committed to a ſtrong Priſon.

A couragious King.

The Rebels ſubdued.

The King could not ſubdue the Welchmen in two Expeditions.

Then did the King (with new ſtrength) march againe into *Wales:* but his former miſhaps were preſidents to his later ſucceſſe. For albeit that Furie made him more aduenturous than Reaſon gaue him warrant, in regard that his magnanimous ſpirit could not digeſt the counter-checks of ſuch a ſcattered Rabble: yet (when hee had weakened his ſtrength, and impaired his Armie, by the loſſe of manie valiant men, vpon the vaſt and deſolate Mountaines, which affoorded him nothing but Repentance) he was enforced (farre againſt his will) the ſecond time to returne, leauing the *Welch* Rebels vncorrected; and therefore exceedingly emboldened in their ſinne. Whoſe inſolencies bred in the King ſuch a ſtrong reſolution to reuenge, that foure yeares after (when they ſuſpected not any approaching danger) he ſent againſt them the two Earles of *Shrewsburie*, and of *Cheſter*, with a ſtrong Power: who finding them rioting in the Iſle of *Angleſey*, ſet vpon them, ſlew diuers, wounded more, ſuffered few to eſcape; and ſuch as were taken priſoners, were eyther executed with manie Torments, or diſmembred, with ſuch Depriuements, as happened to the Rebells in the North.

The Welchmen ſodainely inuaded are ouerthrowne.

Now

ANNO 10.

An vngratefull King.

Now when the King (by the helpe of the Engliſh Nation) had obtained many memorable victories againſt the *Scots*, *Welchmen*, and the *Northren* Rebels; and (by their aſſiſtance) had in ſuch ſort eſtabliſhed his affaires, that all feare of future perils was quite baniſhed; imitating the example of ſome vnthankfull Mariners: who (by the goodneſſe of a ſound Ship) hauing eſcaped the boiſterous rage of an hideous Tempeſt, will leaue her in the Roade, ſubject to the furie of the windes, and to the violence of the waters: Hee not onely forgot his honourable atchieuements by their meanes, but vnthankefully he requited them, who had freed him from manie vnſpeakable dangers. For, as in former times, ſo now againe he dis-heartened them, by manie intollerable exactions, new impoſitions, and mercileſſe oppreſſions: turning their longings after Libertie into a ſeruile Bondage; their expectations for Fauour, into Deſpaire; and their Plentie into ſuch Pouertie: that though thoſe Times gaue them leaue ſorrowfully to bewayle their griefes; yet Hope adminiſtred to them no comfort for Reliefe. Yea, ſuch was his impietie, and ſuch was his couetous deſire, by all vnjuſt meanes to enrich himſelfe; that impiouſly he ſold for money the greateſt and the beſt Promotions, both in Church, and in Commonweale: and did prohibite *Anſelme*, then Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, to aſſemble any Conuocations, or Synods, for the well ordering of the Clergie, or for the correcting of ſuch as did offend; without his leaue and licence: by meanes whereof, he ſecretly filled his coffers with much Treaſure.

The Engliſh Nation is miſerably oppreſſed.

Extreame couetouſneſſe in a King.

The Archbiſhop of Canterburie robbed, & rifled.

Appeale to Rome.

The King likely to haue been excommunicated.

The Emperor Henry the fourth was the firſt excommunicated Chriſtian Prince.

Theſe indignities, and theſe irreligious practiſes, were ſharpely reprehended by *Anſelme:* yet found he no reformation of thoſe monſtrous abuſes. Wherefore (being vnable anie longer to ſupport ſo ponderous a burthen, both to his Conſcience, and alſo to his Eſtate) he reſolued to forſake the Realme, and appeale to Pope *Vrban* the third; though by the King he was prohibited ſo to doe. But in the beginning of his journey, as he paſſed towards *Douer*; himſelfe, and all his followers (by the Kings vncharitable appointment) were euilly entreated, and robbed of their chiefeſt wealth. Yet went he forth, and at *Rome* complained to the Pope: who forthwith would haue excummunicated the King; had hee not formerly pronounced that Sentence againſt the Emperour *Henrie* the fourth (who was the firſt Chriſtian Prince Soueraigne that euer was excommunicated by anie Biſhop of *Rome:*) and by his Clergie he was aduiſed to ſee the end and effect of that Sentence; and ſhould not heate anie more yrons, before he ſaw how the former would be quenched.

Manie

Manie Letters and ſundrie Meſſengers were ſent vnto the King; admoniſhing him not to intermeddle anie more with the inueſting of Biſhops; by giuing to them the Croſſe, Ring, and Paſtorall Staffe: nor with the Temporalties of anie Eccleſiaſticall Promotions, either when they were vacant, or otherwiſe. Nor ſhould prohibite the aſſembling of anie Conuocations or Synods, touching the Churches affaires and buſineſſe: Nor ſhould prohibite the execution of anie Canons; albeit they were not by Regall authoritie confirmed.

Commaunds from Pope Vrban the third.

But the King little reſpected thoſe Commaunds, and ſtoutly anſwered, That, touching them all, hee would ſtill doe as hee pleaſed; and would not looſe ſo faire a flower belonging vnto his Crowne.

The King regards not the Popes commaunds.

But whileſt theſe buſineſſes were thus acted, the King was oftentimes ſharpely rebuked by *Ralph*, the Biſhop of *Chicheſter*, for thoſe vnjuſt grieuances and wrongs which were offered to the Archbiſhop, and his followers, at the time of their departure towards *Rome*. But, like as a man, the deeper he is wounded, the more impatient he is to be ſoundly ſearched: ſo the King (knowing his offence to be impious and vngodly) refuſed to be admoniſhed: and, in ſtead of reforming of thoſe things which had been done amiſſe, he heaped many diſgracefull wrongs vpon the good Biſhop, and his Dioceſſe; within which (of his own wilfull obſtinacie, and becauſe hee would proclaime his will to be a Law) hee ſuſpended many Churches, and conuerted their Reuenewes to his owne vſe.

The King is reproued, and is the worſe.

But his later meditations better informing him than his former neglect, and vnaduiſed paſſions: he not onely receiued the Biſhop into his extraordinarie grace and fauour; but enriched him and his See with many honourable Priuiledges and Princely gifts: Yet afterwards he baniſhed him out of his Kingdome.

The King repenteth.

It happened, that (as he hunted in the New-Foreſt) he was informed, that the *Frenchmen* had compaſſed the Citie of *Conſtancia* in *Normandie* with a Siege, which was both ſtrong, and dangerous. Whereupon (leauing his Sports, his Nobles, and all his Companie) with great expedition he poſted towards the Sea: and, without any preparations fitting for ſuch a journey, he leapt into a Barke; and commaunded the Mariners to weigh their anchor, and to hoyſe their Sayles. But ſuch was the furious violence of a boyſterous ſtorme, that (not daring to doe what they were commanded) they refuſed to obey: Whereat the King was much enraged, and did enforce them to yeeld to his reſolued humor; affirming, That they had neuer heard, that a King was drowned by the diſtemper of

Wonderfull courage.

of anie winde. And ſuch was his fortunate Paſſage in a time ſo dangerous, and ſo much were the *Frenchmen* daunted with the vnexpected newes of his ſuddaine landing: that inſtantly they abandoned the Siege; and by their quicke departure preuented the hazard which they much doubted.

Fortunate ſucceſſe.

ANNO 13.

And within two yeares after his returne into *England*, and in the thirteenth yeare of his Raigne (as he hunted in the ſaid New-Foreſt, which his Father had made, and which himſelfe had enlarged, by depopulating of ſundrie Townes, Villages, and Farmes, and with the vtter ruine of manie Churches, Chappels, and Religious houſes) he was ſlaine with an arrow: which being ſhot vnto a Deere, vnfortunately glanced vpon him, as, not long before, his Nephew *Richard*, and Sonne vnto Duke *Robert* of *Normandie*, had beene there ſlaine.

The King ſlaine as he hunted.

And thus ended the troubleſome, yet victorious, Raigne of King *William*, third ſonne to the Conqueror: who being of a wanton diſpoſition, neglecting marriage, and daily ſolacing himſelfe among his whores and concubines, died without any lawfull iſſue of his bodie. He was of a comely ſtature; firmely compacted in his limbes; very ſtrong, actiue, and healthie; exceeding lecherous, and couetous; of an high courage, and nobly valorous; conſtant in his reſolutions; ſcorning Fortune, and all Troubles. Thus he liued, and thus he died; getting much, and ſuddainely leauing all.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE *THE FIRST.*

WHen King *William* the ſecond died; *Robert*, his eldeſt brother (fortunate in all his proceedings, ſauing onely in his Succeſſion to this Crowne) warred victoriouſly (as manie other Chriſtian Princes did) in the Holie Land: where (in regard of his honourable deedes and heroicall actions) he refuſed to be made King of *Ieruſalem*. ANNO 1100.

By meanes of his abſence, a fit oportunitie was offered vnto *Henrie*, his youngeſt brother, to ſit as King in his Throne: whereunto (without labour, or difficultie) he aſcended, through the fauourable affection of the Nobles and common People: whoſe hearts were the more firmely engaged to his ſeruice, becauſe he was borne in *England* after his father was crowned King: and alſo, becauſe his ſingular Wiſdome, rare Learning, milde Diſpoſition, and princely Vertues, were plaine and apparant demonſtrations, that his Gouernment would be accompanied with honorable Atchieuements; gracefull, ſafe, and profitable both to the Church, and alſo to the Common-weale.

No ſooner was he crowned, and proclaimed King, but Wiſdome

A true vſe of Riches.

1

Good policies worthie of a noble King, and to be noted.

2
3
4
5
6

7

Flatterers baniſhed the Court.

8
9
10
11

12

13

The King leaueth the inueſture of Biſhops to the Pope.

14
15

16

Robert Duke of Normandy inuadeth England.

did informe him, That it was expedient, that his Eſtate ſhould ſtrongly be ſupported againſt the hazards of future Time, and his brothers Title. Wherefore (hauing ſeized vpon the plentifull heapes of the laſt kings Treaſure) he diſperſed them frankly into the hands of ſuch, as vpon all occaſions, and in all dangers, were able to affoord him their beſt counſell, and the beſt reliefe. Then hee dignified ſuch as were great, with the greateſt Offices; and with ample Titles of much Honour: And mitigated the rigour of the former new Lawes; and promiſed reſtitution of the old. His care was great, that in Weights and in Meaſures there might be no defect: but that all, in all places, ſhould be fewred by ſuch Standards as he had made. He alſo acquited the People from the Taxe of *Dane-gelt*; and from all other vnjuſt payments and demaunds impoſed vpon them by the two former kings. He gaue free libertie to the Nobles and Gentlemen of this Realme (for their pleaſure, and better recreation) to incloſe Parkes for Deere, and free Warrens for their Conies, and ſuch like Game. And as Traitors to his Vertues, State, and kingly Gouernment, he exiled and baniſhed from his Court and Preſence all baſe Flatterers; Niceneſſe in Behauiour, Luxuriouſneſſe in Conuerſation; Sumptuouſneſſe in Apparell; and Superfluitie in Dyet. He ordained puniſhments by death for all ſuch as violently ſpoyled or robbed in the High wayes. With indefatigable trauell and paine hee corrected and reformed the monſtrous Pride, intolerable Couetouſneſſe, and ſecure Negligence and Slouth of the Clergie. He recalled from Baniſhment *Anſelme*, and reſtored him to his Archbiſhopricke of *Canterburie*: and gaue him full power to aſſemble Conuocations and Synods at his pleaſure, for the amendment of ſuch things as were vnſufferable in the Church. He left vnto the Pope his power and authoritie to inueſt Biſhops, by giuing to them the Ring, the Croſſe, and the Paſtorall Staffe. All ſuch Eccleſiaſticall Promotions and Dignities, as, by the lewd aduice and counſell of *Reynulph*, Biſhop of *Durham*, his brother had ſeized into his owne hands, and conuerted to his owne vſe; he voluntarily and freely conferred vpon Honeſt, Graue, Learned, and Worthie Men: and committed the ſaid Biſhop a priſoner to the Tower of *London*; from whence he afterwards eſcaped, and eagerly incited *Robert*, Duke of *Normandie*, by the Sword to lay his clayme to this kingdome. Who thereupon (to maintaine his demaund in that behalfe) rayſed a ſtrong Armie; which he intended, with all conuenient expedition, to tranſport into this Realme. But as king *Henrie*, by thoſe precedent prouiſions, had endeared himſelfe in the Peoples loue: ſo had he the more confirmed

firmed it, by taking to wife *Mawlde*, the ſiſter of *Edgar*, King of Scots, and daughter vnto *Malcolyne*, by *Margaret* his wife, ſiſter to *Edgar Adelinge* (who died without iſſue) and daughter to King *Edward*, the ſonne of *Edmund Iron-ſide*, the victorious and valiant King of the *Saxons*.

King Henries title made ſtronger by his marriage.

When Duke *Robert*, with his Armie, was arriued in *England*, the noyſe of Trumpets, the ſound of Drummes, and the ſwarming multitudes of well-approued Souldiors, fit for the Warre, affoorded none other thing but a fearefull expectation of much trouble. But as a threatening lowring Cloud is ſometimes diſperſed by a faire ſhining Sunne: ſo theſe approaching conflicts (by the diſcreete mediation and counſell of worthie friends) were ſuddenly preuented; and a friendly peace, betwixt the two brothers, was louingly concluded, vpon ſuch like conditions, as formerly had beene agreed on in *William Rufus* his daies: whereat the *Norman* Lords were much diſpleaſed, and returned diſcontented with their Lord.

A peace concluded betwixt the two brethren.

But ſuch were the malignant ſpirits of the Enuious; or ſuch was the greedie diſpoſition of thoſe who were Couetous; or ſo eager was the Kings appetite to enlarge his Dominion: that manie great quarrels, for ſmall and trifling cauſes, began vpon the ſuddaine to preſent themſelues vnto thoſe two brethren. Inſomuch, that King *Henrie* paſſed with a ſufficient and a well-ordered Armie into *Normandie*: where he was aſſiſted by manie of the Dukes diſcontented Nobles. By meanes whereof, the King (in ſundrie skirmiſhes and conflicts) ſo preuailed, that with little danger, and ſmall reſiſtance, hee chaſed the forſaken Duke from place to place; and wonne from him the Cities of *Roan*, *Cane*, *Valoys*, and manie others: and then hee returned into *England* with much honour.

The King inuadeth, and preuaileth in Normandie.

The Duke is forſaken by his Nobles and Gentrie.

The Duke perceiuing that his Lords and Gentrie refuſed to giue him anie helpe; and that the Kings Eſtate, Strength, and Riches ſo encreaſed, that no hope of recouerie (by ſtriuing and by ſtrugling) was left vnto him, ſubmitted himſelfe to his two Enemies, Time and Fortune, (the ſcornefull deluders of ſuch as repoſe their confidence vpon them) and came ſecretly and priuatly into *England*; preſented himſelfe to the King his brother; and referred to his owne cenſure and will, both himſelfe, his Duchie, and all Debates and Controuerſies whatſoeuer. But the King (eyther becauſe hee knew that the Duke was too vnconſtant; or for that ſome ſecret whiſperers had prepared him to prejudicate his brothers Truth, and honeſt Meaning) with

The Dukes ſubmiſſion is ſcornefully deſpiſed.

with an eſtranged countenance, and a diſdainefull eye, departed vnkindly from the diſtreſſed and perplexed Duke; coyly refuſing to accept of his ſubmiſſion, which in all humilitie by him was profered.

The Duke returneth, and the King followeth.

The Duke (being pierced to the heart, that his misfortunes ſhould ſo much wrong him) returned with all expedition into his owne Countrey; reſoluing, That in the open Field he would rather die as a valiant man, than thus be trampled on by Diſhonour and by Diſgrace. And the king (conjecturing rightly what he pretended) followed him with many thouſands of men: and ſo often he encountred the weake Duke with his great ſtrength, that within few dayes he tooke him, and brought him as a priſoner into *England:* where (becauſe he hearkened to Natures enticement; which perſuaded him to ſeeke his libertie, and to practiſe his eſcape) both his eyes (by the kings commaundement) were plucked out. After which time he liued as a miſerable and as a wretched captiue more than the ſpace of twentie yeares. At length, being dead, in *Gloceſter* he was buried.

The Duke is taken, and his eyes are put out.

About the ſame time *Robert Belaſme*, Earle of *Shrewsburie*, trayterouſly did rebell: but wanting Wealth, Wit, Courage, and Strength (the foure Champions of the ſtrongeſt Field) he was enforced to flye into *Normandie*. Where finding *William*, Earle of *Mortaigne* and of *Cornwall*, much diſpleaſed with the king, for that (as he ſurmiſed) he kept from him vnjuſtly the Earledome of *Kent*; he ſo much inſinuated himſelfe into his loue and counſels, that eaſily he perſuaded him to rebell. So both of them joyning both their forces together, they made a goodly ſhew, as if they would work wonders. But ſmall oppoſition enforced them to take a plaine view of their raſh errors; and (leauing that which they had) to make hard ſhifts for the ſafegard of themſelues. Wherein their ill ſucceſſe was a juſt reward for their foule offence: for by the kings Power they were taken, and by him held as priſoners whileſt they liued.

A Rebellion by the Earles of Shrewsburie and of Mortaigne.

They are taken, and impriſoned.

The king hauing now caſt anchor, as he was reſolued, in a ſafe harborow; and nothing fearing the blaſts of any Fortune which might attempt to ſhake his ſettlement in this kingdome: and finding that manie inconueniences did daily preſſe him with much diſhonor and diſgrace; becauſe he intermedled not with the Temporalties of Biſhoprickes when they were vacant; nor with the inueſture of Biſhops, as his Anceſtors had done: and being informed, That thoſe things were inſeparable incidents vnto his Crowne; and that his neglect to vſe them depriued him not of his

New troubles betwixt the King and the Archbiſhop of Canterburie about the Temporalties of the Clergie and inueſture of Biſhops.

his Right vnto them; reſolued, That he would not any longer forbeare to chalenge, and to put in practiſe, thoſe things which ſo juſtly did belong vnto him. Whereat *Anſelme*, the Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, was much diſpleaſed; and did vtterly refuſe to conſecrate ſuch new Biſhops, as had receiued their Inueſtures from the king. But *Gerald*, then Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, cheerefully performed that Ceremonie, vpon the kings commaund.

Anſelme goeth to Rome the ſecond time, & complaineth to Pope Paſcal the ſecond.

This new quarrell tranſported *Anſelme* the ſecond time from *England* vnto *Rome*: where he complayned to Pope *Paſchal* the ſecond of thoſe, and of manie other, wrongs: all which were controuerted, and debated with the ſtrongeſt oppoſitions on either partie. But two yeares after, *Anſelme* (with the licence and fauour of the king) returned: and in a Synod of the Clergie, holden by him in *London*, by the Popes authoritie, it was enacted, That from thenceforth no Temporall man ſhould giue Inueſture to any Biſhop by the Croſſe and Ring.

The Archbiſhop preuaileth.

Within three yeares after, *Anſelme* died: and the Temporalties of that Dignitie being ſeized into the kings hands, were (for the ſpace of fiue yeares) taken, receiued, and conuerted to the kings vſe. And if at anie time (as hee was often) hee were entreated by the Biſhops to conferre that See vpon ſome other; his anſwere was, That he onely kept it for a ſufficient and a worthie man.

The King entreth vpon the Temporalties of the Archbiſhop of Canterburie.

The Biſhoprick of Ely founded in Anno 1108.

In the yeare of our Lord one thouſand one hundred and eight, hee erected the Biſhopricke of *Ely*, and endowed it with large and honourable Poſſeſſions: which wonne him much fauour with the Pope, and procured him the loue of his owne Clergie.

Normandie inuaded.

Thus, when the King (for a few yeares) had enjoyed the benefite of an happie Peace, and held all *Normandie* ſubject to his owne commaund; his tranquilitie and his pleaſure were enuied by *Lewis le Groſſe*, then king of *France*: who firſt of all procured *Fulke*, Earle of *Angeou* (vpon a weake pretence) to ſeize vpon the Countrey of *Mayne*; and then animated *Baldwyne*, Earle of *Flanders*, to declare againſt the king in Armes, for the with-holding of a yearely penſion of three hundred markes; which the Conquerour gaue onely vnto *Baldwyne*, the fifth Earle of *Flanders*, during his life. But the ſame had afterwards beene payd to his Sonne, and Nephew, by the courteſie of the ſucceeding kings; becauſe the Conquerour had beene well aſſiſted in his Warres with *England* by the ſaid *Baldwyne* the fifth. All theſe made ſtrong preparations to inuade the Kings Duchie of *Normandie*: But the newes

The King ſayleth into Normandie, & preuaileth

newes thereof rowſed the King from his bed of eaſe; filled him full with Princely reſolutions; occaſioned him to paſſe the Sea with an Armie of rough and tough Nobles, Gentrie, and common Souldiors. And ſhortly after his landing (looſing no time) he ſet vpon the Earle of *Angeou* and his aſſociates: And after he had beaten him ſoundly on euerie ſide, he enforced him to ſaue himſelfe by a ſhamefull flight.

Another victorie.

And neere vnto the Towne of *Nice* (which was ſurprized and holden by the King of *France*) King *Henrie* encountred the other two.

This Battaile was made famous by the continuance of nine houres; and was on all parts fought with ſuch eager and manlike reſolution, that albeit the King of *England* wonne the Field, and had the long chaſe of his flying enemies; yet he boldly and truly would confeſſe, that hee then fought not for victorie, but for his life.

A peace is concluded.

At length, when the heat of Anger was well quenched, and when manie lay cold on the floore of death, who in their life times had blowne the coales of contention betweene thoſe foure Princes; they all were reconciled vnto peace: and the King married to his eldeſt ſonne *William* the daughter of the ſaid *Fulke*. But in

A Mariage.

their journey towards *England*, the ſaid young Princes, *Richard*, and *Marie* Counteſſe of *Perch*, two others of the Kings children;

A great misfortune.

his Neece *Lucie*, with her husband the Earle of *Cheſter*; and more than an hundred and foureſcore others, were vnfortunately drowned by the careleſſe folly of the drunken Mariners.

Drunkennes.

This vnexpected newes (being accompanied with manie millions of ſorrowes, and of dolefull paſſions) much grieued the King: but made him not heartleſſe, as moſt Princes would haue beene in the like caſe. For Wiſdome had ſufficiently inſtructed him, with

The Kings admirable patience.

patience to ſuſtaine and beare thoſe burthens, which could not by any meanes be ſhaken off. And likewiſe, the King was at that time affoorded but little leiſure to fixe his cogitations on thoſe miſhaps, becauſe the obſtinate Rebellion of the *Welchmen* drew him vnwillingly into a new Warre. For when he ſaw and perceiued, that though he were a King, yet vrgent neceſſitie commaunded him to Armes; and that Iuſtice did require him (by the Sword) to judge and to execute thoſe lewd and graceleſſe Malefactors: hee marched with a ſtrong Power into *Wales*;

The Welchmen rebell, and are ſubdued.

when the Rebels (truſting ouer-much to their owne valour; which little, or nothing at all, helpeth in Treaſonable Plots and Imployments) reſolued to abide the vtmoſt puſh of their fortune:

tune: which yeelded to the King a ſpeedie and a ſucceſſefull end of thoſe Warres. For (with little danger, and as ſmall a loſſe) he gaue them the ouerthrow, and permitted the waſtfull deuouring ſwords of his aſſociates to ſurfet vpon the carkaſſes of thoſe Rebels; whome neither gentle vſage, nor former executions of that nature, could perſuade to performe thoſe duties which good ſubjects doe owe vnto their Prince.

Then returned the King, loaden with much honour, and was joyfully receiued by all his people; eſpecially by *Mauld* his daughter; whome he forthwith ſent to be married vnto the Emperour *Henrie* the fifth, her affied husband, with a princely portion of Siluer and of Gold; which (in the nature of a Taxe) was leuied vpon the common people of their Land; which he tooke for an ayde towards her marriage. And the ſame cuſtome, for the marriage of the eldeſt daughter of the Kings of this Realme, hath beene and is continued vnto this day.

Mauld the kings daughter married to the Emperour Henrie the fifth.

Aid pur file marrier.

At the ſame time he deuiſed and ordered the manner and faſhion of a Court in Parliament; appointing it to conſiſt of the three Eſtates, of which himſelfe was the Head: So that his Lawes, being made by the conſents of all, were not diſliked of anie.

Anno 1114. *The High Court of Parliament firſt eſtabliſhed at Salisburie in April.*

It chaunced, that about fiue yeares after the death of *Anſelme*, *Ralph*, Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, was by the King appointed to ſucceede him; and (notwithſtanding all former Counſels, Decrees, Commaundements, Letters, and Threatenings from the Pope) he receiued his Inueſture from the King. Then died the Archbiſhop of *Yorke:* To which See *Thurſton*, the kings Chapleine, ſhould haue beene preferred. But Pride hauing a more large rule and dominion in him, than Lowlineſſe and Humilitie; hee refuſed to ſweare obedience to the See of *Canterburie*; which his predeceſſors had both ſworne and performed. And becauſe the king (diſliking his obſtinacie) would not inueſt him; he appealed, and went to *Rome:* where (by the fauor of ſome Cardinals, who had the Popes Cenſure at their commaund) he ſo preuailed, that the Pope not onely freed him of his ſaid obedience and ſubjection, but alſo inueſted him, and gaue him the Pale: whereat the king was extraordinarily diſpleaſed, and prohibited his returne. But in the end (the Popes threatenings menacing nothing but Curſes, Suſpenſions, Excommunications, and ſuch like) he was permitted to returne, and to enjoy the dignitie of his Place.

The King inueſteth the Archbiſhop of Canterburie.

Pride.

Thurſton inueſted by the Pope.
The King is highly diſpleaſed.
Thurſton preuaileth, and the King yeeldeth.

In the ſeuen and twentieth yeare of his Raigne died the Emperour *Henrie* the fifth, not hauing anie iſſue by *Mauld* the Kings daughter

daughter and heire. At which time ſhee being aged about foure and twentie yeares, and being much ſued vnto by moſt of the greateſt Princes of the Chriſtian World; the king (to ſtrengthen his Realme againſt the kings of *France*) married her to *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, the ſonne and heire apparant of *Fulke*, then Earle of *Angeou*. By whome ſhe had iſſue three ſonnes: *Henrie*, who was (after *Stephen*) king; *Geoffrey*, and *William*.

Mauld the Empreſſe married to Geoffrey Plantagenet.

Her iſſue.

This faire off-ſpring enriched the king with the trueſt endowment of good content; for that (as he conceiued) he ſaw in them the ſetled continuance of his Line in the Crowne of this Realme. And (to make it the more ſure) within the ſpace of fiue yeares hee tooke three ſolemne Oathes of his Nobilitie and greateſt Officers of his kingdome, That with their beſt aduice, and with the hazard of their goods, lands, liues, and fortune, they ſhould ſupport and maintaine the ſucceſſion of his daughter, and of her heires.

An oath to maintaine the ſucceſſion of the Crowne in the Kings Line.

Finally, when he had raigned more than fiue and thirtie yeares, he ſurfetted on a Lamprey; of which he languiſhed a few dayes, and died; and was honourably buried in the Abbey of *Reading*, which himſelfe had founded.

The King ſurfeteth and dieth.

This king was Wiſe, Learned, Milde, Valiant, and Iuſt, beyond moſt of his Predeceſſors; more enclined to Peace than vnto Warre: ſo that hee made Warre his Champion ſtoutly to chalenge his Rights, and to reuenge his Wrongs. He neuer leuied but two Taxes vpon his People: the firſt was, to maintaine his Warres againſt the king of *France*: and the ſecond was, to preferre his daughter in marriage with the Emperour. He waxed rich with his owne, and yet he was very liberall: but he onely extended his bountie to ſuch as merited it by their publike Seruice; and hee confined his Gifts within the Limits of Thrift and of Meaſure. He eſtabliſhed Lawes, which were profitable to ſuch as were vertuous; but ſharpe vnto malefactors who did tranſgreſſe: againſt whome he cauſed them to be put in execution with more Seueritie than Mercie: he being perſuaded, that Pitie extended to ſuch as were wicked, hardened them in their ſinne, and too much encouraged ſuch, as nothing but correction could either terrifie or reforme. To his friends he was a ſure Pillar, whereunto in all neceſſities they might boldly leane: and to his enemies he was rough and ſtiffe, vntill time preſented occaſion of more loue; and then he was verie flexible, and eaſie to be reconciled. And, as he would neuer forget good ſeruice done, nor anie good turnes performed for him: ſo would he ſeldome, or neuer, take reſt, vntill by ſome worthie gift, or correſpondent requitall, he had ſhewed himſelfe thankfull to ſuch as deſerued well. He

was

was too laſciuious in his courſe of life; vſing manie concubines: by whome he had twelue knowne baſtards. He erected the two Biſhoprickes of *Ely*, and of *Carelyle*; and founded the Monaſteries of *Circeſter*, *Reading*, and *Shyrborne*; with the Priorie of *Dunſtable*, and ſome others: all which he beautified with manie Priuiledges and Poſſeſſions, anſwerable to their Dignities and Charge.

Yet did he not retaine the chiefeſt roome in the Clergies loue: becauſe that (after the death of *Anſelme*) hee rejected the Popes Decrees, to which he had formerly ſubjected himſelfe: and inueſted Biſhops; receiued Homage of Prelates; ſeized their Temporalties, when their Sees were vacant; gaue no allowance to any Canons of the Church, except they were ratified and confirmed by the King; compounded with Prieſts for annuall penſions, to keepe their wiues, or to take them (though vnto them the holy eſtate of Matrimonie was forbidden:) which penſions he enforced them to pay, whether they had wiues or no.

Thus (in this King) ended the iſſues males of the Conquerour: and the Crowne of this Realme was deuolued to his generall Heires.

* * *

THE HISTORIE OF KING STEPHEN.

HE experience of all Ages hath made sufficient proofe, that the eager appetite which most Men haue to gaine Wealth and Riches, hath made them careleſſe to performe thoſe common Duties, which doe belong to Honeſtie and to Right. But if a Kingdome may be obtained (though with the breach of a moſt ſolemne Oath) no ſcruple is then made. For the deſire of Soueraignetie, and to enjoy a Crowne, makes men play faſt and looſe, and to hazard the loſſe of their Soules, by the wilfull periurious violating of their Faith.

Stephen vſurpeth.

This proued too true at this time: For albeit that *Stephen* Earle of *Boloigne*, the ſonne and heire apparant of *Stephen* Earle of *Bloys*, and of *Adela* the Conquerours Daughter, was one of the chiefeſt, whome king *Henrie* the firſt had obliged by manie ſolemne and publicke Oathes, to further the ſucceſſion of *Mauld* the Empreſſe, being his Daughter; and of her children: yet (when the king was dead) hee finding, that all the Nobles (though ſworne as himſelfe was) applyed themſelues to wait vpon his pleaſure: he either vtterly forgot, or (at leaſt) he cared not for the vowes of former times; but cauſed himſelfe to be crowned king.

The former Oath is forgotten.

1135.

And ſo well was hee inſtructed by the former examples of his Progenitors; that, as they did, ſo did hee endeuour (by Wiſdome, and by Policie) to lay a ſure Foundation to his Eſtate. *Good policie.* And becauſe Riches are the Synewes and the Strength of the ſtrongeſt Kings; hee therefore (to enrich himſelfe) ſeized vpon the Treaſure of his vncle, the laſt deceaſed King: Which hee cloſed not vp in Cheſts, or in Bagges, as idle Archers doe their Arrowes in their Quiuers, when (for their honeſt recreation) they ſhould ſhoote: but with a large and an open hand hee bountifully diſpoſed of them among ſuch, as eyther by Armes, or by Counſell, were beſt likely to ſtand him in the greateſt ſtead. *The Kings liberalitie.* He alſo created ſundrie Noblemen: and dignified manie others with the honourable Title of Knighthood; whoſe loue by thoſe meanes he procured. And (becauſe benefits receiued doe more pleaſe the vulgar and common ſort of People, than Right or Reaſon can doe) he therefore releaſed vnto them the *Dane-geit*, and all other extraordinarie Burthens and Exactions whatſoeuer: cauſing a large Charter thereof, and of the mitigation of the Seueritie and Penalties of ſundrie Lawes, to be made; and bound himſelfe by a ſolemne Oath to keepe and to obſerue the ſame. *Priuiledges graunted to the Clergie.* He alſo renounced the future Seiſures of all Eccleſiaſticall Dignities and Promotions, when they ſhould become vacant. Hee gaue to the Church and Church-men ſuch gracefull and profitable Priuiledges and Immunities as they would demaund. And (among other things) he freely exempted them from the authoritie of the Temporall Magiſtrate, for all offences whatſoeuer; except the Ordinarie ſhould bee pleaſed, that hee ſhould deale therewith. Finally, he endeuoured to doe all things juſtly, and pleaſing vnto all. *Caſtles and Fortreſſes erected.* To preuent ſuddaine Eruptions, Rebellions, and Incurſions, tending to the generall diſturbance of the common Peace; by hauing manie ſtrong and fortified places for good defence: himſelfe erected manie Forts, Fortreſſes, Bulwarkes, and Caſtles; and licenced his Nobles, and his Gentrie, and Clergie, to doe the like. He gaue vnto *Dauid* the King of *Scots*, and vncle to *Mauld* the Empreſſe (becauſe hee ſhould not ſecond her in her demaunds, or warlike attempts) the whole Prouince of *Cumberland*; and created his eldeſt ſonne *Henrie* Earle of *Huntingdon*. *The Scots flattered by the King.* Yet notwithſtanding, not long after (in her quarrell) hee entred into the Northren parts of this Kingdome; which hee tormented with fire and ſword. *The King of Scots ouerthrowne by the Archbiſhop of Yorke.* But in the end he was encountred by *Thurſton*, then Archbiſhop of *Yorke*; who compelled him (being purſued with vnſpeakable dangers) to flye into *Scotland*;

land; and to leaue behinde him, dead vpon the ground, more than tenne thouſand men of his Armie.

In the ſixt yeare of his Raigne, *Mauld* the Empreſſe, being accompanied with her baſe brother, *Robert*, Earle of *Gloceſter*, landed with an armie in *England*; and was quickly ſtrengthened and emboldened in her Enterpriſe by the plentifull acceſſe of manie of the *Engliſh*, and of *Raynulph* Earle of *Cheſter*, with a luſtie crew of bold and forward *Welchmen*. Hereupon the King (impoſing no confidence in delay; but Experience inſtructing him, that aduiſed Expedition is the chiefeſt enabler of good ſucceſſe) leuied a ſtrong armie; and marched with good reſolution againſt the Empreſſe, and her Forces: who greeted him with ſuch Muſicke as her warlike Troupes did gallantly preſent. So that a cruell and a bloudie Battaile (with equall hopes) for manie houres was fought betweene them. But at length, the Kings common Souldiors (ſtriuing faintly, and, as cowards, rather endeuouring to ſaue themſelues by flight, than manfully to defend their King) did baſely leaue the King: who, with his Nobles and Gentrie, ſcorning to turne their backes, maintained their part, with as much courage as manhood could affoord; till (in the end) the King was taken, and committed to the Caſtle of *Briſtoll*: where hee remayned a priſoner about the ſpace of three moneths; and was at the laſt deliuered, to free the Earle of *Gloceſter*, who had beene taken, and was impriſoned by the Queene.

Mauld the Empreſſe landeth in England.

King Stephen ouerthrowne.

King Stephen taken priſoner.

King Stephen is ſet at libertie.

After this victorie thus obtained, the Empreſſe (with manie honourable Triumphs and Solemnities) was receiued into the Cities of *Circeſter*, *Oxford*, *Wincheſter*, and *London*. But the *Londoners* deſiring the Reſtitution of King *Edwards* Lawes, and not obtaining their requeſt) conſulted to ſurprize the Empreſſe, and to deliuer her vnto the King. By meanes whereof, good counſell aduiſed her to flye: which ſuddainely ſhe did; and came vnto *Oxford*: Where (within few dayes, and vnexpectedly) ſhee was enuironed with a ſtrong Siege: So that deſpaire of good ſucceſſe dis-heartening her, and teaching her a readie meanes for her eſcape; taking the benefit of the Snow (which at that time lay thicke vpon the ground) ſhe, with her chiefeſt complices, apparrelling themſelues in white linnen, ſecretly iſſued forth; and poſting with all ſpeede towards the Sea, they embarked themſelues, and ſayled into *Normandie*.

The Londoners attempt to ſurprize the Empreſſe

The Empreſſe beſieged in Oxford.

A politike flight.

Manie yeares together, after theſe turmoyles, this Realme enjoyed a bleſſed Peace: And in the ſeuenteenth yeare of this Kings Raigne

Henry Short-Mantel heire apparant to the Empreſſe.

Raigne died the moſt valorous and hardie knight *Raynulph* Earle of *Cheſter:* and ſo did *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, husband to the Empreſſe. And *Henrie*, ſurnamed *Short-Mantle*, her eldeſt ſonne, tooke to wife *Elianor*, the daughter and heire of the Earle of *Poytou*: which *Elianor* not long before (for neereneſſe in bloud, and after ſhe had borne him two daughters) was diuorced from *Lewis* the ſeuenth, then King of *France*. So that Prince *Henrie* was now Duke of *Normandie*, in the right of his Mother; Earle of *Angeou* by deſcent from his Father; and Earle of *Poytou* in the right of his wife: by whome (not long after) he alſo had the Earledome of *Tholouſe*.

This worthie Prince (by manie of his friends and valiant men of Warre, who longed to haue employment in ſo faire a journey) was incited to leuie a ſtrong armie, and to tranſport them into *England*; and by their helpe, and the aſſiſtance of other welwillers, to attempt the recouerie of his Right: and the rather, for that king *Stephen*, and *Euſtace* his onely ſonne, did now begin to warre vpon manie of thoſe, who held their Caſtles for the Prince his vſe. His ſtrong Expectation, and hope to be enthroned in this Kingdome, through the fauour of diuers Lords and Commons of this Realme; eaſily perſuaded him to lend a liſtening eare to their whiſperings: So that to giue vnto them good content, and to forward the attayning of his owne deſires, hee rayſed a ſtrong power of willing and able men of Warre. Which (beeing brauely conducted by noble Captaines, well skilled in thoſe Affaires) arriued ſafely in *England*: where King *Stephen* and his ſonne diſdained to be idle; for they had prouided with an equall ſtrength to encounter him.

Henry Short-Mantel inuadeth England.

Both armies had daily newes the one from the other: they threatned much, did ſomewhat, but it was but little: Yet in thoſe Expeditions, *Euſtace* the kings ſonne by miſaduenture was vnfortunately drowned; which ouercame the king with infinite paſſions of ſorrow and extreame griefe. But it made a quiet end of this quarrell. For now, the king (not hauing anie ſonne which might ſucceed him) was well pleaſed to lend a liſtening eare to the faire proffer of a friendly Peace. And thereupon hee adopted Prince *Henrie* for his Sonne; proclaymed him to bee the Heire apparant of his Crowne; gaue him manie honourable and kingly Gifts; aſſured him of his vnchangeable loue and friendſhip.

Prince Euſtace drowned

The quarrell is compounded & ended.

And by theſe meanes all Armes were caſt aſide, and Peace tri-

triumphed; hauing gotten a certaine and a ſure Victorie with few blowes. And the Prince, with his followers, returned into *Normandie:* where they were with much honour and incredible joy receiued.

And the next yeare after, king *Stephen* died, when hee had raigned almoſt nineteene yeares; and lyeth buried in the Abbey of *Feuerſham* in *Kent*, which himſelfe had founded.

King Stephen dieth.

And by the happie Succeſſion of this *Henrie*, the *Saxon* Bloud was againe reſtored vnto the Imperiall Crowne of this Realme.

The Saxons bloud reſtored to the Crowne of England. See the deſcent in the Raigne of King Henrie the firſt.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE SECOND.

WHEN *Henrie* was returned into *Normandie*; the *French* King (fearing least Time, and his Fortunes, would make him too puissant and too great for his bordering Neighbours; and intending to deale roughly with him, before he should be the absolute Master and Commander of his owne strength) very iniuriously seized vpon diuers of his Fortresses and Castles in *Normandie*, and elsewhere, which (questionlesse) ought to haue beene subiect to his Gouernment. But *Henrie* (being wise, and full of courage and heroicall Magnimitie; and foreseeing, that if hee should shrinke as a coward, and not make himselfe knowne by his valour to the world, when the wrongs which were done vnto him were too apparant) raysed a faire Armie: and (for the regayning of one of those his Castles) he girded it round about with a strong Siege. And whilest he was thus employed to winne his right, the newes of King *Stephens* death came freshly vnto his eares. And (to preuent such vsurpation, as oftentimes, in the absence of the lawfull Kings, depriueth them of their Crownes) he was by his neerest and dearest friends aduised to abandon the Siege; and, without tarrying, to transport himselfe

Henry Short-Mantels valour and courage.

He sayleth speedily into England: but first winneth the Castle which he had besieged.

himſelfe into *England*. But his anſwere was full of diſcretion and true valour to this effect: *The Kingdome of England* (quoth hee) *ſhall henceforth be at my commaund, in deſpight of thoſe who dare to croſſe mee moſt: And ſo ſhall theſe intruding Frenchmen ere I goe hence.*

A reſolute ſpeech.

This Reſolution redoubled his honour among his friends; and ſo it did among his enemies. For when the beſieged were informed what he had ſaid and determined (fearing the euent, if obſtinately they ſhould detaine him there too long) they ſurrendred the Caſtle, and ſubmitted themſelues to his mercie: who receiued it and them with a fauourable and gracious acceptance. And then giuing ſuch directions as both the time and occaſions did require, and being accompanied with manie Lords and Gentlemen of the beſt and chiefeſt ranke; he ſayled with a

1154. proſperous winde into *England:* where (not long after) hee was crowned King.

The King reformeth the Lawes.

The ſingular zeale and loue which he bare to the furtherance of Iuſtice, and to the execution thereof, appeared manifeſtly by two Actions of his, performed: the one in the beginning; and the other, towards the later end of his Raigne. For firſt hee made an eſpeciall choiſe of certaine men, who were verie honeſt, vpright, and beſt learned in the Lawes of this Realme: by whoſe induſtrious labours and trauailes hee refined and reformed the common Lawes; making them to be more tolerable and profitable vnto his People. And towards the end of his dayes hee diuided his whole Kingdome into ſix ſeuerall Circuits; and (for the adminiſtration of Iuſtice, and for the tryals of Cauſes betwixt men and men, for the better eaſe and comfort of his Subiects) hee appointed certaine Iudges twice in euerie yeare to ride, and to trauaile through thoſe Circuits: which courſe and order is carefully continued at this day.

England diuided into Circuits: into which Iudges were ſent, to eaſe the people.

Strangers baniſhed: and the cauſe why

Hee alſo baniſhed the greateſt part of Strangers, who (in thoſe dayes) by multitudes flocked hither; and by their extraordinarie Sparing, and painefull Induſtrie, procured to themſelues much Wealth, and beggered ſuch as were Natiues borne.

Oath-breakers baniſhed.

Hee alſo exiled manie of the Nobles, who contrarie to their publike Oathes, Duties, and Conſciences, had more than ordinarily adhered vnto King *Stephen:* beeing fully reſolued, That the Cogitations of their owne Guiltineſſe, in that behalfe, would neuer ſuffer them to be heartie and faithfull vnto him.

Hee

Hee differed much from the opinion of his laſt predeceſſor; and affirmed, That ſtrong Forts and Caſtles, erected and maintained in the Heart or Bodie of a Kingdome, did rather animate great men, vpon all diſpleaſures, to reuolt, than in anie ſort containe them within the bounds and limits of their Obedience, and of their Dutie: wherefore he cauſed them to be raſed (for the greater number) to the ground.

Caſtles politikely razed, and ouerthrowne.

Hee alſo ſeized into his owne hands ſuch Territories, Manors, Lordſhips, and Poſſeſſions, as his Predeceſſors had eyther giuen, or ſold, from the Crowne: holding it to be the dutie of euerie Subiect, to refuſe the Gift or Purchaſe of ſuch things, as doe ſo immediately concerne the Honour and Maintenance of the King.

He ſeizeth on Crowne-lands formerly giuen away

Nota.

And the like he did in the *Northren* Parts; where many great Men, commaunding almoſt as they liſted, had wrought themſelues and their Poſterities into manie Honors, Caſtles, and Manors (without title) which in truth and in deed appertained to the King.

Hee alſo reſumed into his owne hands the Prouinces of *Cumberland*, and of *Northumberland*, together with the Earledome of *Huntingdon*; which *Dauid* the King of *Scots*, and *Henrie* his ſonne, had receiued as a gift from King *Stephen*, becauſe they ſhould not intermeddle in the furtherance of his mother *Mauld* the Empreſſe to her Right and Crowne.

In the thirteenth yeare of his Raigne, he married *Geoffrey* (being one of his younger ſonnes) vnto *Conſtance*, the daughter and heire apparant of *Conaccus* Duke of *Britaine:* who died not long after, and left vnto them that Duchie.

Geoffrey the Kings yonger ſonne is Duke of Britaine.

He alſo affied his younger ſonne *Richard* vnto *Adela*, one of the daughters of *Lewis* the King of *France:* and married his daughter *Mauld* vnto *Henrie* Duke of *Saxonie*. And about the ſame time the Empreſſe his mother died.

Mauld the Empreſſe dieth.

Hee loued Peace (though he were paſſing valiant) becauſe hee found it to be pleaſing and profitable: yet he willingly entred at all times into the Liſts of Warre, when neceſſitie or good reaſon perſuaded him to arme.

Peace preferred before Warre.

When his eſtate was moſt quiet, and freeſt from Warres abroad, or ciuill diſturbances at home; hee would now and then, vpon the ſuddaine, raiſe an Armie, and tranſport them either into *Normandie*, or into *Britaine*, *Angeou*, or other places ſubiect to the Dominion of himſelfe, or of his ſonnes. And himſelfe in perſon vſed to goe with them. And in thoſe places he exerciſed them

The King exerciſed his ſouldiors in warlike negotiations in the time of greateſt peace.

in fortifications, trainings, and lyings in the field, and with other Martiall diſcipline. By meanes whereof he ſetled thoſe Countries in peace, and with good Gouernment made warlike buſineſſes familiar to his Souldiers; and then returned without blowes into *England*. By theſe meanes, when troubles hapned, he little feared: becauſe his men were aptly inured to thoſe things, which moſt properly belong vnto the warres.

The commoditie of his ſo doing.

1174. *Henry the ſecond Conquereth Ireland.*

In the nineteenth yeare of his Raigne (becauſe the Iriſh Nation attempted to deprive him of certaine Territories in that Iland, which were left vnto him by his predeceſſors) hee ſailed thither with a mightie Armie, and fought many victorious battailes, againſt fiue Kings which at that time raigned there. All which he ſubdued, and made ſubiect vnto himſelfe: and became the ſole Lord of all that Countrie; and annexed that Title vnto the Title of his Crowne, and returned honourably into *England*. Such was the ſurpaſſing loue of this worthie King to his eldeſt ſonne *Henrie*, That he cauſed him, and his wife *Margaret* the daughter of the French King, to be twice ſolemnly Crowned in the preſence of his people: (himſelfe the ſecond time, for that day, leauing the Title of a King, and ſeruing as a Sewer at his ſonnes table) whereat his proud ſonne made no wonder, but publikely affirmed, That his father was nothing thereby diſhonoured; For that he was onely the ſonne of an Empreſſe: But he himſelfe was the ſonne both of a King, and alſo of a Queene.

The Kings ſonne twice Crowned King in his fathers dayes.

A proud and an vnthankfull Sonne.

Many Iarres, and quarrels in his later dayes, aroſe betwixt King *Henry* the father and *Lewys* the French King: which at length were decided by ſharpe and bloudy warres. In all which (moſt vnnaturally) *Henry*, *Geffrey* and *Iohn*, the Kings ſonnes: and (moſt vndutifully) *Robert* Earle of *Leiceſter*, and *Hugh* Earle of *Cheſter*, together with *William* then King of *Scots*, tooke part with the French againſt the King. In all which (notwithſtanding) King *Henry* by noble valour and courage did preuaile; and vpon ſubmiſſion granted Pardon to his ſonnes, and all the reſt. Yet were his ſonnes after grieuouſly puniſhed by God. For *Henry* died before his father, in the prime and flower of his ſtrength; And *Iohn*, his ſonne, (who was after King) was poyſoned by a Monke. Yet theſe vnnaturall Rebellions by his owne children, vnto whom he had extended (if wee may beleeue reports) more then the loue, and affection of a worthy father, ſo inwardly perplexed his minde; that ſurfeiting vpon bitter paſſions, occaſioned by their reuolt, he fell into a dangerous Feuer, which the more vexed him, becauſe *Richard* his ſonne had then raiſed an other broyle againſt him. And within foure

Warres betwixt England and France.

Vnnaturall children.

God plagued them.

King Henrie ſorrowing for his childrens rebellions, dieth.

foure dayes after hee died in *Normandie*, when he had Raigned almoſt fiue and twentie yeares; and was buried at *Founteuerard* in *France.*

King Henries deſcription.

The hiſtorie of this Kings Raigne, approueth him to haue been learned, wiſe, politicke, iuſt and valiant: And that (which not a little augmenteth the number of his praiſes) albeit hee were oftentimes engaged in many buſineſſes: Some of them concerning his warres in *France*, *Normandie*, *Angeou*, *Ireland*, and in other places: And ſome of them reſpecting his politicke rule, and Gouernment at home; yet he neuer impoſed, nor leuied vpon his Subiects any extraordinarie taxe, or payment whatſoeuer. Yet left he vnto his ſucceſſor more then nine hundred thouſand pounds in ſiluer and in gold: beſides his Plate, Iewels, Houſhold-ſtuffe, and prouiſion for the warre.

A rich King, who taxed not his people

900000. l.

His vnhappineſſe.

1

2

And though in moſt things proſperitie made him happie: yet in three things, eſpecially, he was moſt vnfortunate and vnhappie. The firſt was the vnnaturall diſobedience, and rebellious reuolts of his owne children. The ſecond, was his inordinate fauour, and vnquenchable luſt, towards *Roſamond* his vnſeparable Concubine: who (being admirably faire, but wantonly conditioned) alienated, and eſtranged his beſt affections, and loue, wholly from the Lady *Elianor* his moſt renowned wife; and made his deſires ſubiect, nay ſlauiſh, vnto her will. So that whilſt ſhee liued, ſhee was ſeldome from his right-hand: And being dead, hee cauſed her, with great ſolemnitie and pompe, to bee ſumptuouſly buried at *Godſtow* beſides *Oxford*; Fixing on her Tombe this Epitaph.

His incontinencie, with the faire Roſamond his Concubine.

Roſamonds Epitaph.

Hic iacet in Tumba Roſa Mundi: Non Roſa-munda:
Non redolet, ſed olet, quæ redolere ſolet.

The Hiſtorie of the Kings troubles with Thomas Becket.

And the third was, the irreconciliable diſſenſion and ſtrife, which hapned betwixt himſelfe and *Thomas Becket*, the proud and inſolent Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*. The which, beginning in the tenth yeare of his Raigne, was proſecuted ſeuen yeares after, with great aſperitie and bitterneſſe, on either partie; as briefely it ſhall appeare.

Theobald, Archbiſhop of *Canterburie* (for what deſert few did know) in ſuch ſort fauoured *Thomas Becket* a *Londoner*, borne of ordinarie parentage, that he made him Archdeacon of his owne Church. And (beeing able to obtaine anie thing of the King, which he did reaſonably craue) hee procured him to be remoued from one Dignitie vnto another, vntill (at length) he was made

Thomas Becket made Lord Chancelor.

made Lord Chancelor of the Realme. This high honour ſo puffed vp *Thomas Becket* with the winde of Pride and vaine-glorie, that now he thought few, or none, exceeded him for his honour and for his vertues. Yet did he carrie himſelfe with ſuch regardfull obſeruance and dutie to the King, that he augmented his Eſtate with the gift of large Territories and Poſſeſſions: which daily made him the more confident of the continuance of his great fortunes.

Thomas Becket is made Archbiſhop of Caterbury. His vnthankfulneſſe. He is inueſted at Rome. He is made the Popes Legate. He proudly ſurrendreth his Chancelorſhip & the great Seale.

At length *Theobald* died; and the King preferred *Thomas Becket* to ſucceed him. But he (being moſt vnthankfull, and reſolued as it ſeemed to play his prankes) ſecretly, and without leaue, trauelled vnto *Rome:* and was inueſted by Pope *Innocent* the ſecond; of whome hee receiued his Pale, and was made a Legate. And then he returned into *England*; and was in great diſfauour with the King. But he (taking little notice of the Kings diſlike) contrarie to the Kings pleaſure, vpon the ſuddaine ſurrendred to the King his Chancelorſhip, and the great Seale. The King enquired diligently for the cauſe why he ſo did. But ſuch was his obſtinate follie and vnthankfulneſſe, that he would not reueale it vnto anie.

The Clergies temporall offences made ſubiect to be tried before the Temporall Iudge.

Auitæ Leges

Theſe jarres betweene the King and the Archbiſhop, emboldened the baſer and the worſer ſort of the Clergie to commit manie great and horrible ſinnes and offences; for which they receiued ſmall puniſhment, becauſe (though their tranſgreſſions were Murthers, Manſlaughters, Thefts, and Robberies) yet they, being to be tryed and adiudged by men of their owne profeſſion, were too too much winked at. So that, by meanes of their careleſneſſe, the Commonweale was much wronged. Wherefore the King ſummoned and aſſembled his High Court of Parliament: In which, that Law, made by king *Stephen*, which exempted the authoritie of the Temporall Iudge to meddle with anie Eccleſiaſticall perſons, for anie crime by them committed whatſoeuer, was aboliſhed; and the ancient Lawes of this Realme, vſed in the times of *Henrie* the firſt, and of others the kings Progenitors, and (which were commonly called *Auitæ Leges*) were reduced to their former validitie and force.

But in theſe proceedings the king was much croſſed and interrupted by the obſtinate and bold frowardneſſe of *Thomas Becket*, and of ſome few other Biſhops; who vnaduiſedly made themſelues partakers of his Faction. But after manie Conferences, Diſputes, and Conſultations, touching thoſe buſineſſes; all the Biſhops (*Becket* onely excepted) ratified and ſubſcribed thoſe newly reui-

reuiued Lawes. But *Becket* would not by anie meanes aſſent thereunto, except hee might inſert this Clauſe, *Saluo ordine ſuo*: Which words would clearely haue annihilated the life and ſubſtance of thoſe Lawes.

Becket would not giue way to thoſe Lawes

His Exception Saluo iure ſuo.

This his follie made the king to bite his lippe, and to ſay little: So that the other Biſhops, much fearing to what end the kings extraordinarie diſpleaſure and diſcontentment would tend, did priuately commune with the Archbiſhop; and prayed him (for the preuenting of future miſchiefes) to ſubmit himſelfe: whereunto he gaue his free conſent; and (as the reſt had done) ſo did he take a ſolemne Oath, to giue allowance to thoſe Lawes. The king forthwith altered the ſtrangeneſſe of his countenance into pleaſing and familiar lookes: he ſpake kindly vnto *Becket*; and aſſured him of his former loue. And being wiſe and politike, and purpoſing to aſſure the Peace of future times, whileſt oportunitie did ſerue: hee cauſed a tripartite Inſtrument to be drawne betwixt himſelfe and the two Archbiſhops, teſtifying this Submiſſion, and this Oath: Two of which parts were forthwith ſubſcribed by the King and by the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*. But *Thomas Becket* (falling into the relapſe of his former follie) did not onely refuſe to doe the like, but expreſſed great Repentance for the former Oath which he had taken. And (not ſo contented) he ſecretly informed the Pope thereof; and of his inward ſorrow for that ſinne. The Pope not onely abſolued him of that Oath, and enioyned him to ſome priuate Penance: but hee alſo required him, without yeelding, ſtoutly to perſiſt (with a ſtrong Reſolution) in his opinion.

Becket is perſuaded: and ſweareth to thoſe Lawes.

Becket againe withſtandeth thoſe Lawes.

Becket is abſolued by the Pope.

Hereupon the kings anger towards *Becket* daily encreaſed more and more. And when this newes from *Rome* was diuulged, his Majeſtie ſeized into his owne hands all ſuch Temporall Lands and Promotions as hee had giuen in former times vnto *Becket*: and required him to render him an account for thirtie thouſand Marks, which (to his vſe) he had receiued when he was Chancelor of this Realme. But boldly hee affirmed, That the king had frankely and freely giuen it vnto him: and that therefore hee would not enter into anie ſuch account. Whereupon the king, to ſatisfie himſelfe, made a ſeizure of ſuch moueable goods as appertained to him.

Beckets temporalties ſeized by the King.

He is called to an accompt for 30000 marks, and refuſeth to accompt.

His moueables are ſeized.

Thus, whileſt the Wheele thus turned, *Thomas Becket*, without the kings Licence, tranſported himſelfe ſecretly vnto *Rome*: and the king (thereby perceiuing that *Becket* intended nothing more than to incenſe the Pope againſt him) ſent his Embaſſadours and Letters

Becket goeth to Rome.

The Pope denieth the Kings requeſt.

He threateneth the king

Letters vnto *Rome:* and by them he ſignified vnto the Pope, how reaſonable his owne demaunds were, and how peruerſely *Thomas Becket* had refuſed to obey. And therefore he entreated the Pope, that he might be depriued of his Place and Dignitie: proteſting, That he would prouide for him and his in ſome other kind. But the Pope not onely denied his requeſt, but with thundering termes he threatened to ſend two Legats into *England*, who ſhould curſe the King, and all his Realme; except, on their demaund, hee reſtored the Archbiſhop both to his Place and Dignitie, and alſo to all ſuch Lands and Mouables, as by the Kings commandement had beene taken from him. And in the meane time hee commended *Becket* to the Abbot of *Pontinyack*, where hee was gently receiued, and kindly entertained as a Monke.

The Kings anger againſt Becket.

But when the King perceiued into what corner the winde did blow, and that the Pope had filled *Becket* with the blaſts of pride and vaine-glorie: he (being more and more exaſperated) ſent vnto the ſaid Abbot, and required him to turne *Becket* out of his houſe, or otherwiſe he proteſted, he would not leaue one Monke of his Order in all *France*.

The King forbiddeth acceſſe from the Pope into England.

He alſo publiſhed certaine Iniunctions againſt the Pope, and all Cardinals, and Legates, which (without his Licence) ſhould preſume to enter into his kingdome.

Beckets friends are baniſhed.

He alſo depriued *Thomas Beckets* neareſt and choiſeſt friends of all ſuch Promotions, Lands, and Subſtance, as they did enioy; and baniſhed them out of the Realme, becauſe (with counſell and with money) they had ioyned with him in this his obſtinacie againſt the king.

The French King vnderhand animateth the Pope.

This round and bitter courſe, more troubled *Becket* then all other precedent paſſages whatſoeuer. And, to encreaſe his griefe, the Abbot of *Pontinyacke* (fearing the euent of the Kings diſpleaſure, if he ſubmitted not himſelfe to his command) gently perſwaded *Becket* to leaue his houſe. Whereof when *Lewis* the French King heard; (albeit his daughter *Margaret* was married vnto *Henrie* the yong King) yet he procured him better entertainment elſewhere, and ſecretly wrote in his behalfe vnto the Pope.

The King ſayleth into France.

He conferreth with Becket.

His offer to Becket.

King *Henrie* (deſiring to ſee an end of theſe troubles, if by any meanes conueniently hee might) vpon the ſuddaine ſailed into *France*. And (in the French Kings preſence) hee conferred with *Becket* oftentimes; and made him this offer, That if (at laſt) hee would take the ſaid Oath againe, and would ſubſcribe the ſaid Inſtrument Tripartite (as himſelfe, and the Archbiſhop of *Yorke* had done to the other two) He ſhould then returne into *England*, Gra-

ced

ced with the Kings eſpeciall fauour: and that hee ſhould enioy his place and dignitie, and be (in ample ſort) reſtored to all things taken from him, and whereof iuſtly hee had beene depriued: And that the like bountie ſhould be extended to his exiled friends. But he proudly anſwered, that if the king would conſent, that hee might ſo ſweare and ſubſcribe with this exception, *Saluo honore Dei*; he then would yeeld. But this exception diſpleaſed the King more then all the reſt had done. For then hee perceiued plainely, that *Becket* intended thereby to expreſſe; That thoſe Lawes tended to the diſhonour of Almightie God: and that therefore hee had a purpoſe no longer to obey them (notwithſtanding he ſhould ſubſcribe and ſweare) then he ſhould pleaſe. But *Becket* told him proudly and plainely, That hee feared none but God: and that (ſith thoſe his Lawes were derogatorie to the auncient cuſtomes, and priuiledges of the Church, and robbed God of his honour) the King (in ſeeking to eſtabliſh them) ſhould not haue his owne will whilſt he liued.

Saluo honore Dei.

Beckets proud reſolution.

The King, failing of his purpoſe, returned into *England*; and not long after, two Legates came to him from *Rome*, to interdict him from comming to the Church, vntill he had in all things whatſoeuer reſtored *Becket*, according to the *Popes* commaunds. High diſpleaſure tranſported the King into *Normandy*: where he conferred againe with *Becket*, but found him ſtill the ſelfe-ſame man. And being deſirous to ſet an end of thoſe troubles: hee gaue him way, and conſented to his returne; and came againe into *England*. And not long after *Becket* followed the King. But the King muttringly repined, that among all ſuch as he had aduanced, there was not one who would endeuour to rid him of ſo dangerous and malapert an enemie.

Two Legats ſent to interdict the king.

He ſayleth into Normandie, but finds no alteration in Becket.

The King is pleaſed that Becket ſhall returne into England.

He alſo receiued a ſtrange welcome of *Henrie* the young king, who exiled him from his Court, and confined him to his owne houſe in *Canterburie*: becauſe (in his abſence) the king in his Parliament deſiring that his ſaid ſonne ſhould be crowned King, the Biſhop of *London*, and three other Biſhops (vpon the kings commandement) had performed thoſe ceremoniall Solemnities, and were ſuſpended by *Becket*, becauſe they preſumed ſo to doe without his leaue; and could not be abſolued by *Becket*, although he had beene entreated therein by both thoſe kings.

The King would faine haue Becket diſpatched.

And within foure dayes after, *Becket* (by foure graceleſſe malefactors) was wickedly murdered in his owne Church: whereof the king was accuſed by the Pope; but he denied it vpon his oath. Yet in regard of his former muttering ſpeeches (which by all con-

Thomas Becket murdred.

The King accuſed.

 jecture

The Kings Penance.

He is whipped.

jecture haſtened his end) the king ſubmitted himſelfe to the Popes Cenſure: Who enjoyned him to warre three yeares in perſon in the Holie Land; which he redeemed by erecting three Houſes of Religion. He was alſo enjoyned to goe from *London* to *Canterburie* bare-footed, to viſit *Beckets* Shryne: which he did; and ſuffered himſelfe to be ſcourged with roddes by euerie Monke there. And thus the king had a bad end of all thoſe Troubles.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING RICHARD *THE FIRST.*

RICHARD, the eldeſt ſonne liuing of *Henrie* the ſecond (being in *Normandie* when his Father died) ſucceeded in his Throne. And (becauſe thoſe Countries wanted ſettlement, and required a longer time of his preſence) aboue all other things he was moſt carefull for the enlargement of Queene *Elianor* his Mother: who by her deceaſed husband was committed to ſtrait Impriſonment, becauſe ſhee loathed, and would not endure, his laſciuious courſe of liuing with his wanton *Roſamond*; but ſharpely reproued him for the ſame. And becauſe ſhee was euerie way vertuous, diſcreete, and wiſe; hee committed the whole Gouernment of this Realme, in his abſence, to her care. And (becauſe her owne Experience had informed her, what anguiſh and what ſorrow poore helpeleſſe Captiues did endure) ſhee ſet at libertie all ſuch as were impriſoned for ordinarie offences, or for ſmall Debts, which her ſelfe did pay: and adminiſtred the Commonweales affaires with great Moderation, Integritie, and Iuſtice, vntill her ſonne the king came home, and was with all Solemnitie and ſtrange Triumphs annointed and crowned king.

A good ſonne but an euill husband.

Queene Elianor is made Regent of England.

Non ignara mali, miſeris ſuccurrere diſcit.

This king (imitating the milde diſpoſition of his mother; and com-

A mercifull King.

commiſerating the troubles of ſuch as were afflicted) freed out of euerie Priſon all ſuch as were his Debtors, or were enthralled for anie tranſgreſſion which concerned himſelfe; and whome, without injuſtice done to others, he might acquite. And in the whole courſe of his Gouernment he ſo prouided, that Iuſtice with Mercie ſhould be extended vnto all.

Too much honor elateth.

He heaped manie Honors and profitable Promotions vpon his brother *Iohn*; whome he created Earle of *Lancaſter*, and gaue vnto him the Prouinces of *Nottingham*, *Deuonſhire*, and *Cornwall*: and married him to the ſole and onely Daughter and Heire of the Earle of *Gloceſter*; from whome he receiued the Lordſhip of that Countrey.

Theſe great and kind fauors required, that he ſhould be thankfull. But oftentimes it happeneth, that as the addition of too much Oyle extinguiſheth the Lampe, which otherwiſe would burne, and yeeld her light; and as the ouer-abundance of too much water, falling vpon a Wheele, maketh it the leſſe ſeruiceable for the vſe to which it is employed: So the conferring of too much Honor, and of too manie Titles of Dignitie, vpon ſuch as are not capable of them all, altereth and changeth their milde and gentle diſpoſitions, and maketh them altogether vnthankefull for thoſe benefits which they haue receiued. And oftentimes they are incited and prouoked thereby to affect things of higher conſequence and moment than are fitting; and to conjecture, that the greateſt fortunes are moſt agreeable to their Eſtates. So that they neuer ceaſe to attempt great things: which in the end will rather be hurtfull to them, than doe them anie good.

An vnthankfull brother.

This proued true betwixt the king and his brother *Iohn*. For when the king had powred on him plentifull ſhowers of his bountie and great abundance; and had aduanced him in Honor, and in Eſtate, aboue all others: his thoughts mounted aboue the Moone, and made him vnnaturally and vnthankfully to affect the Crowne; and to boaſt, That his endowments were ſufficient, and fitting for a king. And though he wanted oportunitie, yet he reſolued to puſh hard for the Crowne, if Time and Fortune would preſent it to him.

Cuer de Lyon.

This king (for his inuincible valour, and haughtie courage) was eſteemed to be almoſt matchleſſe in the Chriſtian world: ſo that he was ſurnamed *Cuer de Lyon*, or the Lyons Heart. And (to ſay the truth) he was ſuch a one, as (vpon good aduice and counſell) dared to attempt anie thing, if it were honourable to be atchieued, and poſſible to be done.

His

His fathers Treasure enriched him exceedingly with great store of Siluer and of Gold. And such was his contempt of Riches, and such was his Bountie to such, as either deserued well, or left in him anie impression of Noble worth, that he bestowed on them great Gifts with such alacritie and cheerefulnesse, that in short time he vnbowelled all his Bagges and Chests; little foreseeing, that future Businesses might require the expence of more than the great Plentie which was left vnto him: and that (when he wanted) he should be enforced to make hard shift to relieue himselfe.

A bountifull King.

In the beginning of his Raigne, the Pope sollicited him with strong perswations, and manie promises of his Blessings, to wage Warre in his owne person against the Turkes in the Holie Land; and to attempt the winning of *Ierusalem* from the Infidels and vnbeleeuing Men: who maliciously opposed themselues against the Incarnation, Passion, and Ascension of Christ Iesus. Which journey he vndertooke, because *Frederick* the Emperour, and *Philip* the second, surnamed *Augustus*, king of *France*, *Leopoldus* then Archduke of *Austria*, and manie other Christian Princes, had engaged themselues (both with Men, Money, and all other Prouisions) to further those Attempts. And thereupon he entred into Couenants with the king of *France*, and the rest of that Vnion, That their generall meeting should be in *Sicilia*: and that such Wealth and Bootie, as GOD and good Fortune should make them Owners of, should equally be shared and diuided among them and theirs.

The King resolueth to warre in the Holy Land vpon the Popes motion

Frederick, Philip, Leopold.

Their Couenants and Agreements.

These things being thus concluded (although the kings profuse Expences, and great Gifts exceeding measure, had made him bare and needie) yet would he not burthen his People with anie Taxe to supplie his wants. But raysing great summes of Money out of his owne Estate; among other things, he sold his Castles of *Barwick* and of *Rokesbrough* to the king of *Scots* for tenne thousand pounds: and the Lordship and Earledome of *Durham* vnto *Hugh* then Bishop of that See, for much money. He also enriched himselfe with Siluer and with Gold, by the Sale of sundrie Honors, Lordships, Manors, Offices, Priuiledges, Royalties, and other things, vnto such as parsimonie and sparing had made Owners and Possessors of great plentie; and did protest, That (for the performing of so great and honorable a Seruice) he was not vnwilling to sell his Citie of *London*, if anie were of abilitie to buy it, rather than he would be chargeable vnto others.

The King in his wants would not taxe his people.

He leuieth money of his owne State.

His willingnesse to vndertake this voyage.

And thus the king hauing furnished himselfe with all prouisions fit and necessarie for his journey; and hauing leuied a strong Armie,

William Longchamp made Regent of England.

The King departeth.

He winnes Cyprus: and ſells it for 30000 marks

A iarre betweene the King and Philip King of France.

King Richard neglected the French Kings anger.

The Chriſtian Princes doe prevaile.

Acon woon.

King Richard trampleth on Leopolds colours.

mie, in which were manie Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, whoſe reſolutions encreaſed his hopes of good ſucceſſe: he committed the principall Gouernment of his Kingdome vnto *William Longchampe*, then Biſhop of *Ely*; who (not long after) was made the Popes Legate. And then he ſayled with his whole Armie to the Iſle of *Cyprus*: which (with braue courage) after manie hot and dangerous Encounters, hee wonne; and ſold the ſame to the Knights Templars for thirtie thouſand Marks.

And from thence (according to his former appointment) he tranſported his Armie into *Sicilia*; where he met with *Philip* the *French* king: and vpon their firſt enter-view, they pleaſed each other with manie paſſages of familiaritie and of loue. But this faire Sunne-ſhine was quickly vayled and couered with a cloud of skorne and diſcontentment. For when the *French* king was denyed to haue anie part or ſhare with king *Richard* in his atchieuement of the Iſle of *Cyprus* (both becauſe hee was abſent when it was taken; and alſo becauſe it was affirmed by king *Richard*, That their Couenant extended onely to ſuch things, as they ſhould winne and gayne in the Holie Land) he waxed angrie, and vſed manie high and diſdainefull tearmes, and made publike ſhew of inward diſcontent. All which king *Richard* did ſet at nought; and told him to his face, That doe what he dared, he ſhould not be a partner in that Bootie.

It ſtood not with king *Philips* honour, to waxe cold ſo ſoone in this great Enterprize, whereon the eyes of all the Chriſtian World were fixed; and daſtardly to returne home. But howſoeuer hee had diſpoſed of himſelfe, and of ſuch Forces as hee commanded, yet king *Richard* was reſolued to goe forth; ſo that (Neceſſitie enforcing them to ſome agreement) they proceeded in their Iourney. In which, they all, and their Confederates, performed manie honourable and wonderfull deedes of Armes; terrifying and daily diminiſhing the *Turkes* Numbers and Forces with continuall ſlaughters, and giuing them but little leyſure, or courage to reſiſt.

And (among manie other ſtrong Townes, Forts, Caſtles, and Garriſons of great ſtrength and importance, which they conquered) they wonne (after a long and a ſharpe Siege) by maine Batteries and reſolute Aſſaults, the ſtoutly defended Citie of *Acon*: Vpon the walls whereof a forward knight aduanced the Banner and the Colours of *Leopold* the Archduke of *Auſtria*. But king *Richard*, skorning that too much Grace and Honour ſhould be done vnto the Duke, and his owne deſerts be thereby ble-

blemiſhed, he hauing firſt of all entred into the Citie, ranne vp vnto the Wall; plucked downe that Banner, and thoſe colours; and trampled them with his feete: Wherat the *French* King was much diſpleaſed, and gaue his tongue libertie to ſpeake great things. But King *Richard* (neglecting his frownes; and laughing at his diſcontent) affirmed, that in ſo doing hee had onely righted himſelfe of thoſe Iniuries which were done to him: And that, if any were diſpoſed to looke ſower thereat, hee was careleſſe of his anger, and in the field would be ready to maintaine his doings againſt any.

The French King is angrie.

King Richards courage.

The French King ſwelling at the heart, to ſee King *Richard* thus careleſſe, reſolute, and bold: And ſeeming to diſtruſt leaſt by ſome ſecret league, or other compact, betwixt King *Richard* and the *Turkes*, ſome danger might aſſaile him and his followers, Hee tooke an vnkind leaue; and carying away with him all ſuch troupes as belonged to the Emperour, to *Leopold*, and to himſelfe, hee left the King of *England*, and returned home.

The forces of the Empire and of the French King and of Leopold, do leaue K. Richard.

This his departure diſcomforted not King *Richard*: But with his owne Souldiours, and with the forces of ſome other Chriſtian Princes, who ſubmitted themſelues to his direction and Gouernement, hee perſiſted in thoſe Warres, and proſecuted his attempts with ſuch conſtancie, and heroicall magnanimitie, that he preuailed, and became Victorious, when the greateſt dangers aſſaulted him moſt to make him feare. And (among many other things which boldly he attempted) hee returned vnto the Ile of *Cyprus*; and by force hee valiantly wonne it from the Knights Templers, vnto whom he had formerly ſold it, and then exchanged it for the Citie of *Ieruſalem*, with *Guy* of *Leſingham* the laſt Chriſtian King; who held, and did poſſeſſe it. By meanes whereof, King *Richard* was ſtiled King of *Ieruſalem*; and ſo were many of his ſucceſſours long after.

King Richard preuaileth.

He winneth Cyprus again

He is ſtiled King of Ieruſalem.

Thus while he became victorious, and daily triumphed ouer the *Turkes* miſeries; his Kingdome of *England* was badly Gouerned at home by the Biſhop of *Ely*; to whom hee had committed the charge thereof. For hee (being the Grand-child of a Ploughman, and the ſonne of a Cow-heard in the *North*: and being aduanced to that Biſhoppricke, and made Lord Chancellour of *England*; Legate to the *Pope*; and Protector of all this Realme) tyrannized, as himſelfe lifted, ouer all ſortes of people; Exerciſed on them ſtrange and vnuſuall oppreſſions, both in the Church, and alſo in the Common-weale; and was ſo infinitely ambitious and ſo proud, that he would neuer ride abroad for his paſtime, and for his recreation, except hee were attended and waited on by a thouſand horſe, and more;

England is badly Gouerned.

Aſperius nihil eſt humili. quam ſurgere in altũ.

A begger on horſe-backe will ride.

more; and was ſerued by the ſonnes of the greateſt Nobles in this Land, vnto whom he gaue in marriage, with ſome portions, diuers of his baſe and ruſticke kinne. But at length he grew to bee ſo contemptible, lothſome and vile, in all the peoples eyes, that (fearing what would be the ſequell of his vnlimited inſolencie and pride,) He reſolued to forſake this Kingdome. And comming (for that purpoſe) into *Douer*, diſguiſed in the habit of a woman, and hauing vnder his arme a piece of Country-cloth, which hee offered to the ſale, hee was deſcried and diſcouered, and by the common people was furiouſly and ſhamefully dragged and drawne vpon the Sands, and was afterward ſent vnto *London:* where the Lords and greateſt Nobles committed him to the Tower; in which he remained vntill the kings returne, and then he was reſtored both to his libertie and Offices. But ſhortly after, as he trauelled towards *Rome*, he died; whereat much joy was conceiued generally by the *Engliſhmen*.

The ambitious Biſhops fall.

He diſguiſeth himſelfe, and is dragged on the Sands.

He is reſtored.

He dieth.

Of theſe Affaires, and of his euill Gouernment, king *Richard* was informed in the Holie Land: as alſo of the great diſcontentment of his brother *Iohn*, for that the Biſhop of *Ely*, and not himſelfe, was (in the kings abſence) made Gouernor of this kingdome: and how that he had ſeized manie of the kings Townes, Forts, and Caſtles, into his hands; and onely wanted the peoples fauour to make himſelfe a king.

The cauſes which haſtened king Richards returne.

He likewiſe was informed, what Sallyes, Inrodes, and Inuaſions, the *French* king (after his returne home) had made in *Normandie*, thereby to reuenge himſelfe of thoſe pretended iniuries and wrongs, which he ſuppoſed he had receiued from king *Richard* in the Holie Land.

King Richard ſaueth his life by ſwimming.

He is taken priſoner, and ſold to the Emperour Henry the ſixt.

He is ranſomed.

He reuengeth his iniuries vpon the French king.

Theſe Tidings thus concurring, and the good deſire which king *Richard* had to preuent the ruine of his owne Eſtate; enforced him (when he poſſeſſed the greateſt hopes of Conqueſt) to conclude a peace with the *Turks* for three yeares. But in his returne, he was (by the violence of a raging ſtorme) compelled after a dangerous ſhipwrack to ſaue his life by Swimming, neere vnto *Hiſtria*; which lyeth betweene *Aquileia* and *Venice:* and comming to the Territories of *Leopold* in *Auſtria*, he was taken priſoner; and by him ſold to the Emperour *Henrie* the ſixt, the ſonne of *Frederick*, for threeſcore thouſand Marks; who (taking of him good ſecuritie for his Ranſome, aſſeſſed vnto one hundred thouſand pounds) did ſet him at libertie: So that with ſpeedie journeyes he poaſted vntill he came into *Normandie*; where he rayſed a ſtrong Armie, and marched furiouſly into *France*, and reuenged himſelfe ſoundly of all

all ſuch iniuries and wrongs, as in his abſence were done vnto him by the *French* king. And then he reduced to his ſubiection all ſuch Peeres in *Normandie*, as by the *Frenchmen*, in his abſence, had beene taken from him.

Duke Iohn ſubmitteth himſelfe to the King his brother, and is pardoned.

Thus whileſt the King was buſied abroad; his brother *Iohn*, Earle of *Lancaſter*, repaired to him, and not onely ſubmitted himſelfe to his grace and mercie, but voluntarily ſurrendred to him all ſuch Forts and Caſtles as he had ſeized into his hands: excuſing himſelfe, as being prouoked and enforced to diſloyaltie by the extraordinarie pride and inſolent behauiour of *William Longchampe* Biſhop of *Ely*; who vnworthily had diſordered the gouernment of the whole Realme. Vpon which ſubmiſſion, and his contrition for his offence, he obtained not onely the kings pardon, but alſo his eſpeciall grace and fauour.

He vſeth vniuſt means to pay his Debts and Ranſome.

Then did they both come into *England*: where the king (to make payment of his Ranſome) ranſacked the Treaſures of diuers Religious Houſes, and grieuouſly taxed the People; and ſummoned his High Court of Parliament, in which he cauſed himſelfe to be againe crowned King. And to augment his owne Eſtate, hee reſumed into his hands all ſuch Honors, Lordſhips, Manors, Caſtles, Offices, and Priuiledges, as he had formerly ſold to his owne ſubjects for his ſupplyes; and enforced the Buyers to content themſelues with ſuch profits thereof, as they had taken. Then foureſcore thouſand pounds of his Ranſome were payd: but the reſidue was diſcharged by *Leopold*; who was accurſed by Pope *Innocent* the third, for that hee had iniuriouſly made king *Richard* a priſoner, in his returne from his Warres in the Holie Land.

He is crowned anew.

He reſumeth the Lands which he ſold, and payes nothing for them.

Leopold is accuſed, and releaſeth part of the Kings Ranſome.

Then the king rayſed a new Armie, and tranſported it into *France*; and from that time forward he ceaſed not (with variable ſucceſſe) to warre with the *French* king: vntill at length taking a priuate view of the beſieged Caſtle of *Chalons*, neere to *Lymoys*, he was deſcried by a common ſouldior; who ſo grieuouſly wounded him with an arrow, that within three dayes after he died, when he had raigned almoſt nine yeares; and was buried at *Founteuerard* in *France* at his fathers feet.

The King warreth in France.

He is ſlaine.

After hee was wounded, as is before mentioned, hee wonne the Caſtle by terrible aſſaults, and cauſed all ſuch as he found therein to be ſlaine; except the malefactor: who being demanded by him how he dared to ſhoot vnto the perſon of a king, made anſwere, That in thoſe Warres he had loſt his father, and his brother, and that he was exceeding glad that fortune had ſo aſſiſted him in his reuenge. Then when he expected nothing but a preſent terrible

Vltio Diuina.

The King pardoneth him who ſlew him.

death, the king gaue him his pardon; and cauſed him to be ſafely conducted out of his Armie.

Robin Hood and Little Iohn.

In the beginning of this Kings Raigne, certaine Out-lawes, to the number of one hundred and more, being reſolued and deſperat men (whoſe chiefeſt leaders were named *Robin Hood* and *Little Iohn*) robbed and ſpoyled in diuers places of this Land. They neither hurted, nor much wronged anie, except they would runne themſelues into danger by reſiſtance. They attempted againſt none, but againſt ſuch, as being rich, gayned by vſurie; or gaue no entertainement by good Hoſpitalitie to their Neighbours, and to the poore. They ſpared all women, and were bountifull benefactors to ſuch as ſtood in need. Thus they continued diuers moneths; vntill their chiefeſt Leader *Robin Hood*, by meanes of a ſharpe ſickneſſe (being let bloud, and being betrayed) bled himſelfe to death. And then the whole Rout of this theeuiſh Companie was diſperſed, and the Malefactors ſecretly repaired home to their owne houſes.

Honeſt Theeues.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING IOHN.

IOHN PLANTAGENET (Earle of *Lancaſter* in his owne Right, and Earle of *Gloceſter* in the right of his wife; and being the yongeſt ſonne of King *Henrie* the ſecond) ſucceeded, and was crowned king: albeit that *Arthur Plantagenet* his nephew, and ſonne to *Geoffrey* his elder brother, was then liuing. The whole courſe of this Kings Gouernment was accompanied with continuall troubles: and his two Perſecutors were Pope *Innocent* the third; and *Philip* the ſecond, then King of *France*.

Arthur Plantagenet was lawfull heire.

The Kings two perſecutors.

The *French* King feared the greatneſſe of *Englands* ſtrength, and the proſperitie of this Kingdome was hurtfull vnto his eyes: and glad he was, if (at anie time) the leaſt occaſion would offer him ſome ſeruice to further his deſignes againſt King *Iohn*. For proofe hereof, he proteſted a world of loue to the ſaid *Arthur*; informed him of his Title to the Crowne of *England*, and of his vndoubted right to the Duchies of *Normandie*, and of *Britaine*; animated him to rayſe his ſpirits, and to aduance his courage to winne them all. If he were deſtitute of Friends, which might aduiſe and counſell him; he and his Nobles would ſupplie that want: if he ſtood in need of Siluer and of Gold, to feede and to nouriſh the great bodie of that Warre; he ſhould be ſupplyed with ſufficient ſtore:

The French king taketh part with Arthur againſt King Iohn.

And if he would haue valiant men to fight for him, and for thoſe his Rights, hee would ſupplie him with manie thouſands, who ſhould aduenture to ſpend their beſt bloud in his Quarrels.

Theſe large and friendly proffers (which indeede proceeded rather from a jealouſie which the *French* King had of himſelfe, by reaſon of King *Iohns* Greatneſſe, than from anie inward affection or heartie loue which hee bare vnto *Arthur*, the lawfull and the rightfull Heire of this Crowne) and the longing deſire which made this young Gallant hopefull of thoſe great atchieuements; perſuaded him verie eaſily, not onely to accept of the *French* Kings friendſhip, but alſo to vſe his aide. So that partly by the helpe of the *Normans*, and partly by the *French* Kings meanes, hee leuied a puiſſant Armie; and wonne diuers places both of Worth and of Strength in *Normandie*. But the Kings Lieutenant, and his other Agents in that Duchie, defended themſelues valiantly, perſiſted in their Duties, and fought it out diuers times; vntill King *Iohn* himſelfe came into that Countrey with a ſtrong Armie, and fought manie cruell Battailes with his Nephew.

Arthur Plantagenet leuieth an armie.

King Iohn goeth into Normandie with an Armie.

But oftentimes it falleth out, that by Warre (which is the enemie of Peace) Peace it ſelfe is procured. For when thoſe two Princes had exchanged ſtore of blowes, and when their Armies had made hauocke each of other; and death had drenched her ſelfe in their bloud: they entred into certaine Capitulations for Peace; which, for a ſhort time, gaue them ſome reſpit of breathing. But the ſame was againe interrupted by *Philip* the *French* King; who promiſed *Arthur* a doubling of his ſtrength, and fed him with much aſſurance of proſperous ſucceſſe; and made him confident to renew thoſe Warres. And hereupon the *French* King carried a faire Armie into *Normandie*; with which hee ſpoyled, ranſacked, and depopulated manie places in that Duchie.

A peace is concluded.

The peace is broken by the French kings meanes.

But King *Iohn* (who wanted nothing but money to encounter with ſo peruerſe an enemie) was warned by his Lords, Gentlemen, and the inferiour ſort of his common people, That ſhame would wait vpon him for his neglect, in ſuffering his Honour to be trampled on, and his Territories in ſuch ſort, without blowes, to be taken from him. And (to whet the dull edge of his courage, deiected by reaſon of his wants) they voluntarily and freely granted him a large Taxe to ſupport his neceſſitie: and euerie luſtie Ladde boldly proffered his ſeruice, to buckle ſtrongly with the *French*.

The Engliſhmens forwardneſſe to buckle with the French.

By

By theſe meanes King *Iohn* was quickly furniſhed and ſtrengthened both with Money and with Men; and with a ſtrong Armie he landed in the Duchie of *Normandie:* where his numbers were euerie day augmented, by the repaire of manie thouſands, who were well appointed, and did reſolue with him to expect the ſame lot and the ſame fortune. And not long after, the two Armies met, and fought together with ſuch deſperate boldneſſe, that each of them tooke pleaſure to giue blowes, wounds, death. Each of them rejoyced in the ruine of the other; and thoſe ſolemne ſpectacles of ſorrow which would haue made others ſad, gaue them occaſion of much mirth.

King Iohn paſſeth into Normandie the ſecond time with an Armie.

The two Armies fight.

But things which are violent cannot long endure. This fearefull ſtorme muſt bee changed into a pleaſant calme. And ſo it was. For the *Frenchmen* were diſcouraged, and fled; and *Arthur*, the Kings Nephew, and the rightfull Heire vnto his Crowne, was taken priſoner, and ſent to the Caſtle of *Roan:* where (leaping from the walls with an intent to eſcape) he was drowned in the Ditch. And thus ended his Life, his Title, and thoſe Warres.

The Frenchmen flye.

Arthur is ſent priſoner to Roan.
He is drowned.
This Warre ended.

But the next yeare following, the *French* King himſelfe, pretending Title to the ſaid Duchie of *Normandie*, rayſed an exceeding great power; and ſo ſodainely, and with ſuch furie, did inuade it, that (wanting preſent meanes of reſiſtance) the whole Duchie (to preuent vtter deſolation and ruine) yeelded, and ſubiected it ſelfe to the *French* king.

The French King ſodenly winneth all Normandie.

And now began the Kings other Enemie, Pope *Innocent* the third, to play his part, and to vexe him more dangerouſly than *Philip* of *France* had done. And the occaſion which he entertained to effect his purpoſe, was this.

The quarrell betwixt the King and the Pope.

Hubert, the Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, died: and the Monkes of Saint *Auguſtines* in that Citie (without the kings Licence, or knowledge, and about midnight) elected *Raynold* (a brother of their owne) to ſucceed him; and tooke of him an Oath forthwith to trauaile vnto *Rome*, and there to procure his inueſture, and to receiue his Pall from the Pope.

The king being thereof informed by manifeſt ſhewes, made knowne his inward diſlike of thoſe their vnaduiſed doings: So that (vpon his motion, and to appeaſe his wrath) they newly elected *Iohn Gray*, who was then Biſhop of *Norwich*. And incontinently, the king (vpon his owne charge) ſent Letters and Embaſſadours vnto the Pope, entreating him to ratifie his laſt choice.

But

Popes doe ſeldome or neuer grant to any Kings their reaſonable requeſts.

But in the meane time a new Schiſme or Faction did appeare. For the Suffragan (becauſe hee was not made acquainted, nor an actor in either of the ſaid two Elections) made ſuit to the Pope to diſplace them both. But the Pope (imitating the proud example of his Predeceſſors, who coueted to ſwimme againſt the Streame, and ſeldome, or neuer, granted anie kings requeſt, leaſt they ſhould in ſome ſort be thought to be yeelding) neglected the kings entreatie, and confirmed him that was choſen firſt. The king ſtormed becauſe he was ſo ſlenderly regarded. And diuers of thoſe Monkes (to pleaſe the king) refuſed to receiue him that was by the Pope confirmed; conteſting againſt their owne choice, becauſe it was made in the night, and not in the open day. But the reſt affirmed, That ſuch a choice was not meerely voide, and in it ſelfe a Nullitie; but remayned good, vntill by Iudiciall proceedings, and by a Sentence, it were pronounced to be void.

At length, this queſtion and this doubt was controuerted and diſputed on in *Rome:* and thereupon, the Pope (making a colourable ſhew to content the King, to pleaſe the Monkes, and to end this Schiſme; but indeede to preferre *Stephen Langton*, the Cardinall of *Chriſogone*, to that Dignitie) aduiſed the ſaid Monkes to elect the ſaid *Stephen.*

Stephen Langton is choſen Archbiſhop of Canterburie on the Popes motion, and againſt the commandement of the King.

The King perceiuing well what was intended and meant thereby; required the ſaid Monkes not to proceed to the ſaid Election, nor to deale anie further in that buſineſſe. But verie vndutifully they neglected to content, or to obey the King; and with them the Papall Commandement tooke place: and *Stephen Langton* (a man plyant to the Popes humour) was elected Archbiſhop of *Canterburie.*

The King forbiddeth Appeales to Rome.

This later choice ſo ſharpely exaſperated the king, that by his Letters to the Pope he proteſted plainely, That from thenceforth he would take a ſtrict account of all ſuch of his ſubjects whatſoeuer, as for anie matters concerning Right, or Iuſtice, ſhould be gadding vnto *Rome*. And did alledge, That he had Biſhops, Prelates, Nobles, and Magiſtrates of his owne, who could and ſhould (according to the Lawes and Cuſtomes of his Kingdome) decide and determine all Controuerſies and Doubts, which ſhould ariſe either in the Church, or in the Commonweale. And that he would rather expoſe himſelfe to a thouſand deaths, then baſely (as hee was required) make himſelfe and his Kingdome ſeruile and ſubject to the Popes inſolent and peremptorie Commands.

The Pope (according to his cuſtome and faſhion) not onely

anſwered

anſwered prowdly, That the Election of the Cardinall ſhould ſtand: but required the King, to giue him the quiet poſſeſſion of his See; to recall ſuch Monks from baniſhment as he had exild; and to reſtore to them their goods, on which hee had ſeized by reaſon of their laſt choice: and did authorize foure Biſhops within this Land, to interdict and to curſe the King, and his Realme, if hee refuſed to doe as by the Pope he was enioyned.

The Popes prowd and peremptorie anſwer. Foure Biſhops authorized to interdict the King.

The King (perceiuing that thoſe foure Biſhops were much elated by reaſon of their new authoritie: and that they thought the time to be long, ere the King had replied and ſignified his intent and reſolution) ſeized vpon their lands and goods; and did proclaime, That he reſolued to take the like courſe with all ſuch, as receiued any Promotions, Inueſtitures, or Eccleſiaſtical degrees, from the ſaid Cardinall; or went vnto *Rome* vpon any occaſion without his licenſe, or did appeale for any cauſe thither; or did attempt to put in execution any commaund from the Pope, within his Kingdome.

The King ſeizeth on the foure Biſhops lands and goods.

The Pope (being aduertiſed hereof) ſent into *England* his two Legats, *Pandulphus* and *Durant* (men of prowd ſpirits, and prone to put in practiſe al things as they ſhould be required) Theſe two perſwaded the King to be reconciled to *Stephen Langton*; to the foure Biſhops; and to the Prior and the Monks of his Couent of S. *Auſtins*; and to reſtore to them their Places, Lands, and Goods, that peace, and amitie, by meanes of his ſo doing, might be renewed betwixt the Pope and him. The King (fearing to be accurſed, and being deſirous to preuent future inconueniences) yeelded, and promiſed to perform all whatſoeuer was required, except it were to allow the ſaid Election of the ſaid Cardinall: and proteſted faithfully, That if another might be choſen, hee then would with all ſpeed and expedition, preferre him to ſome other Biſhoprique, or better place of Dignitie within his Realme. But the two Legats (in ſteed of gratifying the Kings requeſt) pronounced the Popes curſe; not only againſt him, but alſo againſt all ſuch as gaue him attendance, or things neceſſarie; or kept him company. They likewiſe abſolued all his ſubiects from their oathes, dutie, and ſeruice towards him, and required all Chriſtian Princes to make warre vpon him, as vpon the arch and grand enemy of the Church of God. The Pope alſo pronounced and publiſhed againſt him his ſentence of depriuation, and gaue his Crown and his Kingdom to *Philip* the *French* King, if by any ſecret plot, or open violence and hoſtility, he could expell or murther him.

The Popes Legats curſe the King and his ayders.

This Kingdom is giuen to the French King.

Theſe were the fruits of this vnholy holy Father, the Popes Religion

ligion and Gouernment. And this vſurping arrogancie was a badge of his vnſufferable pride: in that he preſumed to do what no earthly creature can do, nor what a Chriſtian ought to attempt to do, againſt the Annointed of God; and againſt ſuch a one, as the Almightie hath placed in a Kingdom to gouerne and to rule his people. The King was not (as yet) terrified with this Thunder, but was in good hope that all thoſe Fulminations would quickly flaſh, and as ſoone vaniſh away, as the Lightning doth. And being thoroughly reſolued to confront the Pope, and his buſie Legats, in contemning them and their greateſt power, he took a ſolemne oath of his Subiects for his defence, and their faithfull ſeruice. And then with a ſtrong Armie he entered into *Scotland*, againſt King *Alexander* the ſecond, becauſe he had receiued, ſupported, and maintained diuers of his Clergie, and others: who (adhering to the Pope, and magnifying his vſurped authoritie within this kingdome) had forſaken the King; and (as Rebells, and Out-lawes) fled vnto him for ſuccour. But the *Scotiſh* King (perceiuing that Fire and Sword gaped greedily to deuoure both him and his Countrie) ſubmitted himſelfe (with great humilitie and reuerence) to king *Iohn*; and without further trouble, hee was reconciled to his Grace and Fauour.

The King confronteth the Pope and his Legats.

He taketh an oath of his people.

He carrieth an Armie into Scotland.

The Scots ſubmit themſelues.

The *French* king, hoping and endeuoring to poſſeſſe himſelfe of the Popes gift (which was not his to giue) and gladding his owne heart that now he had gotten ſome colour to warre in *England* vpon king *Iohn*; prouided a great Armie to inuade this Realme. But by the wiſedome, valour, and circumſpection of the king, and by Gods aſsiſtance, three hundred of his Ships (being loaden with Corne, Victualls, and other requiſits for the warre) were ſurpriſed, and by meanes thereof king *Philip* was at that time robbed of his vaine hope.

The French King prepareth for England.

Three hundred of his Ships are taken.

The Pope (notwithſtanding) ceaſed not, but euer and anon hee accurſed the king againe, and againe: inſomuch that he feared, leſt vtter ruine and his ouerthrow did attend him. Wherfore (ſuddenly, without the conſent of his Nobles, or aduice of his Councell of Eſtate) vpon his knees, before *Pandulphus* the Legat, hee confeſſed his diſobedience to the Pope; craued Pardon; and (by a publique Inſtrument in writing vnder his hand and ſeale) hee reſigned his Crowne and his kingdom, to the Pope: which *Pandulphus* kept the ſpace of foure daies to the Popes vſe. And then he gaue the Kingdome and the Crowne againe to King *Iohn*, and to his heires; reſeruing a Tenure thereof to the Church of *Rome*, with an yeerely tribute of one thouſand marks.

King Iohn fainteth.

He asketh pardon, and reſigneth his kingdom to the Pope.

The Pope regranteth.

This

This baſe ſubmiſſion and ſubiection of his, ſo alienated from him the deere affection of diuers of his Nobles, and men beſt skilled in Chiualrie, that they reuolted from his ſeruice, and fled vnto his enemie the *French* King; whoſe head was building of Caſtles in the aire, and who made new and large preparations and prouiſions, to make *Lewes* his ſonne the ſole King and Monarch of this Kingdome. And when all things were in a readineſſe, the young Prince with a ſtrong Armie came into *England*, and was oftentimes encountred with ſharpe blowes, but yet he did much harme. And the Pope (being by his Legats informed in what caſe King *Iohn* and his Realme ſtood) required the *French* King, and Prince *Lewes* his ſonne, and all others who adhered to their part, of what eſtate or condition ſoeuer they were, forthwith to deſiſt and ceaſe from all hoſtilitie and warre; becauſe both King *Iohn* and his kingdome, were reconciled to his fauour, and to the Church, and the Crowne of his Realme was holden of the See of *Rome*: So that (by conſcience, and by the lawes of God and of Men) he ought to be protected and defended by him, and by his authoritie and power. But the *French* refuſed to obey; affirming, That no king (without the free conſent of his Nobles, Prelats, & common people) could giue vnto any other his kingdom, nor the protection of his Subiects, which were committed to him by God; and conſequently, that this kingdome was not holden of the Church of *Rome*, nor ought to be defended or protected by her. This anſwere ſo ſtartled the Pope (whoſe will may not willingly meet with the leaſt reſiſtance) that incontinently he ſent *Guallo* the Cardinall of S^t. *Martins*, into this Realme: who accurſed *Philip* the *French* king, and Prince *Lewes* his ſonne, and ſuch of the *Engliſh* Nobilitie as took part with them, and all their Complices and adherents.

The King is deſpiſed and forſaken.

Prince Lewes of France inuadeth.

Contention between the Pope and the French King.

The Pope curſeth.

The wiſer ſort among them little reſpected what was done by the ſaid Cardinall: but the common people, and the ordinarie degree of Souldiers (whoſe deuotions more depended vpon feare, then vpon their knowledge) were ſo amazed and daunted with thoſe ſharp and ſudden curſes, that (leauing their Leaders, and the Field) they returned home to their houſes, and to their Ships. And the poore Natiues of this Realme (knowing that diuers great Lords were vnder the cenſure of this curſe) entered into their houſes, fields, and grounds, robbing and ſpoyling, and bearing and driuing away, whatſoeuer they could find and take: they being ſo far off from doubting or diſputing with their owne conſciences, whether therein they did well or no, that they ſuppoſed their ſo doing tended immediatly to the glorie of Almighty God, and that their

The effects of the ſaid curſ.

Robbery, ſtealth, and oppreſſion.

Popiſh blindneſſe.

ſtealths and Robberies were meritorious and pleaſing in his ſight.

The reuolted Lords are diſtreſſed.

By theſe means, thoſe Lords and Nobles were much perplexed and pinched with great diſtreſſe, and were likely to be ſtarued to death; becauſe they wanted all neceſſaries belonging vnto life, and knew not how to relieue their owne wants. Neither durſt anie other (by reaſon of thoſe Curſes, and of their Treaſons) to relieue them: So that at length (when all friends, and when all other remedies did faile) Neceſſitie (which is the moſt imperious Commander of all thoſe, ouer whome ſhe tyrannizeth) enforced them to proſtrate themſelues at the Kings feet; to confeſſe their vndutifull reuolt; and to craue his pardon.

They ſubmit themſelues.

They are pardoned and receiued into fauor.

The King (who by nature was gracious, and full of pitie; and being more willing to forgiue than to puniſh ſuch, as in the higheſt meaſure had offended him, albeit he had, by their aſſiſtance giuen to his enemies, beene oppreſſed with infinite miſeries, and had found more fidelitie and ſeruice in ſtrangers borne, than in thoſe his owne ſubjects) in milde and in gentle ſort accepted of their ſubmiſſion, pardoned their tranſgreſſions, and reſtored them to their Honors, and to their Lands.

Peace.

And by theſe meanes this Realme was disburthened of the *French* Nation; and a quiet peace began to ſalute the King and his people: who now found ſome leyſure to looke vp, and to refreſh themſelues; as Fiſhes doe in a faire calme, after they haue beene tumbled and toſſed in the Waters by an vnquiet Storme.

1212. *The Councell of Lateran.*

Princes excommunicated, and their Prouinces and Kingdomes interdicted.

A Popiſh Policie.

Auricular Confeſſion.

Tranſubſtantiation.

Damnation.

The Pope intending to make theſe his proceedings with King *Iohn* in *England*, a preſident vnto other Princes) aſſembled a generall Councell at *Lateran:* wherein hee publiſhed them all at large, together with the ſaid kings Grant of his Kingdome to the Pope, and his ſaid regrant, and the Tenure thereof to be of the Church of *Rome*. And in the ſame Councell, *Otho* the Emperour, *Peter* king of *Arragon*, and *Raymond* Earle of *Tholouſe*, and diuers other Princes, were excommunicated: and others were interdicted, together with their Kingdomes and their Prouinces (for Hereſie, as it was pretended.) But the certaine ſcope of this craftie and cunning packing tended to none other end, than onely to make temporall Princes ſubiect to the Popes correction; and conſequently to enrich himſelfe and his ſucceſſors, with their ſpoyle. In the ſame Councell alſo, Auricular Confeſſion, and Tranſubſtantiation were eſtabliſhed and decreed: and therein it was enacted, That ſuch as ſpake euill of the Pope ſhould be damned in Hell; and that no man

man ſhould be Emperour, vntill he had ſworne his Homage to the Pope, and had receiued his Crowne from him. *Emperour.*

And thus all theſe troubles (hauing had from the fourth yeare of King *Iohns* Raigne as long a continuance as the *Troian* Warres) were at laſt ended. But the Clergie would in no ſort bee heartily reconciled to the King. For ſuch was their ſecret grudge and ſpleene towards him, that (vnder the colour of much ſeruice and dutie) as hee lay in the Abbey of *Swanſteede*, not farre from *Lincolne*) hee was poyſoned by a Monke of the Order of Saint *Bernard*: who, to make his match ſure, and to auoid jealouſie and ſuſpition, firſt dranke vnto the King, and poyſoned himſelfe for companie. And thus died King *Iohn*, when he had raigned aboue ſeuenteene yeares; and lyeth buried at *Winchester*. *Peace after tenne yeares warre.* *King Iohn is poyſoned.*

In the ſeuenth yeare of his Raigne hee tranſported a puiſſant armie of valiant men of armes, and common ſouldiors, into *Ireland*: and with great reſolution and courage he reduced that Nation to their former obedience; from which (with inſolent obſtinacie) they had reuolted. 1205. *Ireland.*

And in the ninth yeare, by a new Charter, hee enabled the Citizens of *London* to make their annuall choice of a Maior, and of two Shirifes, for the better Gouernement of that Citie. 1208. *A Maior in London.*

And the yeare following, the Bridge of Stone was there built ouer the Riuer of *Thames*. *London Bridge.* 1209.

This King was verie wiſe, politike, and wonderfull valiant: not to be ſubdued but by Death; nor wearied with anie Trauaile; nor would be diſcouraged with more than ordinarie Dangers. Hee fought manie ſucceſſefull Battailes both at home and abroad; yet was hee not alwayes fortunate. For by meanes of the Popes quarrellings, *Philip* of *France* wonne from him the greateſt part, yea almoſt his whole Duchie of *Normandie*, and vexed him exceedingly at home in his owne Kingdome. Hee was liberally bountifull and benigne to all Strangers; but ſparing in his gifts to his owne ſubiects. And ſome reaſon hee had to be the more cloſe-handed towards them, becauſe the moſt of them (better louing *France* than their owne Countrey, and caring more for the *French* King than for him, who was their Soueraigne Lord and Maſter) gaue him little ſtomack and courage to aduance them; as otherwiſe (no doubt) hee would haue longed and deſired to haue done. *A deſcription of King Iohn*

Hee left behinde him foure ſonnes; *viz.* *Henrie* who ſucceeded

ded him; *Richard*, who was elected King of the *Romans*; *William* of *Valentia*; and *Guido Diſnay*: and three daughters; *viz.* *Iſabell*, married to *Fredericke* the Emperour; the ſecond, to *William Marſhall* Earle of *Worceſter*; and the third, to the Earle of *Leiceſter*.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE THIRD.

AFTER the death of King *Iohn*, *Henrie* his ſonne (being of the age of nine yeares) was crowned King: and the Protection of him, and of this Realme, was committed to the Earle of *Gloceſter*: who hauing married one of the Kings aunts, and being well learned, politicke, and wiſe; temperate, and valiant; adminiſtred the Lawes and Iuſtice vprightly to the people. 1216.

A Protector.

So deepe an impreſſion had confidence made in the hearts of *Philip* of *France*, and of Prince *Lewis* his eldeſt ſonne, that the Kings Minoritie, Traiterous friends, and their owne good fortune, would make them the Soueraigne Lords of this kingdome; that no former Commandements, or Curſes from the Pope, preuailed, to make them vtterly to abandon and to forſake this kingdome. For their Hopes fed them with this conceit, that their new repaire hither, and the daily diſturbance and trouble, which by their meanes ſhould vnioynt the Peace, and the good Gouernment of this Commonweale, would and (in the end) ſhould ſhake it with a continuall feauer; and make it hopeleſſe of all recouerie or reliefe, ſauing onely by their meanes. And vpon this Proiect they landed freſh forces within this Land.

The French King againe inuadeth England.

But

But the new Protector was not idle in his charge. For his Preparations were expedited with great celeritie and judgement: and (with ſuch forces as he had leuied) he manfully oppoſed himſelfe againſt all Encounters of the *French*, and of the *Welch*, which obſtinately adhered to the *French* part.

The Welchmen take part with the French.

But the beſt ſucceſſe by Warres (in a diſtempered and in a mutinous Eſtate) giues little cauſe of boaſting to eyther part. For the ſlaughter of manie friends and kinsfolke (affoording the Victorie) cannot chuſe but bring with it a ſorrowfull remembrance of their vntimely end; and begèt manie wiſhes, that (their vndutifull Errors hauing beene reformed) they were aliue againe.

Honorius the Pope being truly informed, how obſtinately the *French* and the *Welch* Nations (being aſſiſted with ſome *Engliſh*) daily warred and ſpoyled within this Realme: not onely confirmed the authoritie of *Guallo* the Legate; but by him he thundred more ſharpe and terrible Curſes againſt them all, than formerly hee or his predeceſſors had done. Whereunto hee added new Excommunications, Depriuations, and other bitter Cenſures of the Church of *Rome*.

The Pope curſeth again

Hereupon Prince *Lewis*, with his confederates, ſeemed to be peacefull for a while; and made an outward ſhew, as if hee onely waited for a fit oportunitie to depart. Yet in the meane time, king *Philip* his father (with great care and coſt) prepared new Forces for his aide, and ſhipped them for this Realme. But *Hugh de Burgh* (being a man prouident, and truly valiant, and being chiefe Maſter of the fiue Ports) hauing fitted a ſtrong Fleete of good Shippes, and furniſhed them to the proofe with choice Mariners and expert men of Warre, encountred them brauely vpon the Sea: and with ſuch hardie blowes ſo fiercely did aſſayle them, that (beeing altogether vnable to reſiſt him) they ſubmitted themſelues, and all their Shippes, vnto his mercie.

His curſes are not cared for.

Hugh de Bergh preuaileth on the ſea.

This noble Exploit (being thus attended by Victorie) forthwith drew Prince *Lewis* to a milde entreatie of Peace: So that (being abſolued by *Guallo*, and receiuing good ſummes of money to further his returne) he ſurrendred all ſuch Forts, Caſtles, and Townes as hee had taken, and with his companies ſayled into *France*; leauing his *Engliſh* friends (who had ſupported his Eſtate and part in all theſe Warres) to the cenſure of the Lawes, and to end their miſerable dayes with ſundrie executions and ſtrange deaths.

The French are abſolued, and doe returne.

The

The Common-weale being now ſuffered to breath, and hauing found ſome leiſure to prouide fitting medicines to cure ſuch maladies as diſtempered her eſtate, required that a Parliament might be ſommoned, which was graunted: and in it the ancient Lawes of King *Edward* were reduced and reſtored to their former vigor and ſtrength. And the Grand Charter (in thoſe dayes called *Magna Charta*, compriſing ſundry laws, which were both eaſefull and commodious to the common people) was ratified and confirmed. And whereas the Wardſhips of the heires of ſuch of the Kings tenants as died, ſeized of any lands by them holden in Knights ſeruice, was graunted to King *Edgar* during their minorities; and their marriages were afterwards granted to King *Edward* the Confeſſor. Thoſe lawes (which a long time had lien aſleepe) were now reuiued and awaked; and were reſtored to their former vſe. In the ſame Parliament alſo, a voluntarie Taxe was frankely ginen to the King: partly to diſcharge ſuch debts as former warres had occaſioned, and partly to leuie new forces, to be conducted by *Richard* the kings brother, for the recouering of *Poyters* and of *Gaſcoyne*; which of late yeers (moſt iniuriouſly, and with too much violence) had been vſurped and taken from King *Henries* predeceſſors, by the *French* King.

A Parliament.

King Edwards lawes reſtored.

Magna Charta.

Wardſhips & marriages. Ann. 962. Ann. 1056.

A voluntarie Taxe.

The Parliament being ended; the ſaid Taxe, with great celeritie, and without contradiction by any, was ſoone leuied: ſo that the Kings Coffers were repleniſhed with ſiluer, and with gold; and all requiſits were carefully prouided, and a gallant Armie of couragious men of warre were aſſembled, and ſafely tranſported. With which, *Richard* the Kings brother did (almoſt) wonders; ſubduing where he found reſiſtance, and ſeizing vpon Lordſhips, Towns, Forts, Caſtles, and other defenced places, quietly, and without blowes, where no head was made againſt him. So that within few moneths (ſuch was his valor and good fortune) he recouered both thoſe Prouinces wholly for the king; and returned with much honor into *England*.

An Armie tranſported into Gaſcoyne &c.

Richard recouereth Poyters and Gaſcoine.

But the kings abſence from thoſe places, miniſtred opportunity to the French king to be vnfriendly, and daily to make wars, roads, incurſions, and inuaſions into thoſe Proninces, which (without colour of right) he endeuored to ſubdue. So that hee (refuſing no aduantage, which might in any ſort further his deſires) ſuddenly led a new Armie into *Poyters*, and quickly made himſelfe the Lord thereof. And then he marched into *Pierigot* and *Aluerne*, and other places in *Guian*; where he did the like. But king *Henry* ſent thither another Armie, with which his brother *Richard* Earle of *Cornwall* fought

The French King winneth Poyters, Perigot, &c.

A new Army tranſported.

fought many cruell and ſharpe battailes; and in the moſt of them, Fortune aſsiſted him with good ſucceſſe, and all things afforded him great hopes, that hee ſhould recouer whatſoeuer (in his abſence) had been loſt. But in the height of all theſe broyles, a friendly peace was concluded betwixt the two Kings; and *Richard* returned ſafely into *England*.

A peace is concluded.

The cauſes of diſlike betwixt the K. and his Barons.

Theſe troubles being thus ended, and peace gladding the hearts of all ſuch as had been tired with thoſe warres: vnkinde iealouſies began to breed much hart-burning, betwixt the King, and his own Barons; for that (as they conceiued) the King repoſed little confidence in their faith; neglected their ſeruice and ſocietie; and applied himſelfe, and his fauours, wholly vnto ſtrangers; whom neither alliance, nor Countrie, bound to performe any dutie towards him, nor would be found truſtie, when the hand of his bountie and liberalitie was cloſed vp, And the King (perceiuing their diſcontent) entered into the ſecret cloſet of his owne breaſt, and tooke a ſtrict examination of his owne dealings. And finding them to bee ſuch, as iuſtly might diſpleaſe: he reformed his error; remoued the cauſes of thoſe diſlikes; and louingly reconciled himſelfe to his Nobles.

The King reconcileth himſelf to his Barons.

About this time, *Iohn Scot* Earl of *Cheſter* died, without iſſue male, hauing foure daughters & heirs. From them the king reſumed into his own hands that Earledom, and all the Territories belonging thereunto: which he augmented with large additions of yearely reuennues; and many Regall Priuiledges, Liberties, and Honours. And for a recompence and by way of exchange, he gaue vnto thoſe Ladies many Honors, Lordſhips, Caſtles, and Mannors, which exceeded their owne in true value. And hauing married Prince *Edward*, his ſonne, to *Elyanor* ſiſter vnto the King of *Spain*: he gaue vnto him the Prouince of *Guyan*; the Lordſhip of all *Ireland*; and created him Earle of *Cheſter*, and Prince of *Wales*: which two later dignities he then annexed to the eldeſt ſonnes of the Kings of this Realme.

Iohn Scot Earle of Cheſter dieth.

Cheſter and Wales annexed to the Kings eldeſt ſonnes.

And not long after, a Clerk dwelling in *Oxford* (counterfeiting a kind of madneſſe) attempting to murther the King; for which purpoſe in the depth of the night, he crept in at the window of the Kings chamber, in which moſt commonly hee lodged. But (failing of his purpoſe, becauſe the King lay not then there) hee was taken; examined; confeſſed his villanie; and by the courſe of law being condemned he was put to a cruell death.

The murdering of the King is attempted.

We haue heard before, that a peace was coucluded between the Kings of *England* and of *France*; but the *French* kings were alwaies

The French King breaks the league.

ſecretly

ſecretly, or openly, malicious to the Kings of this Realme; becauſe they had certaine Territories and Prouinces in *France* which bordered on their Countries. And this malice made them little reſpectiue of the ſanctitie of ſuch ſolemne Oathes and honeſt promiſes, as (more ſtrongly than bonds of yron) ſhould binde Kings. For no ſooner was anie gappe open, into which they might thruſt a foote; nor anie opportunitie (were it neuer ſo little) was offered; but that they threw behind their backes the remembrance of all Truces, Leagues, and Conuentions of Peace whatſoeuer, and made all things to be lawfull, which either by ſleight, or by violence, they could enterpriſe or doe. And as common experience oftentimes made it manifeſt; ſo did it now. For about the foure and twentieth yeare of King *Henries* Raigne, *Lewis* the ninth, with a deuouring Armie, entred into *Guyan*, and ſpoyled and waſted that Countrey in all places where hee came. And King *Henrie* (intending their quicke reliefe; and purpoſing, if he might, to regaine all *Normandie*, and ſuch other Prouinces as the kings of *France* vnjuſtly had detained from him) ſayled thither with a puiſſant Armie; and oftentimes bickered with his enemies: againſt whome ſometimes he preuailed, and at other times had the worſer hand. Yet his haughtie courage abandoned all feare; and no perils whatſoeuer could make him ſhrinke: for in all thoſe skirmiſhes he performed ſtout reſolution, and the noble valour of a worthie king.

Lewis the ninth inuadeth Guyan.

King Henrie carrieth an armie thither

But Fortune no further fauouring thoſe his endeauours, than onely enabling him to ſtop the *French* Kings proceedings; hee returned into *England*. But ſhortly before his departure, the *French* king married his brother *Alphonſus* vnto the daughter of the Earle of *Tholouſe*; and gaue to him the Earledome of *Poytiers*, and all king *Henries* Territories in *Auerne*: and plotted cunningly to haue procured the Earle of *March* to doe him homage for ſuch Lands as hee affirmed he held of the ſaid Earledome of *Poytiers*. But hee ſtoutly refuſed to yeeld vnto him anie ſuch dutie or ſeruice. And this his denyall ſo enraged the *French* king, that he entred with an Armie into the Earledome of *March*, and daily ſpoyled it without ſparing.

He ſtoppeth the French Kings courſes, but beats him not back.

The Earledome of March is inuaded by the French.

But king *Henrie* hauing carefully employed his labors to withſtand this violence; and hauing raiſed a faire Armie, which himſelfe conducted, tranſported it vnto *Burdeaux*. And not farre from thence (due preparations on all parts being made) both the Armies met; in which the bloud of the moſt valiant men of Warre was freely ſold, and dearely payed for. But in the end, Fortune

King Henrie leaues the field.

extending more fauour to the *French*, than to King *Henrie*; he was enforced (with the loſſe and ſlaughter of his beſt men) to leaue the Field.

The Earle of March ſubmits himſelfe

And the Earle of *March* grieuing at this miſhap, and being loth that King *Henrie* ſhould be engaged in a greater danger; ſubmitted himſelfe, and obtained Peace on faire conditions with the *French* King. And then King *Henrie* returned into *England*; and married one of his ſiſters vnto *Alexander* then King of *Scots*, becauſe hee would the better aſſure himſelfe of his friendſhip in time of neede.

41. 1256. *The Barons Warre.*

And now began thoſe miſchieuous broyles and turmoyles within this Realme; which (vntill the kings death) daily, yea almoſt hourely, vexed and moleſted him and his whole kingdome. For the King (of later yeares) lending too pleaſing an eare to manie lewd and euill Officers (whome, aboue all others, he beſt loued and fauored; and by whoſe counſell and aduice both himſelfe and his whole Eſtate was guided and directed) made little account and reckoning of the beſt of his ſubiects loue: and tooke from them (in diuers things) ſuch libertie and freedome, as by the Lawes and Ordinances of this kingdome they juſtly claymed, and ought to haue enioyed. Hee alſo pinched his people with manie vnneceſſarie Impoſitions and grieuous Taxes; which (by thoſe lewd and bold Officers) were with much rigor and ſharpeneſſe leuied, to their great diſlike.

The cauſes thereof.

Inſanum Parliamentum.

And the king following their humours, aſſembled his High Court of Parliament in *Oxford*: In which, his deſignes were altogether croſſed: and the proſecution of buſineſſes was ſo vnfortunate to the whole Eſtate of this Realme, that *(ab euentu)* it was euer after named, *Inſanum Parliamentum*, or the Madde Parliament. For when multitudes of ſuch as were grieued, ſwarmed thither, and complained of manie iniuries and wrongs which daily did oppreſſe them; the Lords and the Commons (endeauouring to redreſſe what was amiſſe) eſtabliſhed manie things, profitable (as they intended them) for the Commonweale, but highly derogating from the Prerogatiue of the king. And to the end that thoſe things which they had ſo contriued and concluded, ſhould be inuiolably kept and obſerued; choiſe was there made of twelue of the graueſt and moſt worthie perſons of this kingdome (whereof the Earles of *Leiceſter* and of *Gloceſter* were the chiefeſt) and they were ſtiled with the title of *Les douze Piers*, or the Twelue Peeres, to whom complete and abſolute authoritie and power was largely giuen to ſupport and to maintaine thoſe Lawes. For which cauſe,

The Kings Prerogatiue croſſed.

Les douze Piers.

cauſe they publikely receiued their Patent, and a ſolemne Oath. All which was ſealed, and ratified by the King himſelfe; although vnwillingly he did it. So that (the Parliament being ended) the ſaid Commiſſioners began (by ſtrict execution) to giue life vnto thoſe Ordinances and Lawes. For which purpoſe, they firſt of all diſmiſſed, and did clearely thruſt from their Places, Offices, and Attendance, manie of the Kings meniall ſeruants; and appointed others in their ſtead.

The King ratifieth their Commiſſion.

The Commiſſioners diſplace the Kings Officers and Attendants.

And this their doing was (aboue all other things) moſt diſtaſted and grudged at. For the King perceiuing, that ſuch as waited on his perſon ſhould rather be truſted by others than by himſelfe; and that hee himſelfe ſhould be furtheſt off from chuſing ſuch as ſhould be neereſt vnto him: waxed infinitely melancholie and ſad. And hoping, that vpon further aduice and counſell hee ſhould receiue better contentment, and be more kindly vſed; hee aſſembled another Parliament: in which (with great griefe, and extraordinarie Paſſion) he complained of the hard meaſure which was offered to his owne Perſon by the Twelue Peeres: So that much labour was taken by his neereſt friends, not onely to aboliſh their Authoritie and Power, but alſo to cancell and to make void thoſe new Ordinances and Lawes.

43.
1258.
Another Parliament.

The King complaineth.

But ſuch was the determinate reſolution of the Lords in generall, and of the Commons of that Aſſemblie, that in ſtead of pleaſing the King with Reformation anſwerable to his deſires, they ratified and confirmed whatſoeuer was formerly concluded on: and by the Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, and nine other Biſhops of this Kingdome, a ſolemne Curſe was publikely denounced againſt all ſuch, as either by Direction, or by Armes, or otherwiſe, withſtood or hindered the execution of thoſe Lawes, or the Authoritie of the Twelue Peeres.

The former Lawes and Ordinances are confirmed

A Curſe.

Theſe new proceedings ſo much augmented the Kings furie and implacable diſcontent; that euen thoſe things, which by his naturall diſpoſition hee chiefely delighted in, were by him loathed and deteſted moſt. And to the end that he might procure and purchaſe more contentment and joy abroad, than hee could finde at home; hee ſayled into *France*, to viſite King *Lewis* the ninth: by whome he was with all gentleneſſe and courteſie receiued, and lodged in his owne Palace; where hee was feaſted as a friend, and honoured with all accomplements appertaining to a great King. And at the ſame time hee concluded a Marriage betwixt *Iohn* Duke of *Britaine*, and one of his owne Daughters.

The King is full of indignation.

He ſayleth into France.

Normandie ſurrendred to the Kings of France by King Henrie

The *French* King alſo held a Grand Parliament of Eſtate: in which he proteſted publikely, That his conſcience was much grieued, for that (vnjuſtly, and without Title) hee detained from King *Henrie* his Duchie of *Normandie*, and ſuch other Territories in *France*, as in right he ought to enioy. And on the other ſide, King *Henrie* (intending to conclude an inuiolable Peace with ſo deare a friend, and to remoue from him all future ſcruples of his conſcience in that behalfe) frankely and freely ſurrendred to him the ſaid Duchie; together with the Lordſhips of *Angeou*, *Poytiers*, and *Mayne*. And in the ſame Parliament (with great ſolemnitie and honour) hee receiued againe to himſelfe, and to his heires, the ſaid three Lordſhips, with the ſtyle of the Duke of *Guyan*; for which he did his Homage in that Aſſemblie.

King Henrie is made Duke of Guyan.

Diſcord betweene the Prince and the Duke of Gloceſter.

Whileſt theſe things thus proceeded in *France*, a publike Quarrell (vpon ſome ſecret diſpleaſure conceiued by reaſon of the execution of thoſe curbing Lawes) began to breake forth, betwixt *Edward* the young Prince, and the Duke of *Glouceſter*; which by the Barons was ſtoutly ſuppreſſed, vntill the Kings returne: by whome they were not long after reconciled, and made friends.

The King procureth two Bulls from Rome.

The King being vexed at the heart, becauſe his Regall Authoritie was diminiſhed by the Twelue Peeres: and not finding anie redreſſe thereof at home; endeauoured to procure ſome remedie thereof by his friends abroad. And for that purpoſe (with the great expence of much Coyne, and with rich and coſtly Gifts) hee (ſecretly) obtained two Bulls from Pope *Alexander* the third: by both which, the King himſelfe, and all others who had formerly ſworne to obſerue and to maintaine thoſe new Ordinances and Lawes, and to ſupport the Proceedings and the Authoritie of the twelue Peeres, were freely abſolued from their Oathes.

Yet the twelue Peeres (not hauing anie notice of thoſe Bulls) ruled all: and were ſo buſily employed about their charge, that the King had little or nothing at all to doe. They had but ſmall leyſure to recreate themſelues with anie ſports; but the King had time ynough to play: for hee was a King in name, but not in Authoritie, nor in Power.

The Lord chiefe Iuſtice diſplaced.

Among others, Sir *Hugh le Spencer* being then Lord chiefe Iuſtice of *England*, and an eſpeciall fauourite with the King; adminiſtred the Lawes of this Realme, not according to Equitie and Right, but after his owne fancie and will: and ſuch was his indiſcreete carriage of moſt things which belonged vnto his Office and

to

to his place, that the Twelue Peers (farre againſt the Kings minde) remoued him, and ſupplied his roome by Sir *Philip Baſſet* (a man well learned, wiſe, vertuous, and diſcreet.)

They alſo diſmiſſed ſuch Sherifs and Iuſtices errants, as the King had made, and beſtowed thoſe offices vpon others; ſo that the king (being vnable any longer to endure thoſe indignities, and deepely repining to be euery houre diſgraced and croſſed by his owne ſubiects) reſolued preſently to make vſe of the Popes Bulls: for which purpoſe, he cauſed them with great ſolemnitie and reuerence to be proclaimed in ſundry eminent places, in *England*, *Ireland*, and in *Wales*; and therewithall he commanded ſtraighty, That all ſuch (of what eſtate, condition, and degree ſoeuer they were) as did from thenceforth by word or by deede, ſupport and maintaine the ſaid Ordinances and Lawes, or the authoritie of the ſaid Twelue Peers, ſhould be committed to ſtrong priſons, and ſhould not be enlarged but by his eſpeciall notice and conſent. He alſo took a ſolemne oath in the Citie of *London*, of all ſuch as were twelue yeeres old or more, to be true, faithfull, and ayding to him and to his heires, and did perſwade himſelfe, that by this means he ſhould from thenceforth haue his owne will. But he was much deceiued therein; for ſuch was the reſolution of his Barons to the contrary, that they proteſted they would rather die then ceaſe to vphold all thoſe things which in ſo honorable an aſſembly they had ſolemnly ſworn to maintaine. And ſome of them (coniecturing, and peraduenture not without good cauſe, that the King in priuat contriued ſom deſperat plot, to ſet himſelfe at libertie by their ruine) repaired to the Marches of *Wales*, where they raiſed a ſtrong Armie, and furniſhed it with all things needfull and conuenient for the warre.

Iuſtices errants and Sherifs diſplaced.

The Popes Bulls are publiſhed by the King.

He countermandeth the authority of the Twelue Peers.

The Londoners are ſworne to obey and to aide him.

The reſolution of the Barons.

The Barons raiſe an Armie.

And ſtanding thus vpon their Guard, yet reſolued to abſtaine from all violence, except neceſsitie (which obeyeth no King nor laws) ſhould vrgently compell them to take a ſharper courſe. They addreſſed their Letters (in moſt ſubmiſsiue and humble ſort) and ſent them to the King; proteſting with many oaths their dutie and their ſeruice to his Grace, and entreating his Highneſſe, for the honour of Almightie God, for his owne ſoules health, and for the welfare and happineſſe of his people and Kingdome, vtterly to defie (except his Queene and Children) all ſuch as either counſailed him, or did themſelues intend to ſuppreſſe the Ordinances and laws which were eſtabliſhed at *Oxford*, or the authoritie and the power which (for the Common-weales proſperitie) was graunted to the Twelue Peeres.

Their Letter to the K.

The King makes them no anſwer.

The King (hauing read thoſe Letters) was much diſpleaſed, and retur-

The Barons march toward London

returned not any anſwer to the Barons; wherfore they maintained a ſtout march towards *London*, vnder a Banner richly and beautifully flouriſhed with the Kings Armes. And as they paſſed by the houſes, or poſſeſſions of ſuch as fauoured the Popes Bulls, they robbed, ſpoyled, waſted, burnt and conſumed them with fire, holding them for vndoubted enemies to the King and to his Crowne. And when they approached neere to the Citie of *London*, by their Letters they importuned the anſwer of the Mayor and Citizens thereof; whether they reſolued to ſupport the ſaid Ordinances and Lawes, and the authoritie of the Twelue Peeres, or no? proteſting before God, and aſſuring them that they themſelues meant not, nor intended any other thing. And that if any matters of ſubſtance contained in them were defectiue, or could iuſtly be condemned, it ſhould receiue ſound reformation with all conuenient ſpeede.

Their Letter to the citie of London.

That Letter was ſent by the citie to the King.

The cities anſwer to the King, and alſo to the Barons.

Theſe Letters (being thus receiued) were poſtingly ſent vnto the King, who demaunded of the ſaid Mayor and Citizens, whether they would ſupport thoſe lawes and the Twelue Peers, or no? who ſtoutly anſwerd, that they would, in regard that by the Kings conſent they had takeu their oathes to that purpoſe. The King vnmeaſurably ſtormed at this anſwer, but none other could hee get: and the ſame anſwer was by them ſent vnto the Barons, who therupon proceeded in their march, and were with much ioy and kindneſſe receiued into the Citie.

They are ioyfully receiued into London.

The Kings deuice faileth him.

The King (plotting to defeat thoſe Lords, and to diſſolue their Companies by a ſlight) proclaimed, that himſelfe, and the greater number of the Barons were agreed; and did require, that (in regard thereof) all Armes might be laid aſide, that his peace might be preſerued, and no further feare or terror might amaze his people. But (this notwithſtanding) the Barons marched with their whole Armie vnto the Kings Caſtle of *Windſor*, where they found many alians, whom the Prince had placed there in ſeuerall Offices and roomes: thoſe they rifled of their goods, and remoued them from thence; whereat the King was much diſpleaſed. And the Lords of his Councell (labouring to content him) ordered that thoſe goods ſhould be reſtored to thoſe alians, and that from thenceforth none (but the King himſelfe) ſhould preſume to place, or to diſplace any of his meniall ſeruants. But the Barons vtterly refuſed to obey their order: yet (vpon the Kings motion) they gaue conſent, that all thoſe debates, controuerſies, and ſharp diſpleaſures ſhould be referred to the cenſure and iudgment of the *French* king, *Lewis* the ninth.

Officers remoued.

The Councels order diſobeied.

The controuerſie is referred to the French kings cenſure.

This

This concluſion ſheathed all ſwords, appeaſed (for the preſent time) all thoſe Iarres, and gaue good contentment to eyther part; and as time gaue leaue, thoſe buſineſſes were controuerted before the ſaid King, and reaſons were vrged to the proofe on either ſide, vntil (at length) it was by him decreed that all the ſaid Ordinances and Lawes ſhould be anihilated and made voide, and that from thenceforth no authoritie or power ſhould be left in the Twelue Peers. This ſentence was ſo diſpleaſing to the Barons, that they publikely accuſed the *French* King of groſſe partialitie, and ſmoothing with King *Henrie*; and ſo abſolutely did they refuſe to obey his order: and ſo ſtrongly were they bent to maintaine whatſoeuer had been in Parliament eſtabliſhed, that they repaired againe to the marches of *Wales*, and leuied a new Armie, and (in their paſſage toward *London*) they robbed, ſpoyled, and burnt the houſes, Lordſhips and goods of Sir *Roger Mortimer*; who (aboue all others counſailed the King to withſtand them) and the Prince (whoſe luſtie youth was furniſhed with much valour) leuied another Armie, with which hee marched towards the Barons: and each of them ſo fitted and diſpoſed their iournies, that thoſe two Armies greeted each other with warlike ſalutations, and fought together without remorſe or pittie; ſo that in the end, diuers of the Princes moſt potent friends and beſt ſouldiers being ſlaine, and his part diſcomfited, they all were enforced to flight to ſaue their liues, and to leaue the Barons maſters of the field.

The French Kings decree

The French King is accuſed of partialitie. His Decree is reiected.

The Barons leuie a new Armie.

The Prince doth the like.

The Prince is ouerthrown.

After this victorie, they marched forth and came to *London*, where they were receiued with as great kindneſſe as before; but ſome of the vnder ſort of the inhabitants of the Citie (deſpiſing gouernment, and intending vnder the colour of theſe broiles to doe ſome miſchiefe) elected two brain-ſicke Captaines, and called them the Conſtables of the Citie, and did agree that (at the toling of the great Bell in *Paules* Church) as many as would partake with them ſhould be in a readineſſe to put into execution, whatſoeuer thoſe Conſtables ſhould command, and (though much paine and labour was taken to diſſwade them from their wicked purpoſe and intent) yet their longing deſires after ſpoyles, and their reſolution to bee lawleſſe (vpon the touling of the ſaid Bell) tranſported them furiouſly eight miles Weſtward from *London*, to the houſe and poſſeſſions of the Kings brother *Richard* King of the *Romans*, which they ruinated, and carried away with him all his moueable goods there found whatſoeuer.

The Barons are receiued into London. A mad tumult. The two Captains called the two Conſtables of London. Richard king of the Romans being groſſely wronged, is thereby made the Barons enemie.

This inſolent outrage thus wickedly committed by the headles multitude, furthered the ſucceeding warres. For whereas before that

that time the vertuous and milde king *Richard*, king of the *Romans*, and brother to king *Henrie* (in regard of his neere alliance with *Gilbert Clare* Earle of *Gloceſter*) had (with all his power and beſt endeuours) mediated a peace betwixt the Barons and the King: now was he ſo exaſperated and rowſed from his peacefull humor, that he became a profeſſed enemie both to the Barons, and alſo to the Citie of *London*. And King *Henrie* hauing intelligence, that Sir *Peter Mountfort* had rayſed a ſtrong Armie at *Northampton* on the Barons behalfe; and being reſolued to make ſome tryall of his fortunes, in regard of the apparant iniuries and wrongs which daily were practiſed to his diſgrace: leuied a ſtrong Armie, and marched thither; and by maine aſſaults he tooke the Towne, ſurprized Sir *Peter Mountfort*, and *Symon* the eldeſt ſonne of the Earle of *Leiceſter*, and manie others; and ſent them all to ſundrie Priſons, to be diſpoſed of as he ſhould pleaſe.

The King obtaineth a victorie.

And on the other ſide, the Barons (who being exceeding ſtrong, and nothing at all diſcouraged with this pranke of vncertaine fortune; but preferring the dutie of worthie ſubiects to their Soueraigne before their hopes, which expected fortunate ſucceſſe) wrote their Letters to the King; and with all humilitie and ſubmiſſiue proteſtations confirmed their fidelities, and aſſured him, That they intended nothing but the performance of their Oaths, by ſupporting thoſe Ordinances and thoſe Lawes which in Parliament had beene eſtabliſhed at *Oxford*, for his Highneſſe good, and for the welfare and profit of the Commonweale.

The Barons Letter to the King.

But the King, his Brother, King *Richard*, and *Edward* the young Prince, beleeuing nothing what was written, and deepely diſdaining, that Subiects ſhould rule and correct their Soueraigne Lord and Maſter, and determining to reuenge thoſe diſgraces, which their ſtomacks no longer could endure; proclaymed an vtter defiance to the Barons: and with their Armie met them in *Suſſex*, neere to the Towne called *Lewys*; where (betwixt them) was fought ſo fierce and ſo cruell a battaile, that the father ſpared not the ſonne, nor the ſonne the father. All kindred and alliance was there forgotten: the common Souldior held himſelfe to be as good a man as the greateſt Lord. Honour was there ſet at nought; and Manhood (being oppreſſed with Multitude) could make no ſhew. Hee who was moſt valiant, was ſooneſt made breathleſſe; and the Coward found no oportunitie to runne away. He who could ſtrike deepeſt, wound manie, and kill moſt, obtained the chiefeſt praiſe. Pitie and Compaſſion were skorned and laughed at, and all remorſe was vtterly exiled from them. None mediated

The battaile of Lewis.

47.
1262.

ted betwixt them but their ſwords, and their beſt Reconciler was death. Lamentable were the ſighes and the groanes, the plunges, and the pangs of ſuch, as (bleeding) breathed forth their liues: and euerie man fought with ſuch an obſtinate reſolution, as if but one onely man at the laſt ſhould be left aliue. At length the two kings, Prince *Edward*, and manie Knights and Gentlemen of choice account, and of the beſt worth, were taken priſoners, and more than twentie thouſand men were ſlaine in this Battaile.

The two Kings and the Prince, with manie others, are taken priſoners.

20000 men are ſlaine.

And thus Furie (triumphing in bloud) was contented at length to hearken vnto Reaſon: and they who could ſcarcely ſet their feete vpon the ground, by reaſon of the multitude of dead carkaſſes, which as thicke as ſtones lay before them; were now pleaſed to take breath, and to conferre vpon conditions of Peace. And in the end it was agreed, That the King ſhould (by new Articles, and by the renewing of his Oath) confirme the authoritie graunted to the Twelue Peeres; and all the ſaid Ordinances and Lawes: with this Caution notwithſtanding, That two Lords of the Spiritualtie, and two Lords of the Temporaltie, ſhould take a ſtrait examination and view of them: and if in their judgements it were needfull, that anie of them ſhould be reformed, full power to them was giuen, to alter and to change what they thought fit. And if they diſſented in their opinions, it was then further ordered, that the Duke of *Britaine* (as Vmpier) ſhould haue power to arbitrate and to end the doubt. This being on both parts conſented to and concluded, the two Kings left both their eldeſt ſonnes for hoſtages with the Barons: who ſent them to the Caſtle of *Dauer*; where they remained about nine moneths.

A new concluſion for Peace.

The two Kings are ſet at libertie. Hoſtages giuen, and the Prince was one.

Then did the King with all conuenient expedition ſummon his High Court of Parliament: In which, ſo ſtrongly was the continuance of the ſaid Lawes and Ordinances made at *Oxford*, vrged, that they were then againe ratified and confirmed: and the king (though much againſt his will) tooke an Oath to maintaine them and the authoritie of the Twelue Peeres, vntill (according to the ſaid former referment) they ſhould be reformed, if anie thing in them were found to be amiſſe. And all ſuch as in thoſe Warres, or otherwiſe, had in anie ſort maintained them, receiued their pardon from the king. And hereupon the two yong Princes were enlarged. But not long after, ſo great a variance touching thoſe Ordinances grew betwixt the two Earles of *Leiceſter* and of *Gloceſter* (the two Generals of the Barons Faction) that nothing but mortall Warre had decided their controuerſie, if the King had not interpoſed his authoritie and mediation to make them friends.

A Parliament.

The former Lawes and Ordinances are againe confirmed.

The Hoſtages are enlarged.

Diſcord betweene the Earles of Leiceſter and of Gloceſter.

A faire oportunitie well watched and taken.

The Prince rayſeth an Armie.

ANNO 48. 1263.

The Barons doe the like.

The battaile of Euerſham.

The Barons are ouerthrowne.

But the young Prince *Edward* (taking much aduantage by reaſon of this jarre) departed ſecretly from the Kings Court, conſorted to his companie the Earles of *Gloceſter* and *Warreyne*, Sir *Roger Mortymer*, and manie other renowned men for the Warre. And all theſe rayſed a new Armie in *Wales*. And the Earle of *Leiceſter* conceiuing that his ſurpriſall and ruine was conſpired (to preuent his owne danger and misfortune) did the like. And not long after the two Armies met, neere to *Euerſham* in *Worceſterſhire*, and fought together ſo maliciouſly, and with ſuch bloudie reſolutions, that in ſhort time manie thouſands among them were ſlaine. For Death (taking part with both) ſpared neyther; but ſtriuing to make her gaine by their loſſe, inſulted proudly in the Armie, and bragged moſt, when ſhe did moſt harme. But in the end the Barons were diſcomfited; and *Symon* Earle of *Leiceſter*, with his eldeſt ſonne, and Sir *Hugh le Spencer*, and manie others of great account, were ſlaine, and the reſt fled. The common ſouldiors that preuailed, deſpightfully mangled the dead carkaſſe of the Earle; cutting off both hands and feete, and ſending them into diuers Shires to their friends, as Trophies of their Victorie. And others among them (being more inhumane and barbarous) cut off his head, and his priuie members, and placed them on eyther ſide of his noſe.

This ouerthrow did vtterly defeat the Barons, and depriued them of all their hopes: and it ſo reuiued the melancholie King, that now he began againe to be ſenſible of his owne ſtrength, and reſolued (with all ſpeede poſſible) to breake thoſe chaynes with which ſo lately hee was ſo ſtrongly bound. And for the effecting thereof, hee aſſembled his High Court of Parliament: In which, no mandared to ſpeake otherwiſe than as the King ſpake. So that thoſe former Ordinances and Lawes, which were made at *Oxford* in the Madde Parliament, and the authoritie of the Twelue Peers, and all Patents, Commiſſions, and Inſtruments whatſoeuer (which tended to the eſtabliſhing or ratifying of thoſe affaires) were (by the Kings expreſſe commaundement) brought forth, and were publikely damned, cancelled, and made void. And thus King *Henrie* regained his former libertie and power, to ſay and to doe in all things as he pleaſed.

A Parliament.

The former Decrees are all made void

The King reſolueth to burne the citie of London.

When this Parliament was ended, the King (perhaps by the inſtigation of his brother *Richard*, King of the *Romans*; who was cruelly wronged by the baſer ſort of the inhabitants of *London*, without anie cauſe by him giuen, as before it is mentioned) reſolued vtterly to waſt and to conſume with fire his Citie of *London*: becauſe (as

(as hee alledged) the Rulers and the Inhabitants thereof had alwaies deſpiſed him, and taken part againſt him with the Barons in their Warres. Whereupon ſuch of the Nobilitie (and others as were neere in fauour, and next about the perſon of the King) beſought him inſtantly to abſtaine from ſo foule a deede; which would not onely much weaken his Eſtate and Kingdome, but alſo make him infamous through the World, and vnto all ſucceeding Ages. Their ſuite was earneſt, and their reaſons to perſuade were vnanſwerable: yet the King proteſted, That his determination ſhould be vnchangeable; and that his Iuſtice vpon ſuch rebellious Caitiues ſhould be a preſident to terrifie all peruerſe and obſtinate Traitors and Rebels in future times. And this his reſolution juſtly occaſioned the Citizens of *London* to quake at the indignation of their angrie King: ſo that they (perceiuing that his rage and furie could not be mitigated) cauſed an Inſtrument in writing to be made, and ratified it with their common Seale, by which they confeſſed their Rebellion, humbly craued pardon, and without anie reſtraint, or exception, wholly ſubmitted their Lands, their Goods, and their Liues, together with the whole Citie, to the kings Grace and Mercie.

No intercеſſion can preuaile.

The ſubmiſſion of the Londoners.

This Inſtrument they ſent vnto *Windſour* by diuers of the chiefeſt and richeſt inhabitants of the Citie, who were prepared with all humilitie to haue preſented it vpon their knees. But ſo fierce was the Kings wroth towards them, and ſo implacable was his anger, that he reputed none of thoſe to be his friends, who interpoſed themſelues as Mediators in their behalfes: Neither would hee vouchſafe to admit anie one of them to come into his preſence; but cauſed them forthwith to be caſt into priſon: and fiue of the chiefeſt of them, together with all their Lands and their Goods, hee gaue vnto the Prince; and all the others he gaue to other of his attendants, who burthened them with heauie ſeruitude and much miſerie, and tooke from them what they pleaſed, leauing to them the leaſt part of their owne.

The citizens committed to priſon, and giuen away by the King.

Thus when the King had a little auenged himſelfe, and time had cooled the heat of his paſſionate humour; he hearkened to the importunate interceſſion of the Prince, and receiued the Citie and all the inhabitants thereof into fauor, and onely tooke of them a fine of one thouſand marks; and reſtored them to all their Liberties and Cuſtomes, which for their tranſgreſſion were ſeized into his hands.

The Prince procureth the Kings pardon and fauor.

The King alſo, vpon the Princes entreatie, pardoned the inhabitants of the fiue Ports: who finding Iuſtice to be faſt aſleepe, whileſt the Barons warres outragiouſly diſturbed the whole Eſtate

The fiue Ports are pardoned.

and Kingdome; robbed,rifled,and ſpoyled on the Seas both their owne neighbours and Countrey-men, and alſo all Nations whom they met,without any difference or reſpect.

And leſt the King ſhould be too much troubled with the frequent complaints of ſuch as had beene wronged by them, or his Courts of Iuſtice peſtred with the multitude of ſuch ſutors; the King commanded that none of the offenders ſhould be impleaded elſwhere,but onely in the Courts of thoſe Ports: by meanes whereof there were but few that complained, becauſe none of them had any hope to haue recompence or redreſſe there. And now,though thoſe inteſtine troubles and ciuill warres (which like an outragious fire diſperſed in the heart,and middeſt of a well compacted Citie, endangered the whole eſtate of this Kingdome and Commonweale) were thus appeaſed: and although *Gilbert Clare* Earle of *Gloceſter* by his reuolt from the Barons,and by his adhering to the Prince and to his complices, had greatly furthered the good ſucceſſe,which had made the King to enioy a bleſſed peace; yet was the ſaid Earle ſo little truſted,that he neither found fauour nor reward; but the little reſpect which was had of him,and his cold entertainment at the Court,made him deſperate of all good fortunes, and inflamed his heart to work reuenge.

The Earle of Gloceſter being vnrewarded, thinketh on miſchiefe.

This furie carried him headlong vnto the Citie of *London*, where no ſooner was his diſcontented humour made known, but the raſcall and the baſer ſort (forgetting the great calamitie which that famous Citie did endure,and the great fauours which ſo lately they had receiued from the King) flocked in troupes about him, and boldly committed many grieuous outrages within the Citie. And then they went vnto the Kings Palace at *Weſtminſter*, which they rifled,ſpoiled,and ranſacked without meane or meaſure. This rude beginning prognoſticated the ſudden acceſſe of another ciuill warre: which might haue bred as much danger as any of the former had done; but the Prince (againe) interpoſed himſelfe an earneſt mediator betwixt the King and all the ſaid offenders, and procured a large and a free pardon for the Earle.

The raſcality of London do flock vnto him.

They do miſchiefe.

The Prince procureth a large pardon.

Thus this dangerous fire was ſoone quenched,and good preuention in due time did wiſely cut off all occaſions of future warre: and at the ſame time, and by the like meanes, the King pardoned many decaied and out-lawed Gentlemen, who(in the heat of thoſe broiles) had committed many robberies and ſpoiles in diuers places of this kingdome.

The Earle of Gloceſters requeſt.

And not long after, the Earle of *Gloceſter* (deſpairing of all inward grace and fauour from the king, and being deſirous, as it ſeemed,

med, by deedes of Chiualrie to make himſelfe famous among the enemies of Chriſt) requeſted that he might be ſent with an Armie to make warre in the Holy-land. This motion (though it tended to much expence and great charge) yet it pleaſed the King exceedingly; becauſe he knew that the Earles buſie head and turbulent ſpirit would ſtill be plotting and deuiſing of new broiles, and hurly-burlies at home: wherfore he cauſed a faire Armie to be raiſed, and furniſhed it with all neceſſaries fit and requiſit for ſo long, and for ſo dangerous a iourney.

An Armie raiſed to be conducted into the Holy land by the Earle of Glocester.

But when all things were in a readineſſe, the Earle fained many excuſes which tended to ouer-much delay, which cauſed him to be leſſe regarded by the King, and to bee in great diſlike with all others.

The Earle is diſmiſſed worthily from that charge.

But Prince *Edward* (being full of youth and courage, and longing greedily to hoiſt his Sailes in the Sea of Honour, and by aduentrous deeds of Knight-hood, to equall his name with thoſe who were accounted moſt valiant in the world) by his earneſt ſuite and trauell, obtained the conducting of that Armie, and tranſported it into the Holy-land, where his ſword wrought wonders: and his Armie bred ſuch terror and admiration among the Turkes, that they would ſeldome or neuer aduenture themſelues againſt the Chriſtians in that quarter where the Prince ſerued. And to ſaue themſelues from his furie vpon his comming thither, they raiſed their ſiege from the Citie of *Acon*, which (for a long time) they had continued with more then a hundred thouſand men. And ſeeing that his death could not be haſtened by force and violence in the open field, they attempted it by poyſonings and other ſecret villanies, which tooke no effect. But at length a dogged Sarazen grieuouſly wounded him with an enuenomed Knife, yet (after much paine and great danger) hee eſcaped death. But in his abſence his father King *Henrie* died, and was buried at *Weſtminſter*, when he had raigned more then fiftie and ſix yeers; whereof the Prince was quickly informed, and therfore (by great iournies) hee ſafely returned (with great honour) into ENGLAND.

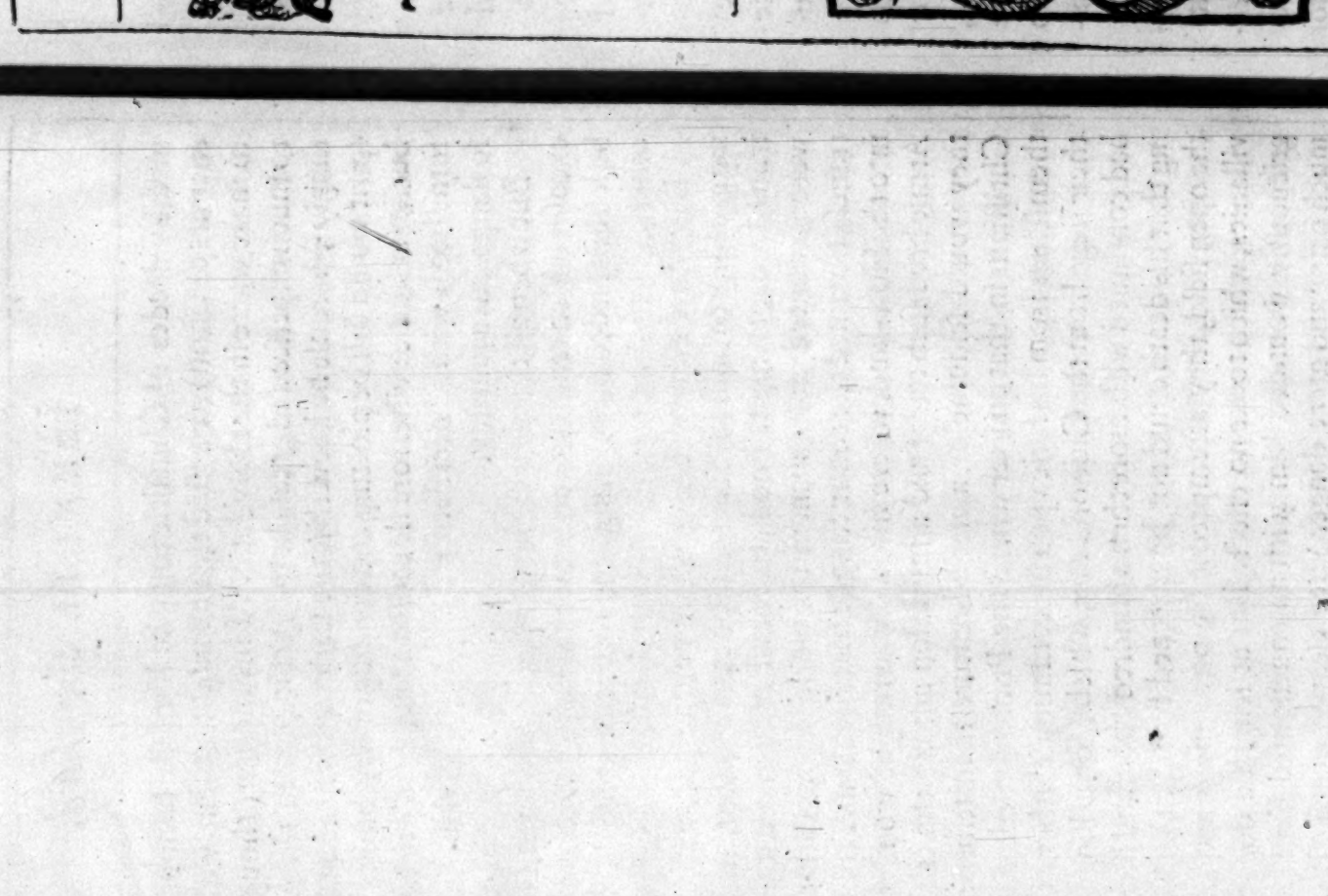
The Prince vndertaketh it, and doth perform it. Their happie ſucceſſe.

The ſiege of Acon raiſed.

The Prince was villanouſly wounded.

The King dieth.

THE



Eaſt
wo
A
da
ter
tec
Ha
fro
did
ſho
(bo

THE HISTORIE OF KING EDVVARD *THE FIRST.*

1

WHEN *Edward*, ſurnamed *Long-ſhankes*, was informed of his fathers death, he made quick preparations for his returne from the Holie Land; and by great journeyes trauailed vntill he came into *England*: where (with the generall applauſe, both of his Nobles and common People) hee was crowned King, when he was of the age of fiue and thirtie yeares.

The new King returneth from the Holie Land.

Wee haue heard how, when, and where *Symon de Mountford* Earle of *Leiceſter*, *Henrie* his eldeſt ſonne, and ſundrie other Barons were ſlaine in the laſt Battaile betweene them and the laſt King. And it is true, that after his ouerthrow, the Ladie *Elianor* his daughter, with manie others of his allies and kinsfolkes, were ſentenced to Exile; and departed into *France*: where they were courteouſly receiued by the *French* king *Philip* the third, ſurnamed the Hardie; whoſe kind entertaining of them proceeded not ſo much from his owne bountie and naturall diſpoſition to Liberalitie, as it did from an opinion which hee conceiued, That in ſo doing hee ſhould gaine the loue and good liking of manie *Engliſh* Lords: who (being diſcontented with the laſt Kings Gouernment) were not well

The French kings practiſe againſt King Edward.

well pleaſed with his ſonne, who had croſſed them in moſt of thoſe affaires. And moreouer, he knew the noble valour and courage of King *Edward* to be ſo eminent, that it was now high time to craue counſell of Wiſdome and of Policie, how and by what meanes he might preuent him from making himſelfe more great. And becauſe Reaſon and common Experience taught him, That hee, whoſe owne houſe is on fire, will rather imploy his endeuours to quench that flame, than to ſet his enemies houſe on fire alſo: hee therefore practiſed ſecretly with *Lluellen* (the moſt valiant, and greateſt in dignitie among the *Welchmen*) that he, with thoſe inhabitants, would rebell, if at anie time anie Warres were but likely to be attempted againſt the *French* Nation by King *Edward*. And this his plot was much furthered by the exile of the aforeſaid Ladie *Elianor*: who being (by reaſon of her misfortunes) in the diſpoſing and power of the *French* King, was (with great importunitie) deſired in marriage by the ſaid *Lluellen*: to whome (vpon thoſe concluſions and agreements eſpecially) ſhee was ſent with honourable attendance and rich gifts. But king *Edward* (being ſecretly informed both of the ſaid purpoſe, and of her paſſage towards *Wales*) wiſely preuented his owne danger, and intercepted her on the Sea, and detained her as his priſoner. By meanes whereof, *Lluellen* (whoſe beſt Rhetoricke to perſuade, was by open Warre and Rebellion) entred into the field with manie thouſands; who were more readie to robbe and to ſteale, than to reclayme themſelues, and to be mindfull of their dutie to their Prince.

Lluellen of Wales ſueth to the French King to haue in marriage Elianor the exiled daughter of the late Earle of Leiceſter.

She is ſent towards Wales.

She is taken at Sea.

Lluellen rebelleth.

The King likewiſe on his part (purpoſing to make his firſt voyage terrible to the *Welchmen*, for examples ſake to that fickle Nation) leuied ſo ſtrong an Armie, that (by all conjectures) the *Welchmen* were altogether vnable to reſiſt him. And it ſeemed they thought ſo too: For their chiefeſt Captaine and Leader (partly for the loue which he bare to his longed-for Ladie, and partly to preuent thoſe fatall dangers which knocked at his dore) vnexpectedly ſubmitted himſelfe to the Kings Grace, and yeelded himſelfe to be diſpoſed of wholly and onely at the Kings pleaſure; and vowed and proteſted with manie great and ſolemne Oathes, That his obedience ſhould be conſtant, and his ſword alwaies readie to ſerue the King, both againſt *France* and againſt all others in future time, if he might be made happie with the Kings fauour, and haue the enjoyment of his Ladie.

The King rayſeth an Armie.

Lluellen voluntarily ſubmitteth himſelfe.

Lluellen voweth and ſweareth loyaltie.

The King, whoſe heart was euer enclined to mercie, and more deſired by affabilitie to winne an enemie, than to conquer him by blowes; and ſuppoſing that his loue to his Miſtreſſe would be a ſtronger

Lluellen is pardoned, fauored, and wiued.

ſtronger bond to ſtrengthen his allegeance, than anie other thing; freely granted him his pardon, his fauour, and his wife. And thus thoſe Warres (which menaced the death of manie thouſands) were quietly ended, without the effuſion of anie bloud.

Lluellen rebelleth.

But within few yeares after, *Lluellen*, by the wicked perſuaſions and enticement of his brother *Dauid* (a man more contentious than prouident, and leſſe valiant than mutinous; and yet one whome the King did extraordinarily loue and fauour) rebelled againſt the King; and fought with Sir *Roger Mortymer* manie ſharpe and aduantagious battailes. But at length (Gods judgements haſtening Traytors to a ſhamefull end) both of them were taken; and their heads (as Trophies of the victorie) were ſent vnto the King: who cauſed them to be ſet vpon the Tower of *London*, for a terror vnto others; and there they remained long after.

Lluellen and his brother are taken and beheaded.

But (notwithſtanding all this) yet the naturall diſpoſition of the *Welchmen* ſo ſtrongly preuailed, and ſo blind they were, and vnable to foreſee their owne ruine, that within few moneths after they rebelled twice; and by manie ſlaughters and ſtrange executions they were ſubdued, and compelled to obey. And becauſe their Warres were rather maintained and cheriſhed by ſhiftings and by ſtartings into the huge and vaſt Woods (which made thoſe Rebels more diſordered, and confident to ſaue themſelues when greateſt danger did approach) the King cauſed thoſe Woods to be hewen downe, and to be conſumed with fire: By meanes whereof, they were reduced to a more ciuill kinde of life; and began to practiſe diuers commendable Occupations, Arts, and Sciences, and tooke ſome pleaſure (from thenceforth) to liue like honeſt men.

The Welchmen rebell againe and againe.

They are ſubdued.

Their woods are burned.

They become more ciuill.

In the eighteenth yeare of King *Edwards* Raigne, *Alexander* the King of *Scots* (not hauing anie iſſue of his bodie) fell with his horſe, and vnfortunately brake his necke. He had three ſiſters: the eldeſt of which was married vnto *Iohn Baylyol*, Lord of *Galloway*; the ſecond vnto *Robert le Bruze*, Lord of *Valley-Androw*; and the third was married into *England* to *Iohn Haſtings*, Lord of *Abergauenny*. Betwixt theſe three (each of them being backed with the beſt ſupport of their moſt able friends) ſharpe bickerings and ciuill warres occaſioned the deaths of manie worthie and valiant men, together with the ruine and deſtruction of ſome of their Houſes and beſt Fortunes: and the Commonweale of that kingdome receiued manie deſperate wounds and ſtrange miſaduentures, becauſe each of them (in the right of his wife) attempted and hoped to be a king. Whereupon king *Edward* (with great expedition) went into *Scotland* as their Soueraigne Lord, and endeuoured to compoſe this ſtrife. But

The King of Scots breaketh his necke

Contention about the Crowne of Scotland.

The title is referred to the cenſure of King Edward, as to the ſoueraign Lord thereof.

ſuch was their mutuall deſire to raigne, that no perſuaſions preuailed to make anie one of them to yeeld. But in the end, more ſounder aduice tooke place: ſo that they all (by a publike writing vnder their hands and ſeales) conſented to referre themſelues and their Titles to the cenſure and judgement of King *Edward*. And by the ſame Inſtrument they freely ſurrendered all *Scotland*, and that Crowne, into the Kings hands; to the end, that thereby they might enable him abſolutely to poſſeſſe ſuch a one of them in that Kingdome, as (in his judgement) ought to haue the ſame. Hee alſo receiued from them in writing their ſeuerall demands, and each mans proofes, reaſons, and arguments to maintaine his Clayme. And thereupon King *Edward* elected and made choice of twentie of the moſt diſcreet, wiſe, and worthie men of his kingdome of *England*, and of twentie more of the kingdome of *Scotland*: and by their aduice and counſell he informed himſelfe truly of that buſineſſe; and at length pronounced his Sentence for *Iohn Baylyol*, who had married the eldeſt of thoſe three ſiſters: who receiued from him that Crowne and Countrey, and for it performed and did his homage to King *Edward*.

Scotland is ſurrendred to king Edward

A wiſe and a diſcreet King

Iohn Bailiol is made King of the Scots. He doth homage for it to the King.

The King, although he were earneſtly employed in theſe and in other affaires at home; yet was he more troubled with greater buſineſſes abroad, by reaſon that the *French* King daily wronged him in *Gaſcoyne*, *Guyan*, and elſewhere. And to maintaine thoſe warres, the King (by the aduice and counſell of *William Marchyan* his chiefeſt Treaſurer) ſeized into his hands the Plate, Iewels, and Treaſure of the Churches and of the religious Houſes within this kingdome, and compelled the Clergie to giue vnto him the one halfe of one yeares value of all their Eccleſiaſticall Dignities and Promotions. This vnaccuſtomed Sacriledge made the King hatefull in Churchmens eyes. But yet he ſeemed in ſome ſort to content them with faire promiſes of Reſtitution, when his Treaſures ſhould by other meanes be encreaſed. But they little relying vpon that promiſe, and (by common experience in other things) being reſolued, that the Kings Coffers would not be emptied to fill theirs (and yet feeding themſelues with a vaine hope, that ſome other recompence might be made them) became humble ſutors to the King, That he would be pleaſed to reuoke and to annihilate the Statute, which in the fourth yeare of his Raigne was made againſt *Mortmayne*; which prohibited the giuing and the conueying of anie Lands and Tenements to anie Corporation whatſoeuer, without the Kings leaue. But as he neuer meant to gratifie them in anie ſort whatſoeuer: ſo he made them anſwer, That it lay not in him, without the conſent of

The French King wrongeth King Edward.

Euill counſell.

The King ſtrippeth the Church. He is hated by Churchmen.

The Clergies ſute denyed.

Mortmayne.

of a Parliament, to reuoke and to fruſtrate anie Law. The Clergie (to their great griefe and ſorrow) perceiued, that their Treaſure was ſwept away, together with all hope of reſtitution or amends: and though it vexed them inwardly, yet durſt they not to expreſſe anie outward tokens of diſlike.

Thus when the King had augmented his ſtore by the Clergies plentie: he (by the directions of his ſaid Treaſurer) impoſed a Taxe or Subſidie vpon euerie Sacke of Woolls, and vpon all Fells and Hydes which were to be tranſported out of this kingdome; and alſo required the tenth part of euerie mans moueable goods and ſubſtance to maintaine his Warres: which being granted, hee cauſed it to be leuied by manie payments within the ſpace of three yeares. He alſo compelled the Clergie to bring into his Coffers all ſuch ſummes of mony as they had promiſed to pay vnto the Pope, towards the maintenance of the *Chriſtians* Warre with the *Turks* in the Holie Land. He alſo tooke vp one hundred thouſand Quarters of the beſt Wheat, and ſent it to his Armies in *Gaſcoyne* and in *Guyan*: where they fought with much courage and valour, but with doubtfull ſucceſſe; ſometimes gaining what was loſt, and ſometimes looſing what they had wonne.

A new Tax.

In the fiue and twentieth yeare of King *Edwards* Raigne, *Iohn Baylyol* the King of *Scots* (partly by the ſecret procurement of the *French* King, and partly by the lewd aduice and counſell of factious and wicked perſons) ſent a Defiance (with a proud renunciation of his Fealtie and Homage) to the King; and with an Armie of braine-ſicke Rebels entred into the Northerne parts of this kingdome: where (with fire and ſword) they oppreſſed ſuch as could make no reſiſtance, and (without pitie and compaſſion) ſlew ſuch as were armed in the defence of their Countrey, and to ſaue themſelues. Whereupon King *Edward* recounting his manifold fauors and great loue to the ſaid reuolted King, and the high Honour wherewith (not manie yeares before) he had graced him; and being reſolued to correct his vnthankfulneſſe with ſharpe reuenge, leuied a puiſſant Armie, and marched (in full ſtrength) towards the Northerne parts: and found his fortune to be ſo fauourable, that with much eaſe hee wonne the ſtrong Caſtle of *Barwike*, with the ſlaughter of fiue and twentie thouſand *Scots*. He alſo wonne the well-defended Caſtle of *Donn-Barre*: and (piercing into the ſides of *Scotland*) hee tooke *Edenburrough*, and all other places of the beſt defence. And the King of *Scots* perceiuing the dangerous eſtate wherein hee ſtood, and repoſing his laſt hopes in the Kings Grace; by the aduice of all his Nobles repaired in perſon to the

25. 1296. *Iohn Baylyol inuadeth England.*

The King with an army marcheth againſt the Scots.

Barwike wonne.

The Scots are ouerthrowne.

25000 *Scots are ſlaine.*

The King of Scots yeeldeth himſelf, and ſurrendreth his Kingdome. He is ſent to the Tower of London.

Kings preſence, humbly ſubmitted himſelfe, craued pardon, and ſolemnely ſurrendred his whole Kingdome into King *Edwards* hands: Who forthwith ſent the ſaid *Scottiſh* King with a ſtrong Guard to the Tower of *London*; but gaue him large allowance both of Libertie and of Attendance, and of his Diet. And then he committed the Gouernment of that Kingdome vnto *Iohn Warrayne*, Earle of *Suſſex* and of *Surrey*; and made Sir *Hugh Creſſingham* his High Treaſurer, and *William Earnſley* his chiefe Iuſtice of that Kingdome. And hauing confined ſome of the Rebellious Peeres of *Scotland* within the Marches of *England*; hee returned triumphantly, and with great honour.

The King placeth a Gouernour ouer Scotland.

King Edward ſayleth into Flanders and aſſiſteth the Earle thereof.

And then King *Edward* vſing great expedition and much policie for the refreſhing and for the renewing of his Armie; tranſported it into the Territories of *Guy*, then Earle of *Flanders:* againſt whome, *Robert* Earle of *Arthois* (by the procurement, and with the aſſiſtance of the *French* King) made ſharpe warre. And the *French* King intending to haſten King *Edwards* returne into *England*, to ſaue himſelfe and his owne Countrey; animated the *Scots* to rebell againe: And they (becauſe they were factious, and readie to doe vnto *France* all ſeruice vpon all commaunds, though with the hazard of their liues, and of their lands) without anie feare, or fore-caſt of their future miſeries, did put themſelues in Armes.

The Scots rebell.

The Scots are ſubdued.

But King *Edward* purpoſing to greete the *French* King and his Forces with a Souldiors welcome; appointed *Henrie Percie* Earle of *Northumberland*, and manie other Lords and Gentlemen of the beſt ranke, for the repreſſing of that Rebellion: who ſo manfully banged the *Scots*, that they enforced them to flye out of the field, and purſued them with a mercileſſe ſlaughter, and reduced the reſt to their former dutie and obedience.

The French King dared not to fight with King Edward.

The *French* King perceiuing, that his practiſe with the *Scots* wanted his hoped ſucceſſe; was not deſirous to trie his ſtrength with King *Edward* in the open field: but repoſing more confidence in his wit than in his valour, hee propoſed verie honourable conditions of amitie and loue; which by King *Edward* were accepted: and then a generall Peace was proclaymed betwixt them all. And thus thoſe Warres (by King *Edwards* meanes and aſſiſtance) receiued a ſhort end; which made a ſhew of long continuance, with the expence of much bloud.

A Peace is concluded.

London is reſtored to her liberties.

After the Kings returne into *England*, hee reſtored to the Citizens of *London* their Liberties; which (for manie vndutifull miſdemeanors) had remained forfeited in his hands forthe ſpace of twelue

twelue yeares. And forthwith hee ledde all his Forces into *Scotland*; where a new Rebellion madly raged, and could not be ſuppreſſed without much ſtrength. And being more willing, that the execution of Iuſtice vpon few (for examples ſake) ſhould rather reclayme the multitude, than that the Sword ſhould waſtfully conſume them; he required the deliuerie of their Leaders, and offered his free pardon to the reſt.

The Scots rebell againe.

A mercifull King.

27. 1298.

But their froward diſpoſitions (preparing them to much more miſerie than as yet they had endured) animated them obſtinately to arme themſelues, and in warlike faſhion to bid Battaile to the King: Inſomuch, that his Highneſſe finding his fauours to bee neglected, and perceiuing that all extremitie was to be vſed; ſet vpon them with ſuch furie and violence, that with the loſſe of eight and twentie of his followers, and with the ſlaughter of two and thirtie thouſand of the *Scots*, hee enforced the reſt to yeeld: and taking a new Oath for their Fealtie and Homage, he appeaſed that Countrey; and (to the great joy of all his people) he returned againe into *England*. Where (vpon the earneſt entreatie and requeſt of Pope *Boniface* the eight) hee enlarged *Iohn Baylyol*: Who trauailed into *France*, to take a view of his Lordſhips there; which (according to his owne name) were called *Baylyols* Lands.

The battaile of Fanrike. The Scots are ouerthrowne.

28. *Engliſhmen ſlaine.* 32000. *Scots are ſlaine.*

Iohn Baylyol ſet at libertie

King *Edward* had no ſooner finiſhed theſe Troubles; but the *Scots* were in Armes againe: So that the third time hee entred with a great Power into that Countrey; where none were ſo daring, or ſo hardie, as to endure his preſence. But the greater number of the Earles, Barons, and chiefeſt Gentlemen of that kingdome had withdrawne themſelues into the ſtrong Caſtle of *Eſtryuelyne*; which was by them ſo ſtrengthened, that in their iudgements it was impregnable. This Caſtle was long beſieged by the King, but to little purpoſe: and hee much doubted, leaſt his continuance in that ſeruice would affoord him but little honor in the end. Wherefore (to make a tryall how farre his Inuention would take place) he cauſed two paire of Gallowes to be ſet vp in the Caſtles view; and with the ſound of a Trumpet did proclayme his free Pardon, if the beſieged did yeeld themſelues within three daies: but denounced death vnto them all, by hanging, without reſpect of Honor, or of Perſon, if obſtinately they enforced him to continue a longer Siege. And hereupon the beſieged, although they were ſo ſtrongly immured, that they might boldly haue truſted vpon their ſtrong defence; yet becauſe they diſtruſted to be relieued, they repoſed their confidence in the Kings word, and ſubmitted both the Caſtle and

The Scots doe rebell againe.

The King leadeth an Armie into Scotland.

Eſtryueline is beſieged, in which the Nobles are.

The Kings Policie.

A Proclamation.

Eſtryuelyne is yeelded.

The Scots do ſwear their obedience to K. Edward.

and themſelues to his grace and mercie, whereof they had good proofe. For (taking new oaths for the performance of their obedience, and dutie in future times) he ſet them free and at libertie: and the like oaths he tooke of all Iuſtices, Mayors, and other Officers of Townes, Cities, Caſtles, and Forts; and hauing diſpoſed all things in a comely and in a peaceable order, for the good gouernement of that Kingdome, hee returned into *England*, and brought with him (for a memoriall of his great victorie) a Chaire of ſtone, in which the Kings of *Scotland* by common cuſtom receiued their Enſtallment and their Crowne: which Chaire remaineth in the Kings Chappell at *Weſtminſter*, among the faire Monuments of our famous Kings of this Realme.

The Scottiſh chairn.

Troy-baſton.

Aſſoone as King *Edward* was returned from his iourney, he cauſed a generall enquirie (which was termed *Troile Baſton*) to be made throughout his Kingdome, of the miſdemeanours and oppreſſions of his Officers of all ſorts; ſo that the number of the tranſgreſſors was ſuch, and ſo great were their offences, and their fines ſo heauie, that with their money the King filled his emptie coffers to the brimme, diſcharged his old ſcores, which were very great by reaſon of his warres in *Wales*, *Scotland*, the Low Countries, *Gaſcoyne*, *Guyan*, and elſewhere, and then he diſplaced thoſe corrupted Officers, and placed better in their ſteads.

A memorable deed done by a worthie King.

The Prince is committed to priſon, and Pierce Gaueſton is baniſht Cornwall and Wales giuen to the Prince.

About the ſame time Doctor *Langton* then Biſhop of *Cheſter*, complained grieuouſly to the King vpon *Edward* the yong Prince, who (by the lewd aduice and inſtigation of *Pierce Gaueſton* his looſe and graceleſſe companion) brake forcibly into his Parke, and made hauocke of his game; for which the Prince was committed to priſon, and *Gaueſton* was baniſhed the land, and required not to return on paine of death. And the next yeere after *Edmund* Earle of *Cornwall*, ſonne to *Richard* King of the *Romans*, died without iſſue; ſo that that Earldome reuerted to the Crowne, which (together with the Principalitie of *Wales*) the King gaue vnto Prince *Edward*, his eldeſt ſonne and heire apparant to his Crowne.

29.

1300.

Peace betwixt England and Scotland.

The Scots doe ſweare obedience.

The Popes claime to be high Lord of Scotland, and his command to King Edward.

In the three and thirtieth yeer of King *Edwards* raigne, a generall peace was proclaimed betweene *England* and *Scotland*, and *Robert le Bruſe*, and many other knights, Lords, and Earles of that Country came into *England*, and voluntarily ſwore their fealtie and their homage to the king: yet before one yeare was fully expired, the ſaid Lord *Bruſe* and many others ſecretly procured from the Pope an inſtrument in writing, by which the Pope made claime to the kingdome of *Scotland*, as holden of his Church of *Rome*; and the king was thereby peremptorily required to ſurceaſe from all demands

mands of Tenure, and of Soueraintie ouer it. But the king (by the aduice of his Nobles) ſignified by his Embaſſadors to the Pope, That the Signiory and Lordſhip of the ſaid kingdome of *Scotland* did only belong to the kings of *England*, and not vnto the See of *Rome*, nor vnto any other: and therefore he prayed him to reuoke his ſaid Inſtrument and vniuſt claime; for that both hee and his Nobles were reſolued to maintain his right and lawfull inheritance therein, with the vtmoſt expence of their goods, lands, and liues. But whilſt thoſe things were thus handling, *Robert le Bruſe* (by the Popes conſent) cauſed himſelf to be crowned king of that Realm: which occaſioned king *Edward* the fourth time to enter into *Scotland* with a puiſſant Armie; where he ſo largely extended his valor, and with the ſword ſo fiercely deuoured the Inhabitants which ioynd with their vſurping king, that they were compelled (with extraordinarie tokens of ſubiection and humilitie) to yeeld themſelues to the kings mercie. And *Robert le Bruſe* (finding no meanes to make good his falſe title to that Crown) ſecretly withdrew himſelfe, and fled into *Norway*, where he remained vntill king *Edwards* death; which happened ſoone after, when hee had raigned victoriouſly almoſt thirty fiue yeeres.

The Kings meſſage to the Pope.

Robert le Bruſe doth vſurp in Scotland.

The King in his owne perſon the fourth time ſubdueth the Scots.

The vſurper flieth into Norway.

The King dieth.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING EDVVARD *THE SECOND.*

AFTER the Kings death, his ſonne *Edward* ſucceeded, and was crowned King.

An euill King.

His tall and comely Perſonage, graced with outward Majeſtie, ſeemed to promiſe manie bleſſings to enſue: But his Maners (being groſſely corrupted by lewd and graceleſſe companions) were ſo laſciuious, and vnbefitting the condition of a King, that he became burthenſome to his Nobilitie; and (almoſt) a skorne to his inferior ſubjects. For hee neglected the ſocietie and the counſell of ſuch as were wiſe and graue, and conſorted himſelfe with his owne Minions: by meanes whereof, he put in practiſe euerie loathed thing, wherein hee could either take pleaſure, or expreſſe his follie. So that his euill Gouernment made his Kingdome to be vnfortunate, and himſelfe a preſident of wretchedneſſe to ſucceeding Ages: as in the diſcourſe of his Hiſtorie it will more particularly appeare.

Pierce Gaueſton.

No ſooner was his head adorned with his Imperiall Crowne, but his heart longed for *Pierce Gaueſton*; the wicked corrupter of his youth, and the profeſſed enemie of all honeſtie and vertue. For albeit that he was exiled by the laſt King; who tooke an Oath of this his Succeſſor, neuer to permit him (vnpuniſhed) to come backe againe into *England:* yet the remembrance of his villanies (conſor-

The King breakes his Oath to recall Gaueſton

Pieree Gaueſton is all in all.

ting with the Kings bad nature and euill diſpoſition) was a quicke meſſenger for his returne. And his arriuall ſo aboundantly repleniſhed the Kings conceits with extraordinarie joy, that nothing elſe (in compariſon of it) gaue him anie contentment: Neither could anie man (beſides him) expect for anie graceſull entertainement from the King.

The Nobles tell the King of his Oath.

The Noble men (who perfectly knew how wickedly this *Gaueſton* was enclined) perceiuing that the King doted on him, and that his affections towards him were vnlimited: being perplexed with inward griefe, and fearing the Ruine which (through his inſolencie) threatened the ſubuerſion of the whole Realme; emboldened themſelues to put the King in minde of his oath. But as his conſcience troubled him not for the breach thereof: So their diſliking encreaſed his deſires towards *Gaueſton*, and to make him great. For *Gaueſton* alone, and none but *Gaueſton*, was likely to doe all in all: and (frowne hee that frowne would) the King cared not who was diſpleaſed; hee was reſolued, that *Gaueſton* ſhould be great.

Gaueſton is aduanced.

And therefore hee firſt Lorded him with the Baronie of *Wallingford*: and ſoone after, he created him Earle of *Cornwall*; and made him the ſole and onely Commander ouer his Iewels and his Treaſure. In which Office, ſo abſolute was his power, and ſo cunning was his craftie head, to prouide in the time of his proſperitie for aduerſe fortune which might enſue; that ſecretly he conueyed beyond the Sea a faire Table and Treſſels, all made of beaten gold, and manie rich and precious Ornaments and Iewels, to the great hurt and prejudice of the King and of this Realme.

He conueyes the Kings Iewels out of the Realme.

The King liueth looſely and lewdly.

Hee alſo tooke much pleaſure to feede the Kings fancies with great varietie of new delights; and by his example, hee enured him to Banquet, Drinke, and to Carowſe beyond meaſure: And his diſhoneſt perſuaſions and enticements made him careleſſe of the Bed and of the ſocietie and fellowſhip of *Iſabell* his Religious and vertuous Queene, the daughter of the *French* King *Philip* the faire, and ſiſter to his Succeſſor *Charles* the fourth; and trayned him to the adulterous conſortſhip of wanton Curtizans and ſhameleſſe Whores.

The Queene in vaine ſeeketh to reclaime the King.

The Queene (who ſorrowed hereat beyond meaſure) repoſed all means for redreſſe of thoſe her vnſufferable wrongs in her prayers vnto God, and in her modeſt wooings for her Kings loue. But all her endeuours proued nothing at all: For the beames of her excellent vertues could not pierce the thicke clouds of his vanities; neither could her teares or her groanes mollifie his hard heart, which ſurfetted vpon too much plentie of loathſome ſinnes.

The

The common people gaue large libertie to their Tongues, to ſpeake and to talke reproachfully, and to the Kings diſgrace. Hee knew it well; he heard it; and cared not for it: but was reſolued to perſeuere in thoſe vngodly courſes, which by *Pierce Gaueſton* were contriued and propoſed vnto him.

The people talke of the Kings euill life.

The Noblemen, and ſuch as by reaſon of their Offices and Places were of the Kings Councell; did (in their particulars) aduenture manie times ſecretly to informe him of the lewdneſſe of *Pierce Gaueſton*; and that both ſtrangers, and alſo his owne people, did ſtrangely ſpeake of him and of his Gouernment: which was altogether eclipſed by the foule interpoſition of his vices betwixt himſelfe and it. But their labour was quite loſt, and their fidelitie was requited with vnthankfull frownes; rather teſtifying his determination to continue ſubject (though he were a King) to his follies, than in anie ſort to amend anie thing which was amiſſe.

The King cares not for good counſell.

When nothing could preuaile, either to reforme the King, or to make him careleſſe of *Pierce Gaueſton*; the Lords and Barons of this Kingdome began ſeriouſly to conſult and to take another courſe. For they preferred their generall Petition to the King: wherein they plainely diſcouered the foulneſſe of his faults, and the ſorrow of his beſt affected ſubjects, for that his Majeſtie (more than was fitting or comely) was guided and gouerned by *Pierce Gaueſton:* and earneſtly entreated him to be pleaſed (for the preuenting of ſuch miſchiefes as were otherwiſe likely to enſue) to baniſh that lewd Companion both from his Court and Kingdome.

A petition for Gaueſtons baniſhment.

The King perceiuing that his Nobles were reſolued to vrge his conſent vnto *Pierce Gaueſtons* Exile, agreed (though vnwillingly) thereunto: yea, in ſuch a diſpleaſed humor graunted he their requeſt, that thereby they might well vnderſtand, that his heart ſubſcribed not to their deſires. But away he was ſent into *Ireland:* Where he was no ſooner arriued, but by meſſengers ſent to him by the King, he was required to be jocund and chearefull in his baniſhment; for that his abſence ſhould in the end be recompenced with greater honours and more gracefull fauors than hee had formerly receiued: And for a pledge thereof, the King appointed him to be the chiefe Gouernour and higheſt Commander in that Countrey; and ſent him ſuch ſtore of Plate, Iewels, and Coyne, both of Siluer and of Gold, that he might well thinke, that his baniſhment was but an honorable Embaſſade, and an occaſion thereby preſented by good fortune to the King, to make him the more potent and more rich.

Gaueſton is baniſhed into Ireland.

The King ſends comfortable meſſages vnto Gaueſton.

Gaueſton is made Gouernour of Ireland.

The King ſends him Iewels and Money.

The Nobles doe ſue for his returne.

Gaueſton is recalled.

Gaueſton is wicked and inſolent.

Gaueſton is baniſhed againe.

He is recalled.

Gaueſton boaſteth of his wicked courſes.

He skornes the Nobles.

The Barons ſtrike off Gaueſtons head.

The King is impatient for Gaueſtons death.

The King fauoreth the two Spencers.

The Spencers are as bad as was Gaueſton

The fruits of euill gouernment.

And beſides all this, the Kings diſcontented paſſions ſo ſwayed in him, and *Gaueſtons* abſence ſo much perplexed him; that his Nobles (being in hope of future amendment of all things which had beene done amiſſe, and to pleaſe the King) freely, and of their owne accords, moued the King for his returne. But when he came back againe, ſo ſtrongly and ſo ſtrangely was hee ſupported by the publike fauors and vnremoueable loue of the King; that with greater inſolencie and pride than before hee practiſed manie more notorious villanies than euer he had done. So that (by meanes of the inceſſant importunitie of the Nobles) hee was againe baniſhed into *Flanders:* where hee remained not long, but the king called him backe againe.

Thoſe his Exiles (thus procured by the Lords and Barons of this kingdome, and their conſents to call him home againe) might haue reclaymed him from his foule and groſſe errors, if wiſdome and vertue had in anie ſort beene entertained by him. But in ſtead of changing his bad nature into good qualities; hee tooke an extraordinarie delight to glorie in his owne ſinne; and to boaſt, how he miſ-led the king. He alſo skornefully deſpiſed the greateſt Nobles of this Land, and abuſed them at their faces: and by vntrue informations (which priuately and behind their backs he gaue vnto the king) he cauſed them to be frowned on; and did all things in ſuch a diſordered faſhion, without controlment, that the Barons with one conſent (being hopeleſſe of redreſſe, and being vnable anie longer to ſupport ſuch a deſpiſed burthen) beſieged him, being in a ſtrong Caſtle; which they wonne: and to redeeme the kings honour, and to procure their owne liberties, and the welfare of the Commonweale; they cauſed his head to be ſmitten off. But ſo highly was the king diſpleaſed thereat, that alwaies from thenceforth he endeauoured nothing more, than by crueltie and by tyrannie to reuenge his death.

And then (to anger his Nobilitie) he entertained into his neareſt familiaritie and counſailes the two *Spencers*, Sir *Hugh* the father, and Sir *Hugh* the ſonne; men as graceleſſe, and as odious to the Lords and common people, as the other was. Their aduice enclined the king to proſecute his lewd and wanton courſe of life among laſciuious and wanton Whores and Concubines, and to ſet at naught the ſweet companie of his modeſt and vertuous Queene: which made him a skorne to forraine Princes, and hatefull in the ſight of all honeſt men. Yet the king, in deſpight of his greateſt Lords, ſupported the two *Spencers* in all things which they would take in hand.

But

But his euill gouernment, both of himſelfe and of his kingdome, reuiued new diſcords betweene the king and his Barons: and by meanes thereof, the affaires and buſineſſes of the Commonweale were ill managed; and ſuch as lay in wait to aduance their Eſtates by reaſon of this diſſention, had now gotten fit oportunitie to put in practiſe what they pleaſed. Among which, *Robert le Bruſe* (returning from *Norway* into *Scotland*) was joyfully receiued there, and was the ſecond time crowned king of that kingdome: And then he leuied a ſtrong Armie, with which he entred into the Marches of *England* foure or fiue dayes journey; and with fire and ſword miſerably waſted and deſolated thoſe Countries, vntill hee was encountred by the king, and compelled to retyre.

The King and his Nobles are at variance.

Robert le Bruſe being recrowned, inuadeth England.

7. 1313.

But king *Edward* fighting a Battaile with the *Scotiſh* power within the borders of their owne Countrey, receiued the ouerthrow: and hauing ſeene the ſlaughter of manie thouſands in his Armie (among which, were *Gilbert de Clare* Earle of *Gloceſter*, and two and fortie other Lords, and more than threeſcore knights and Baronets, beſides two and twentie men of Name, who were taken priſoners) hee was compelled (for his owne ſafetie) ſhamefully to flye, and with diſhonourable ſucceſſe to returne againe into *England*. Where he was (eftſoones) perplexed and put to much trouble by the vntrue and deſperate attempt of one *Iohn Poydras* a Tanners ſonne dwelling in *Exeter*: who boldly affirmed himſelfe to be the truly begotten ſonne of the laſt king, and ſaid, That he was changed in his Cradle by his Nurſe for a Carters child; and offered diuers colourable proofes for the ſame: and among the reſt, he ſtrongly inſtanced vpon the vnworthie and baſe conditions of the king; ſorting to none ſo fitly, as vnto one of obſcure and of common birth.

The Battaile of Eſtreuelyne

The King receiueth a great ouerthrow.

The King flyeth.

Iohn Poydras diſcouered and executed

This his clayme, and bold aſſertions, quickly abuſed the eares and the hearts of the vulgar, and drew manie of them (for want of wiſdome and obedience) to flocke vnto him, as to their king. But at length he was apprehended; and hauing confeſſed his Treaſon and his folly, and being arraigned, conuicted, and condemned, hee was executed according to his deſerts.

At the ſame time alſo, the ſtrong and almoſt impregnable Caſtle of *Barwike* was trecherouſly betrayed into the hands of *Robert le Bruſe*, the vſurping king of *Scots*: and ſuch a generall ſcarcitie of all ſorts of Victuals, and ſuch a Murreine of all kinds of Cattell ſo puniſhed the people, that the like before among them was neuer ſeene. And diuers notorious and bold Theeues, to the number of two hundred at the leaſt (being cloathed in Friers weeds of gray) without

Barwike betrayed to the Scots.

A famine.

Theeues beare great ſway.

The Scots inuade England.

without reſpect of perſon or of ſexe, robbed and ſpoyled the Inhabitants of the North. But (in the end) they were taken, and, according to their deſerts, were put to death. The *Scots* alſo raiſed a new Armie, and with great violence and furie they entred *England*; where (beſides the great afflictions occaſioned by that warre) the Inhabitants of thoſe Countries were ſo pinched and plagued with famine, that in many places thoſe who liued, ſcarcely ſufficed to interre their dead: and the reſt (to preſerue their liues) were compelled to ſuſtaine themſelues in the great extremitie of their hunger, by eating of Rats, Mice, Cats, Dogges, Horſes, and ſuch like.

The Famine grieuouſly increaſeth.

The King is ouerthrown the ſecond time by the Scots.

A miſerably diſtreſſed people.

The King (intending to ſuppreſſe the *Scots*, and to correct them for their inſolencie and folly) encountred them with his whole Armie, but receiued a notorious ouerthrow; and (being ſcornfully checked and diſgraced by his bold and ſawcie enemies) hee returned home again with great ignominie and ſhame, leauing his poore ſubiects in the North, ſo miſerably diſtreſſed and vnrelieued, as euer any people were forſaken by an vnworthie and a careleſſe King.

The vſe of this Hiſtory.

Of theſe diſgraces, and of theſe troubles, we make this profitable vſe: That as the heroicall vertues of excellent Princes are crowned with many bleſſings from aboue; ſo for the iniquitie and hainous tranſgreſſions of wicked and vngodly Kings, both themſelues and their people likewiſe, are ſeuerely puniſhed by God, before whom Princes muſt fall as well as the common ſubiects, except their true and heartie repentance (being ioyned with the amendment of their liues) doe (in ſeaſon) procure his mercie and his fauour.

The Nobles endeuour reformation.

The Peeres and the Nobles of this Kingdome (perceiuing that the diſeaſes of the Common-weale did daily encreaſe and growe more dangerous) determined (like good Phyſitians) narrowly to ſearch out the cauſes of theſe maladies, and to finde ſome remedie to cure them before it were too late. The miſerable examples of all kinds of wickedneſſe which preſented themſelues vnto their view, emboldned them to informe the King, That the two *Spencers* and their miſguiding of the State (by whom only, and by none other the King was counſailed and directed) were the immediat occaſioners of all thoſe miſchiefes and calamities, which miſerably afflicted and tormented the whole Kingdome. They plainly tolde him, That ſuch was their intereſt in the Kings perſon, and in his gouernment of his people, that they were bound (in honour, and for conſcience ſake) to informe his Highneſſe of all ſuch miſdemeanors com-

They complain on the two Spencers.

committed by any of his ſubiects as tended to the ſubuerſion of the State, and the diſturbing of the common peace therof: and then they became importunat ſutors to his Maieſtie, That he would be pleaſed to put from him the two *Spencers*, who corrupted him with monſtrous vices, and made him altogether careleſſe of thoſe duties which by Almightie God were required at his hands. They told him likewiſe, That as ſubiection belonged to the people; ſo the King was bound to protect them, and that (vnconſcionably and moſt diſhonorably) he had left his Commons in the North, to the rage and rigor of the *Scots*, and to all extremities of hunger and of other wants: and that if he pleaſed not (vpon their humble entreaty and requeſt) to caſſier thoſe two graceleſſe Counſailors, of their places and from his ſeruice; they then muſt and would preſume to doe it, though it were with the hazard and perill of their owne liues.

The reſolution of the Nobles touching the two Spencers.

The king could not chooſe but hearken to this grieuous and true report. For as it was founded and grounded vpon conſcience, and on duetie; ſo was it maintained with a conſtant reſolution to reforme that which was amiſſe. He bit his lip thereat, and his countenance proclaimed his diſcontentment. Inwardly he meditated and deuiſed how he might ſurpriſe thoſe Noble-men, who (moſt of all) ſtomacked the two *Spencers*, whom ſo immoderatly hee did loue, yet inwardly his tongue gaue the Barons a pleaſing anſwere; ſo that hee forthwith ſommoned his high Court of Parliament: and pretending a reformation of all things that were conceiued to be amiſſe, he gladded the hearts of his Nobles and Commons exceedingly. But the Lords and Barons (although they reioiced much that the time would ſhortly come, in which theſe matters ſhould be ſubſtantially debated on) yet were they iealous, and ſuſpected leſt the king intended their ſurpriſal in that ſolemn meeting: wherfore the greater numbers of them repaired vnto *London*, beeing ſtrongly garded with a braue Armie of ſufficient and gallant men, which were all cloathed in a like Liuerie; whereat the king was highly diſpleaſed: but moſt of all it grieued him, that hee knew the Barons would haue their owne wil by taking and ſeparating from him the two *Spencers* (who were more deer to him then his Queen and children, and all his friends beſide) and in the end (among many other things) it was (by the whole Parliament) enacted, That they ſhould bee exiled during their liues, and neuer bee licenſed by the king to returne againe into *England*.

The King frowneth on his Nobles.

A Parlamẽt.

The Nobles do ſtand vpon their guard.

How the king loued the two Spencers.

The two Spencers are baniſhed for euer.

This being thus concluded, the Barons (who longed to ſee the two *Spencers* vnder ſaile) cauſed certaine Ships to bee prepared, in which

which they were embarked and ſent away. So that now all men were well pleaſed except the King; whome their abſence vexed at the heart: and in all things he endeuoured plainely to expreſſe his hatred and his anger towards the Barons, who had enforced him to conſent vnto their baniſhment. And to expreſſe the ſame more fully; he was informed, that the younger *Spencer* had ſtrengthened himſelfe with a few good Shippes; and that he lay (as a Grand Pyrate) coaſting vpon the Narrow Seas, robbing, ranſacking, and ſpoyling the Marchants, and all Nations who paſſed by them; but eſpecially, and chiefely, ſuch as were of this Kingdome. And although great ſute was made vnto the King, that a conuenient Fleet might be prepared for his ſurprizall; and that hee might be produced vnto judgement, and receiue ſuch puniſhment as the Lawes of this Kingdome appointed for the cutting off of ſuch a notorious Theefe: yet the King ſmyled, and was inwardly glad to heare this newes, and turned a deafe eare to their requeſt; and was ſo farre off from prouiding to fetch him in, that (pardoning all his offences, and to deſpight his Barons) hee recalled them both from their Baniſhment, and honoured them with more Dignities, Offices, and Authoritie, than euer he had done before.

The King hateth his Barons.

The younger Spencer becomes a Pyrate.

The grieued Lords complain, but the King laughs.

The Spencers are recalled, and honored.

ANNO 13.

This thing being thus ſtrangely performed by the King, and the daily vnſufferable injuries and inſolencie of the two *Spencers* (who skorned and derided the Nobles, as being vnable to controll them, or to doe them anie harme) were ſufficient warnings to the Barons to looke vnto themſelues, and to prouide for their owne ſafetie, before it were too late. Wherefore, ſeeing that neither entreatie nor Law could right their wrongs; they rayſed a ſtrong Armie, and boldly marched into the field: And the King, with the two *Spencers*, and ſome others of the Nobles, did the like. And after manie ſharpe Bickerings and Encounters both their Armies met, and fought on either part with ſuch obſtinate deſire to reuenge, that he was ſuppoſed to be the moſt valiant man among them, who could and did drench his ſword deepeſt in the moſt bloud. The Noblemen now forgat, that vndutifully they fought againſt their Soueraigne Lord: and the King would not by anie meanes know, that his Tyrannie had compelled them to take Armes. Kindred, Alliance, Countrey, Religion, Neighbourhood, nor anie other reſpect now preuailed to winne fauour: but furie made them truſt to their weapons, and death ſtickled the controuerſie betwixt them. In the end, when manie of the Barons, and thouſands of their adherents were ſlaine; they fled, and were purſued

The Spencers doe skorne and deride the Nobles.

The Barons doe rayſe a ſtrong armie.

The King doth the like.

A cruell Battaile.

The Barons are ouerthrowne.

ſued by the King, who (obtaining the victorie) neuer ceaſed the purſuit vntill he had taken the Earles of *Lancaſter*, *Hereford*, and manie other Lords, of which hee cauſed two and twentie to looſe their heads in ſundrie places of this Realme, to the great aſtoniſhment of the reſt, and to the terror of the vulgar ſort.

Twentie and two Lords beheaded.

Thus when this hauock was made of the Nobilitie, and when this victorie had puffed vp the two *Spencers* with intollerable inſolencie and pride, they made no good vſe of their good fortune, for the amendment of their liues, or better counſailing of the King, but (as tyrants) they now did all in all as they themſelues liſted; and their will was the beſt law. And then (preſuming that all things ſhould be ordered as they liſted) they procured the King to holde his high Court of Parliament at *Yorke*; in which hee created *Edward* his eldeſt ſonne Prince of *Wales* and Duke of *Aquitaine*. He alſo created Sir *Hugh Spencer* the Father, Earle of *Winchester*, and Sir *Andrew Harkley* (whoſe extraordinary ſeruice was a principall meanes of the Barons late ouerthrow) Earle of *Care-Liele*. He alſo exacted the ſixt pennie of all Temporall mens goods and moueables, inhabiting in *England*, *Wales*, and in *Ireland*, to defray and to ſupport his intended warres againſt the *Scots*: but the leuying therof enforced the common people to grudge and to murmure; affirming, That they were altogether impoueriſhed by dearth and famine, and almoſt vndone by reaſon of the diſordred gouernment of the King.

The two Spencers wax more inſolent and proude.

The Prince of Wales created.

Sir Hugh Spencer the elder made an Earle.

A great tax.

The people doe murmur.

The *Scots* (being ſecretly informed that King *Edward* was reſolued to inuade their Countrey, and to reuenge thoſe indignities and thoſe wrongs, which by the incurſions and inuaſions of *Robert le Bruſe* their vſurping King, he had receiued) endeuoured to diuert his purpoſe another way; ſo that they entred into *Ireland* with a copious Armie. But the king (who was not ignorant of their determination) made ſuch prouiſion againſt their landing there, that the greater number of thoſe aſſailants were ſlaine, and the reſt (being vtterly ouerthrowne) were compelled to flie vnto their Ships, and ſhamefully to returne into their owne Countrey.

ANNO 15.

The Scots do inuade Ireland.

The Scots are ouerthrown.

The king was now perſwaded that ſcarcely any ſtrength could withſtand ſo great a power as hee had leuied, and that the *Scots* ſhould now be called to a ſtrict account for all their inroades, incurſions, inuaſions, murthers, robberies, and ſpoyles. And for the effecting thereof, he conducted his Armie into *Scotland*, where the Nobles and the other inhabitants of that land (being armed well, and being in number many thouſands) for many daies by continuall preparations, made a ſhew to giue battaile to king *Edward*, when

The King entereth into Scotland with an Armie.

The Scots do retyre into the Woods & Mountaines.

as (indeede) they meant nothing leſſe. For when King *Edward* approached neere vnto them, they craftily, yet ſtoutly and ſtrongly, retyred manie myles, and at length withdrew themſelues into the Woods, Foreſts, and Mountaines: where they ſoone cloyed, wearied, and waſted the *Engliſh* forces; partly with the vneaſineſſe of thoſe paſſages, and partly with ſuch Stormes, Tempeſts, Raine, Hayle, Snow, Froſts, and other diſtempered weather, as vſually in thoſe places were too bitter and too ſharpe.

The Engliſh Armie is tyred out.

The Kings Armie is afflicted.

And beſides all this, the want of victuals and other neceſſaries ſo grieuouſly afflicted the Kings Armie with mortalitie and death, that (not hauing performed anie thing worthie a Kings care and trauaile) he began to retyre: which when the *Scots* perceiued, they purſued and hunted him with much crueltie and violence: So that (finding his forces to be broken, and his Armie ſcattered) the *Scots* gaue a bold onſet vpon the King himſelfe, and enforced him to ſaue his life by an ignominious flight, and to leaue behinde him his Treaſure, Ordinance, and all his beſt prouiſions, whereat they made great jolitie and mirth.

The King is purſued, and flyeth.

The King loſeth his Treaſure and prouiſions.

This laſt diſaſter and this laſt danger (which King *Edward* by a ſhamefull flight eſcaped) was principally occaſioned by Sir *Andrew Harkley*; whome the King had created Earle of *Carlyle*, for his great ſeruice in his behalfe againſt his Barons in their late ouerthrow: for hee (hauing ſecretly receiued from the *Scots* a great ſumme of money for a bribe) practiſed to betray the King: for which offence he loſt his head.

Sir Andrew Harkley Earle of Carlile beheaded.

The Queene (knowing that the two *Spencers* enuied her deepely at the heart, and that by their perſuaſions the King refuſed to keepe her companie, and ſolaced himſelfe too too wantonly with lewd and laſciuious ſtrumpets; and pitying the late ſlaughter and bloudie executions of verie manie of the Nobilitie, and perceiuing that the affaires and buſineſſe of the Commonweale were made ſlauiſh and ſeruile to all misfortunes) taking with her the young Prince *Edward* her ſonne, fled into *France* to her brother King *Charles*: by whome ſhee was receiued louingly, and was recomforted by earneſt promiſes and oaths, That by his aſſiſtance, and at his coſts, her wrongs, and this whole Kingdomes ruines, ſhould be repaired. And not long after, the Barons (by their letters) offered their beſt ſeruice to her and to the Prince her ſonne; and did proteſt, That if ſhee could returne ſtrengthened onely with the helpe of one thouſand valiant men at armes, they would thereto adde ſo great a ſtrength as ſhould ſuffice to make the two *Spencers* feele the ſmart of their vnſufferable follies.

The Queene flyeth into France, and carrieth the prince with her.

She is kindly entertained by her brother the King.

The Barons doe offer her their ſeruice.

This

This proffer exceedingly rejoyced the Queene, and daily fedde her conceits with freſh hopes of fortunate ſucceſſe at the laſt. But the two *Spencers* (greatly fearing the euent of her returne, if the *French* King ſhould take her part, and making the Kings Coyne and his Treaſure their beſt Aduocates to plead their caſe) ſo corrupted King *Charles* and his Councell of Eſtate with vnvaluable preſents of Gold, of Siluer, and of rich Iewels, that not onely all aide and ſuccour was denyed to her by her owne brother; but in verie ſharpe and in quicke manner ſhee was by him reproued and blamed, as being fooliſhly afraid of her owne ſhadow: and as hauing vnwiſely and vndutifully forſaken the companie of her Lord and kinde husband. The Pope likewiſe, and manie of his chiefeſt Cardinals (being by like rewards engaged by the two *Spencers*) required the *French* King (vpon the penaltie of Curſing) to ſend the Queene and the young Prince her ſonne to King *Edward*. And doubtleſſe ſhee had vnnaturally beene betrayed by her owne brother, if ſecretly and ſpeedily her ſelfe and her young ſonne had not been conueyed into the Empire by Sir *Robert* of *Arthois*, her neere and kinde couſin and friend: where they were with vnexpected and extraordinarie joy receiued and welcommed by the Earle of *Henault*, and by Sir *Iohn* of *Henault*, Lord *Beaumont* his brother; who (being accompanied with three hundred Knights and ſelected men of Armes) went with her and with her ſonne into *England*.

The Spencers do bribe the French King with the Kings Money and Iewels.
The French King checketh the Queene his ſiſter.
The Pope and his Cardinals are bribed.
Sir Robert Earle of Arthois a friend to the Queen
The Queene and Prince flye into the Empire.
They are kindly entertained by the Earle of Henault.

Vpon the firſt intelligence giuen of their landing, the Lords and Barons, with gladded hearts and luſtie troupes of reſolued Gallants (who were ſoundly and at all points armed) repaired euerie day to the Queene and Prince, and hourely their forces were encreaſed. So that the King hauing notice of theſe new troubles, left the Gouernment of the Citie of *London* to his chiefeſt Treaſurer *Walter Stapleton* then Biſhop of *Exeter* (who was an inward friend to the two *Spencers*, and a profeſſed enemie to the Queene, and hated generally by the inhabitants of that Citie) and the King haſted vnto the Marches of *Wales* for the preſent leuying of an Armie. But hee was no ſooner on his journey, but the *Londoners* (skorning the Gouernment of their prowd and inſolent Commander) apprehended him; and without anie lawfull proceedings, or judiciall Sentence, cauſed his head to be ſmitten off at the Standard in *Cheape*: and then they ſuddenly, and with great violence, ruſhed into the Tower of *London*; where they ſlew all ſuch as they found there: and kept both it and that Citie to the vſe of the Queene and of the young Prince her ſonne.

The Queene and Prince doe land in England.

ANNO 19.

1325.

The Noblet & Commons doe repaire to the Queene and Prince.
The Biſhop of Exeter beheaded by the Londoners.
The King goeth toward Wales.
The Londoners take the Tower.

The King changeth his purpoſe.
The King fortifieth Briſtoll.
The Queene winneth Briſtoll.
The King is beſieged in the Caſtle.
Eſt ineuitabile Fatum.
A ſtrange matter.
The King and Sir Hugh Spencer the younger are taken.
The Caſtle of Briſtoll yeeldeth.
Sir Hugh Spencer the father, and the Earle of Arundell are beheaded.
The Queene and Prince doe march toward London.
The younger Spencer is publikely derided.
He is cruelly executed.

A iuſt reward for their wickedneſſe.

As ſoone as King *Edward* was reſolued and informed of this Reuolt; hee deſiſted from his intended purpoſe, and poſted vnto *Briſtow*, and fortified it in the ſtrongeſt manner that hee was able; and committed the defence thereof to the Earle of *Arundell*, and to Sir *Hugh Spencer* the father: and himſelfe (with Sir *Hugh* the ſonne) entred into the Caſtle there, and were determined to defend it with all their ſtrength. But within few dayes after, the ſaid Citie was beſieged, aſſaulted, and wonne by the Queene and by the Barons: who (committing the two Earles, and diuers others of the chiefeſt note, vnto ſafe keeping) beſieged the Caſtle in ſuch ſort, that the King and his Minion (diſtruſting the euent) ſtole away ſecretly in the night, and put themſelues into a little Fiſher-boat. Yet ſuch was the will and pleaſure of GOD (to make them to know him by their future miſeries) that euerie day, for a weeke and more, the ſame Boat (by reaſon of a contrarie winde) was driuen backe, neare to the ſaid Caſtle: Which being at length perceiued and obſerued by the Lord *Beaumont*, hee chaſed the Fiſher-boat with a ſmall veſſell, and boarded her, and found in her the King and Sir *Hugh Spencer* the ſonne, whome they ſo much deſired, and brought them to the Queene; who preſented them before the Caſtles view: and vpon the ſight of them, the beſieged yeelded the poſſeſſion of their Fort into the Queenes hands. Then were the heads of Sir *Hugh Spencer* the father, Earle of *Wincheſter*, and of *Iohn* Earle of *Arundell* (whoſe daughter was married to the younger *Spencer*) ſmitten off. And the King being committed vnto honorable and ſafe keeping; the Queene, with the young Prince her ſonne, beeing accompanied with the Barons and a ſtrong Armie, marched towards *London*; carrying with them Sir *Hugh Spencer* the ſonne as a ſlaue: before whom, certaine vnworthie and baſe Fidlers (vpon Pypes which they had made of Reedes) skornfully played, skipped, and ſung, in euerie Towne which they paſſed through. And being come to the Citie of *London*, hee was faſt bound vpon the top of an high Ladder; and (his priuie members and his heart being ſeuered from his bodie and burned) his head was forthwith cut off and ſet vpon *London* Bridge.

Thus GODS judgements purſued thoſe two vngodly and ambitious caitiues: by whoſe lewd aduice and euill counſell the King forſooke the bed and companie of the Queene his wife; liued wickedly; made hauocke of his Nobilitie; neglected his common People; permitted his Enemies (to his diſgrace) to triumph and to inſult ouer him; and gouerned more like a Tyrant than a King.

And

And thus thoſe times of Trouble being now againe bleſſed with a happie Peace, the Queene bountifully feaſted and rewarded Sir *Iohn* of *Henault*, Lord *Beaumont*, and all his aſſociates: who taking leaue, departed; and were receiued into their Countrey with much joy and great honour.

Sir Iohn of Henault and his companie are feaſted and rewarded.

And then the Queene and the young Prince (to reforme ſuch things as were amiſſe, and to ſettle a better courſe of Gouernment within this Land) aſſembled an High Court of Parliament at *Weſtminſter*. In which, the King, by a generall conſent, was depoſed: and (being verie honourably reſpected and attended) he was committed to the Caſtle of *Killingworth*; and Prince *Edward* was crowned King. And not long after, the King being remoued to the Caſtle of *Corff*, was wickedly aſſayled by his Keepers: who through a Horne which they did put into his fundament, pierced his guts with a burning Spit, and murdered him; when hee had raigned almoſt nineteene yeres.

A Parliament.

The King is depoſed.

Prince Edward crowned King.

The old King is murdered.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING EDVVARD THE THIRD.

EDVVARD the third, being of the age of fifteene yeares; and crowned King, whileſt his depoſed father liued: was chiefely directed in his younger yeares by the aduice and counſell of Queene *Iſabell* his mother, and of his vncle *Edmund* of *Woodſtock* Earle of *Kent*, and of Sir *Roger Mortymer*: which knight (to intereſſe himſelfe more eſpecially in the Queenes loue) traiterouſly conſpired and procured the murder of the laſt king, by the monſtrous villanie and barbarous crueltie before mentioned. 1. 1326.

Sir Roger Mortymer wickedly procured the murder of the old King.

In the ſecond yeare of this kings Raigne, *Robert le Bruſe* (the buſie vſurping king of the *Scots*) denounced Warres againſt him and his kingdome: which occaſioned the leuying of a ſtrong Armie, which cõſiſted of foure and fiftie thouſand men; with which, the king himſelfe (being accompanied with Sir *Iohn* of *Henault*, Lord *Beaumont*, and fiue hundred Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen ſtrangers his aſſociates) marched into *Scotland*: Where he hunted and chaſed his enemies from Mariſh to Mariſh, from Wood to Wood, from Hill to Hill, and from Mountaine to Mountaine, for the ſpace of one moneth and more: yet (by reaſon of the *Scots* cowardiſe, which made them to skulke and runne from place to place, tyring out

King Edward inuadeth Scotland.

The Scots flye into the Woods and Mountaines.

The King returneth.
The King marrieth Philip daughter to the Earle of Henault.
A Parliament.
Perſons attainted.
A diſhonorable peace with Scotland.
Their tenure is releaſed.
The Charter called Ragman, *deliuered vp.*
A marriage with Scotland.
Sir Roger Mortimer created Earl of March.
He is too familiar with Queene Iſabel
He procureth the Kings vncle to be beheaded.
Articles againſt Sir Roger Mortimer.

out the *Engliſh* Armie. The King with his whole companie (not hauing performed any memorable ſeruice) returned home; and ſhortly after, took to wife the Ladie *Philip*, yongeſt daughter to *William* Earle of *Henault*, his couſen german in the third degree, and aſſembled his high Court of Parliament at *Northampton:* in which (among other paſſages) the two deceaſed *Spencers* and *Walter Stapleton* the late Biſhop of *Exeter* were attainted of high treaſon. And then the King (by the directions of his mother and of Sir *Roger Mortimer*) concluded a diſhonorable peace with the *Scots*, and releaſed to them their homage, fealtie, and ſeruices to him due for that Kingdome, and deliuered vp to them the Grand Inſtrument or Charter called *Ragman*, which vnder the hands and ſeales of their late King, and of the Nobilitie of *Scotland*, teſtified their tenure and ſubiection to the Kings of this Realme; and then hee married his ſiſter *Iane* vnto *Dauid* the ſonne and heire apparant of *Robert le Bruſe* the vſurping *Scottiſh* King, and created Sir *Roger Mortimer* Earle of *March*, whereat his Nobles were exceedingly diſcontent. And ſuch was this new Earles inward malice and hatred vnto the Kings vncle the Earle of *Kent*, and ſo powerfull was he with the King, by reaſon of his too much familiarity with his mother Queen *Iſabel*; that he neuer deſiſted from his wicked and vngodly plottings, vntill he had bereaued him of his head. But God permitted not this wretched man to ſway long in his vngodly courſes. For within few moneths after he was accuſed by the State for theſe horrible and hainous crimes:

1. *Imprimis, For that hee had wickedly plotted and procured the murther of the Kings father.*
2. *Item, For that (by his falſe accuſations and ſiniſter counſaile) he had cauſed the King to cut off the head of his ſaid vncle, who was truly Noble, Religious, valiant, honeſt, and a ſtrong pillar to the Common-weale.*
3. *Item, For that too too familiarly he conuerſed with Queene Iſabel the Kings mother, to her iuſt reproach and the diſhonor of the King.*
4. *Item, for that hee receiued of the Scots a bribe of twentie thouſand pounds, for which he procured the Kings retreat out of Scotland, and the releaſement of his Signiorie and homage due for that Kingdom.*

And

5. *And lastly, because hee had deceitfully cousened and beguiled the King of his Wards and Treasure, conuerting all to his owne vse.*

For these his wicked Treasons and horrible transgressions, hee was condemned to die, in the same manner which he had deuised for the execution of Sir *Hugh Spencer* the yonger. And Queene *Isabel* (being most honourably prouided for, and attended on) was sequestred into a strong Castle, where shee liued more then thirtie yeares after and then died.

Sir Roger Mortymer attainted and Executed.
Queene Isabel sequestred

In the fifth yeare of King *Edwards* Raigne, his personall appearance (in kind and friendly sort) was required by *Philip de Valoys* king of *France*, and vncle to the yong Queen (that is to say) brother to *Iane*, Countesse of *Henalt*, who was mother to K. *Edwards* wife; together with his Homage & Fealtie for his Duchie of *Guyan*. For the performance whereof, he departed hence; and was with much triumph, & magnificence receiued, entertained, & feasted in *France*. But his homage, and his fealtie, he would, and did only confesse by words, and would not doe them in such solemne and submissiue fashion as they were demanded; Whereat the French King was so inwardly moued, that King *Edward* (at his departure from the French Court) might well perceiue, that his welcome was more respected and honoured, then his going from thence.

The Kings Homage for Guyan required.
The King would not doe Homage in such sort as it was required.
The French King is angrie,

Assoone as the King came home, by new Embassadors his homage was againe required to be performed with all solemnitie and due rites. And therupon, (to giue some contentment to the French King) it was sent vnto him, in an instrument in writing, vnder the great seale. Whereat the Lords and Peeres repined much, affirming that the crowne of *France*, (in the right of Queene *Isabel* his mother) did belong to him: and that therefore hee might iustly haue refused, to haue done vnto him any homage at all.

The Kings Homage againe required.
It is sent vnder the Great Seale.
The Nobles are offended:
The Kings Title to France first broched.

Not long after these businesses thus ended, King *Edward* by his Embassadors required *Dauid* the yong King of *Scots*, being his brother-in-law, to restore vnto him his Castle of *Barwick*; and to doe him homage for his kingdome: But *Dauid* stoutly returned answer, that his father by conquest and by his sword wonne that Castle, and that he had receiued it, by discent from him; and therefore would hold and keep it as his owne. And touching the kings demand of his homage for the kingdome of *Scotland*, his answer was that his Father neuer acknowledged any such seruice; & that king *Edward* had released it, if any had been due. And that therefore he would not confesse any tenure of king *Edwards* crowne.

The King requireth the Castle of Barwicke to bee restored.
It is denyed by the King of Scots, and his Homage denied also.

The King warreth in Scotland. The King preuaileth. Barwicke is recouered.

The high ſpirit of the King would not ſuffer him thus to bee ſlighted and ſhaken off, for he reſolued to make himſelfe the Lord of both. For which cauſe; he marched with a ſtrong Armie into *Scotland*, and quickly ſubdued the better & the greater part of that kingdome, with ſmall reſiſtance. And hauing fortifyed for his own vſe, the Caſtles aud Townes of beſt defence, he returned, and came to *Barwick*, where the Towne (after a ſtrong ſiege) was by compoſition ſurrendred into his hands: And then he crowned Sir *Edward Baylyol* king of *Scotland*, and committed the gouernment of the Towne of *Barwick* vnto his charge; and returned into *England* with much honour.

Edward Baylyol Crowned King of Scotland.

The King in perſon ſetleth the Gouernement of Scotland.

But before two yeares more were expired, he paſſed againe with an armie into *Scotland*, placed his new king in his throne; and receiued his homage: and reinueſted diuers Engliſh Lords, and gentlemen, of ſuch Lordſhips and Territories, as by reaſon of the kings diſhonorable peace with the *Scots*, (when he firſt began to raigne) had been taken from them.

Dauid flyeth into France.

Theſe diſaſters, and aduerſe fortunes, which inſeparably accompanied *Dauid* the depoſed king, compelled him to flie into *France*, where (after two yeares continuance) his heart was cheered with faire promiſes, and his neceſſities were relieued plentifully, with large and ample ſupplies of all things needfull and conuenient: he alſo obtained an Armie with which hee ſailed into *Scotland*; his hopes fairely promiſing that ere long he ſhould bee a king againe. But he was much deceiued. For king *Edward* hauing certain intelligence of his & of the French kings endeuours, prouided effectually for the encounter; and marched into *Scotland* with a ſtrong Armie, where hee fought often with fortunate ſucceſſe, againſt *Dauid* and the French kings forces: and at length by battaile obtained an honourable victorie; and ſecuring the gouernment of that kingdome, according to the rules of wiſdome and of policie) he returned joyfully into *England*.

He returneth with an Armie into Scotland.

Dauid is ouerthrowne by King Edward.

Robert de Arthoys comes into England.

In the tenth yeare of this kings raigne, *Philip de Valoys* then king of *France*, ſentenced the Earledome of *Arthoys* from *Robert De Arthoys*, vnto *Maud* Counteſſe of *Burgondie*, & Aunt to the ſaid *Robert*; which cenſure ſo incenſed the ſaid Earle, that in his heat he vttered theſe wordes: *By me was he made a King, and by me, he ſhalbe againe depoſed.* For which offence, he was throughout all *France* proclaimed to be a traytor to the crowne, ſo that (to preſerue his life) hee was compelled to flie into *England*; where (in regard of his fidelitie, and honourable ſeruice, performed to Queene *Iſabel*, and to the king himſelfe, when they were both in *France*) he was with all complements of kindnes and heartie loue receiued; and entertained by

The King requites his former kindneſſe.

king *Edward*: who (knowing him to be right valiant, hardie, & wise, and not forgetting to requite favours extended to him in his distresse) created him Earle of *Richmond*, and so entirely loued him, that whilest he liued, he neuer attempted anie great and important matter without his counsell and aduice.

He is Created Earle of Richmond.

This noble Knight ceased not to informe the King of his Title to the Crowne of *France*, By Queene *Isabel* his mother, who was the daughter of *Philip the Faire*; which appeared to stand thus.

King Edwards title to the Crowne of France.

Philip the Hardie, had issue two sonnes, *Philip the Faire*, and *Charles de Valoys*. *Philip the Faire* had issue three sonnes, (all which successiuely were Kings and died without issue Male) that is to say, *Lewes* the tenth, *Philip* the fifth surnamed the Long; & *Charles* the fourth. He had also one daughter which was named *Isabel*, Queene of *England*, and married to the Kings Father named *Edward* the second.

Charles de Valoys.

And *Charles de Valoys* (the second sonne of *Philip the Hardie*) was father vnto *Philip de Valoys* who raigned then in *France*; and of this *Charles* it is noted that he was the sonne of a King, The brother of a King, The vncle of a King, and the father of a King, & that himselfe was no King.

According to the Lawes of *France*, the Crowne was to descend to the Issue Male, and no woman could inherit the Crowne: but King *Edward*, (in regard that he was a Male, though the descent of the Males was interrupted by a Female, *viz.* by Queene *Isabel* his mother) pretended that in right the Crowne of *France* was his; and could not be depriued thereof by humane lawes. The state of this question standing thus, Sir *Robert de Arthois* Earle of *Richmond* daily whispered it into the Kings eare, and with such forcible reson and perswasions so vrged the same, that now the King beganne to thinke on nothing more, then how to attaine to the Crowne of *France*.

Secrecie is the best furtherer of great negotiations.

This busines as it was of extraordinarie waight and importance, so it required the best secrecie vntill it were plotted wel. For which purpose K. *Edward* (by priuate messengers & letters) craued the aduice & counsel of the Earle of *Henalt* (his wifes father; and brother-in-law to the French King) and of Sir *Iohn* of *Henalt* Lord *Beaumont* his brother, and of sundrie other great States and Princes of the Empire; who not only counselled him by his sword to prosecute his right, but made him offers of their assistãce by their best means. They also procured King *Edward* by a solemne instrument in writing to bee created the Vicar Generall of the Empire, by reason whereof he had the power to command the Nobles and the common people of those Countries, to further his purpose and his doings.

The Counsell of the Earle of Henalt is craued.

Aide promised to the King.

The King is made Vicar generall of the Empire.

ANNO 11.

The French King maketh incredible prouiſion to Warre in the Holy-land.

The French King altereth his purpoſe.

He prepareth againſt England.

King Edward fils his Coffers.

Want of Money in England.

The King and Queene doe ſaile into Flanders.

He enleageth himſelfe with the Germans and Belgicks

King Edwards Armie

King Edward landeth in France.

The French King taketh the field.

Whileſt theſe things were thus contiuing in *England*, and whilſt king *Philip de Valoys* little thought that his kingdome and Crowne were aimed at, or that his ſtrength ſhould bee tried with Engliſh warres; he (by the importunitie of Pope *Benedict* the eleuenth) prepared ſuch an Armie to haue made warres in the *Holy-land*, as neuer before was conducted by anie Chriſtian Prince. He alſo committed the gouernment of his kingdome vnto his eldeſt ſonne *Iohn* Duke of *Normandie*: To whom (by reaſon of his youth) hee added (for aſſiſtance) a diſcreet, wiſe, and a graue Councell. And when he had thus prouided and ſetled all thinges needfull for his huge armie; and for the maintenance therof for three yeares ſpace: the reports of king *Edwards* claime and purpoſe, began as a ſodaine ſtorme to breake forth, and to be knowne: Wherupon, king *Philip* aſſuring himſelfe, that (in his abſence) the *Engliſh* Armie would very litle regard ſuch forces as ſhould be left behinde; and that his departure would encourage manie (who hunted after noueltie and change) rather to make offers of their ſeruice to his enemies, then to performe that dutie which by ſubiects was due vnto their king: And knowing That it would be a ridiculous thing (by dangerous attempts) to winne honour abroad, and to neglect the ſafetie of his owne kingdome and eſtate at home; he deſiſted (on the ſodaine) from proſecuting his journie into the *Holy land*; and prepared ſtrongly to defend himſelfe againſt king *Edward*, and his claime. And (on the other ſide) king *Edward* (to the ende that nothing might be wanting, when time ſhould ſerue) By manie politike deuices leuied ſuch ineſtimable ſummes of monie, That (for want of coyne among the common people) a fat Oxe was ſold for a noble, a fat ſheep for ſix pence, ſixe Pigeons for a pennie; and a quarter of wheat for two ſhillings.

When he had thus done, hee (with Queene *Philip* his wife) ſailed into *Flanders*, where they remained all that winter, and (at *Antwerp*) The king oftentimes conferred, & at length concluded with the Princes, and States of *Germanie*, and of thoſe Prouinces, vpon all things touching his ſaid intended warre. So that, after his returne, hee leuied a ſtrong Armie, which (with his aſſiſting friends) conſiſted of ſeuen and twentie thouſand choſen fighting men, with which ſtrength he landed in *France*, when the Sommer was almoſt ſpent.

The French king, hauing an Armie which conſiſted of threeſcore thouſand ſouldiors, and being accompanied with the three kings of *Behayne*, *Nauarre*, and of *Scotland*, with fiue Dukes; Six and twentie Earles; and more then foure thouſand Lords, and knights,

knights; brauely entred into the field, where hee found king *Edward* ſufficiently prouided to ſhew himſelfe a valiant man. But whileſt each Armie gazed on the other, and expected manie houres, which part ſhould giue the firſt ſtroke of the battaile: Behold and wonder, and a ſtrange wonder! For betwixt both thoſe Kings (vpon the motion, and through the mediation of the Ladie *Jane* Counteſſe of *Henalt*, ſiſter to King *Philip*, and mother to King *Edwards* wife) not a blow was giuen: bnt (on a ſodaine) Both the Armies were diſſolued, and King *Edward* with his friends, and Nobles, returned into *England*.

A woman parteth a great affray.

ANNO. 14 1339.

In the fourteenth yeare of King *Edwards* Raigne, hee ſayled into *Flanders*, where at *Bruſels* he met with the greater number of the Princes of *Germanie*, who of their owne accords, with heartie loue and forwardneſſe, incorporated themſelues with king *Edward* in thoſe his warres againſt *France*.

The Germans incorporate themſelues with King Edward in his Warres.

And (at the inſtance of the king) the ſaid Princes entreated the *Flemmings* to joyne with them in that Enterprize, and ſeruice: whereunto they ſeemed willing to condiſcend, if king *Edward* would entitle himſelfe king of *France*; and would quarter the Armes of *France*, with the Armes of *England*; and would (as king of *France*) releaſe vnto them a bond of two millions of *Florens*, wherein they ſtood obliged not to wage anie warre againſt the king of *France*. Whereunto the king yeelded, and did performe all thinges, according to their deſires. And thus hee conſorted to his part, the *Germans* and *Flemmings* in thoſe affaires, by promiſes, oathes, and by a ſolemne inſtrument in writing vnder their hands and ſeales.

Vpon what conditions the Flemings ioyned with King Edward.

Hee quarters the Armes of France.

Whileſt king *Edward* was thus buſied abroad, the French kings Nauie landed many thouſand men at *Southhampton*, who ranſacked the Towne and conſumed it with fire: and the like outrage and crueltie they exerciſed in the Countries thereunto adioyning.

The French doe burne in England.

The king (immediately vpon his returne out of *Flanders*) Summoned his high Court of Parliament: in which, that nothing needfull might be wanting, to furniſh and to maintaine his warres with *France*; a Subſidie of the fifth part of all his Subiects moueable goods was granted to him, and the ninth part of their Corne, Together with a large cuſtome vpon Wolles, to bee paid two yeares before hand. The leuying of which Taxe, turned the prayers of the People into Curſes, becauſe they were altogether vnwilling to pay the ſame. Hee alſo (by way of lone) borrowed huge ſummes of money of his richeſt Subiects: and the Citie of *London* diſburſed for him twentie thouſand markes.

A Parliament.

A great Taxe.

The King borroweth Money.

New coine with the French arms quartred.

King Edwards Fleet and Armie.

The battell of Sluce.

The Kings victory at Sea.

The King alſo coined great ſtore of ſiluer and of gold, on which he quartered with his owne the Armes of *France* in the firſt place, and inſtamped him thereon King of *England* and of *France*. He alſo prepared a fleet of two hundred Saile of Ships, and throughly appointed them to the proofe, and then he leuied an Armie of ten thouſand ſelected men of warre; all which he embarqued: and paſſing with them towards *Sluce*, he fortunatly met with the *French* fleet, which (conſiſting of *Frenchmen*, *Piccards*, *Genowayes*, and of other Nations) amounted to the number of fortie thouſand men; among which were they who not only had robbed and rifled many *Engliſh* Marchants on the narrow Seas, but alſo had burned *Southhampton* and the Countries thereabout (as lately you haue heard.) The King being full of magnanimitie and valour, reſolute in his purpoſes, and reckoning of the *French* as of his ſubiects and inferiours in Armes, eſpecially vpon the Seas, and hopping by his good ſucceſſe, not onely to winne honor among the Princes and States of his confederacie, and purpoſing, if hee might, to ſtrike a terror in the *French* Nation concerning thoſe warres, ſet vpon their whole Nauie with ſuch an incomparable courage and bold ſpirit, that after a long, a fierce, and a bloudie fight, very few or none of the *French* Ships eſcaped, but were (by him) either taken or ſunke into the Sea.

King Edward landeth at Sluce.

The King on his part hauing receiued but little loſſe, his priſoners he ſent into *England*, but himſelfe (the next day) landed at *Sluce*, where he was triumphantly receiued by the Inhabitants and Countrey, who (with great ioy and infinit commendations) congratulated his happie and victorious ſucceſſe.

He rides to Gaunt.

A huge Armie.

Iaques Dartuell a famous Fleming.

Tournay beſieged.

And from thence he rode to *Gaunt* where his Queene lay. And about the ſpace of one moneth after, hee (being accompanied with ſeuen Earles, eight Biſhops, eight and twentie Baronets, two hundred Knights, foure thouſand men of Armes, and nine thouſand Archers of his owne Nation, and with the Duke of *Brabant*, who commanded twentie thouſand of his followers: and with *Iaques Dartuell* the famous *Fleming*, who conducted threeſcore thouſand men of thoſe Prouinces: and with the Duke of *Guelders*, the Marqueſſe of *Muſe*, the Earles of *Iullers*, *Mouns*, *Sauiens*, and of *Henault*, the Lord *Faulquemont*, and many thouſand *Almaines*: He ſtrongly beſieged the Citie *Tournay*, which was with great reſolution and valor manfully defended for the ſpace of tenne weeks; in al which time the *French* King appeared not for their defence. But (by the importunat mediation of the aforenamed *Iane de Valoys*, mother to the Queen of *England*, & to the Ducheſſe of *Iullers*, and to the then

Earle

Earle of *Henalt*, and ſiſter to the French King) a truce was concluded for one yeere: which was afterwards renewed for one yeare more. Thus was the ſiege broken vp: and euery one returned to his owne home.

A huge Armie was diſſolued vpon the motion of a woman.

Now whilſt the King had thus employed himſelfe in the Low-countries: and in the Empire; and in *France*: The Scots (diſliking *Edward Baylyol* their King, becauſe hee would not in any ſort oppoſe himſelfe againſt the King of *England*, who ſo highly had aduanced him; and leauing to him onely the name, but no honour due to a King) rebelled againſt king *Edward*: And gained into their poſſeſſions almoſt all things whatſoeuer, which hee in his former Warres had wonne from them. But king *Edward*, ſcorning to bee checked by the lawleſſe diſobedience, and inſolencie of the Scots, leuied an Armie of ſixe thouſand horſemen, and fortie thouſand on foote; with which he marched into *Scotland*; And thoſe Inhabitants (hauing intelligence of theſe vnreſiſtable preparations; and and being apprehenſiue of their owne weakneſſe) craued, and obtained a Truce for foure Monethes, vpon condition to ſurrender to king *Edward*, whatſoeuer in his abſence they had taken from him: And alſo to ſubmit themſelues, if within that time *Dauid* their depoſed King returned not out of *France* for their defence. But before the time of Truce was expired, *Dauid* returned ſecretly: and being ſafely landed in *Scotland*, he raiſed an Armie of more then threeſcore thouſand men; with which hee entred into *Northumberland*, ſpoyling, robbing, waſting, burning and killing (without compaſſion) in all places whereon hee ſet his foote, vntill hee came to *New-Caſtle* vpon *Tyen*; which hee girded about with a ſtrong ſiege. But in the depth of the night, two hundred reſolued gallants iſſued foorth; And (vpon the ſuddaine) entred into the Earle of *Murrayes* Tent: which they ranſacked, ſlewe many, and caried the ſaid Earle away with them, to the great amazement and terrour of the Scottiſh Campe.

The King leadeth a huge Armie into Scotland

A Truce.

The Scots inuade England.

New-Caſtle is beſieged.

A bold bra-uado.

The day appearing, was their true informer of all things, which in the night had hapned. And *Dauid* (purpoſing a bloudy reuenge for this diſhonour done vnto him) cauſed the Caſtle to be continually aſſaulted. But the Scots were manfully repulſed by the defendants, whoſe vndaunted ſpirits had baniſhed all feare: In ſo much that *Dauid* (being vnwilling to ſpend there too much time in vaine) raiſed his ſiege, and marched to the Citie of *Durham*; which he tooke, ranſacked and burnt, and ſlew all the men, women and children, which did inhabite and were found there.

The ſiege is raiſed.

Durham taken & burnt.

From thence the Scottiſh Armie marched forth, and paſſed by the

A valiant exploit by Sir William Mountagew.

the ſtrong Caſtle of *Rowsbrough*: which then belonged to the Earle of *Salisburie* who was a priſoner in *France*. In this Caſtle was his faire and admirably beautifull Lady, and it was kept by Sir *William Mountagew* (his brother) who for his wiſedome, and for his valour, was a moſt renowned Knight. When he had narrowly viewed the Scottiſh March, hee expected their vtmoſt furie in their returne, and therefore hee determined to giue him a preſent taſte of his man-hood. So that he iſſued forth with fortie Horſemen well appointed, and fell vpon their Rereward, and ſlew of them more then two hundred, and tooke from them one hundred and twentie horſes, which were loaden with the richeſt of thoſe booties, which they had taken at *Durham*: and ſafely returned, and caried them into the Caſtle.

The Caſtle of Rosbrough is beſieged.

Dauid (diſdaining thus to bee beaten by ſo ſmall a number) forthwith retired, and with continuall aſſault ſo ſharply oppreſſed the beſieged for many dayes, that hee ſcarcely gaue them leaſure to take breath. By meanes whereof they were almoſt tired, and ſo worne out, that ſmall hope of long reſiſtance was left vnto them, except they were (in due time) reſcued and relieued by the King. To giue his Highneſſe intelligence whereof, it was reſolued; That one of them (in the depth of the night) muſt giue a deſperate aduenture through the Scottiſh Campe. This proiect ſeemed ſo full of imminent perill and danger, that euery one of the inferiors refuſed the attempt: So that the braue Knight himſelfe (conſidering aduiſedly in what caſe the Caſtle ſtood: and pitying the diſtreſſed eſtate of the comfortleſſe Counteſſe his ſiſter, who expected nothing but villainous abuſe if it were yeelded) with a ſetled reſolution vndertooke the iourney. And being gallantly mounted vpon a ſwift courſer, he ſpeedily poſted through all the thouſands of his enemies. And in the morning, hee informed *Dauid* (by ſuch paſſingers as hee did meete) that very quickely hee ſhould heare newes of him againe.

A braue attempt with fortunate ſucceſſe.

The Caſtle is brauely aſſaulted and defended. The ſiege is raiſed.

The *Scots* (knowing that it was no time to linger; and yet being deſirous, to reuenge the great diſgrace which their Armie had receiued) againe, and againe furiouſly aſſaulted the Caſtle; and (in them) they performed many braue feates of Armes: which witneſſed their eager longing to haue wonne it, but they were ſtill repulſed; and beaten backe, with many incredible ſlaughters of their Souldiers; and were compelled to raiſe the ſiege, and with great ſpeede to haſten into their owne Countrie.

The King comes to late, for the Scots are gone.

King *Edward* (the very day of their departure) had trauelled a long and wearie iourney, thinking to haue met them there. But he

he failed of his purpose, for which hee was much grieued. Yet by the mediation of diuers Honourable personages, a Truce was concluded on for a few Moneths: But to be enlarged for two yeares; if the *French* King (without whose leaue the *Scots* could make no Peace) would consent thereto.

A Truce.

The *French* King liked the motion well, and gaue freedome to the Earle of *Salisburie*: For whom the Earle of *Morret* was by king *Edward* set at libertie.

And though king *Edward* tooke but little pleasure in this Truce, yet he was the more easily drawne to consent thereto: because (at the same time) he had Warres in *France*, *Gascoyne*, *Peyters*, *Paynton*, *Britaine* and elsewhere. All which daily consumed as much Treasure as he could get. The king (when hee perceiued that the *Scots* were gone from the Castle; disarmed himselfe; and (with ten, or twelue Lords and Knights) entred into the Castle, where the excellent beautie, and modest behauiour of the sweete Countesse of *Salisburie* so inflamed his heart, that by secret and amorous wooings he endeauoured to perswade her, to ease his passions with her loue. But the vertuous Lady (first with milde and kind intreaties, and afterwards with quicke and nipping reprehensions) strriued to make the king to see his owne errour. But such was his desire, and her denials were so peremptorie, and resolute; That discontentedly the King left her, cashired his Armie, and returned backe againe. And (hauing for many yeares together beene vexed, and toyled in sundrie Warres) hee intended to recreate himselfe, his Lords, his knights and chiefest Martialists, with such pastimes and sportings, as men of Warre tooke greatest pleasure in. Wherefore hee proclaimed a solemne Feast to continue many dayes, and generally inuited therunto, the valiant men of his owne, and of forraine Nations and Kingdomes; proposing the exercise of feates of Armes, at the appointed time. By meanes whereof, many Noblemen and such as were of best renowme for Chiualrie, repaired into *England* from many Countries (excepting *France*) and were (with all magnificence; courtesie, and loue) receiued, and entertained by the King, and by all his Court. But in those heroicall sportings (by an euill and an vnfortunate accident) Sir *Iohn* Lord *Beamount*, a valiant Knight of this Realme: (who formerly had taken the last King, and Sir *Hugh Spencer* the yonger in a fisher, before the Castle of *Bristoll*) was slaine.

The causes why the King consented to this Truce.

The King makes loue to the Countesse of Salisburie.

Shee cares not for it.

The King keepes a solemne Feast.

Strangers repaire into England.

Martiall sportings.

The Lord Beamount slaine.

This Royall feast, and these warlike pastimes, being thus finished: a Parliament was assembled at *Westminster*; wherein the king Created his eldest Sonne *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, and vnto him was giuen

ANNO 18. *A Parliamẽt*

The Prince of Wales is Created.

giuen by a free and generall conſent, foure fifteenes by the Laitie, and three by the Clergie, but with this condition, that no part thereof ſhould be conuerted vnto any other vſe, then only to the furtherance of the warres of *France*. And certaine Lords and ſome others of principall note, were then ſelected, to whom the only care and charge of that imployment ſhould belong.

Commiſſioners for the imployment of the Subſidie money.

ANNO. 19

1344.

The next yeare following, king *Edward* to increaſe vertue, and valour, in his Nobles, to enlarge his Amitie, and Friendſhippe with the States and Princes of forraine Countries, deuiſed and eſtabliſhed a new order of knight-hood, confining the number of them to twentie and ſix, of which himſelfe and his Succeſſors were to be Preſidents, and called them knights of the honourable Order of the Garter. The Rites and Ceremonies of which order, are euery yere ſolemnized with Princely magnificence in the kings Caſtle at *Windſor*, to Gods glorie, and the honour of all ſuch as are dignified with that degree.

The order of the Garter deuiſed, and eſtabliſhed.

And thus king *Edward* hauing a while recreated himſelfe, with ſuch Princely delights as exerciſed his *Martialiſts* in feates of Armes, to the pleaſure and good contentment of his people: He now beganne againe to thinke vpon his affaires with *France*, and to make his Forces better knowne to the Frenchmen, then formerly they had beene.

For which purpoſe, he leuied a faire Armie; which by his Couſin the Earle of *Darby*, was landed and directed in *Gaſcoine*, with ſuch diſcretion, and with ſuch valour, that hee not only acquited himſelfe right nobly, by way of defence againſt *Philip* the French king, but daily wonne from him his Cities, Townes, Caſtles, and his Forts; and filled his hands ſo full, that whileſt the ſaid Earle remained there hee laboured in vaine to catch at anie thing, which belonged to king *Edward*.

An Armie ſent into Gaſcoyne.

At the ſame time *Iaques Dartuel* (whom fortune from a low beginning had raiſed to the greateſt command that euer any man before him had in *Flanders*, notwithſtanding that *Loys* their Earle then perſonally did liue among them; ſecretly purpoſed to diſherite the ſaid Earle, and to make Prince *Edward* of *England* the great Lord and maſter of thoſe Countries: And to effect what therein hee did intend, hee called a generall Councell of the Lords, and great men of thoſe Territories, and appointed the place of their meeting to bee at *Sluce*; where hee alſo procured the preſence of king *Edward*, and of the Prince his ſonne.

Iaques Dartuell.

Malum conſilium conſultori peſsimum.

To draw theſe States together, he propoſed nothing publikely, but the neceſſitie of a ſound conference touching their proceedings

dings with the King of *England* againſt *France*. And within the Hauen there, the place of Councel was in King *Edwards* great ſhips called the *Katharine*. But (vnexpectedly to the *Flemiſh* Lords) *Iaques Dartuell* diſcourſed boldly, and at large, of the great Honour, Prowes and valour of King *Edward*; and of the yong Prince his Sonne. And by many circumſtances, and deuiſed arguments, hee endeauoured to extenuate the worth of their owne Earle, as being altogether vnfit, and vnable to be a Lord of ſo great a cõmand: and in the concluſion of his ſpeech, hee ſtrongly ſtriued to perſwade them all, to depoſe the Earle *Loys* and his poſteritie: and to adde an inuincible ſtrength to their Eſtates, by electing, and chuſing the Prince of *England* to be their Maſter, and great Lord.

Diſpleaſing Counſell.

The Nobles and the great men of *Flanders* (being now made eare witneſſes of *Iaques Dartuells* attempt: And inwardly deteſting to leaue vnto a future age a memoriall of ſuch treacherous infidelitie and wrong) made anſwere, that albeit no people in the world, did more then they reſpect King *Edward*: Nor more affect the aduancement and the Honour of the Prince his Sonne: Yet this motion could not preuaile, except the Natiues and common people of thoſe Countries (who had as large an intereſt as they, in the depoſing of the ſaid Earle, and in the diſpoſing of his Lordſhip and command) would willingly aſſent thereto. And (though in their heartes they intended and ment nothing leſſe) yet (to make faire weather for the preſent time) They told the King, that they liked the motion exceeding well: and that they would foorthwith depart vnto the ſeuerall places of their habitations; and would informe the people of this proiect, and do their beſt endeauours to perſwade, and to incõurage them to conſent thereunto. And (hauing promiſed the King, that at the end of one Moneth they would returne againe, with their full anſwere to the laid motion: And hauing mutually performed all complements requiſite for a kind farewell) they departed thence. But when this newes was diuulged, and when it was publikely knowne what *Iaques Dartuell* had propoſed, both he and his practiſe were inwardly deteſted, and ſo hated, that he was not eſteemed to be a true borne *Fleming*, who had the leaſt inclination, to giue any furtherance thereunto. Yet notwithſtanding, ſuch was the great confidence, which this great Commaunder repoſed in the fauour of the common people: and ſuch was the reſolution of him (whoſe authoritie before that time was vnlimited, and whoſe proſperitie was equall to the greatneſſe of a potent King) that his preſence would worke wonders; and change the minds of the common people. That to make

Not truſting to the peoples fauour. Iaques Dartuell is hated and murdred

make triall of his power in that behalfe, he came to *Gaunt*. But as he paſſed through the ſtreetes, he might well perceiue that his entertainment was nothing correſpondent to his former wel-comes, and that the countenances of the Inhabitants bewrayed their inward contempt, and loathing, both of him and of his deſpiſed motion. And no ſooner was hee entred into his houſe, but by many thouſands of mutenous and armed Swaggarers, it was compaſſed round about: and then was hee rayled on with the fouleſt words, and reuiled with the moſt bitter termes, that either their hearts could deuiſe, or their tongues vtter. So that hee perceiued that it auailed him not to looke bigge, nor to preſume (by his authoritie) to appeaſe their rage. Wherefore (at a great window of the houſe) hee began mildly, and with humble termes to pleade in his owne excuſe, and promiſed to giue them a full ſatisfaction, vpon what grounds, points and reaſons, he had vnaduiſedly conceiued that motion. But the ſight of him (whom in former times they loued and honoured as an Angell) was now ſo lothſome and ſo vile, and his words were ſo vnpleaſing to them, that with dirt and ſtones they beate him from the window, aſſaulted his houſe, brake it open, entred in, and ſlaughtered him with a thouſand wounds: And thus died that great Commander of the *Flemings*, who (for his power and abſolute authoritie among them) had neuer his equall in thoſe Countries. And by theſe meanes, King *Edward* not onely loſt a ſound, and a potent friend; But euer after that time, the hearts of the *Flemings* more fauoured the *French* King, then they did him.

King Edward looſeth many powerfull friends.

At the ſame time alſo, his noble and worthy friend and vncle Sir *Iohn* of *Henalt*, Lord *Beamont*, reuolted from him, and adhearred to the *French* King, becauſe King *Edward* (vpon ſome priuate vnkindneſſe conceiued) did with-hold and keepe from him a Penſion, which (for his faithfull and good ſeruice) hee had formerly giuen, and duly paid vnto him.

Sir Iohn of Henalt reuolteth to the French.

And though King *Edward* did daily growe more ſtrong in his hopes, to poſſeſſe himſelfe of the Crowne of *France*: yet the loſſe of ſome great friends, being his aſſociates in thoſe Warres, made him indeede more weake; yet, thoſe his misfortunes ſo little auailed to diſcourage him, that it increaſed his magnanimitie and his reſolutions, to maintaine thoſe his Warres with the greater helpes of his owne ſtrength.

A valiant King.

ANNO. 20 Now was the King informed, that *Iohn* the eldeſt Sonne of the *French* King, had ſtrongly beſieged the Caſtle of *Aguillon* in *Gaſcoyne*, wel-neere with an hundred thouſand men (within which were

Aguillon is beſieged by 100000. *men.*

were the Noble Earle of *Pembroke*, and the renowned Knight Sir *Walter* of *Manny*, and diuers others of especiall note and place. Whereupon King *Edward* leuied the number of fourteene thousand men, which he and the Prince his Sonne, being accompanied with eight Earles, fifteene Barrons, and a great number of braue Knights and gallant Gentlemen, by the aduice and counsell of Sir *Godfray* Lord *Harcourt*, a *French* banished Noble man of great wisdome, and wonderfull valour in the Warre, caried into *Normandie*: and with them he besieged the rich and strong Towne of *Harflew*: but (because the English Armie seemed terrible in the sight of the Inhabitants) it was not defended, but the King tooke it without blowes, and gaue the spoyle thereof to his common Souldiers, so that he filled their Purses with Crownes, and thereby prepared them with the greater courage, and resolution for more dangerous attempts. So that within few dayes after, hee wonne, rifled and spoyled the rich Townes of *Cheirbrough*, *Mount-brough* and *Quarentine*, and the Castle there.

The King transporteth an Armie into Normandy

Harflew is taken.

Diuers towns and Castles are taken.

Then King *Edward* marched foorth in great strength through that Countrie; being hedged in on the one side by his Marshall the Lord *Harcourt*, and fiue hundred chosen men of warre which hee commanded, and by his other Marshall on the other side with a like number: And with such seueritie, ransacked, spoiled, burned and harowed all places as he passed by: that euerie cõmon souldier was now a rich man, and the Kings Armie was encreased: and now consisted of nineteene thousand fighting men: with which he pitched before the city of *Cane* (in which were the Earles of *Tankeruile* and of *Ewe*: Besides the Earle of *Guyens*, who being high Constable of *France*, had gathered and brought vnto that place manie braue and approued men at Armes, and made a flourishing shew as if hee meant to issue forth, and to giue battaile to the King. But feare possessing his heart, he made but a faint resistance, and in short time and with little losse, the Citie was taken, and ransacked by the *English* souldiers; who conueighed all their spoiles into *England*.

Normandie harrowed by King Edward.

The English Armie is rich.

The English Armie increaseth.

The Citie of Cane is taken

In the yeelding vp of this Citie. First, the three Earles submitted their fortunes to Sir *Thomas Holland*, a valiant English Knight, who had but one eye, of whom the King bought them for tenne thousand markes in Gold: and receiuing them as prisoners into his Armie, hee marched to the Towne of *Loures* which hee quickly won, and then entred into the Prouince of *Eureux* all which he wasted, spoiled and burned without pittie: (the walled Townes, Cities, and Castles only excepted) with none of which hee medled, least by them, his strength should bee deminished before hee met

Sir Thomas Holland.

Loureys is taken.

Why King Edward medled with no walled Townes, nor Castles in the Prouince of Eureux.

with the *French* King, who had ſolemnely ſworne and proteſted that King *Edward* ſhould not returne into *England* before a battaile fought betweene them.

Many townes wonne by the Engliſh.

After this, King *Edward* in his march, wonne *Giſours*, *Vernon*, *Saint Germans in Lay*, *Mountrell*, *Saint Clowde*, *Rely*, and the whole Countrie about *Roan*, *Pont de Larch*, *Nants*, *Newlench*, *Robboys*, *Fountaine*, *Poys*, and *Vimew*, in all which places he found but weake reſiſtance. King *Philip* of *France*, hauing true intelligence, that King *Edward* with al his Armie was within two leagues of *Paris*, left that Citie, and went to S. *Dennis* where his Armie lay, perſwading the *Pariſians* that King *Edward* dared not to looke them in the face, but they beleeued him not, and feare made them greatly diſpleaſed with their king. Neere about the ſame time Sir *Godfrey* Lord *Harcourt* being one of King *Edwards* Marſhals, encountred with certaine Burgeſſes of *Amyens*, whom the *French* king had appointed to come vnto *Paris* for the better defence therof, if neede ſhould ſo require: and though they defended themſelues with much valor, yet at length twelue hundred of them were ſlaine, and the reſt being taken priſoners, were brought vnto the king. The *Engliſh* Armie ſo eagerly purſued the happineſſe of their fortune, That they poſſeſſed the whole countrie through which they paſſed, yea euen to the gates of *Aubenile*, and of Saint *Valary*: yet were they vnawares enuironed with the Riuer of *Some* on the one ſide; and with the *French* Kings armie (conſiſting of more then an hundred thouſand men) on the other ſide. The place wherein he was, promiſed him no manner of aduantage, if he ſhould fight: but many inconueniencies preſented themſelues vnto him, So that hee conſulted with his Priſoners, if anie of them could direct him to any Ford where he might tranſport his Armie, among whom, one who was named *Gobyn* of *Grace*, directed him to a conuenient paſſage. But when the King came thither, it was defended by twelue thouſand of the *French* Kings Armie. Yet notwithſtanding (when the Sea was ebbed) King *Edward*, with the Prince and the whole Armie, did put themſelues into the water, and ſo did the *French* men on the other ſide, ſo that they all encountred pell mell in the midſt of the Riuer, and fought with ſuch deſperate reſolution on either part, that manie a man was ſtriken downe, being ſlaine, or by that meane was drowned. But at length the *Frenchmen* being much waſted by the ſword fled, and the *Engliſhmen* ſlaughtered them in the Chaſe a full league and more.

The French King forſaketh the Pariſians.

Thoſe of Amyens are ſlaine, and taken.

The Engliſh Armie is inuironed on the ſuddaine.

Gobyn of Grace.

King Edward paſſeth through the riuer of Some and ſlaughtereth the French.

1345. And now approached the time, in which this journie made by king *Edward* and his ſonne was to be bleſſed with much honor, and

and happineſſe, or to be vnfortunate, though hitherto it had proceeded well. For the *French* king (being reſolued to bee reuenged without pitie, and in regard that his Armie contained in number more then ſix times as manie fighting men as king *Edward* had; and making no doubt, but that a triumphant victorie ſhould preuent all future danger of *Englands* claime to the *French* Crown) marched with all his ſtrength, in good order of battaile, againſt king *Edward*. Who (knowing that only the ſword was then to decide the controuerſie, and to pronounce the judgement) entred into a ſpacious field neere vnto *Creſſey*, where he did ſet his whole Armie in good order, and diuided it into three battailes. All which hee ſo imparked behind with carriages and carts, that no man was eaſily able to interrupt or to endanger them in the Reareward. And when the battaile ſhould begin, the firſt Companies were conducted by the yong Prince, who was aſſiſted by the Earles of *Warwicke*, and of *Canford*, and by the Lords of *Harcourt*, *Stafford*, *Manny*, *De Lauarre*, *Chandoys*, *Clifford*, and *Bourchier*, Sir *Reynold Cobham*, Sir *Thomas Holland*, Sir *Roger Neuill*, and manie other Lords, knights, and Gentlemen of name. And in that battaile were eight hundred men at Armes, Two thouſand Archers, and one thouſand other luſtie and good Souldiers.

The famous and victorious Battaile of Creſſey.

Great oddes.

The Battaile of the Blacke Prince.

The ſecond battaile was directed by the Earles of *Northampton*, and of *Arondel*, who were accompanied with the Lords *Roſe*, *Lygo*, *Willonghby*, *Baſſet*, Saint *Awbin*, *Myleton*, and *De La Sell*; and by manie other Lords, knights, and Gentlemen. And in this battaile there were eight hundred men at Armes, and twelue hundred Archers.

The ſecond Battaile of the Engliſh.

And the third and maine battaile (being placed betwixt the other two) was led by the king himſelfe, who was aſſiſted by many Earles, Lords, knights, Eſquires, and Gentlemen of the beſt ranke. And in that battaile there were ſeuen hundred men at Armes, Two thouſand Archers, and tenne thouſand other common ſouldiers, well approued and expert men of warre.

The Kings Battaile.

The *Engliſh* Armie hauing exerciſed themſelues in prayer vnto God, and moderatly refreſhed themſelus with ſom meat, and ſome drinke, laid themſelues downe vpon the ground, thereby to comfort, and to eaſe themſelues before they fought. But the *Frenchmen* (although they proudly bragged, and profferd manie ſhewes) yet for that day they wanted courage to beginne the fight. But the next morning, the *French* king commanded that fifteene thouſand *Genowayes*, with their Croſbowes, ſhould giue the firſt onſet vpon the Prince his battaile. But eyther for want of skill, or elſe (in ma-

Fifteene thouſand Genowayes ouerthrowne.

king more haſt than good ſpeed) their diſorder was ſo foule, and ſo groſſe, That by the *Engliſh* Archers the greater part of them were ſlaine; and the reſt were ſoone defeated, and compelled to retire. In which (ſo violent was their haſt and poſting) that in rude heapes they ruſhed into the *French* kings maine battaile, and diſordered it, but were by their owne friendes without mercie put vnto the ſword.

The maine Battaile of the French Armie is diſordered.

And though the *French* Armie (by reaſon of their diſorder not to bee repaired) had little warrant for good ſucceſſe: yet being emboldned by reaſon of their multituds, and being ſharp ſet vpon reuenge, aduanced themſelus, and charged gallantly vpon the *Engliſh* Armie; but bent their chiefeſt ſtrength againſt the Prince his battel, who receiued them with ſuch furie, and hardie blowes, that thouſands of them (almoſt in a moment) were made Bond-ſlaues vnto death.

The Prince his Battaile receiueth the Frenchmen to their paine

For ſtill: the Prince his battaile remained entire and vnbroken. By meanes whereof hee made prodigall expence and hauocke of the *Frenchmen*, who being firſt broken, could not obſerue anie order at all, nor helpe themſelues by any ingenious pollicie of Warre.

The benefit of good order.

And though they fell in great numbers before the Prince his battaile, yet their new, and copious ſupplies, which alwayes ſucceeded thoſe who were ſlaine, gaue no leaſure nor reſpit at all to the Prince, nor to his aſſiſtants, to take any breathing; Much leſſe to refreſh themſelues. So that the braue Prince (though he were full of incomparable valour, and reſolution, yet (being diſtreſſed for want of breath, and of ſome reliefe) hee ſent to haue ſome helpe and ſuccour from the King: who inquired of the meſſinger if he were aliue? who anſwered that he was: Then (quoth the King) report to him from me, that he expect no aide; For this ſhall be the day in which hee ſhall winne his ſpurres, or elſe ſhall looſe his life. For in life, or in death, hee ſhall ingroſſe to himſelfe the whole honour and glorie of this day. When Prince *Edward* was informed what the King had ſaid, (being vrged by ſharp neceſſitie, and animated with freſh hopes of a famous Victorie) Hee, with his companions in Armes, renewed their ſtrength, and redoubled their manlike courage: And (wholly repoſing their truſt, and confidence in Gods goodneſſe, and in the edges of their hungrie ſwordes) they fought with ſuch vndaunted ſpirits, that the *Frenchmen* beganne to flie: and were ſo eagerly purſued, That the greater part of their whole Armie lay breathleſſe vpon the ground. And, in the Chace, the two Marſhals of *England* encoun-

The King would not relieue the Prince his Sonne.

The French Armie is ouerthrowne.

countred with a multitude of the Inhabitants of *Beuoys*, *Reignyer*, *Aubeuile*, and of *Roan*, of whom ſeuen thouſand were ſlaine, and the reſt by flight had much adoe in ſauing of themſelues. And the next day the ſaid Marſhals were recharged by the Archbiſhoppe of *Roan*, and by the *Grand-Pryor* of *France*, who conducted a ſtrong Armie to aide their king: They not knowing that the Battaile was alreadie fought, and the field loſt by their friends.

Another French companie is ſlain.

No misfortune goeth alone.

With theſe new forces the *Engliſh* men encountred and contended ſo proudly, that quickly they beganne to flie; and were almoſt all waſted by the ſword. So that within the compaſſe of thoſe two dayes, there were ſlaine on the *French* part eleuen Princes, foure-ſcore Barons, twelue hundred knights, and more then thirtie thouſand ſouldiours of the common ſort: And the *French* king himſelfe by ſpeedie flight, very hardly eſcaped with his life. The whole bootie of this field, the king frankly beſtowed vpon his Nobles, Gentrie, and on his whole armie: and cauſed the dead bodies of all ſuch as were honorable and of note, to be taken vp, and caried them with him vnto *Mountrell*, where they were buried with much ſolemnitie, and great honour.

The number of Priſoners, and of ſuch as were ſlaine

The King giues away all the ſpoyles

The Kings charitie.

Now (when king *Edward* perceiued, that the *French* king made no preparation at all for a new ſupply to encounter him) hee marched towardes *Callice*; burning, ſpoiling, and rifling all places, as he paſſed by. The Towne, and Caſtle, hee intended not to aſſault. For as it would haue beene full of danger, ſo hee knew the ſtrength thereof to bee ſuch, that in aſſaulting it hee ſhould both looſe his labour, and his men. It therefore gaue him good content, to gird and to compaſſe it round about with a ſtrong ſiege: Which (when he had continued a full whole yeare) the *French* king, with a huge army of two hundred thouſand men, marched towardes *Callice*.

King Edward beſiegeth Callice.

Two hundred thouſand men in the French Kings armie

But finding euerie paſſage and way, in ſuch warlike ſort to bee garded, and defended, that he could not approach vnto the *Engliſh* armie: Hee challenged king *Edward* to maintaine his honour, by fighting with him a battaile in the Field. But king *Edward* (by reaſon of his long ſiege hauing ſpent much Treaſure; and the Towne and Caſtle of *Callice* wanting manie things, needfull, and neceſſary for their reliefe) made this anſwere: That his manie and great Victories in *France*, and elſewhere, ſufficiently cleared him from the ſuſpition of Cowardize: and that (ſeeing he had trauelled, and ſpent ſo much time, and monie, for the winning of *Callice*) the *French* king ſhould open all paſſages by force, and then make

The French Kings Challenge.

King Edwards anſwere.

triall of his Strength before that Towne, or (otherwiſe) might returne. Whereupon the *French* King (not finding any meanes how he might releeue *Callice*) caſhired his Armie, and retired: leauing poore diſtreſſed *Callice* to the mercie of King *Edward*, who daily expected when it ſhould bee yeelded into his hands.

The French Armie Caſhired.

Now whileſt the King thus lay before *Callice*, *Dauid* of *Scotland*, with an Armie of fiftie thouſand men (by the procurement, and furtherance of the *French* King) entred into *England*, and did much harme. But the Queene (with her Armie, conſiſting only of twelue thouſand valiant men) confronted him in the field, where was fought a long and a ſharp battaile; vntill King *Dauid* (by an Eſquire named *Iohn Copland*) was taken priſoner, and ſecretly conueyed out of the armie. There were alſo (at that time) ſlaine of the *Scots*, diuers Earles, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, beſides more then fifteene thouſand ſouldiers of the common ranke. And the reſidue of them being defeated, returned by continuall flight into *Scotland*.

The Scots inuade England in the Kings abſence.

The Queene fights with them.

Iohn Copland taketh the King of Scots

The Scots are ouerthrowne.

The Queene much importuned *Iohn Copland* for the deliuerie of his Priſoner king *Dauid*. But hee (making challenge vnto him, as to his onely behoofe, by the Lawes of Armes) made anſwere, that hee would not deliuer him vnto any but to the King himſelfe. So that the Queene (being highly diſpleaſed with him) certified the king both of her Victorie, and alſo in what ſort *Iohn Copland* had anſwered her, touching the deliuerie of the *Scottiſh* king. Whereupon, *Iohn Copland* (being ſent for) went vnto *Callice*, where hee was graciouſly and louingly welcomed by the king, who thanked him hartily for his great ſeruice; and made him an Eſquire of his owne bodie; and recompenced his trauailes, and his good fortune, with the gift in Fee ſimple of fiue hundred pounds by the yeare in good Land; and commanded him to deliuer his Priſoner to the Queene at his returne: which hee performed accordingly. And then the Queene committed the ſaid king and the Earle of *Morret*, and manie others, Priſoners to the Tower of *London*: where they remained long after.

Iohn Copland would not deliuer his Priſoner to the Queene.

Iohn Copland is thanked, and rewarded

King Dauid and others are committed to the Tower.

And then the Queene (being accompanied with a faire troupe of faire Ladies, and beautifull Gentlewomen (whoſe huſbands, fathers, brothers, and kinſfolkes, had for a long time beene emploied in the *French* warres) came vnto the king, as he lay before *Callice*; and were by the king, and his whole armie receiued, and entertained with much joy.

The Queene paſſeth ouer to Callice.

And now the diſtreſſed, and the beſieged Towne of *Callice* (trauelling with many wants, and being deſtitute of all hope to be re-

The Callicians crane mercie.

lieued,

lieued, becauſe the *French* King not long before had caſhired and diſmiſſed his whole Armie) craued pardon, and mercie of King *Edward*: Who (in regard of their peruerſe and long continued obſtinacie, and for that they had ſpoyled and robbed many of his *Engliſh* Marchants vpon the Sea, before they were beſieged) would in no ſort hearken to their requeſt and ſubmiſſion; except ſixe of their worthieſt Inhabitants did come vnto him, Bare-legged, Bare-headed, in their Shirts, and with Halters about their neckes, to be corrected and diſpoſed of as the king ſhould pleaſe. And though this condition was full of terrour and of bitterneſſe, yet neceſſitie compelled them to accompliſh the kings demaund. So that they ſent him the keyes both of the Towne, and Caſtle, by thoſe ſixe, who preſented them to the king. The keyes he receiued; but forthwith commanded that the ſaid Townesmen ſhould bee hanged. Whereupon, all ſuch in the kings Armie, as were either Honourable by birth, or had for their ſeruice deſerued well, or were graced by the kings eſpeciall loue and fauour; became earneſt Petitioners to the king for the Pardon of thoſe diſtreſſed men. But ſuch was the kings reſolution, and full determination, to make them examples to the reſt, for the iniuries, and for the wrongs which formerly they had done to the *Engliſh* Nation, that all their meanes was inſufficient, and vnable to deliuer them from death. Which when the Queene perceiued (on bended knees, with Prayers and with Teares, and with importunate requeſt) ſhee neuer ceaſed to vrge the king, vntill ſhee had procured their Pardon, and their inlargement from that danger.

A hard condition.

Ingens telum neceſſitas.

A heauie ſentence.

Interceſsion for the liues of the Callicians.

The Queene only procureth their Pardon.

The chiefe Captaine named Sir *Guy* of *Vyen*, and ſuch knights and Gentlemen as were in the Towne, and in the Caſtle, were ſent Priſoners into *England*; where they remained about ſixe monethes, and were then ranſomed by the *French* king.

Thus when the king was quietly and fully poſſeſſed of *Callice* (the keye to *France*) and had (without ſparing of any coſt) in wonderfull ſort ſtrengthned, and fortified it: He left none to remaine there, but *Engliſhmen*; the Captaine onely excepted: Who being a *Lombard* by birth, was named Sir *Andrew de Pauye*, an eſpeciall fauourite of the kings, whom the king (vpon the vndoubted truſt, and confidence which hee repoſed in him) placed chiefe Captaine, and Commander there.

Callice is yeelded to King Edward, in An. Dom. 1347. *and in the 22. yeere of King Edwards raigne*

A ſtranger made Captaine of Callice.

The King returneth into England.

Theſe things being thus ſetled in good order; the king with the Queene and all his troupes, returned into *England*; and were receiued into *London* with extraordinarie Triumph, and great joy. And from thence hee ſent ſixe and thirtie rich, wiſe, and graue Citizens,

Londoners are ſent to dwell in Callice.

Great priuiledges granted to the Callicians.

tizens, with ther Wiues and Families to *Callice*, to inhabite, and to trade and traffique there: and gaue to the ſaid Towne and Caſtle ſuch profitable and large immunites, priuiledges, liberties and franchesſes; that they thought themſelues to be very happy, whom the king would licence to dwell there.

The Pope mediates a Truce.

Pope *Clement* the ſixt (hauing manie yeares laughed in his ſleeue, to ſee theſe two potent and mightie kings, ſo buſily to imploy themſelues each againſt other in thoſe bloudie Warres) at length mediated a Truce betwixt them: which (on his motion) was concluded for two yeares.

Callice ſhould haue been betraied

And in the meane time, king *Edward* was informed, that Sir *Andrew de Paule* his chiefe Captaine of *Callice*, (for twentie thouſand Crownes to him promiſed by the Lord *Charney* Captaine of *Arras*) had conſpired to betray the Towne and Caſtle into his hands. Whereupon king *Edward* (to make a triall of this newes, and to ſurpriſe the ſaid Lord, and all his Companie, if hee might, when hee ſhould come to take the poſſeſſion of *Callice*) departed ſecretly out of *England* with three hundred ſelected men at armes, and

The King paſſeth ſecretly vnto Callice.

in the depth of the night landed at *Callice*, and was quickly receiued in: where hee ſharply reprehended the *Lombard*, who, vnder the pretext of honeſt dealing for the king, excuſed himſelfe of anie treacherous intent. But within a night or two after, the Lord *Charney* (at the appointed time) repaired thither with twelue hundred armed men, to ſurpriſe both the Caſtle, and the Towne.

The Money is receiued.

The monie (in good Gold) was by the Captaine receiued at a poſterne gate of the Caſtle; and one hundred only of that Company were ſuffred to enter in. But they (finding quickly that they were beguiled, and betraied) without noyſe, or reſiſtance, yeelded themſelues; and were cloſed vp in a ſtrong Dungeon. And then the king himſelfe, with three hundred men at armes, (vnder the Banner of Sir *Walter of Mannie*) brake forth out of the Caſtle, and furiouſly ruſhed vpon the *Frenchmen*; who attended for better newes. But when they did perceiue that they were deceiued; they reſolued to acquit themſelues like men; and, for an houre and more, ſo they did. But when manie of them were ſlaine, the reſt fled; and were thus depriued, both of their monie, and of their hope. In this conflict the King himſelfe encountred hand to hand with the Lord

Sir Euſtace Lord Rybamont.

Euſtace of Rybamount, a right hardie and valiant knight; and was by him twice ſtooped on his knees: But skorning to yeeld to anie baſe conceit, or froward Fortune, hee aduanced himſelfe ſo nobly, and in ſuch ſort redoubled his courage and his ſtrength, that

A noble King.

in the end he tooke the ſaid Sir *Euſtace* priſoner with his own hand:

the

the ſaid Lord not knowing with whom he had ſo ſharply contended. But the King, making him to know all, releaſed him without Ranſome; promiſed him future fauours; and diſmiſſed him with a Princely rewatd.

The French King dieth.

About the ſame time, the *French* king *Philip* of *Valoys* died: and his ſonne was crowned King.

ANNO 24.

Iohn is Crowned King of France.

In the beginning of his Raigne hee created Sir *Charles* a Noble man of *Spaine*, Earle of *Angoleſme*; becauſe he entred into the narrow Seas on the *French* behalfe with a powerfull Fleet, and miſerably ſpoiled, robbed, and rifled the *Engliſh* Marchants; and expoſed them to much crueltie. With him king *Edward* tought; and compelled him to flie hauing loſt manie of his chiefeſt men, and two and twentie of his beſt ſhips.

The Kings Victorie at Sea.

Guyens is yeelded to the Callicians

And about the ſame time, the Caſtle of *Guyens* was yeelded to the Kings people of *Callice*: and in the ſeuen and twentieth yeare of his Raigne, hee created his Couſin *Henrie* of *Bullinbrooke* (who was Earle of *Darby*) Duke of *Lancaſter*: with whoſe daughter and heire, the kings ſonne *Iohn* of *Gaunt* afterwards married; and was Duke of *Lancaſter* in her right. He alſo created Sir *Roger Stafford*, Earle of *Stafford*. The ſaid Duke (vpon ſome miſinformation that hee ſhould publiſh ſome diſgracefull wordes of the Duke of *Brunſwicke*) was by him challenged to a ſingle Combate before king *Iohn* of *France*; whereof hee gladly accepted: and at the appointed time, they both being throughly fitted for that purpoſe, entred with hautie courage into the Liſts, for the triall of their cauſe. But they both of them were reconciled by the *French* King, to the great contentment and honour of the Duke of *Lancaſter*, notwithſtanding that he was an *Engliſhman* and a ſubject to his Enemie.

ANNO. 25

ANNO. 27

A Duke of Lancaſter Created.

How Iohn of Gaunt became Duke of Lancaſter.

A Combate appointed betweene the Duke of Lancaſter and the Duke of Brunſwicke.

A reconciliation.

King *Edward* (during the time of the aforeſaid Truce) had vſed all friendly meanes to reconcile the *Flemmings*, and to draw them from the *French* to his owne part: but finding that al his endeuours proued vaine, and that no courteſie could winne them, hee withdrew from them all his Marts for Marchandizing, which *Iaques Dartuell* had procured for them. Which thing (in a ſhort time) became exceeding hurtfull and prejudiciall to the *Flemmings*.

The Marts for England remooued from the Flemings.

And now (the time of the former Truce with *France* being long ſince ended) King *Edward* leuied a puiſſant Armie of his moſt expert and approued men of warre, which hee committed to the charge and Gouernment of his ſonne, the Noble and Valorous Prince of *Wales*, ſirnamed the Blacke Prince: Who being accompanied with manie Earles, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of name,

The Blacke Prince landeth in Gaſcoyne with an Armie.

He preuaileth.
The French King leuieth a huge armie.

Ten thouſand men only of the Engliſh Armie.

ANNO. 30
1355.

The Battaile of Poyters.

The French men are diſordred.

King Iohn is a moſt valiant Prince.

The Braue valour, and reſolution of the Engliſh.

The Blacke Prince his vow.

name, departed out of *England*, and landed in *Gaſcoyne*; where hee ranſacked, ſpoiled, burnt, and conſumed Villages, Townes, Cities, Forts, and Caſtles, in all places as hee paſſed by, without any reſiſtance or defence. But King *Iohn* of *France*, intending to ſtop this Torrent: and making no doubt but that the multitude of his ſouldiers ſhould giue him an eaſie Victorie ouer ſo ſmall a Companie as the Prince conducted, which exceeded not tenne thouſand men; Leuied a huge Armie, which hee aſſembled from all places ſubiect to his Dominion. And being accompanied with *Philip* his yonger ſonne, and with the Flower of all the Chiualrie of *France*, He marched with great ſtrength, againſt the Black Prince; whom he found neere vnto *Poyters*, readily prepared in the field to receiue him. The *French* armie was diuided into foure Battailes: who (as their turnes, or lots came) fought with much valour, but with little vſe of their great skill. For the thicke ſhot of the *Engliſh* Archers, (galling vnmeaſurably their great Horſes) was the cauſe, that quickly they brake their order and their array: which ſuddenly bred ſuch a totall diſturbance in the whole armie, that themſelues (as waues of water doe in a turbulent, and in a tempeſtuous Sea) ouerwhelmed each other; ſo that ſuch as were downe, were troden to death by their owne friends who could not auoid them; ſuch as would preſſe forward to make good proofe of their valour, were repreſſed by ſuch as did retire; And ſuch as did recoyle, were ſtopped and hindred of their purpoſe, by thoſe who could not chooſe but reſiſt their comming backe. Notwithſtanding, the *French* Kings owne Battaile (which was better ordered then all the reſt) encountring with that Battaile of the *Engliſh* armie, in which the Prince of *Wales* was; performed moſt rare and wonderfull feates of Chiualrie, which (to the vtmoſt of their powers) they encreaſed; being extraordinarily animated thereunto by the matchleſſe valour and fortitude of their King: who (like a worthie Knight for his ſurpaſſing valour and courage) exceeded all his Nobles for performance of that day.

But the Blacke Prince, and his Battaile (whom no diſorder troubled) ſtriuing almoſt beyond the abilities of men to winne honour, and to ſaue themſelues, retained vndaunted ſpirits. And as dangers preſſed forth; ſo did they (with incomparable manhood) driue them backe againe, making the *Frenchmen* know by their miſerable experience, that they could not ſo much as dreame of any flight, nor of yeelding, but were ſo greedie of the beſt honour, that nothing but Death, or Victorie, could content them. The Prince himſelfe vowed, that through the helpe of Almightie God he

he would that day performe the part of a good Knight. And to ſay the truth, ſuch were his vnmatchable deedes of armes, ſo hautie was his ſpirit, ſo pleaſing was his example, and ſo cheereſull were his encouragements to his whole armie; that euery one among them (ſtriuing to imitate his valour, and to winne his fauour,) redoubled his ſtrength; and with ſuch reſolution fell vpon the *Frenchmen*, that they were compelled to giue backe, and were ſo violently purſued, that the battaile (in which their King fought) was now opened, and in ſuch ſort diſordered, that the *Engliſhmen* entred into the midſt of them; wounding and killing on euerie ſide with little or no loſſe, or danger to themſelues. And at length; King *Iohn* (ſcorning to leaue the field) yeelded himſelf & his ſonne *Philip*, priſoners vnto Sir *Dennis Morbeck* a Knight of Saint *Omers*: who for a murder forſooke his Countrie, and ſerued for wages with the Blacke Prince. In this battaile there were ſlaine verie manie great men of the Nobilitie, and Gentrie of *France*; and aboue ten thouſand others.

The French Armie is ouerthrowne.

King Iohn, and his yonger Sonne are taken Priſoners by Sir Dennis Morbecke.

Too much deſire of Honour, and too much couetouſneſſe; were the cauſes, that the *French* King (being thus taken) was ill vſed: For (by reaſon that more than ten Gentlemen laide ſeuerall claimes vnto him, as to their Priſoner) hee was vnciuilly drawne from one to another, not without ſome perill to his life: but telling them, that he was ſo great a Lord, that hee could make them all rich, they were better pleaſed, and brought him to the Prince: Who with great reuerence bowed himſelfe before the King: reuiued his heauie ſpirits, with cheerfull, and with comfortable words: feaſted him and *Phillip* his yonger Sonne: attended duetifully at his Table; lodged him in his owne bed: Prouided for him moſt honourable attendance: Supplied all things about him which were wanting: and brought them both, from thence vnto *Burdeaux*, and from thence into *England*; where hee was ioyfully, and royally receiued, and wel-commed by the King and Queene, and by the Nobilitie of this Kingdome, and was entertained with as great magnificence and curteſie, as he could expect, or wiſh for. And vpon King *Iohns* owne confeſſion, the honour of his taking was by King *Edward* adjudged to Sir *Dennis Morbeck*: who for his great and good ſeruice was much thanked: and bountifully rewarded by the King.

The French King is ill vſed.

How the Black Prince receiued and entertained the French King, and his Sonne.

The Blacke Prince bringeth the French King and his Son: Priſoners into England.

Sir Dennis Morbecke.

In this Battaile (beſides ſuch as were ſlaine) There were taken priſoners ſeuenteene Earles, thrice as manie Barons, and ſo great a number of Knights, and Gentlemen of name, and of note: that euerie *Engliſh* common ſouldier (who had feweſt priſoners) had two:

Priſoners.

all

A bountifull Prince.

all which, together with the wohle ſpoiles of the field, the Prince frankely and freely gaue to his companies who valiantly had wonne them by their ſwords. So that there was not a poore man in the *Engliſh* armie, but euery one of them had as much Gold, and as much Siluer, Plate, and Iewels, as gaue him good contentment for his paines. And ſuch was their ſtore, and ſuch was their plentie of thoſe thinges, that rich and coſtly Armours, and ſuch like warlike prouiſions, were not taken vp, nor cared for at all.

The Engliſh Armie are made rich.

How the French King was diſpoſed of.

The *French* King (for a while) liued at the *Sauoy*; which by King *Edward* was ſumptuouſly furniſhed; and beautified, with all things neceſſary for ſo great a gueſt. And from thence, he was remooued to the Caſtle of *Windſor*, where hee feaſted, hunted, hawked, and did all things according to his owne pleaſure, and will, for the ſpace of two yeares; the King, and the Blacke Prince, as often as anie leaſure gaue them leaue repairing thither; and gladding him with their cheereſull and moſt friendly companie, and with the varietie of manie pleaſing ſports. By meanes whereof, true and heartie loue, and affection, did knit them faſt together, ſo that they concluded a friendly Truce, to continue for the ſpace of two yeares. And thus were King *Edward*, and the Noble Prince his ſonne, honoured and bleſſed by Almightie God, with ſuch triumphant ſucceſſe in their warres, both in *Scotland*, and in *France*, (they then poſſeſſing for their Priſoners at one time, the Kings of thoſe two Kingdomes, and *Philip* the *French* Kings younger ſonne, and many Dukes, Earles, and Barons) as none other Princes in Chriſtendome then were.

The honourable proſperitie of King Edward, and of the Blacke Prince.

King Dauid of Scotland is releaſed.

ANNO. 32

And *Dauid* the King of *Scots* after tenne yeares of impriſonment in *England* was enlarged for a ranſome of one hundred thouſand pounds, to be paid in fiue yeares: And (vpon his oath neuer againe to beare armes againſt *England*; and vpon his Homage, and Fealtie, done for that Kingdome; and vpon his faithfull promiſe to doe his beſt to procure the Nobilitie of *Scotland* to doe the like) he was enlarged and ſet free.

ANNO. 33

The Dalphin allowes not his Fathers concluſions.

King Iohn of France committed to the Tower.

Not long after, King *Edward* and the King of *France*, entred into a parley for a longer time of Truce. But their concluſions and agreements were vtterly diſliked by his eldeſt Sonne *Charles* then Regent of *France*, and Duke of *Normandie*; and by the whole Baronie of that Countie. Whereupon King *Edward*, with all expedition and conuenient ſpeed, made greater preparation to make Warre there, then hee had done at anie time before. And (hauing committed the *French* king, and his ſonne *Philip* with honorable at-

ten-

tendance, cloſe priſoners to the Tower of *London*, himſelfe, with the Blacke Prince his ſonne, tranſported thither a puiſſant Armie; and landed at his Towne of *Callice*: and from thence hee marched ſtrongly vnto *Rhemes*, where he beſieged the Caſtle ſeuen weekes; but did not winne it in the end. From thence he marched towards *Paris*, and *Chartres*, waſting, burning, and killing in all places as he paſſed; ſo that hee compelled the Regent, and the Nobilitie of *France*, to become earneſt petitioners vnto him for peace: which they obtained, vpon theſe Articles enſuing.

ANNO. 34 *King Edward and the Black Prince doe land a puiſſant Armie at Callice The Regent Dolphin ſueth for Peace.*

The Articles of the Peace.

1. *FIrſt, that King IOHN ſhould pay for his ranſom, fiue hundred thouſand Pounds of ſterling money.*

The Ranſom

2. *Secondly, That from thencefoorth, No King of France ſhould aide, or aſsiſt, any King of Scotland in any Warre or Rebellion againſt England: And that no King of England ſhould from thencefoorth take part with the Flemings in any expedition, or Warre againſt France.*

3. *Thirdly, That the Kings of England ſhould haue, and for euer enioy freely, without homage, and in their owne right, their Territories in Gaſcoyne, and in Guyan, with the Precincts, Caſtles, Forts, Townes and Cities of Poyters, and Perygrot; The Earledomes of Bygrot, Poytiau, and Guyens, the Citie of Lymoges, Tharbes, Guaire, Agen, Angoleſme, Agenoys, Rauerne, and Caours, The Lordſhip of Xantes, Caumeſin, Hammes, Ouy, and Mountrell, with the Seigniories of Callice, Marguiſe, Sandgate, and Cologne.*

The Title to the Crowne of France is relinquiſhed.

4. *And laſtly; That (in regard thereof) King EDWARD, As well in the behalfe of himſelfe, as of his Succeſſours Kings of England, ſhould vtterly renounce and leaue, both the name and title to the Kingdome of France.*

ANNO. 34 *How the obſeruation of this Peace was ratified. The King and Prince returne into England.*

And for the performance of theſe Articles, *Charles* the Regent of *France*, and the Prince of *Wales*, in the preſence of ſix Knights of either Nation, receiued the holy Sacrament at the high Altar, and then King *Edward* and his ſonne returned into *England*, and were (with all complements of loue and kindneſſe) entertained, and feaſted at the Tower of *London* by the *French* King, who was con-

The French King feaſteth them.
The two princes ſweare.
Hoſtages.

ueyed from thence to *Callis*, where (according to agreement) he remained foure moneths, and then King *Edward* repaired to him, and both of them (at a high Maſſe) ſolemnly ſwore to obſerue, performe, and keepe the ſaid Articles and the peace. And King *Iohn* (for the hoſtages of his Ranſome) deliuered to King *Edward* foure Dukes, ſeauen Earles, ten Barons, many Knights, and two of the worthieſt Burgeſſes of euery great Citie in *France*, and tooke a moſt friendly leaue of the King, and of the Prince of *Wales*, and departed towards *Boleine:* he hauing remained a priſoner more then foure yeares. And King *Edward* with his ſonne returned into *England*, bringing with them their honorable Hoſtages, who were (with all humanitie and kindneſſe) feaſted and entertained by the King and by his Nobilitie, and were permitted freely to vſe all ſports, paſtimes, and exerciſes for pleaſure and contentation, as they pleaſed.

King Iohn was a priſoner foure yeares.

ANNO. 37.
Three Kings doe viſite King Edward.

About two yeares after king *Edward* was at one time viſited (for loue and kindneſſe onely, and for no buſineſſe at all) by three Kings, that is to ſay, by king *Iohn* of *France*, *Dauid* the king of *Scots*, and by the king of *Cyprus*, and were with all munificent bountie and liberalitie feaſted, and honored by the King, but king *Iohn* fell ſick, and dyed in the *Sauoy*, and his body was conuayd vnto *S. Dennis* in *France*, where (with great pomp, and princely ceremonies) it was buried.

King Iohn dieth in England.

The next yeare following, the noble Prince of *Wales* and his wife (being very gallantly attended, and prouided) went vnto *Burdeaux*, where he liued, and gouerned the kings Prouinces thereabout, and elſewhere in *France*, to the great contentment and good liking of the Nobles and commons of thoſe Countries.

The Blacke Prince liueth in Burdeaux.

ANNO. 40
The cauſes of King Edwards future loſſes in thoſe Countries.

In the fortith yeare of king *Edwards* raigne an vnfortunate buſineſſe was taken in hand by the valiant Prince of *Wales*, which albeit it were performed with great reſolution, and was rewarded with deſerued honor, yet within few yeares, by reaſon of a future accident, it was the occaſion that king *Edward* loſt a great part of his territories in *France*, and it was thus. *Peter* the true and lawfull king of *Caſtile* was in the field ouerthrowne, put to flight, and diſpoſſeſſed of his Crowne by *Henry* his Baſtard Brother, who was aſſiſted by *Charles* the fifth, the ſonne of *Iohn* the deceaſed king of *France*. This poore diſtreſſed king (in his wants and miſerie) repaired to the Prince of *Wales* for ayd, who for his reſtoring, and vpon large and faithfull promiſes of liberall pay and great rewards, conducted an armie into *Caſtile*. And, albeit that the *Spaniſh* and the *French* forces were in number four times more then the Princes were, yet in a bloudie battaile the moſt of them were ſlaine, and the reſt were put

Peter King of Caſtile, is depoſed by Henry the Baſtard.
King Charles the fifth taketh part with Henrie the Baſtard.
The Blacke Prince being victorious reſetleth Peter in his Kingdome.

to

to flight. And king *Peter* was againe reſtored to his Crowne, and ſetled in his kingdome by the Prince, who returned againe to *Burdeaux* with great honor.

But (not long after) *Henry* the Baſtard, (being newly ſupplied with freſh forces) warred with ſuch great furie and violence vpon king *Peter*, that he ſubdued him: and (to preuent all future claymes and troubles which he might make) he cauſed him to be put to death. But his two daughters and heires were after marryed vnto *Iohn* of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter*, and to *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, two of king *Edwards* ſonnes.

Henrie the Baſtard taketh, and ſlaieth Peter. Peters two heires married to Iohn of Gant and Thomas of Woodſtocke.

By reaſon of king *Peters* death, the Prince his ſouldiours (being hopeleſſe to receiue their promiſed pay, and large rewards) and being oppreſſed with many wants, daily petitioned the Prince to ſupply their need. But he (finding none other meanes to ſupport their neceſſities, nor being ſtored with money to relieue their pouertie) impoſed (contrary to the cuſtomes of thoſe Countries) diuers Taxes vpon the inhabitants of *Aquitaine*: which ſo highly did diſpleaſe them, that the Lords thereof complained of this ſharp noueltie to the *French* king, who (flatly contrary to the Articles not long before concluded on for peace betwixt *England* and *France*) arrogated to himſelfe the Soueraignty ouer the Prince, and his Dominions in *France*; and ſommoned him to appeare before him at *Paris*. So that the peace, and thoſe agreed Articles were broken by the *French* king, and warres were againe proclaymed betweene *England* and *France*. But before the Prince of *Wales* could enable his forces for a ſtrong defence: the inhabitants of thoſe Countries for the moſt part reuolted from him; and dayly yeelded their Townes, Cities, Forts, and Caſtles, into the hands of the *French* king. So that king *Edward* (who for the ſpace of forty yeares together was moſt honorable, and more fortunate then any other Chriſtian Prince, by gayning of incredible victories vpon the *Scots*, and *French* Nation) within the compaſſe of one yeare, & without blowes, loſt (almoſt) all his Commaund in thoſe Prouinces, which by the ſaid agreement, and articles of peace, were allotted, and by ſolemne oath aſſured vnto him.

The Prince ſommoned to appeare at Paris. Warres proclaimed. Almoſt all do reuolt from the Prince. The mutabilitie of fortun An vnfortunate yeare.

King *Charles* of *France* (forgetting what he had ſworne, and pleaſing himſelfe thus quietlie to be made the Lord of all thoſe Countries which were aſſigned to king *Edward*) conceiued ſtrong hope, not only to defeat him vtterly of all theſe Countries, but alſo to vex him at home in his owne kingdome. And for that purpoſe he furniſhed a ſtrong Nauie, with which he kept the Narrow Seas. But king *Edward* (to driue thoſe forces back againe) ſent his ſonne

ANNO 43

The French Nauie.

Iohn of Gant with an Armie, landeth at Callice, and marcheth to Burdeaux.

He beates the French King.

ANNO. 44

Another Armie ſent into France.

The Engliſh doe preuaile.

Diſſention cauſed the Engliſhmens ouerthrow.

ANNO. 45

ANNO. 46

A Parliamẽt.

A Subſidie granted.

The Clergie will grant none.

The Clergie diſgraced.

ANNO. 46

The Earle of Pembroke defeated, and taken at Sea.

Iohn of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter*, with an armie into *Callice*, who (to the terror and ſpoyle of the *Frenchmen*) marched from thence, vntill he came to *Burdeaux* to the Prince his Brother, without oppoſition, or reſiſtance; waſting, and hauoking in all places as he paſſed by, ſauing that he was once met with, and encountred by king *Charles*; who (being ſoundly beaten) was enforced to retire, and to giue free paſſage to the Duke.

King *Edward* (as much as in him lay) though hee beganne to grow old, yet he was very carefull of thoſe affaires. For as ſoone as his ſonne *Iohn* of *Gaunt* was gone out of *England:* hee ſent another Armie vnto Saint *Omers*, which was conducted by Sir *Robert Knowles*; who (marching through thoſe adiacent Countries) with fire and ſword depopulated it, yea almoſt vntill he came to the Citie of *Paris*. And then hee marched into the Earledome of *Angeou* where hee wonne the ſtrong Townes of *Vaas*, and *Ruylly*, and ſundrie others thereabout. But the *French* king being informed, that there was great diſſention in the *Engliſh* armie, betwixt Sir *Robert Knowles* and the Lords *Fitz-water*, and of *Grauntſon*; ruſhed vpon them ſodainly with an armie: and finding their mindes diuided, and their forces by great diſorder broken, preuailed againſt them, and ſlew about one thouſand *Engliſhmen*. Whereupon the ſaid Townes, which they had taken, were againe yeelded into the *French* kings hands. He alſo (following the good hap of his fawning Fortune) ſent another armie into the Prouince of *Guyan:* where the Prince was weakly aſſiſted, and his Townes, and Caſtles daily reuolted from him.

King *Edward* (being much perplexed with the common reports of his declining Fortune; and being reſolued to doe his beſt to preuent the worſt) aſſembled his high Court of Parliament at Weſtminſter: wherein (to ſupply his wants, aud to giue better ſtrength and furtherance to his *French* Warres) the Temporaltie with much cheerefulneſſe granted him a Subſidie of fifteene thouſand pounds: and the like ſumme hee requeſted of the Cleargie; who were contented to giue him faire words, but no monie. Whereat he was ſo much diſpleaſed, that wheras (at that time) the Biſhops and the Cleargie men, were chiefly honoured with all Places and Offices of Honour, and of Profit; and of Commaund; diſgracefully hee depriued them, and diſmiſſed them all, and placed more thankfull Subjects of the Laitie in their roomes.

King *Charles* had now beſieged the Towne of *Rochell* almoſt one whole yeare: For whoſe reliefe, and to remoue the ſiege, king *Edward* ſent the Earle of *Pembroke* with an armie to the Sea; but hee

was

was encountred, fought with, and put vnto the worſt, by *Henrie* the vſurper of *Caſtile*, who in fauour of the *French* king, and thankfully to requite his former loue, when hee aſſiſted him againſt king *Peter*, kept the narrow Seas with a ſtrong Fleet. In this fight, the Earle himſelfe, and one hundred and threeſcore others, were taken Priſoners; manie men were ſlaine, and the reſt who eſcaped returned altogether diſcomforted into *England*. And vpon the certaine report of this diſaſter, The Towne of *Rochell*, *Angoleſme*, *Xants*, and Saint *Iohns* of *Angley*, and diuers other Prouinces, were giuen vp vnto the *French* king.

The French King winnes Rochell, &c.

ANNO. 47

Sir *Iohn de Mountford* Duke of *Brittaine* (perceiuing that good ſucceſſe accompanied the *French* king in all his actions) beganne to feare, leſt (in the height of his proſperitie) he would attempt ſome quarrell againſt him. Wherefore Hee fortified his Countries, and then came into *England*, and offred his aſſiſtance to K. *Edward:* who forthwith leuied a ſtrong armie, and commited it to the gouernment of his ſonne the Duke of *Lancaſter*. Who (being accompanied with the Duke of *Brittaine*) landed at *Callice*, and with ſword and fire waſted the whole Countrie, vntill hee came to *Burdeaux:* where the Duke of *Lancaſter* found his brother the Prince of *Wales* exceeding ſicke; who made him Gouernour of all King *Edwards* Prouinces. And hauing ſeene all ſuch Noble men, as hee could command, to take their ſolemne oathes for the performance of their duties, and obedience to his brother the Duke; he ſailed into *England*. After whoſe arriuall, three parles for peace betwixt *England* and *France* were entertained, vpon the motion, and by the mediation of Pope *Gregorie* the eleuenth. But not one of them was made fruitfull with any fortunate ſucceſſe.

Iohn of Gant and the Duke of Brittaine, oppoſe themſelues againſt the French King.

They waſte the Countrey.

ANNO. 48

In the laſt yeare of King *Edwards* Raigne, in a Parliament holden at Weſtminſter, the King required a Subſidie from the Cleargie and from the Temporaltie of his Kingdome, towards the ſupporting of his warres. But the Lower houſe of that aſſembly complained grieuouſly againſt the Lord *Latimer*, chiefe Chamberlaine to the King, and of manie other of his Officers; for that they not only miſled the King in his old age, but alſo vnthriftily ſpent and conſumed the Treaſure of his Kingdome. Wherefore they refuſed to yeild vnto the kings demand, except thoſe euill Officers might bee diſplaced, and better men ſetled in their roomes. Which being by the king through the important perſwaſions of the Prince conſented vnto, he cheerefully obtained his demand.

Iohn of Gant is made Gouernour.

The ſicke Prince commeth into England.

ANNO. 49

ANNO. 50

The Lower houſe of the Parliament complaine vpon the Kings euill Officers.

1376.

And now approched the ends of theſe two famous, and moſt worthie Princes the Father and the Sonne. For the Prince of

The Blacke Prince dieth.

Wales died the eight day of *Iune*, in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand, three hundred, threescore and sixteene, when hee had liued fortie yeares; and lieth buried at *Canterburie*.

The King restoreth his euill Officers

And no sooner was hee dead, but king *Edward* (verie vnaduisedly, to his great dishonour, and to the great discontentment of his people) remoued from him such new Officers, as in the late High Court of Parliament were established and placed neere about him: and restored the Lord *Latimer*, and all the rest, to their former Offices, and places. And finding himselfe exceeding weake (by reason of his sharp, and grieuous sickenesse) he created his Nephew

Richard is Created Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall and Earle of Chester.

Richard (Sonne to the Prince deceased) Prince of *Wales*, Earle of *Chester*, and Duke of *Cornwall*; and committed the Regencie of his kingdome to his son *Iohn* of

King Edward dieth.

Gaunt Duke of *Lancaster*: & died, when he had raigned fiftie yeares, and somewhat more.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING RICHARD THE SECOND.

RICHARD the ſecond (being the Son and heire of the Blacke Prince, and aged eleuen yeares, and ſomewhat more) was crowned king of *England* in the yeare of our Lord God, one thouſand three hundred and ſeuentie ſeuen. ANNO. 1. 1377.

In the whole courſe of his euill Gouernment, he neglected his Nobilitie, and taxed his Subjects, to enable himſelfe to giue prodigally vnto his ill deſeruing Fauorites. Hee was too too reſolute in his follies, and refuſed to bee reproued or reformed. He alſo deſpiſed the ſage aduice, and good directions, of his wiſeſt and beſt Counſellors; and wholly plotted all his courſes, by the wicked and graceleſſe projects of his baſe companions, whom hee raiſed to more honourable Eſtates then befitted the meanes of their condition. So that they fell by their own weight; and he himſelfe (in the end) was enforced to endure the extremitie of his hard fortune. For being firſt diſgraced by his Couſin, *Henrie* of *Bullingbrooke* Duke of *Lancaſter*, and ſonne and heire to his Vncle *Iohn* of *Gaunt*; hee was at length by him (with the general conſent of a whole Parliament) depoſed from his Crowne, commited to Priſon, and afterwardes wic-

King Richards euill manners and bad Gouernment.

wickedly murdered, as in this diſcourſe of his diſordered Gouernment, more amply it ſhall appeare.

The Frenchmen burne diuers townes in England.

In the firſt yeare of king *Richards* Raigne, *Charles* the *French* king (preſuming much on his Minoritie, and being aided by the *Spaniards*) landed in the Southweſt, and in the South-eaſt parts of this kingdome, and ranſacked, and burnt the Townes of *Plymouth*, *Dartmouth*, *Portſmouth*, *Rye*, and ſome other Townes and Villages, coaſting vpon the Sea, and would haue done more miſchiefe, if by the kings Vncle *Edmund* of *Langly* Earle of *Cambridge*, and by the Earles of *Buckingham*, and of *Salisburie*, they had not beene fought with, and beaten to their ſhips.

Alexander Ramſeyes deſperate attempt: and ſucceſſe.

At the ſame time alſo (by the inſtigation of the *French* king) one *Alexander Ramſey*, an approued *Scottiſhman* at armes, with fortie of his Company, in the depth of the night, ſuddenly and deſperately ſcalled the wals of the Caſtle of *Barwicke*: and (finding the Captaine, and all his ſouldiers ſecurely ſleeping) he tooke it without blowes; and intended alſo to haue ſurpriſed the Towne. But the inhabitants, (hearing an extraordinarie noyſe and tumult in the Caſtle, and indeuouring to preuent a feared miſchiefe) hewed away the ſtayes of the Draw-bridge, on the Townes ſide: ſo that when the *Scots* did let fall the Draw-bridge, the chaines brake, and the Bridge fell into the Caſtle Ditch. By meanes whereof the *Scots* could not iſſue out, but were impriſoned by their owne Victorie.

This neceſſitie enforced them (as well as they were able) to fortifie the Caſtle, which on the kings behalfe, was ſoone beſieged, and aſſaulted by tenne thouſand men: who after many feates of Armes performed brauely by the aſſailants, and after much valor, with high courage, ſhewed by that ſmall number of valiant *Scots*, wonne the Caſtle, and receiued not one of them to mercie, but onely their Captaine *Alexander Ramſey*.

The Frenchmen land in England.

And not long after, the *Frenchmen* landed againe in *England*, and did much harme at *Douer*, *Wynchelſay*, *Haſtings*, and at *Graueſend*; and returned with their booties into *France*: But to preuent like future miſchiefes, and to reuenge thoſe injuries done to the King and his Realme by the *French* King: A Parliament was aſſembled at Weſtminſter. In which, a Subſidie of foure pence, for euery man, and for euery woman within this Kingdome (being aboue foureteene yeares of age) was granted to the King. The leuying whereof procured much heart-burning, which (not long after) brake forth, and endangered the whole State of the Common-weale. Yet with that monie great prouiſion was made, and an armie of eight thou-

ANNO. 3. *A Parliamẽt. This Taxe cauſed much trouble.*

An Armie ſent into France.

ſand

ſand men was ſent into *France*, vnder the command of *Thomas* of *Woodſtock* the Kings Vncle: who paſſing ouer the faire and great Riuers of *Soame*, *Oyſe*, and *Marne*, ſpoiled, and burnt all the Countries, and ranſomed the inhabitants, vntill he came into *Brittaine*; where he was receiued by the Duke *Iohn Mountford* with all friendly entertainment, and much joy.

ANNO. 4.

And now began a Rebellion in *England*, which was exceeding hazardous to the whole kingdome. For *Iohn Wall*, a factious Prieſt, perceiuing that the inferior ſort of the people much murmured and grudged at the payment of the aforeſaid Subſidie; by ſecret conferences in all places where he came, informed the Bondmen, Villaines, Slaues, and ſuch others, as were pinched with penury, and with want, that, by deſcent and parentage from *Adam*, all men were of one condition, and of equall worth: and that the Lawes of this kingdome were iniurious, and vniuſt, which did ſet ſo great a difference betwixt men, as to make ſome of them great Peeres, Potentates, and Lords, and in geuing to ſome others large authority and commaund, and in enlarging of great poſſeſſions, and ſtore of riches vnto ſome, and in commanding others to be baſe, ſeruile, beggars, and to enioy litle or nothing at all. And therefore (with traytrous reaſons) he perſwaded them, either by faire meanes, or by open inſurrection and ciuill warre, to prouide for their owne liberties, and to releeue their owne wants.

A great Rebellion in England.
Iohn Wal was the beginner of this Rebellion.
His wicked courſe in perſwading.

This lewd and damnable doctrine ſo infatuated and infected the Ruſticks from Shire to Shire, that (at length) it was ſpread in the Citie of *London*, where the meaneſt, and the baſeſt ſort (being a multitude, who egerly enuyed the proſperitie of the more worthie inhabitants, and greedily coueted to be enriched with their ſubſtance) were in great hope (by Rebellious mutening) to make vtter hauoke and ſpoyle of all things at their pleaſure. And (to effect that which they intended) ſuch as were moſt deſperatlie inclined among them, informed the headleſſe multitude in the Countries round about them, that if they would come thither and ioyne with them, the whole Citie of *London* ſhould be at their commaund. So that incredible numbers of brainſick, turbulent, and traytrous people prepared to flock thither, from *Kent*, *Eſſex*, *Suſſex*, *Bedfordſhire*, and from many other places.

Watt Tyler, Iohn Wall, Iack Straw and Iack Shepheard, Captaines in this Rebellion

Of this rude and raskall rout, *Wat Tylar* (who by his profeſſion was a Taylor) was made Captaine, to command the reſt: and the ſaid *Iohn Wall*, *Iack Straw*, *Iack Shepard*, and ſome others, were made chiefe directors, and their leaders. And (Stiling themſelues, *The Kings men, and the ſeruants of the Common-weale of* England, they

they marched towards *London*, beating downe the houſes, and rifling all the moueables of all ſuch as were profeſſors of the Law; and compelling all Knights and Gentlemen either to flye before their comming, or to be partakers in this vprore. They alſo ſent vnto the King who then lay in the Tower, requiring him to come and to ſpeake with them. Whereupon, the King (purpoſing, if hee might, to preuent all future miſchiefes which were threatned by this diſorder, and being accompanied with ſome of his wiſeſt and diſcreeteſt Lords, and Counſellors) went by water to *Grauеſend*. But when hee perceiued their vnruly madneſſe, and their rage and furie, and that all their numbers conſiſted of the baſeſt Swads, and of the Off-ſcumme of the People, hee feared to put himſelfe into their hands; and returned backe againe to the Tower.

How they paſſed towards London.

The King went to ſpeak with the Rebels, but dared not.

The next day they all came to *London*. But finding the Gates to be ſhut againſt them, and the Bridge to bee ſtrongly fortified: they intended firſt to kill all the inhabitants of *South-warke*; then to ſteale their goods; and laſt of al to conſume it vtterly with fire. But (to preuent that miſchiefe) a free entrance was giuen them into the Citie: where the greateſt men made them the beſt cheere, and fed them with their chiefeſt dainties; and by liberall gifts (in ſome ſort) pacified their furie and their rage.

They reſolue to burn South warke.

They enter into London.

Their kind entertainement pleaſeth them.

Then they entred into the *Sauoy* (which then belonged to *Iohn* of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter* the Kings Vncle) which houſe they rifled, burnt, and wickedly murdered all his Officers whom they found there. They alſo robbed all the Innes of Court; burnt their Law-bookes; and ſacrilegiouſly they ſtole in all Churches, and in all Religious Houſes; accounting their monſtrous theſts to bee no ſinne.

The Sauoy burned.

The Innes of Court rifled.

They commit ſacriledg.

They alſo releaſed out of all Priſons all manner of offenders whatſoeuer. Among ſundrie other outrages which they then committed, Their chiefeſt Ring-leader *Wat Tylar* ſent for his old Maſter, named *Richard Lion*, a worthie and graue Citizen, from whom (during the time of his ſeruice) he had receiued for a foule offence ſome ſmal correction: and (for a reuenge) without other iudgment, according to his graceleſſe command, his head was ſtriken off, and borne vpon a Launce before him in the ſtreets. They alſo robbed and ſpoiled all *Flemmings*, *Frenchmen*, *Lombards*, and other Forrainers inhabiting in or neere about the Citie of *London*. And at length (their numbers being encreaſed to threeſcore thouſand) they came to Saint *Katherines*, neere to the Kings lodging; where they remained that night. But ſuch were their hideous, beaſtly, and confuſed howlings, roarings, whoopings, and out-cries, that often

Priſoners enlarged.

Wat Tylars crueltie to his old maſter.

All ſtrangers are rifled.

60000.

The inciuilitie at Saint Katherines.

oftentimes the King and his Counſell feared greatly, leaſt by treacherie, and by treaſon, they had poſſeſſed themſelues of the Tower, in which he lay.

The King goeth to Mile-end-Greene to ſpeake with the Rebels.

The next morning they ſent againe to the King: entreating him to ſpeake with them at Mile-end-greene. But his Highnes was no ſooner gone thither, then *Wat Tilar*, with fortie more of his wicked and raſcall companions, preſſed in by violence at the Tower Gates, and robbed the Chambers and the lodgings there: not ſparing thoſe which did belong to the Princeſſe of *Wales* the Kings mother; whoſe head *Wat Tilar* brake, and in ſuch rude and beaſtly ſort behaued himſelfe towards her, that feare, and griefe encreaſed a ſickneſſe in her, which a long time after was dangerous to her life.

Wat Tylor entreth into the Tower. He robbeth the Kings Mother.

They alſo apprehended there *Simon*, a learned and a famous Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, and ſtroke off his head, becauſe vpon the firſt notice of *Iohn Wals* traiterous perſwaſions to the baſe raſcals, hee had committed him to a ſhort and to an eaſie impriſonment.

He beheadeth the Archbiſhop of Canterburie.

The King (aſſoone as he came to *Mile-end-greene*) demaunded what it was that with ſuch violence they required? They all with a mightie ſhout, and with a horrible confuſed crie, deſired that they might be *manumitted* and ſet free: and that their poſterities might not be Villaines, nor in bondage. The King graciouſly replied that he would not only grant (in moſt ample and large manner) their demand: and procure it to be eſtabliſhed by a Parliament: but gaue vnto them his banners for their ſafe-conduct to returne into their Countries, and to their owne houſes; and alſo pardoned them their rebellion and their offence.

Manumiſsion is required and promiſed.

The Kings Banners, and Pardon giuen to the Rebels.

The greater part of this rude multitude, (who were not made acquainted with anie further miſchiefe, which was ſecretly intended by the reſt) returned vnto *London*: where (with all conuenient ſpeed) by inſtruments in writing, The King cheerefully performed his promiſe: and thereupon great numbers of them, returned to their owne homes.

The greater number doe depart to their Houſes.

But *Wat Tilar*, and about twentie thouſand more of his wicked and graceleſſe conſorts (determining, if it was poſſible, firſt to ranſack, and then to burne, the Citie of *London*) kept manie of the Kings banners, and his pardons which were vnder the great ſeale; and came with all his remaining Rable into *Smithfield*.

Twenty thouſand would not depart. Wat Tylor comes into Smithfield.

When the King heard that this vnruly aſſembly was not vtterly diſſolued (to preuent in time ſuch miſchiefe as they might doe) being garded but with a ſmall ſtrength hee preſented himſelfe before

The King commeth to the Rebels.

fore the Rebels: and with all Princely courteſie, and kindneſſe, behaued himſelfe towards them: and perſwaded them to deſiſt from all violence, and from wrong; aſſuring them, that they ſhould not only obtaine their libertie, and pardons, but ſhould (vpon trial) find him to bee their good Lord, and gracious King. But the Arch-Traytour, *Wat Tilar*, with a frowning countenance, inſolent behauiour, and rough ſpeech, refuſed to accept of the Kings fauour: and proudly told him, that all theſe Troupes, and manie more thouſands, were readie at his beck, to doe and to execute whatſoeuer he would command: and (to the end that his pride might want no manner of audacious boldneſſe) he required the Kings Eſquire (who bare the ſword) to deliuer to him his dagger. But with a ſtout anſwere, and with a man-like courage hee refuſed ſo to doe, vntill he was by the King commanded to deliuer it. Now when the Traytor had thus gotten the dagger, he required to haue the ſword alſo: but the Eſquire told him plainly, that it was the Kings ſword; and ſhould not bee giuen to a Knaue. Whereat *Wat Tilar* was ſo extraordinarily incenſed, that (with an execrable and a vile oath) hee ſwore, that the Eſquire ſhould looſe his head before he himſelfe would either eat any meat, or drinke anie drinke. The Maior of *London* (named *Iohn Hadley*) who then attended on the King, diſdaining that a proud Traitor ſhould ſo confront, and braue the King, drew forth his ſword, and ſtrake him ſo ſound on the head, that he felled him to the ground: and (incontinently) he was ſlaine. Whereat, ſome hope was ſodenly conceiued, that the reſt of the Rebels would haue gone away. But they (being deſperatly reſolued to reuenge his death) according to their litle skil caſt themſelues in ſome order: ſo that now, euery minute of time threatned the deſtruction, and ſlaughter of manie men.

Wat Tylar refuſeth the Kings fauors

His proud ſpeech to the King.

He requireth his Sword-bearers dagger.

He requireth to haue the Kings ſword.

The Eſquires ſtout anſwere

The vow of Wat Tylar.

Wat Tylar ſlaine by the Maior of London.

For this cauſe that Citie giues the Sword in her Armes.

The Rebels prepare for reuenge.

The Londoners ſent an Armie into Smithfield.

The Kings Banners and Pardons are redeliuered.

They are torne in the Rebels view.

The Citizens of *London* being informed what had hapned: and purpoſing with all ſpeed to aide the King, and to free themſelues and the Citie from ruine and from ſpoile; ſent an Armie of eight thouſand men well armed, and well appointed, to the King: all which were quickly marſhalled and readie to giue the charge. But firſt the King required the Rebels to ſubmit themſelues, or elſe to deliuer vnto him ſuch of his Banners, and Free Pardons, and Manumiſſions, as they had gotten into their hands. But ſo farre off were they from being ſorrie or repentant for their Treaſons, that (in a proud brauerie, and in much ſcorne) they redeliuered them all vnto the King: Who cauſed them (in their open view) to be cancelled, and to bee torne in peeces. The doing whereof, ſo ſodainely daunted and quailed the heartes and courages of thoſe inſolent

ſolent and graceleſſe Rebels: that (when the King expected nothing but all violence to be executed by the ſword) they cowardly diſperſed themſelues, and ranne away; euery man (without any order or ſtaying) making all poſſible haſt and ſhift to ſaue themſelues. And thus vaniſhed this cloud, which threatned an outragious ſtorme of much danger, and miſchiefe, to the King and Common-weale.

The Rebels flye.

And the chiefeſt of thoſe malefactors (a thing which neuer faileth in ſuch tumultuous rebellions) were by their owne companions (to inſinuate grace and fauour with the King) deliuered into the hands of Iuſtice: who afterwardes, with fifteene hundred more (of the principall agents in this buſineſſe) were (vpon due enquiries, and iuſt conuictions, according to the Law) executed, and put to ſundrie tortures and deaths, in diuers places of this Realme.

The Captaines deliuered to the King by the Rebels themſelues.

Fifteene hundred Rebels Executed.

The King hauing thus pacified this Rebellion, and Vproare; married the Ladie *Anne* (daughter to the deceaſed Emperour *Charles* the fourth: and ſiſter vnto *Wenceſlaus* the Emperour who then raigned) and was made happie, through much proſperitie and peace, vntill the ninth Yeare of his Gouernment. And then hee ſummoned, and held his High Court of Parliament at Weſtminſter. In which he created his fifth and ſixth Vncles, *Edmund* of *Langly* (being then Earle of *Cambridge*) Duke of *Yorke*; and *Thomas* of *Woodſtock* (who was then Earle of *Buckingham*) Duke of *Gloceſter*. He alſo created his Couſin *Henrie* of *Bollingbrooke* (ſonne and heire apparant to his fourth Vncle *Iohn* of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter*) Earle of *Darbie*; and his Couſin *Edward Plantagenet*, (the ſonne and heire apparant of his ſaid Vncle *Edmund* of *Langley*) he created Earle of *Rutland*; and Sir *Iohn Holland* (brother to the Earle of *Kent*) was made Earle of *Huntingdon*; and *Thomas* Lord *Mowbray* was made Earle of *Nottingham*.

ANNO. 5. *King Richard marrieth.*

ANNO. 9. 1385. *A Parliamẽt*

Two of the Kings Vncles were created Dukes of Yorke and Gloceſter.

Henrie of Bullingbroke created Earle of Darby.

Other Earles created.

The King (whoſe affections were but greene, and who was eaſily ſeduced by ſuch as hee beſt loued) was at this time wholy directed, and counſelled into manie euill and vngodly courſes, by his vnworthie fauourites, *Michael De la Pole* (his Chauncellor) whom he created Duke of *Suffolck*; and by *Robert de Vere* (Earle of *Oxford*, and Marqueſſe of *Dublyn*,) whom hee made Duke of *Ireland*; and would haue made him King of that Countrie, if his Nobilitie would haue conſented thereunto.

King Richards euill Counſellours.

Affection without reaſon.

In the ſame Parliament, He cauſed his Couſin Sir *Roger Mortimer* Earle of *March* (who was the ſonne and heire of *Edmund Mortimer*, and of *Philip* his wife; who was the Daughter and heire of

Roger Mortymer Proclaimed heire Apparent.

the Kings third Vncle, *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*) to bee proclaimed heire apparant to his Crowne. But hee was long afterward ſlaine in *Ireland*, by ſuch Rebels as he endeuored to ſuppreſſe.

It is now to bee obſerued, that from henceforth the King reſpected not the ſage aduice and counſell of his graueſt, and moſt experienced Lords: and that he began careleſlely to neglect the Nobilitie, and his great Officers of his Kingdome: and that hee did all things prepoſterouſly, by the lewd and vnskilfull perſwaſions and directions of his two newly-created Dukes, of *Suffolke*, and of *Ireland*; and of *Alexander* then Archbiſhop of *Yorke*; and of *Robert Treſilian* his Chiefe Iuſtice. And as they all did lead him into many erros: ſo did they eſpecially exaſperat him (without iuſt cauſe) againſt his renowned, and truly noble Vncle *Thomas* of *Woouſtocke*, Duke of *Gloceſter*; and againſt the two Earles of *Warwick*, and of *Arondel*: which three hee intended to haue ſurprized at a Banquet in *London*; if *Nicholas Exton* (then Major of that Citie) would haue conſented thereunto. But becauſe his helpe then failed, and the King could not (at that time) obtaine his purpoſe: Hee reſolued to effect it at a more ſolemne meeting. For which cauſe principally, He ſummoned his High Court of Parliament: but the ſaid three Lords (vpon good information being jealous of ſuch vnkindly entertainment) repaired to the ſaid aſſembly; being ſtrongly garded by a multitude of valiant men at armes: by meanes whereof they ſecured their own libertie; and the vngodly project of the King, and of his wicked Counſellors, came to nought.

Now when this long Parliament produced nothing worthie to bee noted: *Michael de la Pole* (in the Kings behalfe) required a Tax of foure fifteenes, affirming that a leſſer gift could not ſupport his Eſtate, and maintaine ſuch warres as hee was likely to vndertake. But the Lords, and the Lower Houſe, not only refuſed to yeeld vnto this motion, but made a ſolemne declaration, That as the Kings of this Realme (for the better ordering, and preſeruing of their Eſtate, and Kingdome) might once in euery yeare aſſemble a Parliament: ſo by an ancient law, all the members of that great Counſell might, without leaue, breake vp the ſame aſſembly, and depart to their owne houſes, If the King abſented himſelfe from their companie for the ſpace of fortie dayes together; and that they would not proceed in any buſineſſe but depart, except the King would bee pleaſed perſonally to come among them, and to grace them with his preſence; and would alſo remoue *Michael de la Pole* from his Chancelorſhip, and commit him to ſtrait Priſon, becauſe he lewdly counſelled the King to attempt manie thinges, which

This Sir Roger Mortimer was ſlaine many yeares after.

ANNO. 10 1386.

The King neglecteth his Nobilitie and their Counſell.

Michaell de la Poole.

Robert de Vere.

Alexander Archbiſhop of Yorke.

Robert Treſilian.

The King intendeth the ſurpriſall of the Duke of Gloceſter, and of the Earles of Warwicke and of Arundell.

They come well garded to the Parliament.

Foure Fifteenes demanded.

It is denied.

A Parliamẽt may be held once a yeare.

In what caſe the Knights and Burgeſſes may depart.

The Houſes of Parlamẽts demands.

which were diſhonourable to himſelfe and hurtfull to the Common-weale.

The King (as a Lion) being ſterne, and ſcorning to yeeld vnto anie motion, although it tended to his owne ſafetie, and to the well-fare of his people; required, that fiftie ſelected men of that Aſſembly might be ſent vnto him, with whom he would conferre and agree vpon ſuch affaires, as they required to bee treated on. But the two houſes (denying to make anie concluſions priuatly, of ſuch affaires, and buſineſſes, as by a Parliament were to be diſputed publickly, and publickly to be eſtabliſhed) did ſend vnto him his ſaid Vncle *Thomas* of *Woodſtocke*, Duke of *Gloceſter*, and *Thomas Arundell* then Arch-biſhop of *Canterburie*: and none others. And they two (by expreſſe commandement) told the King, that by his abſence hee obſcured the light of iuſtice, and hindred the negotiations of the Common-weale, which (without his approbation and conſent) could not receiue anie ſtrength, or life: and that it he pleaſed not (vpon their humble intreatie) to come among them for the furthering, and for the finiſhing of ſuch waightie affaires as then they had in hand; they would depart to their owne houſes, becauſe he had abſented himſelfe from them (to their diſlike and diſcouragement) more than fortie dayes. They alſo craued with great ſubmiſſion and humilitie (as they were commaunded) to bee informed, by whom his Maieſties treaſure, belonging to the common-weale, was prodigally waſted and conſumed? and how it came to paſſe, that his large reuenewes could not ſuffice to maintaine and to ſupport his Eſtate and charge (ſeeing he had no wars) except his people muſt be taxed?

The King denies their ſuit

They will not yeeld to his command.

Two, and no more are ſent vnto the king

The King is told of his faults.

A reckoning is demaunded of the King.

This meſſage, and theſe demands, ſo wonderfully incenſed the King againſt both the houſes of his Parlament, that in great chollar and indignation hee deeply ſwore, that if he had foreknowne the ſaucie boldneſſe of his owne Subiects, (who as he ſuppoſed intended to riſe in Armes againſt him) hee would more willingly haue ſubmitted himſelfe to the King of *France*, and haue relied vpon his protection and defence, then thus be baffled, and be made ſeruile and an vnderling to thoſe, whom his Soueraigntie ought to command.

The King threatens the two Houſes of his Parlament.

The two Lords (with ſuch wonderfull grauitie and temperate mildneſſe) ſo effectually related to the King, the inueterated malice which the Kings of *France* had borne towards this Kingdome, and the kings which ruled it; and the loyall dutie, and obedience, which both the Lords, and alſo all other inferiour ſubiects of this Realme, did beare vnto him, as vnto their moſt gracious

A caueat to beware of France.

and good Lord, that (thereby) the greateſt flame of his fire was much quenched: and the kings paſſions beganne to bee more moderate and calme. So that he promiſed (within three dayes) to come among them; and did performe it accordingly, to the great ioy and contentment of all ſuch, as meant and wiſhed well.

Wiſe Counſell appeaſeth the Kings rage. The King commeth to the Parlamẽt

When they were all thus met together: *Michael de la Pole* was by the Lords accuſed, and found guiltie of manie notable and notorious couſonages, and deceats by him practiſed in the execution of his office; and for that he had purchaſed with the kings monie, in yearely reuenew, ſo much land as was worth one thouſand pounds and more; and had purloined (in bribes from the kings Subiects for expeditions, and by ſuch craftie and diſhoneſt trickes) the ſumme of twentie thouſand markes at the leaſt: for which offences all his lands were giuen to the king; together with a fine of twentie thouſand Markes: and himſelfe (being depriued of his Office of Chancellorſhip; and of his libertie, was committed vnto ſtraight Priſon: and *Thomas Arondell* then Archbiſhop of *Canterburie* (who was a wiſe and great Stateſ-man, and did employ his beſt endeuours for the wellfare and proſperitie of the Commonweale, without anie reſpect to his friends, or profit to himſelfe) was made Chancellor in his ſteed. In the ſame Parliament alſo thirteene perſons were elected, ſworne, and authoriſed (aſwell by the conſents of the Lords ſpiritual and temporal, and by the Commons, as alſo by the kings agreement thereunto publiſhed in writing vnder his great Seale) to examine all, or anie of his Maieſties officers, touching their behauiours, and their demeanors, in their ſeuerall roomes and places; and by whom, and how, both at home, and abroad, the kings treaſure had beene purloined, or miſpent; and to correct and puniſh all ſuch, as for iuſt tranſgreſſions they ſhould cenſure and condemne. And the king himſelfe tooke a publike oath, not to reuoke, nor to ſuppreſſe the ſaid Commiſſion, or their power, except a Parliament ſhould ioyne with him therein. And furthermore it was then enacted for a Law, that if anie man ſhould or did attempt, directly, or indirectly, to perſwade or to encourage the king, to infringe his promiſe, and to make breach of his ſaid oath, touching all, or anie of thoſe matters; hee ſhould for his firſt offence looſe all his Lands and Goods; and, for his ſecond offence, ſhould receiue triall, iudgment, & execution, as a Traytor to the king, and to his Crowne. And then a Subſidie of one halfe Fifteene was granted: If, by the ſaid Commiſſioners, and vpon their view of the kings Eſtate, it ſhould be thought needful for him to haue the ſame.

Thomas Arundel Archbiſhop of Canterburie is made Lord Chancellour.

Commiſſioners choſen in the Parliament to examine the Kings Officers.

The King ſweareth to allow it.

Diſſwaders to be puniſhed.

Halfe a fifteene conditionally granted.

No

No ſooner was this Parliament ended, but the king (by the perſwaſions of his euill Counſellors, and contrarie to his owne aſſent, promiſe, and oath) enlarged *Michael de la Pole*, and went with him, & *Robert De Vere* his Duke of *Ireland*, and with *Treſilian* his Chiefe Iuſtice, & manie of his Iudges, vnto *Nottingham*: wher they pronounced the kings Vncle, *Thomas* of *Woodſtocke* Duke of *Glocester*; and *Thomas Arondel* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*; the ſaid thirteene Commiſſioners; and manie others; to bee guiltie of High Treaſon: becauſe they had compelled the king, againſt his will, and conſcience, to ratifie the ſaid Commiſſion by his oath, and vnder his Great Scale. And then they went to *Couentrie*: where the ſaid Iudges, by an inſtrument in writing vnder their hands and ſeales, declared and confirmed their opinions (touching thoſe matters) to be agreeable, and conſonant to the Lawes of this Realme.

ANNO. 11
The King breaketh his promiſe and his oath.
Michael de la Pole is enlarged.
The Commiſſioners are pronounced Traytors.
Some Iudges doe ratifie the confirmation.

Now (for a while) muſt we leaue the king, and his Nobilitie, perplexed with manie euill conceits, each of the other, and ſtudying vpon the future euents of thoſe former concluſions: and will informe the Reader, that the time of Truce, betwixt *England* and *France*, was more then fully ended: and that the *French* king (to beget more broyles at home) ſent his Admirall into *Scotland*, with a thouſand Lords, knights, and Gentlemen, compleatly armed, and furniſhed with armour and with weapons, ſufficient for one thouſand more. But ſuch was their courſe and homely entertainment, that (vpon their firſt arriuall) the Common people abandoned their companie, making no manner of reckoning or accompt of them, nor relieuing of their wants with any thing which was needfull: but ſuffered them to be oppreſſed with as manie miſeries, as ſtrangers (being in a forraine, and in a poore Countrie) were able to endure; vntill they ioyned with the *Scottiſh* armie, which conſiſted of thirtie thouſand men. And with them, they entred into *England*, and did much harme. But when they were informed, that the king with eight thouſand men at armes, and threeſcore thouſand Archers, trauailed hard iournies to encounter with them: they then forſooke their ordinarie march, and paſſages, and went ouer the high and craggie Mountaines into *Wales*; where they committed manie vile, and wicked outrages, which turned little to their commoditie and gaine. But (in the meane time) king *Richard* with fire and ſword entred into *Scotland*: where (being vnreſiſted) he rifled and burnt the Townes, and Cities of *Eden-burgh*, Saint *Iohns*, *Eſtreuelinge*, *Dondée* and manie others; and returned home. And the *Scots* and *Frenchmen* retyred themſelues into *Scotland*: where (by reaſon of the late hauock, and ruines of that kingdome)

The French Lords, and Gentlemen, come to animate the Scots againſt England.
Their courſe entertainment.
They inuade England.
They make a troubleſome iournie into Wales.
King Richard with an army of 68000. men, entreth and ſpoileth Scotland.

The French and Scots return into that waſted Countrie.

The great miſerie of the Frenchmen.

How the Scots abuſed and wronged them.

the *French* Gallants were worne out with more neceſſities than before. For neither could or would the Townes or Countrey affoord them anie helpe; and the apparant hazard of their liues, by the violence of the poore diſtreſſed *Scots*, did altogether terrifie them from foraging abroad: And in the end (to adde vnto them greater affliction than all the reſt) the *Scots* compelled their meaneſt Gentlemen (without their horſes, and vnarmed, and pennileſſe) to returne into *France*; but kept (as pledges, or as pawnes) the Admirall, and ſuch as were honourable and great, vntill a full reckoning and an amends were made vnto them for all ſuch loſſe and damages, as (by the *Engliſh* armie) they had ſuſtained: affirming, That the *French* king had engaged *Scotland* in thoſe warres, not for themſelues, but to ſerue his owne turne, and in his ſeruice.

The King of France is enforced to redeeme his ſubiects.

The *French* king (though angred at the heart to be thus abuſed, yet finding none other meanes to enlarge the Admirall, and ſuch other great men as he had employed in thoſe Warres) ſent to the *Scots* as much money as was demanded: and thereupon, the *French* Admirall, Barons, and Gentry, were diſmiſſed, and returned home, hauing ſmall cauſe to bragge of their ſucceſſe, or of their entertainment in that journey.

The French King dreameth to conquer England

But the *French* king intending to relieue himſelfe, and to wreake his anger vpon *England*; reſolued to tranſport into this kingdome ſuch an Armie, as ſhould make an abſolute Conqueſt of this whole Land. And (to further his prouiſions therein) he impoſed manie grieuous and intolerable Taxes on his people; which were not leuied without much grudging, and great trouble. His whole Fleet conſiſted of more than twelue hundred ſaile of ſhippes. The number of his men was extraordinarie, and exceeding great: and ſuch were his prouiſions, that (among Chriſtian Princes) the like before was ſeldome ſeene or heard of.

1200. *ſhippes*

The great Armie of the Engliſh.

King *Richard* (who was verie valiant, and cared not for his approach) was readily prepared to giue him a welcome, with tenne thouſand gallant men at armes, and with more than one hundred thouſand fighting men: beſides ſuch as furniſhed his braue Nauie on the ſea; and beſides all ſuch, as for the defence of *Callice* were ſent thither.

Homo ponit diſponit autem Deus.

Experience teacheth vs, That the greateſt preparations for anie Expedition whatſoeuer, are made in vaine, if the thing to which they are intended and directed be not ſeconded by GODS fauor; as by this example it ſhall appeare. For when the *French* ſouldiors were departed from their owne dwellings, and trauelled diſorderedly towards the place where their ſhippes lay; they robbed and

The diſorders of the French ſouldiors.

ſpoi-

ſpoyled in all Prouinces, and in all Countries, through which they paſſed, with greater furie, and with more violence, than commonly the *Engliſh*, or anie other forraine enemie, accuſtomed to doe. So that the inhabitants of all places (ſubject to their crueltie and vnciuill outrage) were not onely (in the higheſt degree) diſpleaſed and diſcontented; but, by ſolemne imprecations, they curſed both them and the action likewiſe which they had in hand. And when thoſe looſe companions came into the *Low-Countries* where the Fleet was: ſuch were their wants of all things needfull to relieue them (by reaſon of their exceſſiue numbers, and by reaſon of the long abſence of the Duke of *Berrey*, the *French* kings vncle; who haſted not thither, nor liked well of that journey, although it altogether depended vpon his furtherance and preſence) that firſt they ſold their armor and their weapons; then their horſes: and laſt of all, their clothes, to prouide them meat. And when all thoſe means failed them, then they daily, yea hourely, committed ſuch violence and ſuch outrages in thoſe Countries without controlment, that they became hatefull and odious to the inhabitants: and (at length) the King their maſter (being vtterly diſcouraged by his ſaid vncle in this attempt) diſſolued his whole Armie. And thus (at one inſtant almoſt) he loſt both his honor and his hope, his money, and manie great things beſides.

The men and the enterpriſe are accurſed by the oppreſſed people.

The French Armie are in great miſerie.

They ſell all.

The Armie is diſſolued.

Parturiunt Montes, naſcitur ridiculus Mus.

And the end of thoſe his great deſignes affoords vs libertie to returne againe to our highly diſpleaſed and diſcontented King: whome his Lords (with all humilitie and ſubmiſſiue modeſtie) petitioned, and deſired, Newly to ratifie and to confirme his former promiſe and his Oath; and to thruſt from him *Michael de la Pole*, *Robert de Vere*, *Alexander* the lewd Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, *Robert Treſelian* his chiefe Iuſtice, and Sir *Nicholas Brembre* of *London* (who were generally tearmed to be the Kings wicked counſellors) and to baniſh out of the Land all thoſe ſoothing and flattering Iudges, who (to pleaſe the King) had ſubſcribed to the Nullitie of the ſaid Commiſſion, and had cenſured all ſuch as procured it, to be traitors to the King and to his Crowne.

The hiſtorie of the Kings euill gouernment at home is purſued.
The petition of the Nobilitie.
The Kings fiue euill Counſellors.

But the Kings affections were ſo ſtrongly riueted and annexed vnto thoſe fiue, and ſo confident was he, that both himſelfe, and they, and his ſaid Iudges, had done well in their proceedings at *Nottingham*, and at *Couentrie*, that in plaine tearmes hee denyed them their requeſt. And thereupon, the Lords (for their owne ſafetie, and to ſupport the peace, and to preuent the ruine and the deſtruction of the Commonweale) rayſed a ſtrong Armie of their friends, and of ſuch as vtterly diſliked thoſe diſorders in the King, and

The King denyeth their petition.

The Nobilitie rayſe an Armie.

and came to the Citie of *London*: being fully reſolued, that they themſelues would put in execution thoſe things, which the King (vpon their reaſonable and juſt requeſt and petition) had refuſed to yeeld vnto.

Wicked aduice giuen by the fiue wicked Counſellors.

But when thoſe fiue wicked Counſellors perceiued throughly what was purpoſed and meant; they then endeuoured to perſuade the King to ſurrender *Callice*, and all his other Lordſhips and Territories in *France*, to the *French* King, and confidently to relye vpon his aide: aſſuring him, That in ſo doing hee ſhould obtaine two glorious and pleaſing victories; the one, ouer all his Warres, by ſetling of his Eſtate in a perfect peace; and the other, ouer his Noblemen, who ſtriued (as lewdly they pretended) to make him ſubject and ſeruile to their wils.

The King would not hearken to that counſell.

And though, in all things beſides, their counſels were his Oracles; yet the King would not (at anie hand) hearken to this motion: and yet he was determined (by one meanes or other) to curbe and to abridge the ſtrength of his Nobilitie; who ſtriued to reforme ſuch things as were amiſſe. And (that his purpoſe might therein be effected) eſpecially he enquired of the Maior of *London*, How manie able armed men that Citie could conueniently ſet forth? who certified him, That fiftie thouſand ſuch might eaſily, and in a ſhort time, be prepared and ſpared there. Whereupon the King commaunded him, with all expedition, to ſend him ſuch an Armie: which forthwith he endeuoured to performe.

The King requireth an Armie from the Londoners.

The graue Citizens of London doe reſiſt their vnwiſe Maior.

But when the graueſt and the wiſeſt Citizens had maturely conſidered of this buſineſſe; they interrupted his proceedings, and told the King, That they might not be employed in warlike manner againſt his Lords, who for his Majeſtie and Honor, and to preſerue his Kingdome from ruine and from deſtruction, had vſed all faithfull and good meanes to remoue from his Perſon thoſe his wicked Counſellors; who onely (for their owne commoditie and aduancement) had hazarded the whole eſtate of his Kingdome, by aduiſing and by counſelling of him to rule and to gouerne vnaduiſedly, according to their pleaſures, and after their lewd and lawleſſe wills.

The Kings gentle meſſage to the Lords.

The King perceiuing by this Meſſage, that his inferiour ſubjects would (in thoſe Troubles) adhere vnto the Lords; ſeemed a little to reſtraine his violent affections: and did informe the Lords, That he would aſſemble his High Court of Parliament; in which, thoſe fiue fauorites of his ſhould be anſwerable to all Objections whatſoeuer, and ſhould (if they were conuicted) receiue ſuch puniſhment, as ſhould (by the publike cenſure of the Houſe) be inflicted on them.

This

This vnexpected and good Meſſage ſo throughly contented the Barons, that preſently they diſfurniſhed themſelues of all their warlike Forces, and were moſt thankfull for it to the King. But as the Winde, ſo was he ſuddainely changed: For in ſtead of performing what hee had promiſed; hee freely licenced *Robert de Vere*, Duke of *Ireland*, to leuie fiue thouſand men for his owne particular guard and defence. And the Barons perceiuing thereby, that it was high time for them to looke vnto their owne ſafetie, with incredible celeritie and expedition renewed their ſtrength; and (vpon the ſuddaine) ſo ſtrongly enuironed the ſaid Duke betwixt their armie and the Riuer of *Thames*, that they compelled him (for the preſeruation of his life) by ſwimming on horſebacke, to paſſe ouer vnto the other ſide: from whence he preſently fled into *France*; in which Kingdome (about fiue yeares after, as he hunted) hee was ſlaine by a wilde Boare.

The Lords doe caſſier their armie.
The King performes not his promiſe.
He licenceth the Duke of Ireland to raiſe 5000 men to defend himſelfe.
The Lords do renew their armie.
The Duke ſwimmes on horſebacke ouer the Thames.
He is ſlaine by a wilde Boare.

But ſuch was the Kings affection towards him whileſt he liued, that he cauſed his dead carkaſſe to be embalmed, and to be brought into *England*; and to be apparrelled in princely Ornaments and Robes: His necke to be compaſſed with a maſſie chayne of Gold, his fingers to be couered with Rings, and his Funerals to be ſolemnized with all magnificence and pompe.

How the King honored his dead corps.

Now when the ſaid Duke of *Ireland* was compelled by ſwimming on horſebacke (as you haue heard) to ſaue himſelfe, and was fled into *France*; the Barons executed ſome of his chiefeſt conſorts for an example vnto others, but ſuffered the multitude to diſperſe themſelues, and required them (with all ſpeed) to repaire to their owne houſes. But the ſaid Barons conducted their owne armie to *London*; where they were receiued with much joy. And ſuch was the bountifull entertainment which they found there, that they might thereby aſſure themſelues of their heartie welcome.

Some of the ſaid Dukes conſorts executed.
The Barons armie is with ioy receiued into London.

The King (who kept his Court in the Tower of *London*) was well pleaſed to admit of a conference with the Lords. In which it was concluded, That a Parliament ſhould be ſummoned: Which being orderly aſſembled, the Kings wicked Counſellors, and ſome of the aforeſaid Iudges were required perſonally to appeare. But they came not thither: yet were they (after great debating and diſputing of that buſineſſe) condemned of high Treaſon to the King and to the Commonweale. And not long after, Sir *Iohn* Earle of *Saliſburie*, and Sir *Nicholas Brembre* loſt their heads; and *Robert Treſilian* the chiefe Iuſtice was hanged at *Tiborne*: and the reſt of thoſe Iudges had beene hanged in like ſort, if (vpon the importunate and vnceſſant requeſt of the Queene) their liues had not beene redeemed by

A Parliament.

The fiue wicked Counſellors and the Iudges condemned as Traitors.

Execution.

Baniſhment.

by their baniſhment. And thus were the threatnings of ciuil wars, conuerted into ſome aſſurance of proſperitie and of peace.

ANNO. 12 *The Scots do inuade.*

But the next yeare following, the *Scots* inuaded this realme; and did much harme: againſt whom great preparations were made by the King; who reſolued to recompence his owne damage, by iuſt and ſeuere reuenge.

A Truce betwixt England, France and Scotland for ſeuen yeares.

But the wiſdome and diſcretion of manie great Eſtates, were ſuch, that a Truce was concluded to endure for three yeares, betwixt *England*, *France* and *Scotland*, which ſhortly after was enlarged for foure yeares more.

ANNO. 13 *Iohn of Gant goeth with an Armie into Spaine.*

So that now, all matters betwixt thoſe three Kingdomes and their Kings, being bleſſed with tranquilitie, and with peace: the Kings fourth Vncle, *Iohn* of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter*, was ſuffered by the King to leuie a ſtrong Armie, which hee tranſported into *Spaine* where he demanded his right to the Kingdome of *Caſtile*, in the behalfe of *Conſtance* his wife; who was the eldeſt daughter of *Peter*, the depoſed and ſlaine king.

ANNO. 14 *How his braue attempts ſucceeded there. His two Daughters are married to the Kings of Spaine, and of Portingall.*

In thoſe Warres; the Duke and his Armie performed manie honourable ſeruices: and (with the aſſiſtance of the king of *Portugale*) ſo preuailed, that, to conclude a ſued for peace, the king of *Spaine* married with *Conſtance*, the Dukes eldeſt daughter by his ſaid wife; and gaue vnto him eight Waggons loaden with maſſie Gold; and ſecured him, and his wife, of the yearely payment of ten thouſand Markes, during both their liues. And then the Duke went into *Portugale*, where he married *Anne* his yonger daughter to the king of that Countrie; and then returned into *England* with great riches, and much honour.

ANNO. 16 *Lawes againſt the Popes vſurped Authoritie.*

This time of peace betwixt *England*, & other nations, bred ſome quarrelling betwixt the king and the Pope; who vſurped too too much authoritie and iuriſdiction within this Realme. Wherefore (to preuent ſuch miſchiefes as this intolerable ſufferance mght beget) in a Parliament (vpon graue and great aduiſe) it was enacted, That the Popes pretended authoritie within this kingdom ſhould ceaſe and be determined: and that no appeale for anie matter, or cauſe whatſoeuer, ſhould from thenceforth bee made to the See of *Rome*; vpon the penaltie of a *premunire*, which did extend to perpetuall impriſonment, and to the forfeiture of the Lands and goods of ſuch, as (contrarie to that law) preſumed to offend.

ANNO. 17

In the ſeuenteenth yeare of king *Richards* Raigne, his faire and vertuous Queene *Anne* died.

ANNO. 19

And about two yeares after, the king married the Ladie *Iſabel*, daughter to the *French* king *Charles* the ſixth. By reaſon whereof

a peace was concluded betwixt thoſe two kings, to endure for thirtie yeares. And king *Richard* (being too kind, but too little aduiſed) of his owne accord, and free will, ſurrendred and gaue vp to the Duke of *Brittaine*, the ſtrong Towne and Caſtle of *Breſt*: which verie much gricued and diſcontented his Nobilitie, eſpecially his Vncle *Thomas* of *Woodſtocke* Duke of *Gloceſter*; who told him plainly, that it was not conuenient, that (without blowes with the ſaid Duke of *Brittaine*) hee ſhould haue departed with that ſtrong Towne and Caſtle, which his anceſtors had wonne with the expence of much bloud. Whereat the king was ſo much diſpleaſed, that in his heart hee cauſeleſſely vowed ſeuere reuenge: and in this his haſtie paſſion he was abuſed, and furthered by ſuch of his Fauourites as enuied the eſtate, the vertues, and honour of the Duke; cauſing ſtrangers to informe the king (flateringly, and malitiouſly) that diuers of the Princes Electors intended to haue made him Emperor, had not ſome others of them gainſaid it, and alleadged that he was altogether vnfit, to gouerne the diſperſed Segniories, and Dominions of the Empire; who could not rule and command his owne ſubiects at home. The greedie deſire which king *Richard* had, to bee magnified, and made great, by being dignified with the name and power of the Empire: and his ſtrong reliance vpon the vntrue report, which was ſuggeſted vnto him by ſuch as only endeuoured to whet his anger againſt his Lords; armed him with ſubtletie, and with a heartie deſire to circumuent his Barons; though it were done with the breach of his oath, and with the ſhipwracke of his honour. So that (pretending much loue and fauour towards them: but eſpecially to the Duke of *Gloceſter* his Vncle, and to the two Earles of *Arondell* and *Warwicke*) hee cauſed them to be apprehended, when (as they imagined) they had leaſt cauſe to feare. And hauing ſo done, he aſſembled his High Court of Parliament. In which, his baſeſt and his groſſeſt flatterer, the ſpeaker of the Lower Houſe, named Sir *Iohn Buſh*, who was a man of a moſt proud, inſolent, and aſpiring ſpirit, irreligiouſly, profanely, and diſhoneſtly (in a formall and in a tedious ſpeech) attributed vnto the King the higheſt titles of diuine honour: and therefore condemned (almoſt to Hell) all ſuch, as traiterouſly had conſpired againſt his Maieſtie. Among whom hee particularly impeached *Thomas*, Lord Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, ſitting next vnto the King: who made no anſwere at all thereto, becauſe the King himſelfe (vnder pretence of more then ordinarie loue and fauour) had priuatly enioyned him vnto ſilence, and vnto future abſence from that Aſſembly: promiſing, and proteſting, that nothing ſhould

King Richard marrieth the French kings daughter.
A Peace for thirtie yeares.
Breſt is yeelded vp.
The Duke of Gloceſter reproues the King for it.
The death of the Duke of Gloceſter the Kings Vncle is plotted.
A Machauillian policie
Ambition makes euill Princes confident, that their Vertues doe deſerue much.
The King intendeth the deſtruction of his Barrons: being gulled with an vntrue report.
Certaine Lords ſurpriſed.
A Parliamẽt
A groſſe flattering Speaker.
The Archbiſhop of Canterburie is accuſed of Treaſon.
How the king wronged the Archbiſhop.

ſhould be attempted, or done againſt him by anie meanes. Yet notwithſtanding (for want of his preſence, and of his anſwere to the ſaid vntrue obiections) he was (with the Kings conſent) baniſhed this Realme. And the two Earles of *Arundell*, and of *Warwicke*, were alſo condemned of High Treaſon: and ſhortly after, the former of thoſe two loſt his head. And ſo had *Thomas Beauchamp* Earle of *Warwicke*, if (by his humble confeſſion of thinges vntrue, and vpon his great ſubmiſſion ſteeped in teares, and much ſorrow) he had not procured a mitigation of his puniſhment. For hee was confined into the Ile of *Wight*: where (contrarie to the Kings promiſe) hee endured ſuch miſerie, and was ſo grieuouſly oppreſſed, with the griefe which hee ſuſtained by reaſon of his great wants; that he quickly died.

He is baniſhed.

Warwicke, and Arundell are condemned as Traytors.

Arundell is beheaded.

Salisburie is baniſhed, and dieth miſerably.

But the good Duke of *Gloceſter* the Kings Vncle, (being vnſentenced) was ſent to *Callice*: where (according to the Kings directions) *Thomas Mowbray* Earle of *Nottingham* (betwixt two featherbeds) cauſed him to be ſmothered to death; for which good ſeruice, he was afterwards made a Duke.

The Duke of Gloceſter murdered at Callice, by Thomas Mowbray Earle of Nottingham.

This being done, the King procured the Vpper and the Lower Houſes of Parliament, to make an example, without precedent, by granting full and abſolute authoritie vnto ſix or eight, ſuch perſons as he ſhould nominate, finally to determine all ſuch cauſes (and to enact them) as then remained vndiſcuſſed; and not ended there. This act not only made him proud: but (to ſerue his preſent turnes) he nominated for that purpoſe, ſuch, as (to pleaſe his humour) decreed manie thinges which were diſhonourable to the King, and hurtfull to the Common-weale.

A weake parliament, to grant ſuch an vnreaſonable Commiſsion.

The King alſo, to pleaſe his Guard (who for the moſt part were *Cheſhire* men of ordinarie parentage, and of baſe birth) cauſed himſelfe (verie ridiculouſly) to bee ſtiled *Prince of Cheſhire*: as if it had beene more honourable for him to be ſuch a Prince, then to be the King and Monarch of the whole Realme.

The King will be called Prince of Cheſhire.

And (to adde more ſtrength and liking vnto thoſe thinges which then were done amiſſe) the King beſtowed manie honorable dignities vpon ſome of his beſt liked Noble-men.

So that his Couſin *Henrie* of *Bullingbrooke* (ſonne and heire apparant to the Kings fourth Vncle *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaſter*, and who was at that time Earle of *Darby*) was by him created Duk of *Hartford*: his Couſin *Edward Plantagenet*, being Earle of *Rutland*, was created Duke of *Aubemarle*: and *Thomas Mowbray*, Earle of *Nottingham*, was made Marſhall of *England*, and Duke of *Norfolke*: and the Earle of *Kent*, was created Duke of *Surrie*: and

Creation of Noblemen.

Sir

Sir *Iohn Holland* his brother, being Earle of *Huntington*, was made Duke of *Exeter*: and the Earle of *Somerſet* was created Marqueſſe *Dorſet*: and the Lord *Spencer*, was made Earle of *Gloceſter*: the Lord *Neuil* Earle of *Weſtmerland*: the Lord *William Scrope* Earle of *Wilſhire*: and the Lord *Percie* was created Earle of *Worceſter*: and vpon all theſe, he beſtowed many great Lordſhips, Mannors, and large reuenewes, which of late did belong to his murdred vncle *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, ſometimes Duke of *Gloceſter*; and vnto the ſaid two deceaſed Earles of *Arundell*, and of *Warwicke*.

He alſo granted his free pardon to all offendors whatſoeuer: fifteene only excepted whom he would not nominate. By which vngodly and craftie pollicie, hee hedged his Nobilitie round about with contiuuall feare; and made them moſt ſeruile, and moſt baſe. For if anie one of them in anie high meaſure had offended him, hee would then pronounce him to bee one of thoſe fifteene, who were excepted out of his free, and generall pardon; and then would put his life vpon triall, for ſuppoſed and ſurmiſed Treaſon.

A craftie Pardon, which inabled the King to much miſchiefe.

ANNO. 22

It happned about this time, that *Henrie Bullinbrooke* Duke of *Hartford*, and Couſin to the King, was much grieued daily to heare ſuch ſlanderous reports, as were too commonly noyſed of the King; partly vpon his too much libertie, which beyond the Lawes beechallenged in the courſe of his Gouernment; and partly by reaſon of his vniuſt, and vnskilfull managing of the weightie affaires, and buſineſſes of his Kingdome. And though affection (by meanes of his neere conſanguinitie with the King) moued him heartily to wiſh for, and to deſire, a preſent reformation of thoſe euills: yet could hee not better deuiſe, how hee might effect that which hee ſo much craued, than by making vſe of his great familiaritie, and acquaintance with *Thomas Mowbray* Duke of *Norfolke*; who had an extraordinarie intereſt in the Kings fauour. Whereupon (very priuately, and in great ſecrecie, as vnto a moſt kind and louing friend) he imparted the cauſes of his griefe in that behalfe vnto the ſaid Duke: and earneſtly entreated him (vpon fit opportunitie, and at his leaſure, and as from himſelfe) ſeriouſly to informe the King of the ſaid reports; and (withall) to entreate his Highneſſe, to extend more grace, and more fauour, to thoſe Lords, who (for his honour, and the Kingdomes good) had both incurred his diſpleaſure, and alſo were (with too much extremitie) condemned of High Treaſon.

The Kings Couſin, deſireth reformation in the King, by his friend Tho. Mowbray Duke of Norfolke, whom the King did fauour extraordinarily.

But the Duke of *Norfolke* (who more reſpected his owne preferment, than the kings honour, and ſtrongly preſumed that hee had

A falſe, and an vnfaithfull friend.

had now gotten fit meanes to advance himſelfe, by his friends fall) related all his ſayings to the King, in the rudeſt, and moſt vnciuill maner which he could deuiſe: and added manie things to his relation, which were vntrue, and neuer ſpoken; thereby aggrauating an offence, which was not committed, and incenſing the king with high indignation to vow reuenge and puniſhment, when the Duke of *Hartfords* fidelitie, and loyall ſeruice, deſerued great thankes and a good reward.

The King is angrie. The Duke of Hartford anſwereth for himſelfe.

The king was ſo much vexed and enraged by meanes of theſe tidinges, that nothing could giue him anie contentment in anie thing: vntill his Coulin the Duke had made his anſwere therevnto. And, being ſharply preſſed thereunto by the king: Such things, as in that ſecret, and friendly manner, hee had deſired might bee reformed, he both confeſſed and iuſtified. But the vntrue ſuggeſtions, which falſly and malitiouſly were added; he denied. And to cleare himſelfe of them, hee challenged the Duke of *Norfolke* to a ſingle Combate: which was by him accepted; and conſented vnto by the king. But when the appointed day was come, and the two Dukes were within the Liſts, readily prepared, and aduanced themſelues each toward the other, for the encounter: The King would not permit them to proceed; but baniſhed the Duke of *Norfolke* for euer, who ſhortly after died at *Venice*; and his Couſin, the Duke of *Hartford*, hee exiled for ſix yeares.

The Combat challenged and accepted.

Baniſhment.

King Charles the ſixt.

Whereupon Hee ſayled into *France*; and was honourably receiued by King *Charles* the ſixth, Father to the Queene of *England*, King *Richards* wife: who ſo effectually iuſtified him in his ſaid actions and doings, and ſo highly affected his Deſcent, his Perſonage, his Wiſdome, his Vertues, and his right Noble Conditions, that he would haue beſtowed vpon him in marriage the Daughter of his Vncle, the Duke of *Berrie*, if his Sonne-in-law King *Richard* (by extraordinarie ſollicitations, and by vnuſuall meanes had not beene the hinderer thereof.

Iohn of Gant dieth.

Not long after this Dukes Baniſhment; his father *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaſter* & Vncle to the king, died: the deſcent of which Dutchie, would haue made the ſaid Duke a potent Prince. But the king (refreſhing his humours with new practiſes of ſecret reuenge, and that hee might keepe him lowe) vniuſtly ſeized vpon all the Lordſhips, and Poſſeſſions, belonging to that Dutchie, and vpon all the moueables of his ſaid deceaſed Vncle, and ſhared and diſtributed them among his Sycophants, and wicked Counſellours. Which tyrannous, and wrongful dealing, ſo much diſpleaſed his

The King wrongeth Henrie the new Duke of Lancaſter.

his vncle the Duke of *Yorke*, and his couſin the Duke of *Aumarle*, that preſently they left the Kings Court, and retyred themſelues to their owne houſes.

At this time King *Richard* was wholly miſ-led, and lewdly directed in all his doings and negotiations by his principall fauourites, Sir *William Scrope* Earle of *Wilſhire*, Sir *Iohn Buſhe*, Sir *Iames Bagot*, and Sir *Henrie Greene*: by whoſe aduice (without the conſent of his priuie Counſellors of Eſtate) he leuied a ſtrong Armie; farmed to them, for certaine yeares, his whole Kingdome, and all his Reuenues belonging thereunto; and ſayled into *Ireland*: where hee behaued himſelfe ſo valiantly, that hee ſubdued that rebelling Nation; and by his ſeueritie, he compelled them to be willing to obey.

Edmund of Langley and Edward his ſonne.

More wicked Counſellers to the King.

Scrope,

Buſhe,

Bagot,

Greene.

The King farmeth his Kingdome, and ſayleth into Ireland.

But in his abſence, his baniſhed couſin, *Henrie* of *Bullingbroke*, Duke of *Hartford* and of *Lancaſter*, together with his old friend and exiled companion, *Thomas* Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*; returned into *England*, to make clayme to his Duchie of *Lancaſter*. His firſt landing was in the North: where, ſuch was the ſingular loue and the great affection of the Noble men and of the common ſort of people towards him, partly in regard of his nobleneſſe and vertues, and partly in regard of the Kings diſordered courſes in his gouernment; that they all (with extraordinarie chearefulneſſe and alacritie) flocked vnto him, well armed, and in great troupes: So that within few dayes his companies were encreaſed to a ſtrong Armie; with which hee marched peaceably, and in good order, vnto *London*, and was receiued, entertained, and feaſted there, with much honour and great joy. And from thence he went into the Weſterne parts of this Kingdome; the people (in all places where hee came) being heartily gladded, with much contentment, with his doings.

The Iourney coſt him his Crowne and his life.

ANNO 23

The Duke of Lancaſter landeth in England.

His companies encreaſe to a ſtrong Armie.

He is receiued into London.

He goeth into the W. ſt.

But in the meane time, King *Richard* (who was returned, and had quickly leuied great forces, which hee conducted againſt the Duke) perceiuing that euerie day his ſubjects fled from him, and voluntarily offered their ſeruice to the Duke; and being certainely informed, that Sir *William Scrope* Earle of *Wilſhire*, Sir *Iohn Buſhe*, and Sir *Henrie Greene* (three of his wicked Counſellors, and vpon whome he moſt of all relyed) were taken, and had loſt their heads: deſpairing of anie ſafetie to be gained by force and violence; of his owne accord hee came vnto his couſin the Duke of *Lancaſter*, confeſſed publikely his owne inſufficiencie and weakeneſſe to rule and to gouerne well, prayſed the Dukes rare and ſingular vertues, and his abſolute worthineſſe to be a King, and proffered to make him

King Richard returneth.

He rayſeth an Armie: which ſhrinketh daily.

Three of the wicked Counſellors were beheaded.

The Kings ſubmiſſion and offers to the Duke.

an abſolute Surrender of his whole Kingdome, if hee would accept thereof.

A faint refuſall.

But the Duke (though hee much affected the wearing of a Crowne; yet, becauſe hee hoped, that the fauour of the Nobilitie, Gentrie, and of the common People, would freely caſt that burthen and Dignitie vpon him, with greater ſafetie, and aſſurance of continuance) refuſed to accept thereof: and proteſting (with manie pleaſing ſpeeches) That he onely deſired to enioy his owne Patrimonie, and to reforme ſuch things as were amiſſe; hee cauſed the King (with verie honourable and reſpectiue attendance) to be guarded to the Tower of *London*: and then hee aſſembled a Parliament; in which (among ſundrie other things) were publikely propoſed theſe enſuing Articles, concerning the euill Gouernment of the King.

The King is ſent to the Tower.

The Duke ſummoneth a Parliament

Articles propoſed in Parliament againſt the King.

1. *INprimis, That hee would not permit the ſaid Duke of Hartford (who was ſo much wronged for his good aduice and counſell touching the Kings Gouernment) to fight the Combate againſt the falſely-accuſing Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolke, and yet baniſhed him vniuſtly for ſix yeares.*
2. *Item, That albeit vnder the Great Seale of his Kingdome he had licenced the ſaid Duke of Hartford, at his departure out of England, to make his Atturney to proceed for him in his cauſes of Law: yet (hee being gone) the King would not permit anie man to deale for him in his abſence.*
3. *Item, That verie vncharitably he prohibited all his Nobilitie, and all others, to be ſutors vnto him for the ſaid Duke of Hartfords returne from his vniuſt baniſhment, vpon the forfeiture of their liues and goods.*
4. *Item, That after the death of Iohn of Gaunt, the Kings vncle, father to the ſaid Duke, and Duke of Lancaſter, hee had wrongfully ſeized into his hands all his moueables whatſoeuer,*

ſoeuer, and had diuided and ſhared them among his graceleſſe, and wicked Counſellors, and had alſo (by like iniuſtice) ſeized all the poſſeſſions of the ſaid Duchie of Lancaſter (which rightfully did belong to the ſaid Duke of Hartford) into his owne hands, and kept the profits thereof to his owne vſe.

5. *Item, that colourably, as a good friend to Thomas Arundell Archbiſhop of Canterburie (who was falſly accuſed of high treaſon to the King, as he ſat next to him in the higher houſe of Parliament) hee perſuaded the ſaid Archbiſhop to make no anſwer at all in defence of the ſaid accuſation; nor repaire anie more to the ſame houſe: proteſting, that neither the ſaid accuſation, nor his ſilence, nor his abſence, ſhould be hurtfull or preiudiciall vnto him: and yet baniſhed him out of the Realme; not hauing examined the ſaid ſurmiſed treaſon.*

6. *Item, that whereas his Chancellour had refuſed (in an vniuſt matter) to grant a prohibition vnder the great Seale of England; the King himſelfe (to peruert the due courſe of Juſtice and of right) granted the ſaid prohibition vnder his priuie ſeale, and ſtraitly required, that it ſhould be executed, and obeyed.*

7. *Item, that moſt vnnaturally and cruelly hee had procured Thomas Mowbray to ſmother to death, betwixt two fetherbeds, the Kings moſt noble and moſt renowned vncle Thomas of Woodſtock, Duke of Gloceſter, when (wrongfully, and without anie good cauſe) hee was a priſoner at Callice: and afterwards dignified the ſaid murderer; firſt, with the Earldome of Nottingham; then, with the Office of the Marſhall generall of England: and laſt of all, made him Duke of Norfolk; he being altogether vnworthie of ſo great honor.*

8. *Item, that the King (to further his laſt Expedition for Ireland) without law & without iuſtice, tooke from the Clergie and many Religious houſes, great ſtore of monie, plate, iewels, and rich ornaments; not hauing the owners conſent ſo to doe.*

9 Item, that in the ſame iournie, without the approbation of his Counſell of Eſtate, hee carried with him into Ireland the plate, and rich iewels, belonging to the Crowne, which might haue tended to the great inpouerijſhment of this Realme.

10 Item, that in euerie Shire he had ſecret Intelligencers, vpon whoſe bare information that ane man had repined at the Kings bad gouernement, the partie ſo accuſed (without examination or triall) was enforced to procure his pardon by the payment of a grieuous fine.

11 Item, that by the lewd aduiſe of his wicked Counſellours, hee had deuiſed manie ſubtle and craftie Oathes, by meanes whereof manie of his honeſt Subiects had beene vndone.

12 Item, that by the like aduiſe, and counſell, he procured Ruffians, and deſperate companions, to accuſe rich (but weake) men, of ſundrie falſly-ſuppoſed crimes, and imagined offences, and by meanes thereof, enforced them to redeeme the combate with much monie.

13 Item, that he gaue large gifts vnto wicked and lewd companions, who (malitiouſly to aduance their owne Eſtates) animated him againſt diuers of his Barons, who only deſired a good reformation of his euill gouernment; and impoſed diuers Taxes vpon his people, to enrich them.

14 Item, that hee had procured ſuch Records to bee cancelled, and imbeſelled, as teſtified his extortions, and his oppreſsions vniuſtly impoſed vpon his people.

15 Item, that he had oftentimes ſaid, that the Lawes of his Kingdome were in his owne breaſt: and that (vpon this opinion) hee had put to death manie of his noble men, and ſome of his inferiour ſubiects without iuſt cauſe.

16 Item, that moſt of his writings, and letters vnto foraigne Princes, and Eſtates, were ſo craftie, ambiguous, doubtfull, and vncertaine; that they could not relie confidently vpon anie thing which he had written.

17 *Item, that in his Parliament holden in the one and twentieth yeare of his Raigne, his Cheſhire Guard (who onely were permitted and ſuffered to weare weapons) committed many Robberies, and Murders, and yet not one of them was puniſhed or reproued for the ſame.*

18 *Item, that (to inſinuate fauour with thoſe looſe, and lewd companions) the King had baſely, and fondly, diſhonoured his High Eſtate and Soueraigntie, by entitling himſelfe* The Prince of Cheſhire.

19 *Item, that whereas, in the ſame Parliament, ſundrie great Lords intended liberally, and dutifully to haue ſpoken of ſuch things as were not well ordered, to the end that they might haue beene reformed: the King in ſuch ſort threatned them, that for feare of enſuing dangers they held themſelues ſilent, and ſpake not at all.*

20 *Item, that hee exacted great fines from the wealthieſt of his Subiects, for adhearing to the Barons, notwithſtanding that in full Parliament he had before granted them his free pardon.*

21 *Item, that by himſelfe, and his owne authoritie, he had diſplaced diuers Burgeſſes of the Parliament; and had placed ſuch other in their roomes, as would better fit, and ſerue his owne turne.*

22 *Item, that contrarie to his ſolemne Oath, and inſtrument in writing vnder the great Seale of his Kingdome, Hee had not only diſallowed the Commiſsion, granted in the ſame Parliament to the thirteene Lords, to enquire of, and to reforme the great abuſes, and the apparant miſgouernment of the Common-Weale, But alſo had exiled, beheaded, and otherwiſe executed, diuers Noble Men, and others, who for the Kings honour, and for the ſafetie and welfare of the Common-Weale, had procured the ſaid Commiſsion, or had executed the ſaid Authoritie, according to the truſt and confidence in them reposed.*

23

23 *Item, that whereas hee had cauſed certaine Lawes in the ſame Parliament to bee made for his owne gaine, and to ſerue his owne turne, hee procured the Popes Bulles to curſe ſuch as ſhould withſtand, or diſobey them: which thing greatly tended to the derogation of his Crowne, and was done expreſſely againſt his owne law made againſt the Authoritie of the Pope within this Realme but ſeuen yeares before.*

24 *Item, that hee had diſplaced lawfull and good Shiriffes, and had elected others, whom he ſuffered to continue, and to hold the ſaid Office, two yeares together and more, becauſe their vniuſt oppreſsions augmented and encreaſed his gaine.*

King Richard confeſſeth all the Articles.

The tranſcript of all theſe Articles and Obiections, were (by both the Houſes of Parliament) authentically ſent vnto the king: who not only confeſſed them to bee true, and acknowledged his owne inſufficiencie to rule and to gouerne better; but alſo by a plaine, and exact inſtrument in writing vnder his hand and Seale, hee reſigned his Crowne and kingdome to his Couſin *Henrie* of *Bullinbrooke* Duke of *Lancaſter*: which being read publikely, and beeing generally ratified, approoued and confirmed by the Lords Spirituall and Temporall, and by the Commons in the ſame Parliament aſſembled; they depoſed king *Richard*, and made the ſaid Duke king. And his true, and faithfull friend, and his companion in Baniſhment, *Thomas Arundell* Archbiſhoppe of *Canterburie* (being then and there reſtored to his place, and dignitie) inſtalled the ſaid *Henrie* in the kingly Throne. And the late King *Richard* was ſent to *Pomfret* Caſtle, there to bee ſafely kept, and with Princely honour to bee maintained: but verie ſhortly after (by the new kings direction and commaundement; who feared leaſt his Eſtate might bee ſhaken, ſo long as *Richard* liued) hee was wickedly and villanouſly aſſaulted in his Lodging, by Sir *Pierce Exton*, and eight other armed men: from one of which (with a Princely courage) hee wreſted a browne-Bill, and therewith ſlewe foure of his Miſchieuous and Vngodly Aſſailants: and (with admirable reſolution) fought with all the reſt; vntill comming by his owne Chaire (in which the baſe Cowardly Knight himſelfe ſtood for his owne ſafetie) hee was by him

He reſignes his Crowne.

King Richard is depoſed.

Henrie Duke of Lancaſter is made King.

Thomas Arundell reſtored to the Archbiſhopprick of Canterburie.

King Richard is cruelly murdered

He was very valiant.

him ſtriken with a Polle-axe in the hinder part of his head: ſo that preſently he fell downe and died. And thus was hee wickedly and treacherouſly murdered, and his bodie buried at *Langley*: but was (afterwardes) remoued vnto *Weſtminſter*, where it now lieth.

Though hee were an euill King, yet no religion warranted thoſe vniuſt proceedings.

THE

T

and
the
crea
and
mer
kee
Rich
forn
Affl
of
king
if h
the
the

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE FOURTH.

ALTHOVGH the Crowne of *England*, in right (if *Richard* the deposed king should die without issue) was by succession to descend vnto *Edmund Mortimer* Earle of *March* (the Son and heire of *Edmund Mortimer*, by *Philip* his wife, who was the daughter and heire of *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, the third sonne of *Edward* the third: Yet his Cousin *Henrie* of *Bullinbrooke* Duke of *Hartford*, and sonne and heire vnto *Iohn* of *Gaunt* the yonger brother of the said *Lionel*, was elected and crowned king. And forthwith hee created his eldest sonne *Henrie*, Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle of *Chester*: and summoned his High Court of Parliament, in which an order was prescribed and set downe, for the safe keeping, and for the honourable attendance, and maintaining of *Richard* the late king. But his deposing, imprisonment, and all the former proceedings which were had against him, were in the same Assembly publikely condemned and reprooued by *Iohn* Bishop of *Carlile*, as hatefull vnto God, trayterous towardes the wronged king, and infamous among good men. For he auerred boldly, That if he were not a good king, yet more iniurie was done vnto him then ordinarily is done to Murderers, and to Theeues: because they are not (as he was) condemned, before they had made their an-

ANNO. 1. 1399.

Iohn Bishop of Carleyl condemneth the former proceedings against King Richard.

anſwere to the obiected crime, before Iudges which were indifferent, and pronounced their iudgement vpon good proofe. But aſſoone as hee had ended his ſpeech: he was attached by the Earle Marſhal; and committed to ſtrait Priſon in the Abbey of Saint *Albons*. And then (among manie other things in the ſame Parlament done) the Crowne of *England* was entailed to King *Henrie*, and to his heires for euer.

The Biſhop of Carleyl is attached.

The Crowne is Entayled.

Treaſon plotted, to be acted at Oxford.

Aſſoone as this Parliament was ended, ſuch of the greateſt Lords, as made the faireſt ſhew of publike applauſe and ioy, for the High dignitie which King *Henrie* did poſſeſſe; conſpired by Treaſon to take away his life, at a ſolemne Iuſts to be holden in the Citie of *Oxford:* whereunto the King was inuited; and promiſed to bee preſent, becauſe hee conceiued, that the ſame Triumph was ſo appointed for his honour, and for his delight.

This Treacherie was cunningly plotted and contriued by the Conſpirators: who by Indentures vnder their handes and ſeales, had bound themſelues each vnto other, both for ſecrecie, and alſo for the reſolute effecting and performing thereof; all which they ſolemnly confirmed by their Oathes.

The confederates.

The Confederates in this Treaſon, were the Kings Couſin German, *Edward Plantagenet* Duke of *Aumarle*, ſonne and heire apparant to *Edmund* of *Langley* Duke of *Yorke*: *Thomas Holland* Duke of *Surrie*; and *Iohn Holland* his brother, Duke of *Exeter*, both which were halfe brothers to King *Richard*; *Iohn Montague* Earle of *Salisburie*; *Hugh Spencer* Earle of *Gloceſter*; Sir *Thomas Blunt*; and one *Magdalen*, who was ſometimes a Chamber-wayter to the depoſed King, and both in ſtature, and in countenance, and in his behauiour, was not much vnlike him.

The Treaſon was ſtrangely diſcouered.

All theſe Conſpirators (the Duke of *Aumarle* onely excepted) met at *Oxford*, at the appointed time, being ſtrongly guarded, and honourably attended, by luſtie Archers, and other valiant men. But the abſence of the ſaid Duke, was (by his Aſſociates) wondred at: for which their was good cauſe. For as hee ſate at Table with the Duke his Father, one Labell of a part of the ſaid Indentures appeared at his boſome: by which, the olde Duke drew forth the whole writing. And hauing read the ſame; hee cauſed his Horſe to bee made readie, becauſe hee intended (with all poaſting ſpeed) to make this newes knowne vnto the King. But his guiltie, and perplexed Sonne (perceiuing that his Father would reueale this ſecret) and knowing that, now, the leaſt delay might extraordinarily haſten his danger: being brauely mounted (with all celeritie) he out-rode his Father, and came to *Windſor* Caſtle to the

The Duke of Aumarle confeſſeth all to the King.

King

King (who was preparing for his ſaid iournie) and without anie tedious diſcourſe, or lingring ceremonies, hee reuealed to his Maieſtie the whole conſpired Treaſon; and freely obtained his owne pardon.

He is pardoned.

It now behoued the King to change his courſe: and ſo hee did. For preſently he rode to the Tower of *London*: where he tooke a preſent and a perfit view of all ſuch thinges, as were behoofefull, and neceſſarie to an Armie.

The King raiſeth an armie.

And then he leuied a ſtrong power: purpoſing to defend himſelfe, and to ſurpriſe thoſe grand Traytours, if he might. But when the Conſpirators were informed, that all their Plot and Treaſon was reuealed: They cauſed the ſaid *Magdalen* to bee attired in Royall Robes; and to faine, and affirme himſelfe, to bee King *Richard*. And with him, and all their Troupes (which were verie warlike and ſtrong) they marched towardes *London*: reſoluing to oppoſe themſelues in the field againſt the king.

Magdalen was King Richards counterfeit.

But king *Henrie* (knowing that thoſe Lords, both in bloud, and for their power, were more then ordinarily great) was not ignorant, that his beſt meanes to repreſſe, and vanquiſh them, conſiſted in the quickeſt expedition and diſpatch, which hee could make. Wherefore (with a bold and with a kingly courage) hee marched ſpeedily towardes them, with twentie thouſand wel-armed men.

The King marcheth towards the Traytors.

The newes of the kings approach being voiced among the companies, which were conducted by the conſpiratours, ſo perplexed, and ſo amazed them, that verie cowardly they ranne away, and left thoſe Lords comfortleſſe, and deſtitute of all aide. So that the moſt of them were apprehended; and not long after were put to death, in ſundrie places of this kingdome: and the reſt (being ſurcharged, and ouer-burdned with feare, and ſorrow) not long after dyed.

The Traiterous Lords are left, by their companions.

The Lords flie and are taken and executed.

Thus was king *Henrie* happily deliuered from this danger. And leſt the like Treaſon for king *Richards* ſake might at an other time bee attempted againſt his perſon: he cauſed him to bee murdered in the Caſtle of *Pomfret*; as in the end of the diſcourſe deſcribing his Raigne, and Hiſtorie, more particularly it doth appeare. When the *French* King *Charles* the ſixt, Father-in-law to king *Richard*, was truely informed what had beene done in *England*: hee was much grieued at the vnſufferable wrongs which were done vnto him; and did intend (as a faithful friend in his extremities) to relieue his lamentable Eſtate, and (to be pitied) miſeries. And for that purpoſe hee ſent his letters of defiance to king *Henrie*: and brought an

Charles the ſixt, reſolueth to releue his Sonne in-law King Richard.

Armie Royal into *Piccardie*, with which he reſolued to make ſharp Warre within this Realme.

He deſiſteth when he heareth of King Richards death.

But when hee certainly knew, that the poore, diſtreſſed, and afflicted King, was dead, and that it was too late to doe him anie good: hee diſſolued his Armie; and proceeded no further in that buſineſſe. Yet to reuenge thoſe wrongs; hee was verie hopefull to ſurpriſe manie Townes, Cities, and Caſtles in *Aquitaine*, and in *Guyan*. And, to effect the ſame, not long after hee leuied other Forces, encreaſing them to a great Armie. And King *Henrie* (to withſtand him) did the like. But the *Engliſh* Armie (landing in thoſe Countries before the *French* King was in a readineſſe: and being boldly commanded and conducted by the Lord *Percie*, Earle of *Worceſter*, vnto Sir *Thomas Knowles* the King of *Englands* Lieutenant there: and they hauing taken the fealtie, and the homage, of the Lords of thoſe Prouinces, for their obedience, and alleageance vnto King *Henrie*: cauſed the *French* King to change his mind, and diſhonourably to diſband all ſuch companies as hee had leuied. Yet for all this, King *Henrie* (ſtill diſtruſting the weakeneſſe of his vſurped title, and endeuouring to ſupport it with a more ſure foundation, entreated the *French* King *Charles* the ſixt, to giue in marriage his daughter *Iſabel* (ſometime King *Richards* wife) vnto his eldeſt ſonne *Henrie*, Prince of *Wales*. But her father (obſeruing that marriages betwixt *England* and *France* were but ſeldome fortunate) denied the kings requeſt, whereupon, ſhe was conueied into *France* with Princely attendance, and great honour. And not long after ſhee was married to her Couſin *Charles*, the eldeſt ſonne of *Lewis* Duke of *Orleance*, her Vncle.

A French Armie.

An Engliſh Armie.

The French King gaineth ouer his enterpriſe.

Marriages with France are ſeldome fortunate.

The aforeſaid Treaſon conſpired againſt the king by the aforeſaid Lords; and the late preparations of the *French* King, firſt to haue inuaded the Kingdome of *England*, and ſecondly, to haue wrought wonders in *Aquitaine*, and in *Guyan*: and the frequent ſpeeches which euerie where were vttered touching the manner of the Kings attaining to the Crowne; animated the *Welchmen*, and the *Scots*, to ſhew themſelues troubleſome neighbours vnto the King.

Owen Glendor rebelleth.

For in *Wales*, *Owen Glendor* (a bold Squire) with manie hundreds of his lawleſſe and vnciuill companions, entred into Armes, and did much harme in the Marches which bordered neere vnto them. Againſt whom, the Lord *Gray* of *Ruthen*, and *Edmund Mortimer* (who was the true and rightfull Heire of the Crowne) conducted their Forces, and fought with him. But they both were taken Priſoners: and the ſaid *Edmond* was by him kept cloſe in a darke Dun-

Edmund Mortimer taken and ſharply impriſoned.

geon,

geon, which was both cold and vnhealthie; where hee was ouerburdened with daily wants, and much miſerie. All which were with the greater extremitie laid vpon him, becauſe king *Henrie*, his Couſin, ſhould bee enforced the ſooner to redeeme him with a great Ranſome. Wherein (becauſe the King was too too ſlacke and negligent) hee was entreated and vrged by his Lords, but eſpecially by the diſtreſſed Earles kinſmen the *Percies*. But vnto them all he turned the deafe eare: rather deſiring his deſtruction, then holding it ſafe for him to ſet him free.

The King would not redeeme him.

The *Scots* alſo inuaded the Northerne parts of this Kingdome: but King *Henrie*, with a puiſſant Armie, entred into their Countrie; and reuenged his wrongs euerie where, with fire, and ſword, at his owne pleaſure. But (becauſe the Winter was extraordinarily wet, and cold) hee diſſolued his Armie; and with great honour, victoriouſly he returned backe.

The Scots inuade.

The king curbeth them.

But as ſoone as hee was gone, the angrie *Scots* (being in number twentie thouſand at the leaſt) entred with barbarous crueltie into *England* vpon the *Northumbers*, but were gallantly encountred by Sir *Henrie Hot-ſpurre*, the ſonne and heire apparant of *Henrie Percie* Earle of that Prouince: who (with tenne thouſand luſtie and braue men) gaue the *Scots* ſuch a bloudie ouerthrow, that he ſlew of them more then tenne thouſand in the field, and tooke aboue fiue hundred Priſoners; among whome *Mordake* Earle of *Fyffe*, *Archibald* Earle *Douglaſſe*, *Thomas* Earle of *Murrey*, and *Robert* Earle of *Angus*, were the chiefe.

The Scots againe doe inuade.

Henrie Hot-ſpurre ouerthroweth them.

His great Priſoners.

The next yeare following, the *French* King ſent for *Wales* (to aſſiſt *Owen Glendor* in his rebellious enterpriſes) twelue hundered Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of good accompt, that they might be leaders, and directors, to thoſe diſordered Traytors. But the winds (not being anſwerable to their deſires) were ſo contrarie at the Sea, and a ſtorme ſo violently encreaſed: that twelue of their greateſt ſhippes, with all their men and furniture, were ſwallowed into the Sea; and the reſt, with great difficultie, returned into *France*.

ANNO. 1.

The Frenchmen, ſpoyled by a ſtorme at Sea.

This misfortune ſo animated the *Engliſh* Nation; that they beganne (euerie where) to talke of and to ieſt at the *French* King: becauſe all his warlike expeditions had ſtill beene vnfortunate and diſaſtrous; and though they threatned much, yet alwayes they vaniſhed as a cloude. The report whereof ſo whetted and exaſperated his reſolutions, to doe ſome memorable ſeruice: that forthwith hee ſent vnto the ſaid rebelling *Welchmen*, an armie of twelue thouſand men; who ſafely landed, and ioyned with ten thouſand of that Nation.

The Engliſh doe deride the French.

Twelue thouſand Frenchmen ſent into Wales.

The King marched into Wales.

This Armie occaſioned King *Henrie* to prepare ſoundly for his ſafetie. For hee was well aſſured, that if anie neglect, or want of skill, or of courage, ſhould giue them the leaſt aduantage whatſoeuer: then his Crowne would be ſhaken; and manie miſeries would threaten his ouerthrow. Wherefore hee (in his owne perſon) marched with a ſtrong and with a compleat Armie into *Wales*. But aſſoone as the *Frenchmen* had certaine notice of his comming, they thought it was high time for them to aduiſe what courſe to take: perchance, not becauſe they were diſtruſtfull of their owne valour, and reſolution, but becauſe the inconſtancie of that turbulent and fickle Nation, when danger did appeare, affrighted them fully with feares and with doubts, leaſt they would flie into the Woods, and craggie Mountaines, and forſake them, when they ſhould craue the beſt performance of their helpe. And ſo ſtrongly did this doubtfull feare poſſeſſe them, that ſuddenly, like men amazed, and heartleſſe, they ranne vnto their ſhips: and (not hauing performed anie manner of ſeruice whatſoeuer) diſgracefully, and cowardly, they returned into *France*.

The Frenchmen flie to their ſhips.

The King is victorious without blowes.

Hereupon, the *Welch* Rebelles (deſperatly ſhifting for themſelues) fled, euerie man his owne way: ſo that king *Henrie* found thoſe Traiterous multitudes diſperſed, and quite vaniſhed; and would not be fought with. Wherefore hee diſſolued his great armie, and returned in peace, without blowes.

The King marrieth the Dutches of Britaine.

Afterwards, King *Henrie* tooke to wife, *Iane* the widdow of *Iohn* the deceaſed Duke of *Brittaine*; and gaue *Blanch* (his eldeſt daughter) in marriage vnto *William* Duke of *Bauier*, the ſonne and heire apparant of the Emperor *Lewes* of *Bauier*.

The King makes great friends abroad.

And (ſome few yeares after) hee matched *Philip*, his yongeſt daughter, with the King of *Denmarke*. For his daily troubles, and turmoiles at home, gaue him aduiſe, to make himſelfe more ſtrong by procuring of great friends abroad.

ANNO. 3.

The King requireth the Percies to deliuer to him their Scotiſh Priſoners. They refuſe it The Percies reſolue to ſet Edmond Mortimer at libertie, and to reſtore him to the Crown.

In the third yeare of his Raigne, hee required *Henrie Percie*, Earle of *Worceſter*; *Henrie Percie* Earle of *Northumberland*; and *Henrie Hot-ſpurre* his ſonne; to deliuer vnto him ſuch *Scottiſh* Priſoners, as they had taken in thoſe laſt warres. But they affirmed ſtoutly, that (by the Lawes of Armes, and Chiualrie) thoſe Priſoners belonged vnto them: and thereupon they refuſed to deliuer them vnto the King. By meanes whereof, ſome vnkindneſſe grew betwixt the king and them; which not long after was made apparant to the World. For the *Percies* now beganne to reſolue vpon the reſtoring of their inthralled Couſin, *Edmund Mortimer* Earle of *March*, both vnto his libertie, and alſo to his Crowne: and to depoſe

poſe King *Henrie*; if by anie meanes, and endeauours, they could bring their purpoſes to paſſe. Yet (for a time) they concealed their intent: and (making none other ſhew but of naturall kindneſſe, and friendſhip, to the ſaid Earle, in regard of their affinitie, and kindred, earneſtly praied the king to ranſome him, and to ſet him free; becauſe he was vnfortunately taken in his ſeruice; and was oppreſſed with much miſerie. But the king, not hearkning to their ſute; nor (indeed) deſiring that he ſhould bee enlarged: made anſwere, and cauſed it to be proclaimed, that the ſaid Earle had voluntarily cauſed himſelfe to bee taken priſoner, ſo that Rebels (hauing him in their cuſtodie, and companie) might pretend ſome colour, therwith to varniſh ſuch Conſpiracies, and Treaſons, as ſecretly they had plotted, and contriued againſt his Crowne, and him: and that therefore his owne ſafetie, and his good diſcretion, gaue him aduiſe and counſel, not to hearken to their motion but to puniſh his offence.

They deſire the King to Ranſom him.

The King wil not, but accuſeth him.

The *Percies* (hauing receiued this anſwere, and being much grieued with the ſaid Proclamation: and being reſolued no longer to delay and to deferre the enlargement of the ſaid Earle) paid his Ranſome to *Owen Glendor*, and redeemed him at their owne coſt: and ſecretly entred into ſuch a League of friendſhip and familiaritie with *Owen Glendor*, that hee faithfully promiſed to ſticke vnto them ſtoutly, whenſoeuer they would attempt the depoſing of king *Henrie*.

ANNO. 4. *Sir Edmond Mortymer is Ranſomed by the Percies.*

Owen Glendor conſpireth with the Percies.

And then the ſaid Lords *Percies*, being (by reaſon of their *Scottiſh* priſoners) aſſiſted with a multitude of warlike *Scots*; ioyned vnto their part the Earle of *Stafford*, and *Richard Scrope* Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, brother to the beheaded Earle of *Salisburie*; and manie others; who encreaſed their numbers with *Engliſhmen*, and purpoſed to ioyne with *Owen Glendor* and his *Welch* Conſorts, in the depoſing of the king: againſt whom (by way of accuſation) they framed certaine Articles, which they publiſhed; and ſent them to him in writing, to this effect.

Articles againſt King HENRIE.

1. *IN primis, That when hee came into England from his Baniſhment, he tooke an oath, only to challenge, and to recouer his inheritance, and his Wiues; and not to inter-*

medle with the King, nor with the Crowne. By reaſon of which oath diuers loyall and good Subiects to King Richard, reſorted vnto him, not hauing anie treaſonable intent. But when he perceiued that his ſtrength was ſo much encreaſed, that he might doe what hee pleaſed; hee wickedly brake his oath, and without anie title, or right, procured himſelfe to be made, and to be crowned King.

2 Item, that not only, as an Archtraitor, hee had impriſoned his naturall, and vndoubted Lord and Maſter, King Richard, but had cauſed him wickedly, and traiterouſly to be murdered: that with greater ſecuritie, hee might enioy his Crowne, and his Kingdome.

3 Item, that, euer ſince the death of King Richard, hee had vniuſtly kept the Kingdome, and the Crowne, from his Couſin Edmund Mortimer Earle of March, who was the ſonne and heire of Philip, the daughter and heire of Lionel Duke of Clarence, elder brother to Iohn of Gaunt father to the vſurping King.

4 Item, that when no want or need compelled him, hee had impoſed diuers Subſidies, and taxes, vpon the people, to their great griefe, and diſcontentment: of which they willingly would, but dared not to complaine.

5 Item, that no iuſtice could be expected at his hand: becauſe (contrarie to the oath which hee tooke when hee was crowned) he had by letters, written, and ſent into ſundrie Shires, procured certaine Burgeſhips for the Parliament, all which hee beſtowed vpon ſuch as would not faile to ſerue his turne, when opportunitie did ſerue.

6 And laſtly, that whereas in honour and for affinities ſake, hee ought to haue ranſomed, and redeemed his ſaid Couſin the Earle of March, from his ſtrait and loathſome impriſonment (and the rather for that hee was earneſtly ſolicited ſo to doe) he not only denied the ſaid requeſt, but falſly, and vntruly publiſhed and proclaimed, that the Earle himſelfe was of his owne accord become a volantarie Priſoner, to

the

the end, that Traitors and Rebels ioyning with him, might haue somwhat wherewith they might colour such Treasons as they would conspire against him.

For all which causes, and manie others more, they vtterly defied him as a Traytor, and as a Vsurper; and (as an enemie) they vowed his destruction, and the restoring of the said Earle to his Right.

The Percies doe defie the King.

The King perceiuing, that nothing but strong blowes could end this strife: and being persuaded, that if hee became victorious in this Rebellion, he should bereaue all his enemies of all hope to preuaile in the like attempts; had leuied a strong Armie: with which hee marched courageously against those Lords; hoping to meet with them, before they should joyne their forces with the *Welchmen*: and so great was his care, that he failed not therein of his purpose. For both their Armies met neare vnto *Shrewsburie*: and in their first encounter, the *Scots* gaue a braue onset vpon the King. But with such hardie violence he receiued them, that (almost in a moment) the greatest part of them were slaine.

The King rayseth an Armie.

The battaile of Shrewsburie.

The Scots are ouerthrowne.

Yet notwithstanding, the Lords and their Armie stoutly performed their taske; and fought with such admired courage and resolution, that they persuaded themselues of good successe, vntill the King and the martiall Prince his sonne (determining by honourable death rather to be subdued, than to become the laughing stocks of aduerse and froward fortune) redoubled their strength and valour, and by their particular examples each to the other, they so renewed the fight, that Sir *Henrie Hotspurre*, and some others of the principall Leaders of those companies, and manie thousands more, were slaine; and his vncle, the Earle of *Worcester*, was taken prisoner in the field, and the rest fled. And so the King, with the losse of sixteene hundred of his souldiours, hauing slaine more than six thousand of his enemies (of which, thirtie and six fell by his own sword) obtained a famous victorie. And because the Earle *Douglas*, in a single combate with the King himselfe, performed the part of an approued and of a worthie knight, the King granted him his libertie, without ransome.

3. 1401. *The Percies are ouerthrowne.*

The King himselfe slew 36.

Douglas is released by the King without ransome.

The next day following, the King and all his armie (with great deuotion and reuerence) gaue thankes vnto Almightie GOD for their good and honourable successe: and then he caused the Earle of *Worcester* to be beheaded; and manie others, being ring-leaders in that Rebellion, to be drawne, hanged, and quartered, and did set their heads vpon *London* Bridge:

Thanksgiuing vnto God.

The Earle of Worcester is beheaded.

And

The Prince marcheth into Wales. Owen Glendor forſaken by his companions. He is famiſhed to death.

And the King intending forthwith to purſue and proſecute his good fortunes, for the ſurer ſetling of his eſtate in future time; ſent the Prince of *Wales*, and his whole armie, into *Wales*. But when hee came thither, his chiefeſt enemie *Owen Glendor* was vtterly forſaken by his whole companies, and ſhrowded himſelfe in the Woods; and being compaſſed round about by the Princes forces (who eagerly hunted to apprehend him) hee was miſerably famiſhed to death; and manie of his aſſociates being taken, were put to death: and then the Prince returned joyfully to the King.

The Earle of Northumberlands voluntarie ſubmiſſion.

Now, whileſt the Prince was thus buſied in *Wales*, *Henrie Percie* Earle of *Northumberland*, came (of his owne accord) and ſubmitted himſelfe to the Kings mercie; proteſting and ſwearing with manie oathes, That he was neuer made acquainted, nor intermedled in thoſe Treaſons. And though the King conceiued not the leaſt thought which might excuſe him, yet (for that time) hee entertained him with ſmooth words, and with a ſmiling countenance, and ſuffered him to come and to goe at his pleaſure; becauſe he had in his poſſeſſion the Caſtle of *Barwike*, and other places of great ſtrength.

A Chalenge ſent by the Duke of Orleans to king Henrie.

When all theſe Troubles had found an end, *Lewis* Duke of *Orleance*, brother to the *French* King (being prowd and vainglorious) ſent a Chalengé to King *Henrie*; requiring him, with one hundred choſen men at armes of his Kingdome, in ſome indifferent and conuenient place, to fight with him, and with the like number of *Frenchmen*, for honours ſake. But the King (with great diſcretion and wiſdome) made him this anſwere, That his former actions, in warlike employments, could clearely acquite him from the infamous name and title of a Coward: And that Kings ought not to be ſo careleſſe of their Countries and of their people (whome GOD had committed vnto their charge and gouernment) as to fight for anie cauſe, except it were for the furtherance or for the maintenance of true Religion; or in defence of their Rights; or to defend their Kingdomes from forraine enemies; or to reuenge their wrongs; and for ſuch like important cauſes: And alſo, that a Soueraigne and an annointed King (by the Lawes of Armes, and of Honor) was not bound to anſwere anie Chalenge in the field, except it were made vpon good cauſe, by his Equall in Dignitie and in Office. And yet hee further added this, That hee would at all times be verie readie to repulſe and to repreſſe anie violence or wrong, which the Duke ſhould dare, raſhly or vnaduiſedly, at anie time to attempt againſt him, or anie of his people.

King Henries diſcreet anſwere.

The

The Duke, being ouer-paſſionate when he receiued this diſcreet and mild anſwere, with all expedition beſieged the Towne of *Vergie* in *Guian*, and remained there for the ſpace of three moneths, and ſomewhat more. In which time hee offered manie ſharpe aſſaults, and much violence, but receiued as manie ſtout repulſes as he could well endure. And in the end, hauing loſt manie of his beſt men, and chiefeſt friends, he was compelled diſgracefully to raiſe his ſiege, and to returne into *France*.

A raſh attempt had a diſgracefull end.

The Duke of *Burgoine* alſo (ſuppoſing that the inſtabilitie of king *Henries* eſtate at home, could not permit him to leaue his Kingdome and to warre abroad) obtained leaue of the *French* King to attempt the regaining of *Callice* to the *French*. For which purpoſe he procured a puiſſant Armie, in which he had ſix thouſand valiant men at armes, fifteene hundred croſbowes, and twelue thouſand ordinarie Souldiers on foot. But when the *French* Kings Councell were informed, of the great preparations made in *England* by King *Henrie* to defeat them, and had maturely conſidered of the difficultie (yea almoſt of the impoſſibilitie) of this attempt: the ſaid Duke was commanded to deſiſt from his intended ſeruice: whereat hee was much grieued, and did coniecture, that the proud Duke of *Orleans*, and ſome others, had diſcouraged the King in that buſineſſe, becauſe they were iealous, that by his valour hee would winne too much honour and renowne.

The Duke of Burgoyne attempteth the regaining of Callice.

He is required to deſiſt.

Experience teacheth vs, that as the higheſt Trees are ſubiect moſt to bee hurted by a ſtorme: ſo the greateſt Eſtates are in greateſt danger to be ſhaken by Enuie. An euident proofe therof appeared plainly in the whole courſe of this Kings Raigne. For no ſooner was hee freed from one miſchiefe, but incontinently he was threatned by another. And though he had now eſcaped the great dangers of two former Treaſons, and Rebellions, and had beene victorious ouer the *Scots*, and the *Welch* Rebels, and had out-faced the *French*, who (if they had dared) would haue attempted high Atchieuements at *Callice*, and in *Aquitaine*, and in *Guian*: yet was he now againe in hazard to haue beene turmoiled with an other Ciuill Warre at home; which ſecretly was plotted, and contriued, by *Henrie Percie* Earle of *Northumberland*, *Richard Scrope* Archbiſhoppe of *Yorke*, *Thomas Mowbray* Earle Marſhall, and by the Lords, *Haſtings*, *Faulconbridge*, and *Bardolf*, and by diuers others.

ANNO. 6.
A new Rebellion ſecretly plotted but diſcouered.

But as (in ſuch like caſes) it often falleth out, ſo this Traiterous Conſpiracie was ſecretly reuealed to the King: who came ſo vnexpectedly with an Armie into the North, that ere anie man reported

The King ſodainely ſurpriſeth the Traitours.

ted the newes of his comming, hee ſurprized the ſaid Lords (the Earle of *Northumberland*, and the Lord *Bardolf* excepted) and ſtrake off their heads. But the ſaid Earle fled into *France*, from whence hee came afterwards into *Scotland*, where hee was promiſed to be aided againſt the King. But (to preuent ſuch miſchiefes as thoſe intendements did threaten) the Prince of *Wales* was ſent into *Scotland* with an Armie, where he burnt and ſpoiled (without controulment) at his owne will and pleaſure, and recouered to the Kings vſe, the Caſtles of *Barwicke*, and of *Anwicke*; and enforced the *Scots* to craue a truce, which was granted vnto them for a few monethes: and then the Prince returned to the King.

The Prince warreth in Scotland proſperouſly.

And now it chanced, that as king *Henrie* paſſed ouer the Riuer of *Thames*, from *Kent* into *Eſſex*, vnder the conduct of the Lord of *Camois*, hee was almoſt taken by the *French* Pirats: for which cauſe the ſaid Lord was ſuſpected, and attached as a Traitour, and receiued his due triall, by his Peeres; but was clearely acquited of that offence, and receiued into fauour.

The King in danger to be taken on the Thames by French Pirates.

The Lord of Camoys in trouble, cleareth himſelfe.

In the ninth yeare of this kings Raigne, the Earle of *Nothumberland*, and the Lord *Bardolfe* (animating the *Scots* to a new war) entred with them into *Northumberland*; and did much miſchiefe: whereupon king *Henrie* leuied a ſtrong armie, and by great iournies) trauailed to encounter them. But (before his comming forth) they were fought with, and ouerthrowne by Sir *Ralph Rokeſby* then Shirif of that Countie, who tooke the ſaid Lords and manie others, and ſmote off their heads; and ſent them (for preſents) to the king.

ANNO. 9.

A valiant Sheriffe.

In the eleuenth yeare of his raigne, he aſſembled his high Court of Parliament: in which he created his three yonger ſonnes, *Thomas*, Duke of *Clarence*; *Iohn*, Duke of *Bedford*: and *Humfrey* Duke of *Glocester*: and enacted manie Lawes, which were helpefull, and profitable to this Common-weale.

ANNO. 11

Thomas is made Duke of Clarence.

Iohn Duke of Bedford.

Humphrie Duke of Glocester.

And from that time forth vntill hee died, hee enioyed a happie peace; and reſted from all hoſtilitie, and warres, both at home and abroad. And to expreſſe his thankfulneſſe to God for all his goodneſſe, and great bountie towards him: hee made great and coſtly preparations, of men, monie, victuals, and armour, and ſhippes, and all other thinges, requiſite, and needfull; and purpoſed to haue waged warres with the *Turkes* in the *Holy-land*. But whileſt he buſily imploied himſelfe in thoſe affaires, hee was attached by a deadly apoplexie: and being neere vnto his laſt end, hee cauſed his Crowne to be placed by him vpon his pillow, leaſt peraduenture in his extremitie of ſickneſſe, it might bee deliuered to ſome other

The King prepareth to Warre in the Holy land.

The King falleth ſicke.

His Crowne is placed on his Pillow.

other, who had better right thereto then hee had. But when his attendants verily ſuppoſed, that he was dead: the yong Prince of *Wales* ſeized vpon his Crowne. Whereat the king ſtarted vp, and raiſing himſelfe vpon his armes, he demanded who it was that had taken away his Crowne. The Prince anſwered, that it was he: and then he fell backe into his bed; and (fetching a deepe ſigh, and ſending forth manie penſiue groanes) My ſonne (quoth he) my ſonne, what right I had vnto this Crowne, and how I haue enjoyed it, God knoweth, and the World hath ſeene. Comfort your ſelfe in God, good Father, ſaid the Prince: The Crowne you haue, and if you die, I will haue it, and keepe it with my ſword, as you haue done. And within a ſhort time after, king *Henrie* died, in the ſix and fortieth yeare of his age, when he had raigned almoſt fourteene yeares. And his bodie was carried to *Canterburie*, where (with all Princely, and due requiſites) it was buried.

The Prince ſeized on the Crowne.

The Kings ſpeech to the Prince.

The Prince his anſwere.

The King dieth.

THE

T

disgr
youn
himſ
roica
and b
had c
their
Iuſti
ned,
othe
and
the
ching

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE FIFTH.

THis is well knowne, That King *Henrie* the fifth, whileſt he was but a Prince, aſſociated to himſelfe diuers vnthriftie and lewd companions; by whoſe inſtigation (among manie other vnworthie paſſages in his fathers dayes) hee ſmote the Lord chiefe Iuſtice of *England* in the face: for which offence he was impriſoned and diſmiſſed of the Preſidentſhip of the kings Councell; and (to his great griefe and diſgrace) was ſucceeded therein by *Thomas*, Duke of *Clarence*, his younger brother. But when hee was crowned king, hee diſpoſed himſelfe into a new courſe, qualifying his behauiour with ſuch heroicall vertues, as might beſeeme both his Perſon and his Honour, and baniſhed from his Court his looſe and baſe conſorts, after he had enabled them to liue by ſuch gifts as were proportionable to their callings. He alſo elected for his Councell, and into places of Iuſtice and publike Gouernment, ſuch as were wiſe, diſcreet, learned, and temperate; well able to rule themſelues, and to command others. He painefully laboured to reforme Pride, Couetouſneſſe, and ſuch other groſſe abuſes as were crept into the Church among the Clergie: and enjoined them ſtrictly to frequent Praier & Preaching, to Hoſpitalitie, and to the ſincere ſeruing of Almightie GOD.

1. 1412. *A wilde Prince, but a wiſe King.*

He baniſheth his looſe companions.

His good choice of good Gouernors.

He reformeth the Clergie.

He ruleth the Laitie.

And (by the adminiſtration of his Lawes with moderate ſeueritie) hee made the Laitie tractable in the performance of their duties. And (to ſettle his Eſtate in peace and in tranquilitie at home; ſo that neyther the *Scots* nor the *Welchmen* ſhould moleſt him, when hee was buſied in his Warres abroad) hee erected diuers Caſtles, Bulwarkes, and other Fortifications vpon their frontiers; and ſo diſpoſed of them, that with manie thouſands of able men, and skilfull Captaines to command them, he was ſtill readie and powerfull, with great violence and force, to ſuppreſſe and qualifie ſuch rebellious Inſurrections as they might make.

He erecteth Caſtles in the frontiers of Scotland and of Wales.

In the firſt yeare of his Raigne, with great pompe and ſolemnitie, hee brought the bodie of King *Richard* the ſecond from *Langley* vnto *Weſtminſter*, and buried it by Queene *Anne*, his firſt wife.

King Richards bodie remoued to Weſtminſter.

In the ſecond yeare, hee held his High Court of Parliament at *Leiceſter*: in which, hee was importunately petitioned, to ſuppreſſe the Religious Houſes of this Kingdome: becauſe they being ill vſed, were made the Nurſeries of Idleneſſe, Gluttonie, Lecherie, and of Pride; and were the Cages of vncleane birds. The Reuenewes which belonged to thoſe Houſes, were proportioned to yeeld vnto the Kings Coffers the annuall Rent of twentie thouſand pounds: and would alſo (for the encreaſe of the Kings power and ſtrength) maintaine fifteene Earles, fifteene hundred Knights, and more than ſix thouſand men at Armes; beſides, a great number of Almes-houſes for the poores reliefe.

2.
1413.
A motion in Parliament to ſuppreſſe Religious Houſes.

To diuert this ſtreame into another Channell, the fat Abbots, Priors, idle Monkes, wanton Friers, and the puling Nunnes, procured *Henrie Chichley*, then Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, in a verie learned and excellent Oration, to diſcouer to the King his Right and his Title to the Crowne of *France*; to refreſh him with confident hopes of good ſucceſſe; to direct him into a courſe anſwerable to his hopes; and (in the Clergies behalfe, and for the furtherance of thoſe Warres) to offer vnto the King an incredible maſſe of money as their free and as their franke gift.

The Clergies policie to quench this fire.

The Kings title to the Crowne of France ſet abroach.

This motion and this buſineſſe was ſo much applauded by the King, his Nobles, and the inferior ſorts of his people: and the great ſumme of money which was offered, ſo well contented them all, that the ſaid Petition was thereby lulled faſt aſleepe; and nothing was now debated and ſpoken of, but the meanes how *England* might recouer *France*.

The French buſineſſe ſilenceth all others.

This Parliament being ended; the Duke of *Exeter*, vncle to the King, the Archbiſhop of *Dublyn*, the Lord *Gray* high Admirall of

of *England*, and the Biſhop of *Norwich* (being attended with fiue hundred Horſe) were ſent Embaſſadours to the *French* king *Charles* the ſixt. By theſe the King required the peaceable deliuerie of that Kingdome, together with the whole Duchies of *Aquitaine*, *Normandie*, and of *Angeou*; and the Counties of *Poytou* and of *Mayne:* and made this offer, That if (without the effuſion of their peoples bloud) the *French* King would yeeld to his demands; hee then would be pleaſed to take to his wife the Ladie *Katherine* his daughter, and would endow her with all the ſaid Duchies and Prouinces, and would be tractable to all things tending to the *French* kings honour and eſtate. But if hee refuſed to deliuer him his Patrimonie and Inheritance without blowes; then hee aſſured him, That hee would attempt the gayning of them by his Sword: and would, in thoſe Countries, afflict thoſe people with ſuch oppreſſions as were too too rife and common in the Warre.

Embaſſadors ſent to require the Crowne of France. Charles the ſixt.

The vnexpected ſtrangeneſſe of this motion and quicke meſſage ſo amazed the *French* king and his Nobilitie, that (without ſound and good deliberation) they were vnable to returne anie anſwere: but craued a longer time; with promiſe, ſhortly to ſend his Embaſſadors, concerning that buſineſſe, to the King. But the *Dolphin* deſpiſing the youth of King *Henrie*, and holding him vnfit to attempt a matter of ſo high a conſequence; ſent vnto him (as a preſent) a Tonne of Tennis Balls: inſinuating thereby, that it was more agreeable to his yeares to ſport himſelfe among nimble laddes in a Tennis Court, than to dreame of the winning of ſo potent a kingdome as *France* was.

The French king craueth further time to make his anſwere. The Dolphin ſcoffeth the King.

The King, although otherwiſe he would haue beene perſuaded by reaſon, kindly to haue cenſured of the *French* kings requeſt, and of his promiſe: yet, becauſe the *Dolphin* ſo baſely skorned him, proteſted in his angrie moode, That ere manie moneths ſhould be ſpent, he would (if GOD aſſiſted him) toſſe ſo manie balls of yron within that kingdome, that the ſtrongeſt Rackets in *France* ſhould be too weake to returne them. For this purpoſe, he leuied a ſtrong and a puiſſant Armie: whereof, when the *Dolphin* had intelligence (becauſe the charge of thoſe affaires, by reaſon of the *French* kings weakeneſſe and infirmitie, was committed to his care and prouidence) he ſent Embaſſadors to king *Henrie*, to informe him, That if hee would deſiſt from his purpoſe, and would liue in amitie and in peace with that Nation, and would take his ſiſter, the Ladie *Katherine*, to his wife; hee then ſhould haue and receiue with her a large ſumme of money, with ſome ſmall Territories and Poſſeſſions in that kingdome.

The Kings couragious ſpeech.

King Henrie leuieth a great Armie. The Dolphins motion for peace.

King Henries anſwer.

Thoſe Embaſſadours were honourably receiued, kindly entertained; and royallie feaſted by the King, at his owne table. But for an anſwere he returned, That except the *French* King (with his ſaid daughter) would giue vnto him the Dutchies of *Aquitaine*, *Normandie*, *Angeow*, and all other ſmall Segniories, to him, and to his Crowne iuſtly appertaining, and belonging, hee would not diſband his armie, nor waue his title to the Crowne of *France*; but would attempt (by fire, and ſword) to winne it if he might.

King Henrie fortifieth againſt the Scots. The Queene mother is made Regent of England.

Aſſoone as the *French* Embaſſadours were departed, The King (who propoſed none other end to his endeuours, but an aſſured truſt in God, and in a thouſand hopes of conqueſt and of victorie) placed a ſtrong power vpon the marches of *Scotland*, to keepe them in order in his abſence. And, hauing throughly furniſhed himſelfe and his armie, with all needfull preparations, and hauing made the Queene his mother the Regent of his Kingdome, and aſſiſted her witha graue, and with a prudent Counſell, hee ſent his letters of Defiance to the *French* King: and beganne with great alacritie, and courage, to proceed in this his royall iournie.

ANNO. 3. 1414.

King Henrie defieth the K. of France.

But as greateſt dangers are then moſt frequent, when ſecuritie ſeemeth to baniſh all feare: ſo when King *Henrie* perſwaded himſelfe, that he was moſt ſure, aud ſafe, in the middeſt of his braue armie: euen then hee was in a greater hazard of his life, then if hee had beene in *France*, among the throngs of his mortall, and profeſſed Enemies. For *Richard* Earle of *Cambridge* brother to the Duke of *Yorke*, and *Henrie* Lord *Scrope*, and Sir *Thomas Gray* (three of the moſt approued Captaines of this Kingdome) being treacherouſly engaged by great rewards, conferred on them by the Dolphin of *France*: conſpired to deliuer him into the *French* Kings hands; or elſe to murder him in his owne Tent.

Treaſon againſt King Henrie.

The treaſon is diſcouered.

Miraculouſly was this intended villanie reuealed to the King, who grieued the more thereat; becauſe hee ſhould want the aidefull aſſiſtance of three ſuch valiant men of Warre, as gaue him much aſſurance of good ſucceſſe. But when they were apprehended, and brought into his preſence, their open confeſſion of that conſpiracie, and treaſon (which otherwiſe would fully haue beene proued againſt them) haſtned their publike ſentence of death, and (as Traytors) they were executed the next day.

The traytors are executed.

The King landeth with his army in Normandie. Harflew beſieged, and taken.

Aſſoone as the wind ſerued, the King tranſported his armie in an hundred and fortie ſhippes, and landed in *Normandie* before *Hareflew*, vpon the Riuer of *Seyne*, and beſieged it on euerie part for the ſpace of ſeuen and thirtie dayes. And though the *French* army, which was conducted by the Dolphin, made manie faire proffers

to

to raiſe the ſiege, yet durſt they not come too neere. But the Towne hauing beene manie times ſharply aſſaulted, was yeelded to King *Henrie*: who ſacked it, and ranſomed the inhabitants, and with great plentie of ſiluer, and of Gold, and manie coſtly thinges, he enriched all his owne Companies; and (hauing placed as Captaine there, his Vncle *Thomas* Duke of *Exeter*; and as his Lieuetenant Sir *Iohn Faſtolf*, with fifteene hundred ſouldiers, and fiue and thirtie gallant Knights, he reſolued to go vnto *Callice* by land; & to reſt there, becauſe the winter (being now more wet, & approching ſooner at that time then vſually it was accuſtomed) infected manie of his men with grieuous fluxes, and ſtrange feuers: and occaſioned the death of the Earle of *Stafford*, of the Biſhop of *Norwich*, and of the Lords of *Molines*, and of *Burnel*, and of more then fifteene hundred men.

Great ſicknes in king Henries Armie.

And (notwithſtanding, that ſickneſſe and manie wants afflicted his armie) yet king *Henrie* marched with great confidence and reſolution through the bowels of thoſe Countries, in deſpight of the *French* forces, who only made proud brags, and faire ſhewes of encounters: But (like vnto hunted, and affrighted Deere) gazed a farre off vpon the *Engliſh* armie, yet dared not by handie ſtrokes, to make the leaſt triall of their valour, albeit King *Henries* ſtrength did then conſiſt only of two thouſand Horſemen, and of thirteene thouſand Archers, and no more. Manie of which number wanted health, meat, wood, and reſt, and had not anie plentie of anie thing ſauing only of Siluer, and of Gold, which could not (in that place) ſupply vnto them ſuch thinges, as moſt of all they needed.

The French dare not to incounter with King Henrie in his March.

Thirteene thouſand men.

Siluer and Gold did no pleaſure to the Engliſh Armie.

The Dolphin of *France* to whom the mannaging of thoſe wars was committed (hauing aſſembled more then thirtie thouſand fighting men) ſaw that hee was much diſhonoured by his owne cowardize, and leſt he ſhould be infamous among his own people, he determined to giue battaile to King *Henrie*: but his fainting ignoble heart, being terrified, and his courage paſſing in poſt out at his heeles, ſuffered him not to attempt anie thing, ſo that King *Henrie* ſtill marched on-wards, burning, and ſpoiling, and doing in his paſſage whatſoeuer himſelfe beſt liked.

The Dolphin braggeth, but doth not any thing.

The *French* king (who lay at *Roan*) was highly diſcontented, for that the *Engliſh* armie (vnfought with) had proudly paſſed ouer the Riuer of *Soame*) wherefore hee entred into a ſerious conſultation concerning thoſe buſineſſes, with fiue and thirtie of his diſcreeteſt, and wiſeſt Counſellors: and the queſtion was; *Whether it were better to giue Battaile to the Engliſh Armie, or (for that time) to giue King* Henrie *a free march, without reſiſtance, vnto Callice?* By

The French King taketh Counſell.

The queſtion.

thirtie of that number, it was aduiſed, and concluded on, that they ſhould be fought with, but the other fiue vrged manie ſubſtantial reaſons, and arguments, to maintaine the contrarie. But they were not hearkned vnto. So the *French* king incontinently, by his Herald at Armes ſent a defiance to K. *Henrie*, and promiſed that within few dayes, he would trie his beſt ſtrength by handie ſtrokes in the open field. King *Henrie* (with a Princely boldneſſe and magnanimitie) returned him this anſwere, That becauſe his armie was afflicted with much ſicknes, and manie wants; he bended his courſe directly to his Towne of *Callice*, where hee would goe and refreſh himſelfe, and his companies, and would not therefore (at that time) ſeeke the *French* King. But if hee endeuoured, and dared to interrupt him in his paſſage, he was of ſufficient force and ſtrength to repell all violence, which the *French* Nation ſhould oppoſe againſt him.

The King is defied, and a Battaile promiſed.

King Henries diſcrete anſwere.

When this anſwere was returned, the *French* King (by his Proclamations) cauſed manie thouſand men at armes, and valiant Souldiors, to repaire to the Conſtable of *France*, to fight for honor and for their Countrie with king *Henrie:* who being informed, that the day drew neere in which the *Frenchmen* intended to giue him battaile; placed his Armie in good order and array, betwixt the Townes of *Blangie*, and of *Agencourt*, within the Countie of Saint *Paul*.

The Battaile of Agencourt

1414

This being done, the Conſtable of *France*, being brauely accompanied with diuers great and honourable perſonages, well experienced Captaines, and luſtie men of warre, to the number of threeſcore thouſand on horſebacke; beſides his Footmen, Pages, Waggoners, and other attendants; approched neere to the *Engliſh* armie; and placed them in good order of battaile, and in the night time they made great fires about their ſtandard, diſpoſed themſelues to extraordinarie mirth, and jollitie, and made ſuch ſure account of the Victorie on the next day (by reaſon of their great numbers, and for that the *Engliſh* forces were ſo ſmall, ſo weake, and ſickly) that they fell to the caſting of lots for ſuch priſoners as they would take.

The number of the French Armie.

How the French Armie paſſed the night.

They reckoned without their Hoſte.

The Engliſhmens reſolution.

And on the other ſide, king *Henrie* and his people hauing humbly reconciled themſelues to God, and by repentance, and by publike and priuate prayer, purchaſed the happie contentment of quiet conſciences, ſounded their trumpets and muſicall inſtruments of all ſorts, and were reſolued to ſell their liues deare, and to die like men, ſeeing that now they were vnable, by anie meanes (excepting only by the ſword) to worke vnto themſelues any deliuerance from infamie, and from death.

Vpon

Vpon friday being the fiue and twentieth day of October, the Lord *Dalabreth* High Conſtable of *France*, arranged all his companies into three battailes. *The Lord Dalabreth.*

1. In the firſt, he placed eight thouſand wel-armed Knights, and Eſquires; foure thouſand Archers, and fifteene hundred Croſbowes: and ſtrongly garded them with two wings. The one of them conſiſted of fifteene hundred men at armes; and the other, of eight hundred. And this battaile, and theſe wings, were commanded by himſelfe, and by the Dukes of *Orleance*, and of *Burbon*, and by the Earles of *Ewe*, *Richmond*, and *Vandeſme*, and by the Lord *Dampier*, Admirall of *France*, and by the Marſhal *Bouciqualt*, and manie others. *The firſt Battaile of the French.*

2. In the middle battaile were placed more men at armes, than in the former: and it was commaunded by the Dukes of *Barre* and of *Alanſon*, and by the Earles of *Vawdemont*, *Salings*, *Blamont*, *Grant-Preé*, and *Ruſſie*. *The middle Battaile of the French.*

3. And the third battaile (being compoſed of all the remnant) was marſhalled; and guided by the Earles of *Marke*, *Damp-Martin*, and of *Fawlconbridge*, and by the Lord *Lurrey* Captaine of the Towne of *Arde*. *The Rere battaile of the French.*

And on the other ſide the Vauntgard of King *Henrie*, which conſiſted of good Archers only, was conducted by the Duke of *Yorke*: who being right valiant, and of an hautie courage, by great entreatie obtained that place; and with him, were the Lords of *Beamond*, *Willoughby*, and of *Fanhope*. *King Henries vantgard*

The maine battaile was commanded by the King himſelfe: in which were his ſtrongeſt bil-men, and ſome archers: and with him were the Duke of *Gloceſter* his brother, the Earle Marſhall, *Oxford*, and of *Suffolke*. *King Henries maine Battaile.*

And the Reareward was directed by *Thomas* Duke of *Exeter*, the Kings Vncle. And all the Horſemen (as wings) attended all theſe companies on both ſides. *The Kings Rereward.*

And to preuent by pollicie ſuch breaches, as otherwiſe the *French* Horſemen might ſuddenly make vpon the *Engliſh* armie with their barred Steeds, whileſt the archers were buſily performing their taske: king *Henrie* cauſed all his Footmen, to bee enuironed with ſtakes of fiue or ſixe foot long; which being well headded with ſharp Iron at both ends, were thickly pitched into the Earth, and eaſily might (vpon euerie remoue) bee newly faſtned into the ground, by ſuch as were appointed to attend them. *Stakes driuen into the ground behind the Engliſh Armie.*

King *Henrie* (vpon his truſt in the mercifull aide and aſſiſtance of

This Ambuſh of Archers was a principall meanes of the victorie

of Almightie God, and vpon a ſtrong hope which hee conceiued, of braue ſeruice to be performed that day) had ſecretly placed a luſtie crew of good Archers within a new caſt hedge, by which the *French* Horſemen were to make way towardes the *Engliſh* armie. And theſe were commanded to ſhoot wholly, and together, when a valiant and wel-experienced Knight, named Sir *Walter Harpington*, by the caſting vp of his Gauntlet, ſhould occaſion the whole Armie of the *Engliſhmen* to ſhout with a mightie crie. And this direction was ſo well obſerued, that when the *French* Horſemen were paſſed within the danger of that ambuſh, and attempted to giue the firſt onſet; vpon the ſaid ſigne and ſhout, the ſaid archers dimmed the aire with the thickneſſe of their ſtrong flying arrowes: and the *French* Horſmen by meanes of the height of the ſaid banke, and depth of the ditch within it, were not able to come neere vnto them.

Valiant and ſtrong Archers.

The firſt Battaile of the Frenchmen is ouerthrowne.

The *Engliſh* archers likewiſe, who ſerued in the Vauntgard, ſo ſtrongly fixed their ſhot in the *French* Horſes, that manie of them being wounded, and the arrowes ſhaking in their fleſh, threw off their riders to the ground; and other ſome of them, with violence ranne vpon ſuch as rode next vnto them; and the reſt of them, in ſuch diſordered troupes, and plumps, ſo furiouſly and ſo madly retired, that they thereby not only were diſordered, but their footmen alſo; who were oppreſſed, wounded, and miſerably ſlaine, and trodden to death by them. Which when the *Engliſh* armie well perceiued: the archers threw away their Bowes, and with Malls, Axes, Swords, Gleaues, and Bils, they made an incredible ſlaughter vpon the firſt battaile of the *Frenchmen*: which by them were vtterly diſcomforted, and put to flight. And (without breathing, or the leaſt delay) they ranne fiercely vpon the middle battaile of the *French* armie: who fought with great courage, and reſolution; and for a while acquited themſelues as valiant men.

The maine Battaile is aſſaulted by the Engliſh.

The *French* Horſemen of that battaile, ſcorning that ſo ſmall a number of their Enemies ſhould worke ſuch wonders: and intending by ſudden violence, to make quicke diſpatch of them; beganne to charge vpon them with great courage. The *Engliſhmen* (the better to ſaue themſelues, and to traine the *French* Horſemen within the danger of their ſtakes) ſeemed faint. Yet in good order they retired, and quickly ſlipped behinde their ſtakes: ſo that the *Frenchmen* (who made more haſt then good ſpeede to ouer-throw the *Engliſhmen*) ruſhed ignorantly, and violently forwarde; not hurting their Enemies, but goring, ſpoyling, and killing of their Horſes in great numbers. And thus was their maine battaile diminiſhed

The French Horſes are goared on the ſtakes.

ſhed, and altogether put out of order, and good gouernment. Which when the *Engliſhmen* ſaw: they hautily aduanced their ſpirits, and confidently redoubled their ſtrength: and with rude and hardie blowes, they ruſhed forth ſo egarly vpon the *Frenchmen*, that they compelled them to flie. In this encounter, the King himſelfe fought hand to hand, with the Duke of *Alanſon*, and was by him, wel-neere taken Priſoner. But his high ſtomacke diſdaining to ſtoop to fortune, and to looſe the leaſt iot of honour: he encouraged himſelfe with a more conſtant reſolution. So that (in the end) he ſlew two of the Dukes neereſt attendants with his owne hand; and felled him to the ground. But whileſt the King paſſionately laboured and ſtriued to ſaue his life; hee was vnaduiſedly ſlaine by his Guard.

The maine battaile of the French vanquiſhed.

The Kings valour.

The Duke of Alanſon ſlain.

Aſſoone as theſe two battailes were thus ouerthrowne, the king (abandoning all lingring and delay: and ſetling his hopes vpon the aſſurance of an honourable victorie) made offer, with his whole Companies, to enuiron the third and laſt battaile of the *Frenchmen*: In which were the greateſt number, but the worſt men. But their courage was ſo cooled, that (like vnto Sheepe before the Wolfe) they cowardly ranne away, caſting from them their armour and their weapons: and (being ſtrangely amazed; and not knowing which waie to runne, to ſaue themſelues) great numbers of them fell vpon their knees, and craued mercie, and the preſeruation of their liues; and were receiued as priſoners by the *Engliſh* armie, by the Kings conſent.

The third battaile of the Frenchmen flie.

But whileſt King *Henrie* was thus buſied, and (to purſue the Chace) had left his owne Campe, and Tents, meanly and weakly garded, & defended, by Waggoners, and by Lackies only: *Robinet* of *Bonuile*, with ſix hundred of thoſe Horſemen who firſt of all acquited the field, entred into the Kings Campe; and rifled all things at their pleaſure, and ſlew as manie of the weake Garders as they could: by meanes whereof, a ſtrong outcrie was ſuddenly made there: which when the King heard, hee imagined, that freſh and new forces intended to giue him an other battaile, and to trie him with an other ſtrength.

An vnfortunate ſeruice for the French Priſoners.

This conceit, and this fearing doubt; occaſioned him forthwith to proclaime, that (on paine of death) all ordinarie Priſoners ſhould be ſlaine, leaſt (in the new conflict) they ſhould bee troubleſome and dangerous to his armie. Then was there ſeene a ſorrowfull ſpectacle of much vnexpected crueltie. For ſome of their throats were cut: the bellies of others were ſo lanced, that their guttes fell out: the braines of others were daſhed abroad with Malls, and Axes

The French priſoners are miſerably ſlaine.

Feare enforced this crueltie.

Axes: others with Daggers were ſtabbed, and with Swords thruſt through; and finally, almoſt all of them (vpon a ſodaine) were (with much enforced crueltie) put to death; whereat the King conceiued extraordinarie griefe, and ſorrow, and lamented it with many teares, when he perfectly vnderſtood, that no freſh army was prepared to aſſaile him.

King Henries prouidence againſt future danger.

The King, though he perceiued well, and did perfectly know, that his Souldiers were much tired and wearied with the great trauels of that victorious day: yet (doubting of the worſt) hee arranged his whole armie into a new battaile, becauſe he was informed, that an other enterpriſe againſt him was taken in hand. And aſſoone as he was fitly prouided to defend himſelfe; he was aſſailed by the Earles of *Marle*, and of *Faulconbridge*, and ſixe hundred valiant men at armes; who had kept together, and had not fought one ſtroke that day. But as a ſmall, and a weake veſſell, is quickly ſwallowed vp into a wrathfull Sea: ſo this poore handful was by and by cruſhed, and almoſt euerie one of them was ſlaine.

Another victorie did attend him.

Afterwardes, when King *Henrie* (by his Scoutes) receiued certaine intelligence, that euerie Coaſt about him was cleare, and that ſuch of his Enemies, as were couragious, and would fight lay dead vpon the ground, and none were ſo hardie as to ſhew their faces: the king (about foure of the clocke in the afternoone of the ſame day) cauſed his whole armie (vpon their knees) to ioyne with him in heartie prayer, and in thankfulneſſe vnto Almightie God; who only, and alone, by his powerfull aid and aſſiſtance, had giuen to him, and them, a moſt incredible and a glorious Victorie. This dutie being thus deuoutly accompliſhed; the common ſouldiours, had franke leaue and licence granted them, to rifle thoſe whome they had ſlaine. By meanes whereof they not only waxed rich, but alſo ſtored themſelus with al ſuch neceſſaries, and prouiſions as before they wanted: and then the King marched forward; and with much ioy, and great honour, was receiued into his ſtrong towne of *Callice*. In this battaile, were ſlaine *Charles* Lord *Delabreth* high Conſtable of *France*; *Iaques* of *Chaſtilion* Lord of *Dampier* High Admirall of *France*, *Iohn* Duke of *Alenſon*, *Anthonie* Duke of *Brabant*, *Edward* Duke of *Barre*; the Earles of *Marle*, *Vawdemont*, *Blawmount*, *Grand-preé*, *Ruſſey*, *Fawlconbridge*, *Foys*, and *Laſtrake*: twentie and fiue Lords; eight thouſand Knights, and Eſquires, and Gentlemen of armes, and name: and about ſixteene hundred of the common ſort: beſides thoſe who were taken, and remained priſoners: among whom theſe were the chief: *Charles* Duke of *Orleance*: *Iohn* Duke of *Burbon*: the lords of *Donuart*, *Foſſeux*, *Humiers*, *Roy*, *Cawny*, *Hamcourt*, *Noell*,

The King & his Armie giue thankes to God for their great victorie.

The ſpoiles.

The French Nobles who were ſlaine.

Priſoners taken.

Noell, *Bonciqualt*, and ſome others. And on the other part were ſlaine *Edward* Duke of *Yorke*, and the Earle of *Suffolke*; and of all others, not aboue ſix hundred perſons.

The ſlaine Engliſhmen.

When King *Henrie* and his ſouldiours had a while refreſhed themſelues in *Callice*, they tooke ſhipping: and being enriched with Siluer, Gold, and braue and coſtly Armours, they all arriued ſafely in *England*; and the King was receiued into *London* triumphantly and with much joy.

The King with his armie arriue in England.

When the *French* king and the *Dolphin* were informed of the ſaid great and inſupportable ouerthrow; it is not to be wondered at, if melancholie paſſions and much griefe ſurcharged them to the verie heart, and made them doubtfull of the euent of this buſineſſe. But the ſlaughter of the *French* priſoners, fooliſhly occaſioned by the baſe attempt of *Robynet* of *Bonuyle*, and of his companions, who cowardly ranſacked the *Engliſh* Campe and the kings Tents in the heat and furie of the aforeſaid Battaile, perplexed them more than all the reſt: but eſpecially the *Dolphin*; who impriſoned the Ringleaders of that follie, and would haue ſentenced them to death, if ſuddainely himſelfe had not after died: whoſe death much amazed the weake and much diſeaſed *French* King. But making a vertue of neceſſitie, and intending by ſome prouident courſe to preuent ſuch miſchiefes which future attempts did threaten, he made the Earle of *Arminack* (who was a ſtout and a warlike Captaine) High Conſtable of *France*, and placed in his other great martiall Offices none but ſuch, as by their valour and good tryall had made beſt proofe of their ſufficiencie to performe them. Theſe newly eſtabliſhed Officers leuied manie companies of the moſt able and ſtouteſt men in ſundrie places of that kingdome.

Robynet of Bonuyle, and his complices, impriſoned.

The Dolphin dieth.

The Earle of Arminake is made High Conſtable of France.

New French Officers.

And at the ſame time, the Kings vncle *Thomas* Duke of *Exeter*, and Captaine of *Hareflew* (intending to exerciſe his ſouldiors in feates of Warre, and by ſome ſuddaine ſeruice both to enrich them, to winne honour to himſelfe, and to endamage his enemies) iſſued out of that Towne with three thouſand men, well armed to the proofe, and marched through thoſe Countries, burning, rifling, and ſpoyling, vntill hee came almoſt to the Citie of *Roan*: where hee was encountred by the new Conſtable of *France*; who with fiue thouſand horſemen (hauing a reſolution in this exploit to winne his Spurres) ſo ſharpely charged the Duke and his followers, that hee compelled him (though in good order, and with little loſſe) to retyre. But the *Frenchmen* (determining their vtter ouerthrow) purſued them ſtill with eager ſpirits, vntill they came almoſt

Thomas duke of Exeter his gallant ſeruice.

The new Conſtable is ouerthrowne.

almoſt to the Barriers of *Harflew*: which when the reſt of the *Engliſhmen*, who were within the Towne, perceiued, they iſſued forth in good order, joyned with the Dukes companies: and then they all, with their entire ſtrength, ſo furiouſly oppoſed themſelues againſt the Conſtable and his Aſſociates, that (with the ſlaughter of manie of their horſes and ſouldiors) they were enforced to flie away, and were chaſed by the *Engliſh* Victors more than two myles: and diuers of them, who were taken priſoners, could not obtaine their libertie, vntill they had procured it with large Ranſomes.

Sigiſmond the Emperor in vaine mediateth a peace.

About this time, *Sigiſmond* the Emperour of *Germanie* came into *England*, endeuouring to conclude a friendly peace betwixt *England* and *France*. His heartie welcome and his great entertainment liberally ſorted with the high calling of ſo great a Prince. But his motion was barren and fruitleſſe of good ſpeeding. In his departure, the King accompanied him to *Callice*; from whence hee returned home. And thither (vpon honourable hoſtages) repaired to King *Henrie* the Duke of *Burgoine*; and betwixt them a friendly peace, concerning onely the Counties of *Flanders* and of *Arthois*, was concluded. For which matter, the Duke was had in great jealouſie, and ſuſpected to be a ſecret enemie to the Crowne of *France*.

The Duke of Burgoine is ſuſpected by the French King.

Not long after, the new Conſtable of *France* with a ſtrong armie vpon the Land, and *Iohn* Vicount *Narbon*, Vice-admirall of *France*, with fiue hundred ſhips, at the mouth of the Riuer of *Seyne* beſieged *Harflew* on euerie ſide; and made little doubt to winne it in few weekes. But when King *Henrie* was aduertized in what ſort the Towne and his Subiects were diſtreſſed; with extraordinarie care and expedition hee leuied a powerfull armie, and tranſported it thither in two hundred warlike and ſtrong ſhippes: of theſe, hee made Generall his brother *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford*; and aſſociated to him (in that expedition) the Earles of *March*, *Oxford*, *Huntingdon*, *Arondel*, *Salisburie*, and *Deuonſhire*, and manie Barons, Knights, and Gentlemen of great valour and much worth.

4.
1415.
Harflew beſieged by the French.

The Engliſh Nauie doe ouerthrow the French Fleet, conſiſting of 500. ſhippes.

Iohn Duke of Bedford rayſeth the ſiege.

The Duke (ſhortly after his departure) being happily conducted by a pleaſing wind, fell vpon the *French* fleet, who in the view of the Towne of *Harflew* fought couragiouſly, as men reſolued to winne honour. But being vnable to make good what they intended, they were at length vtterly vanquiſhed and ouerthrowne, with an incredible ſlaughter of their men: and great numbers of them, being taken, were ſent Priſoners into *England*. And thus was the Towne of *Harflew* happily reſcued, and deliuered from the *Frenchmen*.

For

For when the Conſtable perceiued, that all their Sea-forces were defeated, and, in a manner, conſumed; hee rayſed his Siege, and (with a heauie heart) marched diſhonorably vnto *Paris:* and the Duke of *Bedford* (hauing new victualled, manned, and fortified the Towne) returned with great applauſe, and much honor, into *England.*

Secret quarrellings among the French Nobilitie.

Theſe diſaſterous misfortunes ruſhing euerie day vpon the *French* Nation, rather animated the Nobilitie of *France* to ſeeke meanes to reuenge their priuate quarrels and grudges one againſt the other; then, as prouident and worthie Peeres, to vnite their forces for the defence and protection of their Countrey: by means whereof, a wide Gappe was opened to King *Henrie* (with leſſer danger) to attempt great matters againſt the Peace and Eſtate of that Kingdome. And (to further his deſignes in thoſe Negotiations) hee aſſembled his High Court of Parliament at *Weſtminſter:*

King Henrie fares the better.

In which, he himſelfe pithily and effectually diſcouered his Right and Title to the Crowne of *France*; the often Injuries which the *Frenchmen* had done from time to time to the *Engliſh* Nation; his bleſſed and fortunate Succeſſes in thoſe Warres; the new Diſſentions and ſecret reuengefull Grudges which diuided the hearts and the ſtrength of the *Frenchmen*; and his vndoubted hopes of winning both honour and profit: if by the ſufficient diſburſement of Money and of Treaſure his preparations might be furthered and ſupported with all ſpeed.

A Parliamẽt.

The Kings Speech.

This Speech (being graciouſly and artificially contriued) was ſo plauſible and pleaſing, and the Kings heroicall intendements were ſo well receiued and digeſted by all ſorts of people, who were then preſent; that not onely a great ſumme of money (with franke and free conſent) was granted to him; but the ſame was quickly leuied with great loue and much eaſe.

Great ſums of monie quickly and cheerefully raiſed.

The King (being much encouraged in his *French* buſineſſe, by the forward bountie of his louing ſubjects) prepared a ſtrong Fleet; furniſhed it with men, and all things needfull; and embarked therein a ſtrong Armie of luſtie experienced ſouldiors: but ſent before him, to skowre the Seas, *Iohn* Earle of *Huntingdon*, ſonne to that Duke of *Exeter*, who was beheaded in the daies of King *Henrie* the fourth. This luſtie Gallant being at all points readily prouided, met (luckily) with nine Carricks of *Genoa*, which (for money) were waged to ſerue the *French* King: with thoſe he encountred, and fought ſtoutly, yet (for a while) with variable hopes of the ſucceſſe: but in the end hee ſunke into the Sea ſix of them, and tooke the other three, being ſtored with great ſtore

Another victorie at ſea by Iohn Holland Earle of Huntingdon.

of Money and much Treaſure, and brought them, with his priſoners, to the King.

The King with his Armie landed in Normandy

This argument of good ſpeeding much encouraged King *Henrie*; who with his copious Armie of gallant and luſtie Lads departed out of *England*, and landed ſafely in *Normandie*, before the ſtrong Caſtle of *Tonque*: which by him was beſieged and wonne by ſtrong aſſaults; and yet hee receiued the beſiedged to his mercie.

Tonque is taken by aſſault

The Normans flye into the walled Townes.

When the *Normans* knew that King *Henrie* was arriued in their Countrie, and of his taking of that Caſtle, they fled as men amazed (with bagge and baggage) into their walled Townes; and ſo did all the ſouldiors which were placed euerie where for the defence and protection of thoſe Countries: ſo that (without reſiſtance) King *Henrie* marched forth, and pitched before the Citie of *Cane*;

The Citie of Cane is beſieged.

which was exceedingly well manned, and throughly prouided of Victuals, Armour, and Munition of all ſorts, for manie moneths. Diuers aſſaults were fiercely made, and the walls were oftentimes skaled, with deſperate reſolution, by the *Engliſh*; and the *Normans* with no leſſe valour and ſtout courage defended the Towne, to the great damage of their enemies, vntill, at length, King *Henrie* (to ſaue the liues of manie valiant men, who otherwiſe muſt needes haue died in that Seruice) proclaimed Mercie to the beſieged, if they would yeeld. But their hopes to bee relieued, and the truſt which they repoſed in their owne valour, perſuaded them to refuſe all compoſitions whatſoeuer. Whereupon many terrible aſſaults were fiercely made, and repulſed: The walls of the Citie were in many places vndermyned; the *Engliſhmen*, with vndaunted courage, ruſhed into the Towne, partly through the walls, and partly ouer them: ſo that in the end, although the *Normans* (to their continuall praiſe and commendation) performed the parts of worthie and faithfull ſouldiors: yet their Towne was wonne; and all of them forſaking their armour and their weapons, fell vpon their knees, and humbly craued mercie of the King. Which was not by and by granted to them, becauſe they had obſtinately refuſed it before; yet ſome refreſhing words of comfort gladded their heauie hearts, ſo that they hoped the worſt was paſt.

The Citie refuſeth all compoſitions.

Cane taken by aſſaults.

Then the King cauſed all the Townesmens Armour to be heaped together in the Market place, and to be defended by a ſtrong Guard: which being done, with all the reſidue of his Armie hee entred, with great ſolemnitie and reuerence, into the chiefeſt Church, and on their knees, with true humilitie and deuotion, they

Thanks giuen vnto God.

they yeelded their heartie thanks vnto Almightie GOD for that Victorie.

This dutie being thus performed, and ſtrong Watches being placed in euerie quarter of the Citie; the King (vpon the next morning) aſſembled all the inhabitants at their Senate or Councell-houſe; where, he cenſured the principals of ſuch as obſtinately refuſed his fauour when it was offered, to ſundrie deaths; fined and ranſomed others, and diuided the riches and the beſt things which were found there, among his ſouldiors: who, in thoſe aſſaults, had made ſufficient triall of their vndaunted courage and bold valour.

Townesmen executed.

The ſouldiors are enriched.

At this time the Earle of *Armínack*, High Conſtable of *France*, together with *Charles* the Dolphin (who was much grieued for his troubled Countrey) propoſed to themſelues ſundrie projects for the defeating of King *Henrie*: and finding the want of money to be their chiefeſt impediment, the Dolphin (by the Conſtables aduiſe) tooke from the Queene, his mother, a great Maſſe of ſiluer and of gold, which for many yeares ſhe had ſcraped, ſcratched, and hoorded vp together.

The Dolphin wanting money, taketh it from the Queene his mother.

This Act ſo inwardly vexed and enraged the Queene, that in her heart ſhe vowed to be reuenged vpon them both: and knowing that *Iohn*, the Duke of *Burgoine*, was their capitall and greateſt enemie, eſpecially to the Conſtable of *France*; and becauſe the king her husband, by much ſickneſſe, was weakened both in his bodie and in his vnderſtanding; ſhe procured him to be made and to be eſtabliſhed the Protector of the Kings Perſon, and the Regent of his whole kingdome.

She voweth deepe reuenge

She procureth Iohn Duke of Burgoine to be Regent & Protector.

Now when the ſaid Duke had obtained this authoritie and power, he forthwith reſolued to reuenge his old diſpleaſures vpon the ſaid Conſtable, and afterwards to bend his whole ſtrength againſt king *Henrie*.

He intendeth reuengement on the Conſtable.

The Dolphin likewiſe and the Conſtable employed their chiefeſt care how they might enfeeble the new Regent and his adherents; and to oppoſe themſelues againſt the *Engliſh* forces, it was their ſmalleſt thought. So blind is Enuie, and ſo reuengefull is proud Ambition, that the Countries good is nothing at all reſpected, when men reſolue to purſue their priuat hatred and contention: And hereby all men might plainely ſee, That theſe diſſentions and theſe diſcords did more further the *Engliſh* Armie in their proceedings, than did their owne policie and their owne ſtrength. For the *Normans* being vtterly diſmayed, and hopeleſſe to be aſſiſted, becauſe the Malice which bare ſway among the *French* Nobi-

The Dolphin and the Conſtable arme their wits againſt the Regent.

This Diſcord furthered King Henries proceedings.

litie was too too great; fled as men amazed (and as not being the commanders of their owne wits) from place to place, from village to village, and from towne to towne: and, in the meane time, the *Engliſh* Armie commanded as it pleaſed.

King Henries proclamation.

King *Henrie* beholding their feare, and ſeeking rather to winne their Caſtles, Townes, and Cities by Policie, than by the Sword, proclaymed in all places, That ſuch of them as would yeeld, and ſweare to become his ſubjects, ſhould not onely enjoy freely all their Lands, Goods, Liberties, and Liues, but ſhould alſo bee protected and defended by his ſtrength, and be receiued into his Princely loue.

The greateſt Townes in Normandie are yeelded to King Henrie.

This practiſe quickly procured the ſurrendring into his hands, without blowes, the ſtrong Townes of *Alanſon*, *Argenton*, *Boyeux*, *Camboy*, *Conde*, *Crewly*, *Eſſay*, *Faloys*, *Thorygny*, and *Vermoyle*: And vnto the kings brother, the Duke of *Clarence*, were quietly yeelded the Townes of *Auellyers*, *Barney*, *Bethelvyn*, *Chambroys*, *Cowrton*, *Crevener*, *Fangermon*, *Freſhney*, *Harcort*, *Lyſoeux*, and *Ragles*. And into the hands of the kings other brother, the Duke of *Gloceſter*, were giuen vp and deliuered theſe Townes in the Countie of *Conſtantine*; that is to ſay, *Auranclies*, *Briquevile*, *Cuventon*, *Chiergurge*, *Conſtance*, *Hambery*, *Hay du Pays*, *Pontorſon*, *Pontdone*, *S. Sauior*, *S. Iames*, *S. Clow*, *Vire*, and *Valoignes*: in all which, the king and his brothers placed valiant *Engliſh* Captaines & ſtrong Garriſons to defend them, if the *French* ſhould attempt to regaine them to his owne power.

King Henrie fortifieth all thoſe Townes.

Cane is repaired and fortified.

The Citie of *Cane* alſo was newly repaired, fortified, and inhabited by *Engliſh* ſouldiors and traders of all ſorts, Sir *Gilbert Vmfreuyle* being made Captaine of the Caſtle, Sir *Gilbert Talbot* of the Towne, and Sir *Iohn Popham* was made Bailife there.

6
1417.

Roan is walled round.

Whileſt King *Henrie* and his companies were thus buſied in *Normandie*; hee was informed, That the Citizens of *Roan* had compaſſed their Citie with a ſtrong wall, and had ſtrengthened it with extraordinarie Fortifications, Towers, Bulwarkes, and Ditches, and that the whole Wealth and Treaſure of a great part of the Countries round about it was brought thither. Whereupon he marched with his whole Armie towards that Citie: and in his paſſage, by ſtrong aſſaults, he tooke *Pontlarch*, *Louyers*, and *Eureux*, and came before the ſtrong Citie of *Roan* the laſt day of Iuly, and compaſſed it round about vpon the Land parts with a ſtrong ſiege: And at *Pontl'arch* he placed ouer the Riuer, vpon Pyles, a mightie Chayne of Iron and a Woodden Bridge, which prohibited all ſuccours (by water) to come vnto the Citie.

The countries treaſure is brought into Roan.

Roan is beſieged by land and by water.

And

And the Earle of *Warwike* hauing the command of an hundred gallant ſhippes, well manned, victualled, and prouided for the Warre; entred into the Riuers mouth, and came before the Towne of *Cawdebeck*: and ſo fiercely preſſed on it, that by way of compoſition they ſuffered him quietly to paſſe towards *Roan*, with faithfull promiſe to yeeld it into King *Henries* hands, if hee fortuned to winne *Roan*: but if hee did not; then to giue the ſaid Earle and his whole Fleet a ſafe and a peaceable returne. And for the due performance thereof, they ſent him ſufficient hoſtages; whom he receiued louingly, and carried them with him before *Roan*. Thus was this Citie girded round about on euerie part, ſo that no man could paſſe in or out.

Cawdebeck giueth paſſage to the Engliſh fleet.

Conditions.

Hoſtages.

At this Siege, there repaired voluntarily to the King, the Lord of *Kylmay* of *Ireland*, with ſixteene hundred tall, luſtie, ſwift, and ſtrong men of that Nation, they all beeing cloathed in Coats of Mayle, and armed with Darts, whom the King entertained cheerefully, and was extraordinarily furthered by their help and aſſiſtance in thoſe his Expeditions.

1600 Iriſhmen repaire to the King, and doe him great ſeruice.

Daily the King gaue terrible aſſaults vnto the Citie, which with admirable reſolution and manlike valour was brauely defended by the *Normans*. But when force and violence preuailed not, the king to ſpare his men (and becauſe hee vnderſtood, That there were aboue two hundred and tenne thouſand men, women, and children within the Towne) determined, if he might, to gaine it by famine without blowes. For which purpoſe, he caſt a deepe Ditch about the Land parts of the Citie, and pitched it plentifully with ſharpe ſtakes, and guarded them with his Archers; ſo that the inhabitants could not iſſue out, eyther to offend him, or to relieue themſelues.

The Towne aſſaulted and defended.

210000 ſouls in Roan.

The King intends to win Roan by famine.

The Kings fortifications.

Thus this Siege continued, from *Lammas* vntill the whole *Chriſtmas* was ended: during which time, the Famine ſo grieuouſly encreaſed, that the Citizens dranke nothing but vineger and water, and multitudes of them were enforced to prolong their liues, by eating of Rattes, Mice, Cattes, Dogges, Horſes, and ſuch like. Great numbers alſo of the poorer ſort vncharitably were thruſt out of the Citie, becauſe they ſpent their victuals, and could not fight: and becauſe they were not ſuffered to paſſe through the *Engliſh* Armie, they miſerably periſhed for want of food betwixt the Gates and the Trenches of their enemies. And vpon New-yeares day (after the Citie had beene long viſited with this famine) there iſſued out at the Bridge-Gate certaine Commiſſioners, who craued conference with ſome man of authoritie in the *Engliſh* Armie:

A great Famine.

The poore are thruſt forth, and die.

Commiſſioners craue conference with the king

mie: vnto whome, the Earle of *Huntingdon* (who was quartered in that part of the Citie) ſent Sir *Gilbert Vmfreuyle:* their errand was, To procure ſpeedie acceſſe and free returne from King *Henrie.*

The commiſſioners repaire to the King.

The King was well pleaſed, that twelue of them ſhould bee kindly entreated, if they came. So, the next morning, foure Knights, foure learned men, and foure of the choiſeſt Burgeſſes of the Towne, being all clothed in blacke, repaired to the King; who beheld them, with a countenance beautified with extraordinarie Majeſtie and Grace: and vnto him one of them boldly ſpake as followeth:

A proud Speech of a Frenchman to King Henrie.

*RE*nowned and great Prince, *the world is taught to know by good Experience, that Kings and Noble Captaines doe winne their chiefeſt Reputation for their valour and for their fortitude, by maſtring and ſubduing of proud enemies and of valiant men by martiall violence, and with the Sword: and that it is, and euer hath beene, a notorious Badge of cowardly baſeneſſe in a Prince, to make them ſeruile by Famine, and by the ſcarſitie of food; in which kind of crueltie there is neither found Manhood to praiſe him, nor Wit, which may in anie ſort commend him. To the end therefore, that your Highneſſe may make your ſelfe equally famous with the greateſt Princes for your generous diſpoſition, in taming of vs, the Souldierie of this Citie, by the Sword; ſuffer (I pray you) the multitude of our diſeaſed and ſick folkes, and the weaker ſort of our men, women, and Children, ſafely and charitably to paſſe through your Armie; and then (if you dare) aſſault our Fortreſſes and our Walls: and if, by your valour, you fortune to become our Lord, you may vſe vs at your pleaſure, and make your ſelf truly and heroically famous among great Men, who doe ſcorne all baſe attempts, and can reliſh nothing but vnſpotted honor.*

When the King (with a troubled mind) had heard and conſidered of this bold bragge, he ſtoutly made this anſwere.

The

The KINGS *diſcreete* ANSVVERE.

FAntaſticall and fond Frenchmen, thinke you, that I am ſo weake a Scholer in the Art of Warre, that I haue not yet learned the Principles in that Science. Are not the Sword, Fire, and Famine, the three Inſtruments with which worthie and renowned Kings, Princes, and the beſt Captaines euer haue done and doe ſtill endeuour to ſubdue their Enemies? Doe not all Hiſtories accord in one, That the greateſt Monarchs, and the Grand Commanders of the World, haue ſtill atchieued their chiefeſt Conqueſts by thoſe three? Is not either of them powerfull and able to torment and to afflict the proudeſt foes? And are they not (all three being ioyned together) of ſufficient force to ouercome and to ouerthrow the greateſt Nation in the world? It was my clemencie and gentleneſſe to forbeare to aſſault your walls, becauſe I would not willingly haſten the death of anie, except they would wilfully further their owne deſtruction: Neither doe I intend to conſume ſo faire a Iewell, as this Citie is, in the fire, becauſe I deſire to preſerue it, the ſame being mine owne Inheritance and my Right. If then I vſe the mildeſt of theſe three, namely Famine, to correct you, and to frame and faſhion you to my will, then may you redeeme your ſelues from her ſeueritie, if you be ſo diſpoſed, by ſurrendring of this mine owne Citie into my hands. Which thing if obſtinately you refuſe to doe, then would I haue you know, That Kings may not bee inſtructed in Martiall Policies by euerie bold companion, who dareth impudently to ſpeake: Neither may they permit a Bookiſh vnexperienced ſouldior to read vnto them a Lecture of warlike proceedings, eſpecially if he be their Enemie, as you are mine. You deſire, nay (ſawcily) you require, That, with my leaue and fauour, your ſick and ſtarued people may paſſe into the Countrey through mine Armie; and that then I ſhould (if I dared) by meane aſſaults attempt the winning of your Towne. The world will wonder at your crueltie; who haue barbarouſly and vncharitably thruſt out of your Gates multitudes of harmeleſſe, poore, and diſtreſſed People, beeing of your owne Bloud, Kindred, and Countrey, to the intent that I ſhould mercileſſely ſlay and conſume them: yet ſuch hath beene my clemencie and gentleneſſe towards them, that oftentimes I haue relieued them with mine owne ſtore. But becauſe I doe now finde, that your obſtinacie is not yet qualified and corrected, I will from henceforth abſtaine from giuing vnto them anie further comfort: and if they periſh with extreame famine, as they needes muſt doe, their bloud will be required by GOD *at your hands, who*

who doe moſt wickedly expoſe them to thoſe calamities; and not at mine, who would willingly preſerue them, if my fauors, in that behalfe, would not hinder mee from the recouering of my Right. Reſolue your ſelues therefore, that ſeeing you remaine ſtill froward, they ſhall not paſſe through mine Armie, but die at your Gates; except (your hearts beeing mollified) you will relieue them, and ſuffer them to ſpend ſome part of your victuals: And when I ſhall ſee cauſe, your Towne ſhall be aſſaulted to your paine. But your aduiſe and directions ſhall not appoint the time, for it ſhall be and reſt wholly and only at my pleaſure. And in the meane time I would haue you know, That he who dareth to enter into, and thus to paſſe through all your Countries; He who hath alreadie taken, though not as large, yet as ſtrong Townes as this; and hee who, by the deſtruction of your Nobles, Captaines, and braueſt men at Armes, hath opened the way thus to beſiege your Towne; dares alſo to aſſault it, and little doubts to winne it when he will.

Thus when the King had ſpoken, and ended his Speech, he commanded, that thoſe *French* Commiſſioners ſhould dine among his great Officers of State, and with a frowning countenance hee departed from them, and went into his chamber.

They deſire to ſpeake with the King againe.

When Dinner was fully ended, vpon a new conſultation had betwixt themſelues, the *Frenchmen* became humble Sutors to ſpeake once more with the King; who gently admitted them to his preſence: and then (with much ſubmiſſion and humilitie) they craued a ſtay from further violence, and a Truce for eight daies, that more deliberate aduiſe might inſtruct them to reſolue what courſe was fitteſt for the Towne to take; the King (who loathed all ſeueritie, if mildneſſe might obtaine him victorie) granted their requeſt: and then they departed (being thereby much comforted) into the Citie.

A Truce granted for eight daies.

Daily and hourely throughout thoſe eight daies the *Frenchmen* reſorted vnto the *Engliſh* Armie, and oftentimes conſulted of thoſe affaires with the Earles of *Warwike* and of *Salisburie*, and with other Commiſſioners appointed by the King. Much was demanded; nothing granted, nor concluded: and yet thoſe eight daies were ſpent.

The eight daies are ſpent.

The Towneſmen againe earneſtly entreated, That the Truce might be prolonged one day more: which was frankly yeelded to them. The ſame day the Multitude and the baſer ſort of the people within the Citie being informed, that nothing was agreed on, with hideous ſhouts, and fearefull cryes and exclamations, accuſed their Magiſtrates, Captaines, and Commanders, and threatned

One day more of Truce craued.

The commons doe mutinie in the Towne.

to

to cut their throats, becauſe (as murderers of their countreymen and brethren) they ſuffered them to ſtarue like dogges; thereby ſupporting the ſtoutneſſe of their owne ſtomacks, and their owne particular eſtates.

The Magiſtrates and the Captaines fearing the euill euent of this vnruly tumult, entreated all the Citizens to repaire into the Market place. Which when they did; they then required of them what they would haue: With one conſent and with one voice they cryed out, That they were reſolued to ſaue their owne liues, by yeelding of the Citie to King *Henrie*.

Vpon this motion, a new Petition was ſent vnto the King, craning the continuance of the Truce for foure daies more: Which requeſt was granted to them: And in the fourth day, being about the nineteenth day of Ianuarie, all matters were ſo throughly concluded and agreed on, That the ſtrong and faire Citie of *Roan*, the Inhabitants themſelues, and all their goods and riches, were yeelded to the Kings mercie.

Roan is yeelded to King Henries mercie.

The rendring of this Citie, and of all the aforeſaid Townes, and manie more, did much perplex and coole the courage of the *Normans*: and the Duke of *Burgoine*, who (with the diſcontentment of the Nobilitie) ruled both the King and his Countries, feared much leaſt theſe diſaſters would be layed vnto his charge. Wherefore, to preuent enſuing dangers, which (as hee ſuſpected) did ſecretly threaten his Eſtate; he reſolued, by his beſt meanes and endeauours, firſt to reconcile the two kings, if poſſibly he could, and then to auenge himſelfe vpon the Dolphin, vpon the Conſtable, and alſo vpon all ſuch others, as he ſuppoſed were moſt likely to do him the greateſt harme.

The Regent plotteth to make peace, and to be reuenged on his enemies.

Vpon the Dukes motion, king *Henrie* with his Nobles and greateſt Commanders, and one thouſand braue and gallant ſouldiors, and the *French* Queene (becauſe the king was weake and vnable) the Ladie *Katherine* his daughter, and the ſaid Duke, with ſome other Noblemen of *France*, accompanied with the like number, met oftentimes, and conſulted much. But whatſoeuer king *Henrie* did demaund, all was denied, and all their trauailes ſorted to no end. Whereat king *Henrie* was much diſpleaſed; and taking leaue, hee told the Duke, That hee would haue the kings daughter, the Ladie *Katherine*, for his Wife; with all ſuch Seigniories, Prouinces, and Countries as hee required: Or otherwiſe, hee would (ere long) driue both his Maſter and him alſo, out of that kingdome.

Many parlies, but nothing concluded.

King Henrie is angrie.

The Duke replyed, That thoſe words were ſpoken with great eaſe;

The Dukes anſwere.

ease; but that he must take much labour and toyle to make them good.

The Dolphin and the Regent outwardly reconciled.

Now, when this practise fayled, the Duke (vpon faire tearmes) reconciled himselfe to the Dolphin. And this their new amitie and friendship was by publike Notaries reduced into a formall Instrument in writing, confirmed with both their Seales; and was proclaymed with great solemnitie in manie Townes in *France*: yet was it fained and vnfirme, as shortly after it appeared.

King Henrie createth Earles in France. Longeuyle, Tankeruyle, Ews.

But this outward Reconciliation contented not King *Henrie*; because hee was right well assured, That their discord and their brawlings would haue giuen an easie passage to his attempts in those Countries: yet (like an vndaunted Prince) hee resolued to trie his further Fortunes with them all. And in hope of future seruice to be honorably performed; he created *Giscoyne de Foys*, Earle of *Longeuyle*; Sir *Iohn Gray*, Earle of *Tankeruyle*; and Sir *Iohn Bourchyer*, Earle of *Ewe*. And then, in close and in secret manner, hee sent Captaine *Bueff*, brother to the said Earle of *Longeuyle*, with fifteene hundred approued men of Warre, to the strong Towne of *Ponthoyse*; who (before the day appeared) with skaling Ladders resoluedly entred into the Towne, and possessed the Market place without blowes. Which when the Lord *Lisleadame*, the Captaine of the Towne, perceiued; he fled away, with eight thousand of the inhabitants: who were receiued into *Paris*. And the next day King *Henries* brother, the Duke of *Clarence*, came vnto the same Towne, with fiue hundred gallant and well prepared men of Warre: and hauing fortified it, and diuided the chiefest of the Spoyles thereof among the braue attempters of this Exploit; he marched vnto *Paris*, and lay before it two daies. But being vnable with so small a number to assault, or much to trouble it, hee returned (vnfought with) vnto *Ponthoyse*.

Ponthoys taken.

The Duke of Clarence lay before Paris two daies.

The Parisians are afraid.

The winning of this Towne immoderately vexed and appalled the *Parisians*: because (now) the *French* King had not, in his possession, anie strong Towne betwixt them and the *English* Armie.

All Normandie wonne by King Henry, except Mount S. Michael.

The Duke of *Clarence* had also taken the strong Townes of *Gysors* and of *Gallyard*: And within few dayes after, all the Townes, Cities, Castles, and Fortresses in *Normandie* (excepting Mount S. *Michael* onely, which neuer was besieged nor assaulted) were either taken by force, or were voluntarily surrendred to King *Henrie*: who by GODS assistance, and his true valour, thus reduced the whole Dutchie of *Normandie* to his Crowne; and did enjoy it, as his Inheritance and Right.

7
1418.

The

The foreſaid *Iohn*, Duke of *Burgoine*, ſurnamed the proud, perceiuing that the Kingdome of *France* was too too weakely vnderpropped, by reaſon that the friendſhip lately contracted betwixt himſelfe and *Charles* the Dolphin, was but ſuperficiall, and not heartie; determined, in a more ſubmiſſiue manner, to humble himſelfe vnto him, that thereby their loue taking the deeper root, might bring forth riper fruits of Vnitie and of Peace. But when they met, the Dolphin (whoſe malice was irreconcilable; and whom miſtruſtfull jealouſie did ſtil perſuade, that the Duke would not be faithfull) procured him treacherouſly to be murdered: as the ſaid Duke himſelfe (vpon the like enterview, for friendſhip ſake) had cauſed *Lewis* the Duke of *Orleance* to be ſlaine, in the tenth yeare of the raigne of King *Henrie* the fourth.

Iohn the proud Duke of Burgoine newly ſeeketh reconciliation with the Dolphin.

The Duke is murdered.

A iuſt puniſhment.

This horrible Accident for a while tormented with inſupportable griefe *Philip* Earle of *Carolois*, the ſonne and heire of the deceaſed Duke: inſomuch, as that (in his dumpiſh and melancholie paſſions, and in the heat of his furie) he once determined to ſeperate himſelfe from the bed and companie of his guiltleſſe wife, onely becauſe ſhe was ſiſter to the Dolphin. But (being more grauely aduiſed by his Counſellors) as his ſorrowes waxed faint, ſo his affection towards her encreaſed ſtrength; and ſhee was entertained with his beſt loue.

8
1419.
Philip Duke of Burgoine.

This new Duke of *Burgoine*, and Earle of *Flanders*, being verie wiſe and politike, behaued himſelfe courteouſly and friendly to King *Henrie*; and practiſed all means by which he might conclude a firme and a ſetled Peace betwixt the Kings of *England* and of *France*. And in thoſe his endeuours he was the more powerfull:

He attempts to conclude a Peace.

His means to further it.

1 Firſt, becauſe his wife was daughter to the ſaid *French* King.

2 Secondly, becauſe his wiues ſiſter, the Ladie *Katharine* (who could doe all in all with *Iſabell* the Queene her mother) paſſionately longed to be eſpouſed to King *Henrie*.

3 Thirdly, for that the ſaid Queene (who by the Dolphin was depriued of all her Treaſure, as formerly you haue heard) could not endure to heare of him, nor could abide his preſence.

4 Fourthly, becauſe the Dolphin was more ſubtile, cunning, craftie, and reuengefull, than politike, wiſe, and valiant.

5 And laſtly, becauſe this late horrible and inhumane Murder made him odious and infamous, yea to his owne friends.

This Peace being againe and againe conſulted and debated on, betwixt the Queene, the Duke, and diuers of the greateſt Nobilitie in *France* vpon the one part, and the Embaſſadors of King *Henrie* vpon the other part; and being brought to ſome maturitie and ripe-

An enter-view.

King Henrie is guarded by his Armie.

A Peace is concluded.

The King is married: and proclaymed Regent and Heire apparant of Frãce.

ripeneſſe) it was reſolued, That King *Henrie* ſhould meete with *Charles* the ſixt the *French* King, Queene *Iſabell* his wife, and with the Ladie *Katherine*, and their Nobilitie and Councell, at *Troys* in *Champaine:* which (with all expedition) hee did; being accompanied with his two brothers, *Thomas* Duke of *Clarence*, and *Humfrey* Duke of *Gloceſter*, and with the Earles of *Warwike*, *Saliſburie*, *Huntingdon*, *Longeuyle*, *Tankeruyle*, and *Ewe*, and diuers other noble and great men. But to preuent the worſe, and to foreſee dangers before they happened; he was ſoundly guarded with fifteene thouſand men. And within few dayes after their enterview, a firme Peace was proclaymed: and the King (with honourable ſolemnitie and triumphant ſportings) was married to the ſaid Ladie *Katherine*; and was publiſhed to be the onely Regent and Heire Apparant to the Crowne of *France*, in both thoſe Kingdomes.

The chiefeſt Articles (in briefe) were theſe.

The Articles on which the Peace was concluded.

1. *FIrſt, That the two Great, High, and Mightie Princes, King Charles and Queene Iſabell, ſhould be entitled the Father and the Mother of King Henrie; and ſhould be by him and by his wife honoured and reſpected with that reuerence, which ſuch an alliance did require.*
2. *Item, That the ſaid King Charles, during his life, ſhould hold and enioy (quietly, and in peace) his Royall Dignitie, Crowne, and Reuenewes of all France: And that all Writs, Proceſſes, Commiſſions, and all ſuch like Proceedings, ſhould paſſe vnder his Name and Seale as King: And that the ſaid Queene Iſabell (if ſhe ſuruiued her husband) ſhould hold and enioy, during her life, her Title and Eſtate; and all ſuch Lordſhips, Rents, and Reuenewes in France, as of late were holden and enioyed by Queene Blanch, ſometimes the wife and Dowager of King Philip, great grandfather to King Charles.*
3. *Item, That Queene Katherine ſhould haue in England a Dower*

Dower of twentie thousand markes by the yeare; vnto which she should be enabled and assured with all conuenient speede.

4. *Item, That during the life of King Charles, King Henrie should not (in anie wise) be styled with the name and dignitie of the king of France; and that the French king, whilest hee liued, should write him and entitle him in French thus:* Nostre trechier filz Henry, Roy Dengleterre, Heretere de France. *And in Latine thus:* præclarissimus filius noster Henricus, Rex Angliæ, & Hęres Franciæ.

5. *Item, That after the death of King Charles, the Crowne and kingdome of France should wholly and entirely come, be, and remaine, to king Henrie and to his Heires for euer,*

6. *Item, That in regard that king Charles (by reason of his manifold infirmities, occasioned by much sickneſse) was made vnapt and vnable to administer, by his owne directions, the affaires and businesses of his kingdome, king Henrie should be Regent, and should rule and gouerne France as he pleased, for the kings honour, and for the profit and commoditie of that Region and Commonweale.*

7. *Item, That the Court of Parliament of France should be kept and bee ordered in like sort, and should bee supported with the same Priuiledges, Customes, Estate, and Power, as in all former times had beene vsed and accustomed.*

8. *Item, that king Henrie should carefully and faithfully doe his best endeuour to assist as well the Peeres as the people, in the attayning and getting of all such things, as in right, and by the Lawes and Customes of that kingdome did belong vnto them: and should protect and defend all the Rights, Prebeminencies, Lawes, and Possessions of the Clergie of the kingdome of France.*

9. *Item, That King Henrie ſhould ſupport and preſerue all the ſubiects of France againſt all forraine Enemies; ſuppreſſe and beat downe all inteſtine and in-bred Quarrels, Debates, Inſurrections, and Ciuill Warres; encreaſe the proſperitie and peace of France, and adminiſter Iuſtice, without partialitie, vnto all ſorts and degrees of people whatſoeuer.*

10. *Item, That King Henrie ſhould place into the Roomes and Offices of Iuſtice, and of Receits, and of Gouernment, ſuch perſons as ſhall be wiſe, diſcreet, faithfull, and ſufficient to miniſter and to manage thoſe things, which ſhould be committed to their charge.*

11. *Item, That King Henrie ſhould ſpeedily endeuour, with his beſt helpes, to reduce the Dolphin and the Earle of Arminake, late Conſtable of France, to the obedience of King Charles; and all ſuch others, as did with them rebelliouſly maintaine ciuill Diſſentions in the Commonweale.*

12. *Item, That King Henrie ſhould cauſe all the Peeres, Nobles, Gentrie, Clergie, Townes, Cities, and Burgeſſes of France to take a corporall Oath for their obedience to King Charles during his life: And after his death, to King Henrie, and to his heires: And to admit none other Regent, or King; nor to conſpire any thing againſt his or their Perſons or Eſtates: but ſhould reueale all miſchiefes which ſhould be contriued and practiſed for his or their hurt or deſtruction.*

13. *Item, That ſuch Poſſeſſions as King Henrie ſhould winne from anie perſon diſobedient to King Charles, (excepting onely in Normandie) ſhould bee employed and conuerted vnto the onely vſe and benefite of the French King. But if the offendours doe voluntarily and chearefully take the aforeſaid oath, then the ſaid Poſſeſſions to bee frankely and freely reſtored vnto them.*

14. *Item,*

14. *Item, That after the death of King Charles, the Duchie of Normandie, and all others conquered by King Henry, ſhould be obedient and bow vnder the commaund of the Scepter and Crowne of France.*
15. *Item, That King Henrie ſhould not burden the ſubiects of France with any Taxes or Impoſitions, but in caſes of great and vrgent neceſsitie: and then onely the ſame to be aſſeſſed and leuied according to the cuſtome and manner of France, and not otherwiſe.*
16. *Item, That after the death of King Charles, the two Kingdomes of France and of England ſhould alwaies ſoueraignely be ruled and commanded by one Man, and not by two Kings: and that neither of thoſe kingdomes ſhould be ſubiect the one to the other, but each of them ſhould ſtill retaine, vſe, and enioy their particular Cuſtomes, Liberties, Priuiledges, Prehominences, Immunities, and Lawes.*
17. *Item, That all care ſhould bee taken, and all prouiſion made, that the ſubiects of each kingdome, as brethren and friends, ſhould liue in mutuall loue, amitie, and peace; and each of them to procure, by their beſt meanes, the welfare and proſperitie of the other.*
18. *Item, That neither the ſaid French king, nor king Henrie, ſhould conclude any Peace, nor make any truce, with the falſely entitled Dolphin, except they both, and the ſaid Philip Duke of Burgoine, did all three conſent and agree in one ſo to doe.*
19. *Item, that none ſhould be appointed to attend the Perſon of king Charles but Frenchmen, and ſuch as himſelfe or his owne Councell ſhould make choiſe of: And that from time to time he ſhould be reſident and dwell at his pleaſure in the moſt eminent places of his kingdome.*
20. *And laſtly, that both the ſaid kings vnder their Letters Patents, and all their Nobilitie, Clergie, Gentrie, Cities, and Comminalties, by Inſtruments in writing vnder their*

hands and ſeales, ſhould ratifie and confirme the ſaid Articles and Agreements: And that they all ſhould ſolemnly ſweare and vow to maintaine them in all points, to the vttermoſt of their abilitie and power.

The Articles are proclaymed in England and in France.

They are ratified by ſolemne Oaths.

These Articles and these Agreements being thus concluded, were ordered accordingly; and then, with all conuenient expedition, were proclaymed both in *England* and in *France*. The two Kings, and all their Nobles, and other ſubjects of account, were ſolemnely ſworne to obſerue and to maintaine them. And then they both, being accompanied with *Iames* the young, but valiant King of *Scots*, the Duke of *Burgoine*, the Prince of *Orange*, one and twentie Earles, fortie and fiue Barons, and a multitude of Knights, Gentlemen, and braue ſouldiors of *France*, of *England*, and of *Ireland*, waſted ſuch Countries, and beſieged and tooke ſuch ſtrong and well defenced Townes and Caſtles within the Duchie of *Burgoine*, as ſided and ſorted with the Dolphin: As firſt of all, the Towne of *Seyne*, after it had beene beſieged fifteene dayes: and the Caſtle there, after it had held out ſix weekes: then *Molyn*, vpon the Riuer of *Seyne*; which they tooke, after they had enuironed it full ſeuen moneths: and in it were apprehended the Lord *Barbaſon*, the chiefe Commaunder there, and diuers others, who were agents and actors in the murdering of *Iohn* the Proud Duke of *Burgoine*: all which were by the *French* King ſent from thence vnto *Paris*, vnder the guardſhip of *Thomas* Duke of *Clarence*; who was newly made chiefe Captaine of that Citie by King *Charles*. And within few dayes after, the ſaid offendors were legally tryed, conuicted, ſentenced, and put to death for the ſaid Murder.

King Henrie warreth in Burgoine.

The murderers of Iohn Duke of Burgoine are executed.

The Duke of Clarence is made Captaine of Paris

Then the two Kings, with their two Queenes, and their Nobilitie and Companies, went vnto *Paris*; where King *Henrie* was proclaymed Regent and Heire Apparant to the Crowne of *France*: and ſo was he, not long after, in *London*.

King Henrie is proclaymed Regent and Heire apparant to the Crowne of France.

In *Paris* the two Kings kept their *Chriſtmas*. The *French* King (being verie ſickly and weake) maintained ſmall Hoſpitalitie. But King *Henrie* with ſuch heroicall Magnificence, rich Plentie, and liberall Entertainment, ſo feaſted the Nobles, Gentrie, and Citizens of both the ſaid Kingdomes, and was ſo open-handed to all ſorts and degrees of people, that his State and Majeſtie was admired: and his Princely courteſie faſt bound vnto him the hearts of the *Frenchmen*, to yeeld vnto him all manner of obedience and of ſeruice.

King Henrie winneth the loue of the Frenchmen.

Whileſt

Whileſt the two Kings thus remained in *Paris*, a great Aſſembly (by their Authoritie) was conuocated thither: In which they both ſate as Iudges; and before them, the Ducheſſe of *Burgoine*, late Wife to her ſlaine Husband, by her Aduocate appealed *Charles* the late Dolphin, and ſeuen others, as murderers of her Lord. But no defence was made for them. And not long after, a Court of Parliament was kept there: In which, a ſolemne Proces was awarded againſt the Dolphin, and the reſt of the Accuſed, to appeare at the Marble Table in *Paris* at an appointed day. But they all fayled to obſerue that commaund: And thereupon they were (by the ſaid Court) baniſhed the Realme, and all the Territories of *France*; and were alſo depriued of all Honors, Names, Titles, Dignities, Preheminences, and Poſſeſſions whatſoeuer.

The Dolphin and the other murderers are baniſhed.

When the late Dolphin had intelligence thereof, hee went into *Languedock*, and comforted himſelfe with his old friend the Earle of *Arminack*, ſometimes Conſtable of *France*: who not only aſſiſted him (in his great diſtreſſe) with Money, Munition, and with Men; but alſo (in his owne perſon) did him all reuerence, and tooke his part againſt all ſuch as profeſſed themſelues to bee his Enemies.

The Dolphin is aided by his old friend the Earle of Arminake.

Theſe things being thus accompliſhed; the two Kings, their Queenes, and Nobles, ſorrowfully departed each from other: And King *Henrie*, with his Queene, went vnto *Roan*; where hee receiued Homage of all his Nobles in the Duchie of *Normandie*: And (among others) of the Earle of *Stafford*; to whome hee had giuen the Earledome of *Perch*: And of *Arthur* of *Britaine*; vpon whom hee had beſtowed the Countrey of *Iurye*.

King Henrie ſetleth the ſtate of France

Hee alſo made his brother *Thomas*, Duke of *Clarence*, Lieutenant Generall both of *France* and of *Normandie*: and of that Duchie, hee made the Earle of *Salisburie* Deputie to the ſaid Duke: And then hee, with Queene *Katherine* his wife, departed vnto *Amiens*, and from thence to *Callis*, and ſo came into *England*: Where they were receiued and entertained with as much triumphant and true joy as could be by ſubiects expreſſed towards their Prince. And in Februarie following, the Queene was crowned at *Weſtminſter*, with great ſolemnitie and much honour.

The Duke of Clarence is made Lieutenant Generall of France and of Normandy.

The King & the Queene come into England.

The Queene is crowned.

9 1420.

The noble and the valiant Duke of *Clarence* being aduertiſed, That the Duke of *Alanſon* (entitling himſelfe the Lieutenant Generall of the Dolphin) with diuers other Noblemen, had leuied an

The Duke of Clarence is betrayed by his friend, and is ſlaine.

an Armie; aſſembled the greateſt part of his garriſons in *Normandie*, and marched ſtrongly into the Prouince of *Angeou*, and pitched not farre off from the Citie of *Angiers*, and ſpoyled and burnt the Countrey round about it.

Andrew Forguſa.

To performe this Enterpriſe with honour and with ſafetie; the Duke of *Clarence* had ſtrengthened himſelfe with ſufficient Forces and Prouiſions, if they had beene well and wiſely ordered. But hauing in his Armie a falſe and a trayterous *Lombard*, named *Andrew Forguſa*, whome hee too too much loued and truſted; hee ſent the ſaid *Lombard* to diſcouer the preparations and the power with which hee was reſolued to encounter: Who brought him word, That their number was but ſmall, their prouiſions defectiue, and their order, orderleſſe; and that the Duke of *Alanſon* was altogether vnable and too too weake to contend with him.

The battaile of Blangy.

The Duke of *Clarence* firmely and ſtrongly relying vpon the faith and the truſt which hee repoſed in this Traytor; and being deſirous with a ſmall number to winne the honour of that day: marched forward with his horſemen onely, leauing behinde him his luſtie and his ſtrong Archers. But when hee was entred within the ſecret ambuſhments, which purpoſely were placed to diſtreſſe him; and ſaw, that his enemies were in number foure for one, and were well prouided, well armed, and arranged in good order of battaile, and that no militarie diſcipline or art was wanting; and that himſelfe was villanouſly abuſed and betrayed by the *Lombard* whome hee truſted: hee could not flye, nor make any ſafe retreat; but was enforced to aduenture his fortunes, with too much inequalitie on his part. So the fight began: And though it was long maintained by the *Engliſhmen*, with as much conſtancie and reſolute valour as any men liuing could performe: yet they being euerie minute oppreſſed with new ſupplyes and multitudes, which ſtill came ruſhing in vpon them, tyring, oppreſſing, ſpoyling, and hauocking of them waſtfully on euerie ſide; they were at length ouer-maſtred and ouerthrowne.

The Engliſhmen ſlain and taken priſoners.

In this Battaile there were ſlaine on the *French* part more than twelue hundred of their choyſeſt men: and of the *Engliſh* there were ſlaine the braue Duke of *Clarence*, the Earle of *Tankeruyle*, Sir *Gilbert Vmfreuyle*, Earle of *Kent*; a prudent man and a worthie Commander; the Lord *Roſſe*, and almoſt two thouſand others: And there were taken priſoners, the Earles of *Somerſet*, *Suffolke*, and *Perch*; the Lord *Fitz-water*, and manie others.

Sir

Sir *Thomas Beauford*, ſurnamed the baſtard of *Clarence* (who had the direction of the Archers which were left behinde) being informed (but all too late) that the Duke of *Clarence* was betrayed; and that the numbers of the *Frenchmen*, and their Power, did farre exceede the *Lombards* report; and that the *Engliſh* were diſtreſſed: with incredible ſpeede marched forth to ſuccour them with his beſt helpes. But the *Frenchmen* perceiuing his approach, and contenting themſelues with the honour of the day, and with their priſoners, as they had taken; with poſting haſte and ſpeede fled and ranne away as faſt as they were able; leauing the new Forces of the *Engliſhmen* to performe ſad Exequies for their ſlaine friends: the bodies of whome they buried. But the Duke of *Clarence* was carried into *England*, and honourably interred at *Canterburie*, by his father King *Henrie* the fourth.

Cowardly Frenchmen.

The heauie newes of this vnexpected ouerthrow, and eſpecially the death of the Duke of *Clarence* (occaſioned by the aforeſaid Treacherie and Treaſon) much grieued the King his brother: Who purpoſing to reuenge himſelfe, if hee might, vpon the Duke of *Alanſon*, and the late Dolphin, and his adherents; ſent into *Normandie* the Earle of *Mortaigne*, brother to the late taken Earle of *Somerſet*, and gaue to him the ſame Authoritie and Place which the Duke of *Clarence* formerly had. He alſo aſſembled his High Court of Parliament: In which hee ſubſtantially diſcouered in what ſort the Eſtate of both his Kingdomes ſtood: and how conuenient; nay, how neceſſarie and how needfull it was, that the Dolphin and his adherents ſhould ſpeedily be purſued. Hee likewiſe told them, That hee wanted neyther Men, Munition, nor Courage; but that Money was too ſcarce with him to vndertake that buſineſſe. Whereupon the Temporaltie, with all chearefulneſſe and alacritie, gaue vnto him one Fifteene, and the Clergie gaue him two. And becauſe much time would be ſpent before it could be leuied; therefore the Kings vncle, the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, diſburſed vnto him in readie coyne twentie thouſand pounds; which hee receiued againe out of the ſaid Fifteenes.

The Earle of Mortaigne ſucceedeth the Duke of Clarence.

The King hauing leuied a gallant Armie, which conſiſted of foure thouſand men at Armes, and of foure and twentie thouſand Archers; ſent, and with all ſpeede, proſperouſly landed them at his owne Towne of *Callis*, vnder the commaund of his worthie brother, *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford*: whome, himſelfe (in his owne perſon) followed. And vnderſtanding, that the Dolphin with

Iohn Duke of Bedford carrieth an army into France.

The King followeth.

with ſeuen thouſand men, had beſieged and much diſtreſſed the Citie of *Chartieres*, which was valiantly defended by the Baſtard of *Thyan*; hee marched ſwiftly vnto *Paris*, and from thence toward his Enemies: and in his journey he was met by his heartie and true friend, *Philip* Duke of *Burgoine*, and Earle of *Flanders*; who brought vnto him foure thouſand men, and diligently attended him in that Negotiation and Seruice.

He meeteth his friend Philip Duke of Burgoine.

The Dolphin rayſed his ſiege.

The King was now informed, That the Dolphin (diſtruſting his owne ſtrength) had rayſed his Siege, and was retyred vnto *Tours* into *Towrayne*: Wherefore (to repreſſe the rage and violence of Sir *Iaques Harcourt*, who waſted the Countrey of *Picardie*) hee ſent the Duke of *Burgoine* thither: And with other Forces hee cauſed the young and couragious *Iames*, the King of the *Scots*, to lay ſiege vnto the Towne of *Direx*: which he performed accordingly; and dayly with ſuch violence and valour ſo aſſaulted it for the ſpace of ſixe weekes, that with mayne ſtrength hee compelled it to be yeelded into his hands, to King *Henries* vſe.

Iames the King of Scots winneth Direx.

The Dolphin flyeth from place to place.

And whileſt this Siege did thus continue, the King himſelfe paſſed ouer the Riuer of *Loyer*, intending to haue encountred with the Dolphin. But hee (diſtruſting his owne ſtrength) fled from *Tours* vnto *Burgys* in *Berrye*; and there expected a change of his frowning fortunes.

The King perceiuing his flight from place to place to bee ſo quicke and haſtie; hee thought it not conuenient, to tyre out his Armie to purſue him: Wherefore, hee returned ouer the Riuer of *Loyre*; and tooke, eyther by force, or by voluntarie yeelding, manie Townes and Caſtles, vnto his owne vſe.

Prince Henry is borne.

About the ſame time, Queene *Katherine* was deliuered of a Sonne at *Windſour*, who was named *Henrie*: Of whoſe birth, as ſoone as the King had notice, he ſaid vnto the Lord *Fitz-Hugh* his Chamberlaine: *I* HENRIE, *borne at Monmouth, ſhall remaine but a ſhort time, and gaine much; but* HENRIE, *borne at Windſour, ſhall raigne long, and loſe all.*

The Kings words.

10
1421.

The King, who (for manie weekes together) had beſieged the well-defended Towne of *Meux* in *Bry*; enforced it to bee yeelded into his hands: and thereupon all the Townes and Fortreſſes in the Iſle of *France*, in *Lanuoys*, in *Bry*, and in *Champaigne*, did the like.

The Dolphin entreth into the Duke of Burgoines countrey.

When the Dolphin vnderſtood, that the King, with his Armie, was departed farre away from him; hee rayſed another Armie,

mie, and entred into the Duke of *Burgoines* Countries, wasting and consuming it with Sword and with Fire: and straitly besieged the Citie of *Cosney*; which by composition was to be yeelded to him, if it were not rescued within tenne daies. Of this Agreement notice was sent by the Duke of *Burgoine* to the King, with a request, That he would send a power conuenient for the remoue of the said Siege. Whereupon the King in his owne person being accompanied with a gallant companie, marched towards that Citie to set it free. But as he trauelled on the way, he fell so sicke, that he was vnable to trauaile anie further. So the charge of that expedition was committed to his brother *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford:* whose passage forth was noysed to the Dolphin to be with such an high courage and souldior-like resolution, that the Dolphin fearing to grapple with him, raysed his siege, and most dishonourably retyred himselfe and his Armie into *Berry*. And thus was that Citie rescued and deliuered by the *English*.

Cosney is besieged.

The King goeth to relieue Cosney.

The King falleth sick.

The Dolphin flyeth.

The King, by reason of his encreasing sickenesse, waxing more weake and feeble, was carried vnto *Boys* in *Vyncennes*; where, within few dayes, he was summoned by Death to depart into another world.

But before he died, he called vnto him his two brothers, *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford*, and *Humfrey* Duke of *Gloceſter:* the former, hee made Lieutenant Generall of *Normandie*, and Regent of the kingdome of *France*; and the other, he made Protector of *England*, and of his sonnes owne person. Hee embraced his approaching end comfortably; in regard, that though his time had been but short, yet it was beautified with matchlesse fame and honour, which longer continuance (being the professed enemie of stabilitie) might haue changed. He exhorted them and his Nobles, who then were present, to maintaine true and heartie loue and friendship with his noble and faithfull friend *Philip* Duke of *Burgoine*, and neuer to be at variance with him. Hee persuaded them to nourish and to cherish an vnseparable vnitie and faithfull friendship among themselues: to be faithfull and louing to his young infant sonne, and their succeeding king *Henrie*; and by all meanes to bee helpefull, ayding, and assisting to his most sad, dolorous, and mournefull Queene: to preserue and to maintaine by Wisdome, Policie, and Armes, those things which he by valour and GODS furtherance had honourably wonne and gotten: Neuer to conclude any peace or amitie with the late Dolphin and Duke of *Alanson*, vntill they were enforced to submit themselues to his sonnes grace and mercie. Finally, he thanked Almightie GOD, who had made him Religious,

The Kings Speech before he died.

The King died.

1422.

gious, Vertuous, Honeſt, and Victorious: and died the laſt day of Auguſt, in the yeare of our LORD GOD 1422. in the eight and thirtieth yeare of his Age; when hee had raigned but nine yeares, fiue moneths, and foureand twentie dayes: And his bodie being conueyed into *England*, was buried among his noble Progenitors at *Weſtminſter*, with extraordinarie ſolemnitie and great pompe.

THE

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE SIXT.

KIng *Henrie* the fifth died when his ſonne *Henrie* was but nine months old: Yet was hee ſo fortunate in his beginning, that his Youth and Gouernment were worthily ſupported by his three vncles; *Humfrey* Duke of *Gloceſter*, who (when the King was crowned) was made Protector both of his Perſon and alſo of his Realme: *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford*, who was eſtabliſhed Regent of *France*: and *Thomas* Duke of *Exeter*, who graced all his actions with much wiſdome and great valour. 1422. I *A yong king, but well gouerned.*

Needfull it was, that the new Protector and the Regent ſhould make the vtmoſt tryall of their ſufficiencies to the World. For whereas, in the end of the Kings fathers dayes, the Nobilitie of *France* incorporated themſelues to the *Engliſh* Nation, and heartily enuied the Dolphin: King *Charles* about this time died: and the vnconſtant *Frenchmen* began to play an *Iriſh* game. For, on a ſuddaine, manie of thoſe diſſembling and fained friends renounced their duties and obedience to King *Henrie*, and (vtterly neglecting the performance of Oathes of Allegeance made vnto him) they reuolted, and not onely adhered to *Charles* their new King, but by all ſiniſter practiſes and meanes they endeuoured to extirpe the *Engliſh* Nation among them, if they might. *France is vnwilling to remain Engliſh.*

The

The Regents Policies.

The Protector at home (by the aduiſe and counſell of the Statiſts) plotted manie Proiects for the retayning of the Kings inheritance in *Normandie* and in *France*: and for that purpoſe he furniſhed the Regent with ſtore of Souldiours, Siluer, and of Gold.

The Regent alſo leuied a ſtrong Armie in *Normandie* among his choyſeſt and chiefeſt friends: whome (by ſubſtantiall arguments and ſound reaſons) hee perſuaded to perſeuere and to continue loyall to his Maſter; and not to be wearied with anie labour, or daunted with anie danger, becauſe a peacefull and a bleſſed concluſion ſhould make them rich and fortunate, and winne to them the loue and fauour of their young King, as hee encreaſed in wiſedome and in yeares.

And on the other ſide, *Charles* (the new King) ſpared not anie paines; but did the like: inſomuch, that nothing but tyrannizing Warre, and the vnchriſtian effuſion of much bloud, was thought vpon. And to begin thoſe Troubles, the *French* King ſent the Lord *Grandeuyle*, with a ſelected companie, to *Pont-Melance*, which ſtandeth on the Riuer of *Seyne*; which hee ſurprized, and ſlew the moſt part of them, whom he found there, before anie notice of his approach gaue anie warning to the *Engliſh* garriſon to defend it.

Pont-Melance taken.

Thomas Montacute, the Earle of *Salisburie*, for his admired courage and expert managing of martiall actions, was (at that time) more fitly to be compared to a choiſe *Roman*, than to anie other who liued in his dayes. To this Earle, the Regent commended the regayning of that Towne: in the ſiege whereof, hee ſpent three moneths; but (at length) it was yeelded into his hands: and the Lord *Grandeuyle* (by a ſolemne Oath) promiſed his faithfull and perpetuall ſeruice to King *Henrie*; but reuolted as ſoone as he was ſet at large.

The Earle of Salisburie a famous man.

Pont-Melance regained.

From thence, the ſaid Earle marched into *Champaigne*, beſieged and tooke the Towne of *Sens*, and deuoured the ſurprized ſouldiors with the Sword.

Sens is taken.

The vnconſtant *Pariſians* (more coueting to make an outward ſhew of their fidelitie to the *Engliſh*, than to be true indeede) ſent diuers of their greateſt and graueſt Citizens into *England*, to craue protection and defence againſt King *Charles*: Who were receiued, not onely with a chearefull welcome, heartie thankes, and bountifull entertainement; but alſo were promiſed the fruition of much happineſſe, if they perſiſted loyall vnto King *Henrie*.

The Pariſians craue protection.

About

1423.

About that time, the Regent meeting at *Amiens* with the Dukes of *Burgoine* and of *Britaine*, renewed the League formerly concluded betweene them: And to make it the more firme and ſure, hee married the Ladie *Anne* of *Burgoine*, ſiſter vnto the Duke.

A League renewed. The Regent marrieth.

The triumphant Shewes and Paſtimes which were prepared to augment the honour of this Match, perſuaded the *Pariſians* in his abſence, that the Regent attended nothing but Iolitie and Mirth: Which conceit of theirs made them (trecherouſly) to inuite their longed-for King *Charles* to come vnto them, and to receiue that Citie into his hands.

The Pariſians are vnfaithfull, and conſpire with the French king.

This newes brought comfort to his ſoule: So that hee appointed the day, when his deſire ſhould bee effected in that buſineſſe. But, as it euer falleth out, where many are of counſell, nothing can be ſecret: ſo, ſome of thoſe Conſpirators acquainted the Regent with euerie particular of this Plot: Who (with his Armie) poſted vnto *Paris*, with greater expedition than may well be credited, and entred into the Citie gates before anie notice was giuen of his repaire thither. For this Conſpiracie; manie of the chiefeſt confederates were executed publikely with ſundrie kinds of death. And from thenceforth he maſtred the *Pariſians* with *Engliſh* Garriſons, and repleniſhed their Caſtle, Towers, Fortreſſes, and Places of Defence and Strength, with ſuch *Engliſh* Souldiors, as ſolaced themſelues in being froward Commanders and imperious Rulers of the inhabitants of that Citie.

The trecherie diſcouered.

The Regent curbeth the Pariſians.

And likewiſe (by ſtrong Aſſaults, and enforced Compoſitions) hee wonne the two Caſtles of *Pacy* and *Courſay*, which were not farre from it; both which hee ſtrengthened in like manner.

Pacy and Courſay wonne by the Engliſh.

Whileſt theſe things were thus acted, the Lord *William Steward*, Conſtable of *Scotland*; the Earle of *Ventadore*, and manie others, with a ſtrong Armie, beſieged the ſtrong Towne of *Cranant*, within the Territories of *Burgoigne*. But the Earle of *Salisburie*, with an Armie of fifteene thouſand men, ruſhed fiercely vpon the beſiegers; and with the loſſe of one and twentie hundred of his companies, and with the ſlaughter of eight thouſand of his enemies, hee rayſed the Siege, and gayned libertie to the Towne.

The ſiege of Cranant is rayſed.

The Earle, vpon his returne to *Paris*, was ſubſtituted vice-Regent of the Countries of *France*, *Bry*, & *Champaigne*: and Sir *Iohn Faſtolfe* (an approued Knight in Arms) was appointed to be Deputie in the Duchie of *Normandie*. Which worthie Captaines performed ſuch

noble deedes of Chiualrie, and obtayned ſuch vnexpected victories, as made them famous, their Followers rich, and their Countrey renowned in all Kingdomes.

The King of Scots ranſomed.

In the meane time, whileſt the Protector prouidently endeuoring to preuent the encreaſing ſtrength of the Kings enemies in *France*, and to ſecure the tranquilitie and peace of this Commonweale at home; for a ſmall ranſome hee enlarged *Iames* the young and martiall King of *Scots*; who for manie yeares had beene a priſoner: And receiuing of him, in the Kings behalfe, his homage and his fealtie for *Scotland*; hee gaue to him in marriage (by the conſent of all the *Engliſh* Nobilitie) the Ladie *Iane*, daughter to the deceaſed Earle of *Somerſet*, and couſin german to the King.

He doth homage for Scotland.

He is an excellent Prince, but vnfaithfull and vnthankefull.

This gallant Prince, by meanes of his excellent Learning and Education in feats of Armes, vnder the laſt King *Henrie*, was better enabled to rule a Kingdome than any of his progenitors did before him: In ſo much, that making the beſt vſe of thoſe heroicall vertues with which he was adorned, he reduced that Realme into extraordinarie Ciuilitie; made his ſouldiors expert in warlike diſcipline; and his Nation more learned than euer they had been before his dayes. Yet was he altogether vnfaithfull and vnthankfull to *England*, his neareſt and his deareſt friend.

Prouiſion, & an Armie ſent into France.

The Protector (who was wiſe and induſtrious) neuer ſuffered the Regent in *France* to complaine of any want. For, as in former times, ſo now he ſent vnto him an Armie of tenne thouſand men, with much Treaſure. The Regent and his aſſiſtants daily wonne Townes, Cities, Caſtles, and Forts, with prouident policie and true valour. But the *French* King, by groſſe Flatterie, cunning Deuiſes, ſecret Treacherie, and couert Dealings (among others) poſſeſſed himſelfe of the ſtrong Townes of *Crotoy*, and ſome others, which were ſuddainely regayned: for true Manhood was encountred with Subtletie, and approued Valour with Treacherie and Craft.

Valour was encountred by trecherie.

The Duke of Britaine and his brother doe reuolt.

The Duke of *Britaine* fearing leaſt the Regent (growing ſtrong) would at length be Lord of his Countrey, baſely and perfidiouſly reuolted to the *French* King. And ſo did his brother *Arthur*, Earle of *Richmond*; who by King *Henrie* the fifth was created Earle of *Yurye* in *Normandie*, and made Gouernor of that Towne. Whereupon the Regent beſieged it; and with many ſecret Mynes, violent Batteries, and fierce Aſſaults, made it ſo ſubject to apparant dangers that the beſieged concluded to yeeld it vp, if at an appointed day they were not relieued by the *French* King. For the Regent being throughly reſolued to purchaſe his peace with a ſhort and with a ſharpe warre, determined to abide battel, what force ſoeuer

Yury in Normandie beſieged.

The Regents reſolution.

ſhould

ſhould be ſent to relieue the miſeries of that diſtreſſed Towne. And to further his purpoſe in that behalfe, hee freely permitted meſſengers to be ſent vnto his enemies, to informe them of the concluſion which he had made.

A cowardly French Armie.

Within few dayes after, the Duke of *Alanſon*, with ſixteene thouſand *Frenchmen*, approched neare to the *Engliſh* Campe; who did put themſelues into a readineſſe to receiue him. But (according to the *French* faſhion) he made manie bragging ſhewes to performe much: but (on a ſuddain) he cowardly quited the place, not giuing any one blow; and pitched with his whole ſtrength before the Towne of *Vernoyle* in the prouince of *Perch*: where he falſely informed the inhabitants, That at *Yurye* hee had fought with the Regent, defeated his Armie, ſlaine thouſands, taken many priſoners, freed that Towne, and had compelled him (by ſwift riding) to prouide for the ſafetie of his owne life.

Vernoyle beſieged and wonne by a falſe report.

Policie.

This falſe report ſoone made the Duke owner of that Towne, and his Retreat made the Regent Lord of *Yurye*: and as ſoone as ſound prouiſions were made to ſtrengthen it, the Regent with his whole Armie marched vnto *Vernoyle*; where (meeting with the *French* cowards, and with diuers *Scots* who did aſſiſt them) hee compelled them to engage their fortunes by a bloudie battaile in a pitched field. The fight was cruelly maintained for the ſpace of three houres. But in the end, the *Engliſhmen*, with the loſſe of one and twentie hundred of their common ſouldiors, wonne the honour of that day, and ſlew of their enemies fiue Earles, two Vicounts, one and twentie Barons, and more than ſeuen thouſand other men; beſides two thouſand and ſeuen hundred *Scots*, who were ſent thither by their King. But the Duke of *Alanſon* himſelfe, with many Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of Name, were taken priſoners. And the Towne of *Vernoyle* (without Aſſault or Batterie) was ſurrendred into the Regents hands: who (hauing fortified it with a ſtrong Garriſon, commanded by their worthie Captaine Sir *Philip Hall*) marched to the Citie of *Roan*; where hee was receiued with many triumphant Shewes. And from thence he came to *Paris*; where his kinde entertainment proclaymed his welcome and his honour.

Yury wonne.

The battaile of Vernoyle.

The Frenchmen are ouerthrowne.

Vernoyle is regayned.

This ouerthrow ſo weakened the *French* King, that none other Prouinces or Territories, but onely *Burbon*, *Aluerne*, *Berry*, *Poytou*, *Towrayne*, part of *Angeou* and *Languedoc*, could giue vnto his Royall Perſon anie warrant of ſafetie and aſſurance. Yet (leaſt he ſhould want the true honors belonging to a King) in the Citie of *Poytiers* hee eſtabliſhed his High Court of Parliament, and his

The Engliſh doe prenaile.

The French King laboureth his owne eſtabliſhment.

Chancerie; with the publike vſe of his broad Seale: and of all other things needfull and requiſite for the due adminiſtration of his Lawes, and the diſtribution of Iuſtice.

The Earle of Salisburie winneth many Townes.

The Regent taking the aduantage of his late victorie, ſent into the Countrey of *Mayne* an Armie of tenne thouſand men: which (with great reſolution) were brauely conducted by the valorous and prudent Earle of *Salisburie:* who quickly wonne the ſtrong Citie of *Mauns*, and the Townes of Saint *Suſan*, *le Fort* Saint *Barnard*, and manie others. And from thence he went into *Angeou*: where (with the Sword) hee performed ſuch and ſo manie wonders, that the verie Name of *Salisburie* became terrible in all *France.*

His name is feared.

1425. 4

The perfidious Earle of *Richmond* (whome King *Charles* had newly made High Conſtable of *France*) intending to make himſelfe famous in the minoritie of his Gouernment, raiſed an Armie of fortie thouſand men; which conſiſted of *Britons*, *French*, and *Scots:* with which he beſieged the ſtrong Towne of Saint *Iames* in *Beujon*; which was defended only by ſix hundred *Engliſhmen:* who hauing reſolutely endured many ſharpe aſſaults and hard bickerings, vpon a ſuddaine iſſued boldly out of the Towne, and proclaymed their approach with an hideous ſhout of Saint *George*, *Salisburie*; Saint *George*, *Salisburie*; and fell vpon the multitude of their enemies like a ſtorme. This terrible crie, and the inconſolable feare and terror, which made them thinke that the Earle of *Salisburie*, with his Armie, had ſecretly conueyed himſelfe into the Towne for their reſcue; ſo amazed and daunted the faint-hearted multitude, that (caſting away their Armour, abandoning all Order, and entertaining nothing but Deſpaire) they leapt headlong into the Riuer: In which, many of them were drowned; more were ſlaine: ſome were taken priſoners: and the reſt, who ranne away, left vnto this little handfull all their Tents, foureteene Peeces of Ordnance, fortie barrels of Powder, three hundred Pypes of Wine, two hundred Pypes of Biſket and of Flower, and two hundred Peeces of Raiſins and Figges, fiue hundred Barrels of Herrings, much Armour, and manie other things.

A miraculous ouerthrow.

A poore reuenge.

The New Conſtable intending to redeeme his honour with ſome better fortune, recollected and furniſhed his Armie: with which hee marched into the Countrey of *Angeou*; where (without reſiſtance) hee burnt a few of the ſmalleſt, pooreſt, and moſt vnworthie Villages of that Prouince.

This childiſh Seruice puft him vp with much pride, and made him to imagine, that he was now a warlike man, though his owne Nati-

Nation, and all others, did publikely mocke and ſcoffe at his groſſe tollie.

Whileſt thus the Regent and his Captaines daily triumphed in *France*; a dangerous and an vnkind jarre brake forth at home, betwixt the Protector and his vncle *Henrie*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and Lord Chancelor of *England*: which threatened the breach of the Peace and Tranquilitie of this Kingdome and Commonweale. For the appeaſing whereof, the Regent hauing made the Earle of *Warwike* his Lieutenant Generall, and hauing ſet his affaires and buſineſſe in good order; came into *England*: Where (in a Court of Parliament) the differences betwixt them were diſcouered, arbitrated, and the quarrell ended, to the great comfort and contentment of their friends. In honour whereof, the King kept a ſolemne Feaſt; in which, the Regent dubbed the King a Knight. The King alſo inueſted manie of his Great ſubjects with the ſame Dignitie; and created his couſin *Richard*, ſonne to *Richard* late Earle of *Cambridge*, Duke of *Yorke*; and reſtored *Iohn Mowbray* (who was Earle Marſhall) to his fathers Duchie of *Norfolke*.

Variance betweene the Protector and his vncle the Biſhop of Wincheſter.

It is appeaſed.

The King is dubbed Knight.

Creation of Lords.

And in this meane time, the Earle of *Warwike* approued himſelfe to be a worthie Commander ouer his great charge, and conquered manie things in *Mayne*; and prepared to fight a ſet battaile, whereunto he was challenged by the *French*. But their threatnings were but brags, and their courage fell downe into their heeles: For, a little before the appointed time, they baſely and cowardly ranne away.

A French bragge.

1426.

When all things were thus quieted at home; the noble Regent (being accompanied with his vncle the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*) returned into *France*: And (vpon the requeſt of his brother in law, the Duke of *Burgoine*) hee ſet at libertie the Duke of *Alanſon* for the ranſome of two hundred thouſand crownes: The moſt part of which money he would haue giuen backe againe, if the ſaid Duke would haue ſworne his homage to King *Henrie*: which he refuſed to doe; and did affirme, That the whole world ſhould not alienate his faith from King *Charles*, nor his dutie from his owne countrey.

5

The Duke of Alanſon is ranſomed.

A worthie Duke.

At this time, the rich and proud Biſhop of *Wincheſter* (being at *Callice*) according to his ambitious deſires, was inueſted with the Hat, Habite, and Dignitie of a Cardinall; and receiued from the Pope a Bull: which gaue him meanes (in a ſhort time) to heape together a great part of the Treaſure of this Land: ſo that all men wondered at him for his Wealth, but no man had cauſe to commend him for his Learning, or to reſpect him for his Vertue.

Wincheſter is made a Cardinall.

He heapeth great treaſure together.

A notable victorie.

After the Regents returne into *France*, the Lord *Ruſtian*, Marſhall of *Britaine* (hauing ſtrongly fortified *Pontorſon*) pitched with his Armie before the Towne of *Auranches*, in the Prouince of *Conſtantine*, within the Duchie of *Normandie*; purpoſing to haue beſieged it. But ſuch was the reſolute valour of the *Engliſh* Garriſon there, that (like vnto Lyons greedie of their prey) they iſſued ſuddainely out of the Towne, and ſet vpon the Marſhall ſo ſucceſſefully, that he was taken priſoner; and the greater part of his followers, as they fled, were ſlaine.

Pontorſon beſieged by the Engliſh.

This victorie gaue freſh hopes of Good-ſpeeding elſewhere: So that the Earle of *Warwike* and the Lord *Scales* being ſent with ſeuen thouſand men to *Pontorſon*, beſieged it a long time: where (being much enfeebled through manie wants) the Lord *Scales* (for the reliefe of their neceſſities) taking with him three thouſand of their companies, grieuouſly foraged the Countries of his enemies. But in his returne with plentie of Prouiſions, hee was encountred by ſundrie *French* Lords, and ſix thouſand other fighting men: againſt whome, ſo luckily he preuayled, that moſt of thoſe Nobles, and a thouſand more, were taken priſoners, many hundreds were ſlaine, and the reſt, by a quicke flight, procured their owne ſafetie.

The Lord Scales defeateth the Frenchmen.

Ramfort taken.

The Garriſon alſo at Saint *Suſan* made ſuch a ſuddaine roade into *Angeou*, that they ſurprized the Caſtle of *Ramfort*, before any newes gaue notice of their comming. But they no ſooner poſſeſſed it, but that they were beſieged by twentie thouſand men; who were appointed to rayſe the ſiege at *Pontorſon*. To theſe the Caſtle yeelded vpon compoſition: ſo that the *Frenchmen* (beeing much elated with this poore conqueſt) imagined, that they were braue men, and that they had done ſeruice ſufficient for that time. And this conceit made them altogether careleſſe to relieue the diſtreſſed eſtate of *Pontorſon*: Whereupon it was yeelded to the Earle of *Warwike*; who fortified it with good Prouiſions, and with a ſtrong Garriſon; and came (with great honour) to the Regent.

Ramfort regained.

Pontorſon wonne by the Engliſh.

Mouns is betrayed.

Whileſt things were thus in handling, ſome of the Clergie, and ſome of the Magiſtrates of the Citie of *Mouns* (knowing, that the Duke of *Britaine* was reuolted, and that his brother, the Earle of *Richmond*, now wholly adhered to the *French* King) offered, by treacherie, to yeeld it to King *Charles*, if a conuenient and an able Force might be ſent thither to worke that feat. This Citie was eagerly longed for on the *French* part. Wherefore, that it might be gotten, the Lords *Dalabreth* and *Fayet*, Marſhals of *France*, with ſundrie

ſundrie moe Barons, Captaines, Gentlemen, and old ſouldiors, to the number of fiue hundred, came (in the depth of the night) to the Caſtle walls; and then the conſpirators within (without anie compaſſion, or manlike pitie) maſſacred all ſuch *Engliſh* Guarders as then maintained the firſt Watch: and ſetting wide open all the Gates, the Surprizors (armed with barbarous crueltie) entred into the Citie, murdering and killing their enemies as they preſſed forth. Lamentable was the fearefull crie, which ſo ſuddainely amazed the *Engliſh* Garriſoners within the Citie. And it was the more full of terror, for that the cauſe thereof was not vnto them perfitly knowne. *Crueltie.*

The Earle of *Suffolke*, who was chiefe Gouernor of the Towne, and the greateſt part of the *Engliſh* ſouldiors, entred into the Caſtle, and were (betimes in the morning) ſharpely aſſaulted by the *Frenchmen*. And though they were altogether vnprouided of all neceſſaries for a long defence, yet their luſtie courage (againe, and againe) gaue their enemies the repulſe: who making no doubt, but through Famine, or by violence, to be owners of the Caſtle; careleſly diſpoſed themſelues to all eaſe, jolitie, and mirth. Whereof when the Lord *Talbot* was aduertiſed, he forthwith marched thither in the night with ſeuen hundred men. The Earle of *Suffolke* (to whome ſecret intelligence was giuen of his comming) left the Caſtle, and with his companies (vnlooked for, and vnthought vpon) ruſhed into the Towne, luſtily crying and ſhowting, Saint *George*, *Talbot*, Saint *George*, *Talbot*. Which vnexpected noyſe ſo wonderfully amazed the lazie, ſleepie, and drunken *Frenchmen*, that ſome of them, vnclothed in their ſhirts, leapt ouer the Towne walls to ſaue their liues, but loſt them: So that (within and without the Towne) foure hundred Gentlemen being ſlaine and taken priſoners, and the raſcall peſants being enlarged; thirtie Citizens, twentie Prieſts, and fifteene Friers (by whoſe conſpiracie the Towne had beene treacherouſly betrayed) were, as Traytors, tortured with miſerable deaths. And thus was the Citie of *Mouns* brauely regayned to King *Henrie*. *Mouns is recouered by the Lord Talbot.* *Policie.* *Execution.* 1427. 6

Not long before this time died the Tutor of the Kings Royall Perſon, the right Noble *Thomas*, Duke of *Exeter*: So that the Earle of *Warwike* was ſent for into *England*, to vndergoe that charge. And in his ſtead, the renowned and moſt valiant Captaine *Thomas Mountacute*, Earle of *Salisburie* (whoſe former Seruices ſo appalled and daunted the hearts and courages of the *Frenchmen*, that they feared no man more) was ſent into *France* with fiue thouſand men. To which number, as manie more were added: *A new Armie ſent into France.*

Orleance is beſieged by the Earle of Salisburie.

added. And with them all, the ſaid Earle marched to beſiege the ſtrong and warlike Citie of *Orleance*, which ſtandeth vpon the Riuer of *Loyer*. This Citie was newly fortified, and incredibly ſtrengthned, by the Baſtard, and by the Biſhop of that place, with Towers, Bulwarkes and Forts: and the Suburbes, together with twelue other Pariſh Churches, foure Abbies, and all Houſes and Vines, being within fiue leagues of the Towne, they cauſed to be ruinated, defaced, and cut downe; becauſe they ſhould not afford any helpe, ſuſtenance, or ſuccour to the Engliſhmen. When this ſiedge was ſtrongly planted, the Baſtard of *Orleance*, intending to make famous his hautie courage to his enemies; brauely iſſued out of a ſtrong Bulwarke, which was erected vpon the Bridge. But (being vnable to maintaine his bold challenge) hee was compelled (with the loſſe of that Fort, and with the ſlaughter of the greater number of his Souldiers) to flie into the Towne. Within this Bulwarke there was raiſed an high Tower, with a window in it; at which the Engliſhmen vſually pried into the Towne, taking the view of the greater part of the Citie: And thereby (from time to time) did informe themſelues, in what caſe, and in what plight the Townesmen ſtoode. And at the ſame window (about two Monethes after the firſt beſiedging of the Citie,) the Noble Earle of *Salisburie*, looking into the Towne, was with a great ſhot vnfortunately ſlaine; and with his death, the Triumphs of the *Engliſh* Nation in *France* waxed more thinne; and the Frenchmen became more victorious then they had beene.

Baſtard of Orleance defeated.

The valiant Earle of Salisburie ſlaine

The Earle of Suffolke maintayneth the ſiege.

He being dead, the Earle of *Suffolke* was made Generall in that ſiedge: who finding that all prouiſions waxed exceeding ſcant, ſent Sir *Iohn Faſtolfe* to the Regẽt for new ſupplies, who furniſhed him at the full; and diſpatched him and his companies with all ſpeede. But in his returne towards the ſiege, the Lord *Delabreth*, with ſundrie other Barons, Knights and common Souldiers, to the number of nine thouſand at the leaſt, intending their ouerthrow, preſented themſelues vnto their view: who (placing their Cartes and Carriadges furtheſt backe, their Horſes next, and themſelues before, and pitching their Stakes behind their Archers, vpon the firſt encounter retyred behinde their ſtakes; On which the *Frenchmen* on horſe-back were receiued, goared and miſerably ſlaine. And by theſe meanes; their Armie (being diſordered) began to flie: So that in the fight, and in the chace, The Lord *Dalabreth*, and the Lord *William Steward* Conſtable of France, with two thouſand and fiue hundred men were ſlaine, and eleuen hundred were taken priſoners: with whom and with rich ſupplies,

The Frenchmen are defeated: Policie.

the

the valiant Knight and his companions repayred honorably vnto the ſiege. And this battaile was by the *Frenchmen* called the Battaile of Herrings, becauſe the chiefeſt prouiſions which thoſe *Engliſhmen* then had, were Lenten ſtuffes.

The Battaile of Herrings.

When the beſieged heard of this newes, and were hopeleſſe of any ſuccours to be ſent for their reliefe from the *French* King, by letters they entreated the Duke of *Burgoine* to receiue them into his protection, as his owne; who made them anſwere, That hee would ſo doe, if the Regent would thereunto agree. This motion pleaſed manie of the Regents friends and counſellors, becauſe thereby the Dolphin, ſurnamed the *French* King, ſhould not onely be diſpoſſeſſed of ſo rich and of ſo ſtrong a Citie, but alſo becauſe it ſhould be enjoyed by their chiefeſt friend.

Orleance is offered to the Duke of Burgoine.

But the Regent himſelfe, and ſome others, were of another minde, and returned this anſwere to the Duke, That ſeeing (for ſo long a time) ſuch great expences and charges had beene conſumed by King *Henrie*, to bring that Citie into ſuch extremities, as that the beſieged became wearie anie longer to be troubled; it would ſound much to his diſhonour and diſgrace, if any Prince beſides him ſhould enjoy the Lordſhip and the Siegnorie thereof.

The Regent will not conſent thereto.

This Anſwere pierced the Duke of *Burgoine* at the heart: ſo that from thenceforth his affections dayly waxed cold, and occaſioned him, in ſecret, to become a well-willer vnto the *French* King.

The Duke of Burgoine falleth from the Engliſh.

When this Project was reuealed, and became fruitleſſe, the Citizens of *Orleance* craued preſent ſuccours from the Duke of *Alanſon*; who did his beſt to inſpire a new ſpirit of courage into the *French* King. And ſo ſenſible was he of their extremities, and ſo readie to releiue them; and ſo extreamely negligent was the *Engliſh* Armie to attend their Watches in the night, becauſe they dayly expected the ſurrendring of the Citie; that (in the depth and darkneſſe of the night) he conueyed many thouſand men, and ſtore of all ſorts of prouiſions, into the Towne. And within few daies after, the beſieged iſſued forth, being brauely reſolued to attempt much: Theſe men with ſtrong blowes wonne the Bulwarke at the Bridges end, and one more, and ſlew ſix hundred men whom they found there. They alſo aſſaulted the *Baſtyle*, wherein the Lord *Talbot* was. But with ſuch a wonderfull courage and reſolution he iſſued out vpon them, that he maſſacred their companies on euerie ſide, and enforced them to flye like Sheepe before the Wolfe: ſo that with much loſſes they hardly recouered into the Towne.

The Duke of Alanſon releueth Orleance.

The fond ſecuritie of the Engliſh.

The Frenchmen preuaile, and are beaten.

But

The ſiege of Orleance abandoned.

But the next day, the Earle of *Suffolke* quited the Siege, ſeuered his Armie, and ſent each companie to his owne Garriſon. And in their returne, the Lord *Talbot* (by maine aſſault) wonne the ſtrong Caſtle and Towne of *Lauall*. And thus was the faire and the ſtrong Citie of *Orleance* deliuered from a long and from a ſharpe Siege.

The Earle of Suffolke taken priſoner.

And within few dayes after, the Duke of *Alanſon* beſieged and wonne the Towne of *Iargeaux:* wherein (among others) he tooke priſoner the Earle of *Suffolke*, and one of his brothers, and ſlew Sir *Alexander Pole*, another of his brethren: All which priſoners (except the former two) were ſlaine by the *Frenchmen*; who contended among themſelues, to whome thoſe priſoners did in right belong.

1428. 7

The Engliſhmen are ouerthrowne.

To the Dukes Armie (which conſiſted of three and twentie thouſand men) there repaired *Arthur* of *Britaine*, the Earle of *Vandoſme*, and ſundrie other Noblemen, with great and ſtrong troups. All theſe fortuned to meet with the Lords *Talbot*, *Scales*, and *Hungerford*; who conducted fiue thouſand men to fortifie the Towne of *Meum*. Betwixt them there were exchanged manie bloudie blowes: ſo that in the end the ſaid three *Engliſh* Lords were taken priſoners, twelue hundred of their companies were ſlayne, and the reſt, which eſcaped, haſted vnto *Meum*, and repleniſhed that Towne with abilitie of Strength to reſiſt future Dangers.

Priſoners.

Reuolts to the French King.

This vnfortunate diſaſter was accompanied with another miſchiefe. For no ſooner was it publiſhed and knowne abroad, but that diuers Cities, Townes, Caſtles, and ſtrong Holds treacherouſly fell off and ſubmitted themſelues to the *French* king: whom theſe vnexpected good chances not onely elated and made proud, but alſo augmented his good hopes of a ſpeedie end of all his troubles; eſpecially, becauſe the Earle of *Salisburie* was ſlaine, and the Earle of *Suffolke*, and the Lords *Talbot*, *Scales*, *Hungerford*, and manie other valiant *Engliſh* Captaines, were then his priſoners, and could not aſſiſt the Regents part.

Engliſh priſoners.

The *French* King being thus ſtomacked and put in heart, would not anie longer retayne anie meane or baſe thoughts: but in ſtead of them, he now conſulted and deuiſed how he might recouer the Citie of *Rhemes*; that in it hee might (with all Solemnities and Prince-like Requiſites) be crowned King, according to the manner and cuſtome of his Anceſtors, Kings of that Kingdome. And to effect thoſe his deſires with all conuenient ſpeede, he forthwith paſſed into *Champaigne* with a great Armie: where hee beſieged,

Rhemes.

and

and by compoſition wonne *Troys*, the chiefeſt Citie in that Prouince. And the inhabitants of *Challons* being thereof informed, perfidiouſly did rebell, and compelled their Captaine to yeeld the Towne. By which example, the Citizens of *Rhemes* being induced, did the like. And thus King *Charles* obtayned his hearts deſire, and was crowned there. And as by that high Title hee was chiefely dignified, ſo was hee thereby exceedingly furthered in all his future attempts: For vpon the firſt report that he was crowned King, it cannot eaſily winne credit, how manie Forts, Cities, Townes, and Caſtles, were (without blowes) deliuered into his hands.

Troys wonne. Challons, Rhemes, &c. yeelded.

Charles is crownd King of France, and is therby furthered in his future attempts.

The Regent perceiuing that his proceedings would bee but vaine, except he ſpeedily checked this good fortune; reſolued, that a pitched Field ſhould make him proſperous or vnhappie. For which purpoſe, hee marched with a ſtrong Armie from *Paris* towards the new King: and by his heralds hee proclaymed *Charles* to be an Vſurper and a counterfeit King and an arch-Traytour to King *Henrie*, and ſummoned him to a battaile, that thereby hee might receiue puniſhments agreeable to his deſerts.

The Regents braue reſolution.

The Regent ſummoneth the French King to a pitched field.

The *French* King not acknowledging any ſuch offence, ſeemed willingly to accept of this Chalenge: yet (for a while) hee trifled and lingered vp and downe; and in the end diuerted his courſe, and marched another way. But the Regent ſo cloſely followed after him, that (to defend himſelfe) hee was enforced to marſhall his companies, and to make bragging ſhewes of reſiſtance. But outward apparances of valour were his beſt performances for two dayes ſpace: For in the depth of the night (with great ſilence) he rayſed his Campe, and ranne away. But when the morning had diſcouered this his cowardly departure, the Regent (with much trauaile and great paine) endeauoured to enforce him to looke backe. But becauſe he alwaies fled, and would not aduenture the exchange of blowes, therefore he returned to the Citie of *Paris*, to ſhew himſelfe carefull of his charge there: And ſo much the rather, becauſe thoſe Citizens were euer vnconſtant, variable, wauering, perfidious, and vntrue.

The French King departeth and is purſued.

He runneth from the Regent.

The Regent hunteth him, but in vaine.

Daily (after the Regents returne) his cares were filled with freſh reports of trayterous Reuolts, which made him (once more) to attempt to make his eſtate more ſtable and more ſure, by expoſing of himſelfe and his vnto ſome preſent danger. For which cauſe, he marched againe towards the *French* King with an Armie of ten thouſand gallant men: who met him with more than that double number. But when all outward appearance preſented good aſſurance

The French King once more runneth away.

King Henrie is crowned. 1429. 8

rance of a deadly fight, the *French* King did (once more) ſhamefully runne away. And neere about the ſame time, King *Henrie* (with all Princely Honour and Solemnitie) was crowned King.

Reuolts to the French King.

And albeit, that daily experience made it manifeſt, that King *Charles* was a daſtardly and a fearefull coward: yet the Townes of *Champaigne*, *Senlys*, *Beauois*, *Gaylard*, and manie others, trecherouſly yeelded themſelues into his hand. Whereupon the Regent reſolued to caſt his anchor in *Normandie*, and to ſecure the fidelitie and loue of the inhabitants of that Prouince, howſoeuer the game ſhould chance to runne elſewhere. For which purpoſe hee went thither, and in an honourable and full Parliament he related artificially the Lineall Diſcent of his Lord and Maſter King *Henrie* the ſixt, from *Rollo* the Hardie; who was the firſt Duke of that Countrey. He alſo minded them of thoſe miſeries, which too too commonly, and with ouer-much ſeueritie, had beene inflicted on their Nation by the Natiues of the Kingdome of *France*. And remembred them of thoſe Immunities and Royall Priuiledges, which (vnder the *Engliſh* Gouernment) they had long and liberally enjoyed, by which they were made fortunate and rich: Whereof he promiſed them, not onely a ſure and a firme continuance, but alſo a daily enlatgement, with all fauor. Thus, and by theſe means, he confirmed and ratified to King *Henrie*, and to himſelfe, the affections and friendſhip of that people.

The Regent eſtabliſheth Normandie.

The French King woeth the Duke of Burgoine.

But whileſt the Regent thus buſily employed himſelfe in *Normandie*; the *French* King attempted (by all ſubtile and cunning meanes) to leſſen and to weaken his power. For the effecting whereof, firſt of all he endeauoured to diſſolue that knot of Loue and Amitie which conjoyned the Regent and the Duke of *Burgoine* in an indifferent liking of each other; by excuſing himſelfe to the ſaid Duke touching the murdering of his Father: and (by ſolemne Promiſes and Oathes) vowing to giue vnto him mountaines of Wealth, manie Honours, and his inward fauour, if hee would be firmely reconciled, and become his friend. And albeit, that the Duke was not well pleaſed, for that the Regent would not conſent, that the Citie of *Orleance* (when it was beſieged and grieuouſly diſtreſſed) ſhould be yeelded into his hands: yet in a friendly manner hee acquainted the Regent with this cunning Plot. So, when King *Charles* perceiued, that this deuiſe was fruitleſſe; he brought his whole Armie before the Citie of *Paris*: of whoſe reuolt (if the Multitude had dared) the Regent had beene right well aſſured. But when hee perceiued, that nothing but

The French King aſſaulteth Paris, and is beaten.

blowes

blowes could make him hopefull of good ſucceſſe: Hee battered and ſcaled the walls, and aſſaulted the Citizens with ſharpe furie: But (by the braue valour and courage of the *Engliſh* Garriſons, which were well aſſiſted by ſuch of the Townſmen as were faithfull to King *Henrie*) he was repulſed many times with great loſſe, and ſlaughter of his men; and at laſt, was compelled ſhamefully to depart from thence.

The Regent (at his returne) thanked, and praiſed them exceedingly: but eſpecially ſuch of the *Pariſians*, as had well teſtified their faith and loyaltie to King *Henrie*, in his abſence. Whereat they ſeemed publikely to take ſo much ioy, that (hypocritically) they ſtiled themſelues, thus; *Friends to the Engliſh, and friends to the Pariſians*; *Enemies to the Engliſh, and enemies to the Pariſians:* yet were they trecherous, and vnconſtant; as in this future diſcourſe it ſhall manifeſtly appeare.

The Pariſians flatter, and are trecherous.

It will be to tedious, to make an ample Relation of euery light skirmiſh that was made, and of euery Reuolt, and Martiall gayning; which ſtrengthned the *Engliſh* in ſome places, and weakned them in others: Wherefore, it ſhall ſuffice, that we be well informed, that either part did ſometimes winne, and ſometimes looſe. But to ſay the truth, The *Engliſh* forces and ſtrength in *France* did not encreaſe; becauſe ſuch was the inconſtant leuitie of the *French* Nation. That they gladded their hearts at euery opportunities, which enabled them to reuolt, and yeeld to King *Charles*. By meanes whereof King *Henrie* (as hee was counſelled) ſayled with a puiſant Armie from *Douer*, and arriued at *Calice*: And taking *Roan* in his way, Hee marched vnto *Paris*, where hee was (with all beſeeming requiſities) annointed and crowned King of *France*, and receiued homage and fealtie vpon the Othes of the Nobles, Gentlemen, and common People of that Citie.

1431. 10 *King Henrie crowned in Paris.*

Theſe *French* warres were famous in all the Weſterne parts of the world. And the more were they ſpoken off, becauſe men generally did wonder, how it was poſſible, that ſo ſmall an Iland, as *England* was, ſhould (for ſo many yeares together) ſo grieuouſly torment and ſcourge ſo large, ſo populous, and ſo potent a Kingdome, as *France* was, and put it to the worſt.

England admired at.

At length, and after frequent mediations, vſed by *Eugenius* the Fourth, then Pope of *Rome*, and by many other Chriſtian Princes. Such great hopes, as made the faireſt ſhew of an happie Peace, vaniſhed quite, and came to nothing: ſauing that an vnperfect Truce for ſixe yeares was conſented vnto, which laſted but a while.

An vnperfect Truce.

a while: For ſhortly after King *Henries* returne into *England*, Vnfortunately it hapned, that the Ladie *Anne*, wife vnto the Regent, and ſiſter to the Duke of *Burgoine*, died: And not long after, hee married the faire and freſh Ladie *Iaquet*, daughter vnto *Peter*, Earle of S. *Paul*, and thereby allied himſelfe to the ancient and honorable Familie and houſe of *Luxenbourgh*, and from thenceforth the great loue, which for many yeares had made the Regent and his brother in law, the Duke of *Burgoin*, fortunate & happie, waxed faint and feeble: by meanes whereof the Duke won nothing, and the Regent became leſſe powerfull then he had beene in former times.

The Regents wife dyeth.

The Regent newly maried

The Regent looſeth a good friend.

1432. 11

The ſolemnities of this mariage were no ſooner finiſhed, but that the ſix yeares truce, which was ſo lately concluded, was quite broken, and warre began to threaten the effuſion of much bloud: For the aduerſe part (by ſecret vnderminings and trecherous perſwaſions) poſſeſſed it ſelfe daily of many of the Regents Caſtles and Townes; and iuſtified that manner of proceeding, by affirming; That politike gainings without blowes, infringed not any Truce: and ſo farre off were the *Frenchmen*, from reſtoring thoſe things, which by thoſe ſubtleties they had gained; that to procure more, they ſecretly conuaied two hundred Souldiers into the Caſtle of *Roan*, hoping to haue ſurprized it, but the treaſon was reuealed, and the Conſpirators were (with maine ſtrength) beaten into the Dungeon: From whence they were ſentenced, ſome to the Gallowes; others to death by cruell torments; others to ſharpe impriſonment; and ſuch of them as ſped beſt, were (for great ranſomes, and ſummes of money) ſet at large.

The Truce broken.

Treaſon diſcouered.

1433. 12

Theſe coales quickly kindled the fire of rage, in ſo much that either partie made it ſelfe ſtrong, by the ſpeedie ſupply of a new Armie. And the Regents forces were much augmented, by *Iohn* Lord *Talbot*, who was of late redeemed out of priſon, who though hee brought with him out of *England* but only eight hundred choſen men at Armes, yet his name and his preſence more terrified the *Frenchmen*, then halfe the *Engliſh* Armie beſides. Oftentimes the two Armies by their neare approch, ſtriued to out-face and to daunt each other: And twice the Regent boldly challenged the *Frenchmen* to entertaine the fight: but they only made faire ſhewes to performe much, and ſeemed as if they thirſted to make themſelues famous by their manhood: yet in two ſeuerall places, and at two times, they fled in the night, and would not (in any ſort) hazard their Fortunes in the field.

Talbots name was terrible in France.

The Frenchmen would not fight.

A Rebellion in Normandy

Now, whileſt the Regent was thus carefully employed abroad, the

the Ruſtickes of *Normandie* treacherouſly attempting to ſhake off the *Engliſh* yoke (which was neuer burthenſome vnto them) rudely armed themſelues, and marched towards *Caen*; exerciſing much violence and crueltie in all places where they did preuaile. But they were ſpeedily encountred and ouerthrowne by the Earle of *Arundell* and the Lord *Willoughby*; who ſlew more than a thouſand of them, and tormented their rebellious Leaders and Captaines with ſundry ſorts of deaths, but permitted the baſer ſort to return home.

The Rebels are ſubdued.

This noble and couragious Earle purpoſing to reſeiſe for King *Henrie* the Towne of *Rue*, which grieuouſly puniſhed the Countries of *Ponthew*, *Arthois*, and *Bolenois*; perceiued (as hee marched) that an old decayed Caſtle, called *Gerbory*, neere vnto *Beauois*, was newly reedified and made ſtrong. This Caſtle hee aſſaulted with great courage: but being mortally wounded on the ancle with the ſhot of a Culuerine, hee was taken priſoner from the ground, but within few daies after he died.

The Earle of Arundell ſlaine.

About the ſame time, the Duke of *Burbon*, who about eighteene yeares before was taken priſoner at the battaile fought at *Agencourt*, paied his ranſome of eighteene thouſand pounds, but died in *London* the ſame day, in which hee intended to ſet forwards towards *France*.

The Duke of Bourbon is ranſomed, and dieth.

In the end of the raigne of King *Henrie* the Fifth, we may reuiew or remember, what a preciſe charge and command that King gaue to his Brethren, and to his Nobles, neuer to looſe the amitie and friendſhip of *Philip* Duke of *Burgoine*; and this Hiſtorie maketh mention how carefull they haue beene euer ſince, to obſerue his counſell in that behalfe: but the buſie tongues of Tell-tales, and of foiſting Flatterers, obtayning credit where reprehenſion was more fitting, preuailed in ſuch ſort, That the ſaid Duke cauſeleſly waxed iealous, and his loue was cold towards the Regent; yet through the perſwaſions, and by the mediation of their honorable friends, an enteruiew to reuiue their friendſhip was procured, and S. *Omers* was the place appointed for that purpoſe. But when they both had made their entrance into that Towne: The Duke of *Bedford*, becauſe he was Regent, and the ſonne, brother, and Vncle vnto Kings, expected the prioritie of viſitation by the Duke: but he, becauſe he was the Lord and Soueraigne of that Towne, ſuppoſed that he ſhould be checked for diſhonorable baſeneſſe, if hee ſhould firſt repaire to the Regents lodging. Theſe conceits touching their preheminence and ſuperioritie, were very likely to diſtemper their humors, more then formerly they had beene. For the preuenting whereof, their friends endeuoured to perſwade

The Regent and the Duke of Burgoine haue ſtout ſtomacks.

Tale-bearers or Tale-tellers.

them both to meete together in ſome indifferent place. But the Regent refuſed to yeeld thereunto. So they departed, and left the Towne; beeing both diſpleaſed and diſcontented with each others haughtineſſe of ſpirit and great ſtomacke. And forthwith the Duke of *Burgoine* entred into league and friendſhip with the *French* King, who had before murdered his Father. Which falling off from the *Engliſh*, aduantaged not him, nor ſounded to his honour.

The Duke of Burgoine forſakes the Regent.

1434. 13

About the ſame time, the Towne of Saint *Dennys* (neere vnto *Paris*) was treaſonably yeelded to the *French* King, by the ſecret practiſe of the Baſtard of *Orleance*; who was ſurnamed the Earle of *Dunoys*. But the Lord *Talbot*, and ſome other Lords, accompanied with fiue thouſand men, compaſſed it round about with a ſtrong Siege. Whereof when the Earle of *Dunoys* was informed; to remoue the Siege, he collected a ſtrong power of choſen horſemen. But ere hē came thither, the Towne (by compoſition) was ſurrendred; and the Walls and Towers thereof were beaten to the ground. And though in this place the *Engliſh* gayned; yet the inhabitants of *Ponthoys* (which ſtandeth on the Riuer betwixt *Normandie* and *Paris*) did rebell, and thruſt the *Engliſh* Garriſon out of the Towne: which from that time forward animated the inhabitants of *Paris* to thinke on nothing more, than how they might (by Treaſon, or by Violence) reduce themſelues to the ſubjection of the *French* King.

Saint Dennis trecherouſly betrayed.

Saint Dennis is recouered.

Ponthois reuolteth.

But behold; a greater miſhap than the loſſe of manie Townes and Cities, did (vnexpectedly) weaken King *Henries* part. For now the moſt renowned, wiſe, politike, and worthie Regent of *France*, died; and was (with all Princely Ceremonies and Solemnities) buried in a ſtately Monument, which was erected for him in our Ladie Church, within the Citie of *Roan*. Whereat the mutable and vnconſtant Nobilitie of the Duchie of *Normandie* (who had receiued from him manie benefits and fauors) much repined. And within few yeares after, they inſtantly requeſted the *French* King *Lewis* the eleuenth (who was the ſonne of King *Charles* the ſeuenth) to plucke it downe, and to caſt the Regents carkaſſe into the open fields; alledging, That it was much diſhonourable, and a great diſgrace for them, to ſuffer ſuch an enemie (as hee was to them and to the Kings of *France*) to be ſo richly interred within the Metropolitan Citie of that Prouince. But King *Lewis* (who worthily withſtood their baſe attempt) affirmed, & did publikely proteſt, That a more ſumptuous Sepulcher was too too bad to couer the dead corps of him, who in his life time ſcorned (vpon anie occa-

The Regent dieth.

He was buried in Roan.

His Sepulcher enuied.

A Kingly Speech.

occaſion whatſoeuer) to ſtep one foot backe for all the power and ſouldierie of *France:* and who, in all his proceedings, and in all his Gouernment, had approued himſelfe to be ſo wiſe, politike, faithfull, and hardie, that all heroicall and generous ſpirits ſhould rather endeuour to immortalize his Fame, and with the Trumpet of Honor to proclaime his manlike acts, than (in the leaſt meaſure) labour to ſhadow or to eclipſe them with Enuie or Diſgrace. And that there was no ſtronger an argument or proofe of baſeneſſe and of cowardiſe, than to inſult ouer the dead bodie of him; who (whileſt he liued) was amiable and courteous in time of Peace, but bold and terrible in Armes.

1435. 14

Richard Duke of Yorke made Regent.

The death of this renowned Prince was the cauſe of infinite alterations and changes within the Kingdome of *France*, and elſewhere. For after his death, *Richard* Duke of *Yorke* was made Regent, againſt the liking and good will of *Edmund* Duke of *Somerſet*, couſin to the King; who (for himſelfe) inwardly affected that authoritie and place.

Paris reuolteth, and is cruell to the Engliſh.

The treacherous Citie of *Paris* alſo, and manie other Townes, Caſtles, and Forts, rebelliouſly yeelded themſelues, and wholly became *French*. And not onely ſo: but villanouſly they murdred, taunted, and ſcoffed the *Engliſh* Nation; whom (in outward ſhew, and with faire words) they ſeemed, not long before, to honor, and extraordinarily to reſpect.

The rebellious Normans are ſubdued.

The *Normans* alſo reuolted, and tyrannized ouer the *Engliſhmen*; whome with the Sword, and by a thouſand meanes, they conſumed, vntill (by the ſlaughter of fiue thouſand of their companies) they were ſubdued by the Lord *Talbot*, the Lord *Scales*, Sir *Thomas Kyriel*, and by ſome others.

Priuate enuie hindered the publike good.

When *Paris*, Saint *Dennys*, Saint *Germans* in *Ley*, and manie more Cities and Townes were loſt; the new Regent, with eight thouſand ſouldiors, landed at *Harflew*; and from thence came to the Citie of *Roan*: where his Preſidents for Iuſtice were much admired and commended. But in the whole courſe of his Gouernment he effected nothing elſe to be wondered at; by reaſon that the Duke of *Somerſets* ſecret grudgings hindered thoſe Expeditions, which might haue made him famous, and his Countrey fortunate and happie.

The Duke of Burgoine beſiegeth Calice

The reuolted Duke of *Burgoine* (who not long before had falſified his Oath and Promiſe to King *Henrie*, and to his Father) pretending a rightfull Title vnto the Towne of *Callice*; beſieged it with an Armie, which conſiſted of fortie thouſand men.

This Towne was newly ſtrengthened with manie hundreds of braue ſouldiors; who by *Henrie*, Earle of *Mortayne*, and by the Lord of *Cammoys*, from *England* were brought thither. The Duke attempted to winne the Towne by three terrible aſſaults: but he was a great loſer by them all: And the incredible ſtrength of the place, and of his enemies, depriued him vtterly of all hope to winne it by any other meanes, than onely by Famine and ſcarſitie of foode. But that courſe he was not able to purſue; becauſe the *Engliſh* Nauie was Maſter of the Sea. But yet to ſhut vp the Hauen, and then for a while to attempt what might bee done; hee prepared foure great Hulkes, and filled them with ſquare and maſſie ſtones, ſemented and joyned cloſe together with Iron and with Lead, becauſe they ſhould (as a Rock) remayne together, and not be beaten in ſunder by the Sea. But ſo vnskilfull were they, who had the charge to ſinke them, that they miſſed the Channell: So that when the water was at an ebbe, the ſhippes lay drie, and were by the *Callicians* torne all abroad: and the Stones and Timber being taken in, ſerued for the prouiſion and fortifications of the Towne.

The Dukes Baſtyle taken by the Engliſh

The Duke alſo built a ſtrong *Baſtyle*, which he furniſhed with foure hundred fighting men: Which, though for a few dayes it prejudiced the beſieged, yet it did them no memorable harme. For (not long after it was erected) certaine Troupes of horſemen iſſued out of the Towne, who fought proudly with the Dukes Forces: and in the mean time the *Baſtyle* was aſſaulted and wonne by others; who tooke all ſuch priſoners as were not ſlaine therein, burned the Fort, and returned (with verie little loſſe) into the Towne.

The Duke of Burgoine flyeth in the night.

The Duke of *Burgoine* (who ſeemed much to rejoyce, becauſe the Protector had promiſed to attempt the rayſing of the Siege within few dayes) made great preparations to withſtand it. But being ſurprized with a ſuddaine feare, to be ſwallowed vp betwixt the *Engliſh* Armie and the Towne, he remoued from thence in the night; leauing to the Protector (who landed with his companies the day before) all his Tents, Ordnance, Armour, and Prouiſions, being of great worth.

The Protector (who brought with him thither fiue and twentie thouſand men) entred into the Dukes Countries of *Flanders* and *Arthois*: where he ſlew, burnt, ranſacked, and wonne rich booties at his owne pleaſure. And (without reſiſtance) he returned vnto *Callice*; and (with ſuch ſuperfluities as he had gotten) abundantly and plentifully he ſupplyed it with all things which they wanted:

and

and then hee returned into *England*; where hee found the State much troubled. For *Iames* the firſt, being King of *Scots* (forgetting quite the manifold fauors and Princely education, which, being a priſoner, hee found within the Kingdome of *England*) with thirtie thouſand men had (for manie weekes) beſieged the Caſtle of *Roſborough*: which was valiantly defended by Sir *Ralph Grey*. But the Earle of *Northumberland* (as hee was appointed) prepared to giue him battaile, and to remoue the Siege. Whereof when notice was giuen to the *Scottiſh* Armie, they remoued, and fled with extraordinarie ſpeede into their owne Countrey.

Roſbrough beſieged by the Scots.

The Scots flye.

About the ſame time died Queene *Katherine*, mother to the King: who, after her husbands death (fancying more her owne pleaſure and contentment, than the ſupporting of her high and honorable eſtate) married a goodly Gentleman, named *Owen Tuthar*: who (though his meanes were but ſmall) yet was hee diſcended from *Cadwallader*, the laſt King of the *Britons*: And by her hee had iſſue two ſonnes, halfe brothers to the King; that is to ſay, *Edmund*, and *Iaſpar*. This *Edmund* was (by King *Henrie*) created Earle of *Richmond*; and tooke to wife the Ladie *Margaret*, ſole Daughter and Heire vnto *Iohn* Duke of *Somerſet*; and begot on her King *Henrie* the ſeuenth. And *Iaſpar* was created Earle of *Pembroke*.

1436.
15

Likewiſe, the Ladie *Iaquet* (ſiſter vnto the Earle of Saint *Paule*, and Ducheſſe Dowager to *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford*, the late Regent of *France*) contrarie to her friends liking (yet to pleaſe her ſelfe) married a gallant Gentleman (who was much inferiour to her eſtate) named Sir *Richard Wooduyle*: whome (afterwards) the King made Baron *Ryuers*, and then Earle *Ryuers*: And by him (among manie other children) ſhe had iſſue *Elizabeth*; who was (after) the wife of King *Edward* the fourth; and was mother to the Ladie *Elizabeth*, whome King *Henrie* the ſeuenth eſpouſed and tooke to wife.

Sir Richard Wooduyle made Baron Ryuers: and afterwards Earle Ryuers

It pleaſed the Kings Councell of this Realme to diſcharge *Richard*, Duke of *Yorke*, of his Regencie in *France*; and to eſtabliſh the Earle of *Warwike* in his place. Who embarked himſelfe ſeuen times, before he could ſet one foot in *Normandie*. But (at laſt) his arriuall was fortunate and happie. And hauing intelligence, that the Duke of *Burgoine*, with tenne thouſand men, lay ſtrongly entrenched before *Crotoy*; hee ſent the Lords *Talbot* and *Fawconbridge*, Sir *Thomas Kyriell*, and manie other valiant Captaines, with fiue thouſand *Engliſhmen*, to rayſe that Siege. But the Duke (fearing with his double number to encounter with his enemies) fled with

The Earle of Warwike is made Regent

1437.
16

Crotoy is beſieged.

with his whole Armie vnto *Abbeuyle*. From whence hee being eagerly purſued, and hourely dared to make a ſtand, and to play the man; he poſted vnto *Amiens*: where the *Engliſhmen* (who daily hunted after him) found him and his companies ſtrongly encloſed within the walls. But becauſe he played the coward, and would not fight, the Lord *Talbot* entred into *Picardie* and *Arthois*: where (vnreſiſted) he waſted and conſumed the whole Countrey (the walled Townes, Caſtles, and Forts onely excepted) and enriched all his Armie with Cattell, Money, Plate, and many other things of great worth and value.

The Duke of Burgoine will not fight.

Sir *Thomas Kyriel* alſo ſurprized the Dukes Carriages and his Ordnance: all which booties were brought vnto *Crotoy*, with as much victuals as would maintaine ſix hundred men for one whole yeare. And all the reſidue of thoſe ſpoyles he ſent to the Earle of *Warwike*; which abundantly ſupplyed his great wants.

Sir Thomas Kyriels valor

The Earle of *Mortayne*, ſonne to *Edmund* Duke of *Somerſet*, by violent aſſaults tooke the Caſtle of Saint *Auyan* in *Mayne*, and ſlew therein three hundred *Scots*, and hanged all the *Frenchmen* whom he found there; becauſe (hauing once beene ſworne to King *Henrie*) they reuolted, and became *French*.

Periurie puniſhed.

Thus Fortune euerie day turned her Wheele, making him who yeſterday wonne much, to day to loſe all; and ſuddainely aduancing thoſe to great honour, whome former diſaſters had made miſerable and bare. But the *Frenchmens* Treaſons and Trecheries daily betrayed more Cities, Townes, and Caſtles, to the *French* King, than either the *Engliſhmen* could hold by Policie, or gaine by Strength.

The French King winneth by trecherie, not by valour.

And albeit that by reaſon thereof he comforted himſelfe; and proſperous ſucceſſe accompanied moſt of his Attempts: yet was he (on a ſuddaine) checked by the open Rebellion of his eldeſt ſonne, the Dolphin of *Vyen*: Who (being aſſiſted by the Dukes of *Alanſon* and of *Burbon*) vſurped the Gouernment of *France*; and by publike Edicts diuulged the inſufficiencie of his Father to rule that Kingdome.

The Dolphin rebelleth againſt his father.

1438.
17

This Clowd threatened a ſhrewd ſtorme; and begat this Queſtion in his Father and in his Councellors of State: *Whether it were better to attempt the curing of this Maladie by Ciuill Warre, and by letting of Bloud; or by Diſcretion and by Policie, without blowes?* The later Project being entertained, publike Proclamations were made in the *French* Kings Name; by which he prohibited all his ſubiects (vpon the paines of death) to yeeld anie ſubiection to the Dolphins Commands, and pardoned all ſuch, as (by his perſuaſions)

The Rebellion is appeaſed.

had

had deuoted themselues to his seruice. And moreouer, sundrie Letters were written, diuers Messengers were sent, and manie powerfull Mediators so preuayled, that the Dolphin, with his confederates, were quickly reconciled, and joyfully receiued into the Kings fauour.

The regayning of Paris attempted.

Whilest these vnnaturall broyles breathed fresh hopes into the *English* Nation, that *Paris* might bee regayned; they prepared a great Armie for that purpose. But by meanes of the said Reconciliation and Agreement, those their designes were strangled in their birth: their Armie was dissolued; and beeing enforced to sayle by a smaller Compas, they endeuoured to effect such things as were proportionable to their strength, and to win those things which were within their reach.

Ponthois surprized.

1439. 18

Policie.

About the same time (the ground being couered with a thicke Snow, which was much hardened by a suddaine Frost) *Iohn* Lord *Clifford* (clothing himselfe and his followers all in white) passed in the night season ouer the Ditches of *Ponthois* (which not long before was treacherously yeelded to the *French* King:) the Walls they scaled; entred in; slew the Watch; wonne the Towne; killed the greater part of all the men found there; and tooke manie prisoners, which yeelded them good ransomes in a short time.

The French King besiegeth Ponthois

This bold Attempt so passionately vexed the *French* King, that (in his owne Person) he came before the Towne with a great Armie: with which, and with manie Trenches, Bastyles, Forts, and Rampiers, hee compassed it round about, and gaue vnto it manie fierce assaults. In all which he lost much, and was scorned by the besieged.

A new Regent.

And whilest he thus lay before the Towne, *Richard Beauchampe*, Earle of *Warwike*, and Regent of *France*, died; and *Richard*, Duke of *Yorke*, was the second time made Regent of that Kingdome. Who (being accompanied with the Earle of *Oxford*, the Lord *Bourchier* Earle of *Ewe*, the Lord *Talbot*, and manie others) raysed a great Armie, repayred to the Siege, and dared the *French* King into the field. Which he refused: and leauing his Ordnance in the strongest Bastyle of Saint *Martyn*, which he had erected; he raysed his Siege in the middest of the night, and went vnto *Poyssy*.

He runneth away in the night.

But in the morning, when the *English* Armie perceiued, that their enemies had fearefully abandoned the place, and had left their Tents behinde them; they possessed them with much joy, and found much riches, and store of all prouisions, with which they comforted themselues and the Towne. And leauing there Sir *Geruase Clifton*, with a thousand valiant men, to defend it, and neg-

neglecting the *Baſtyle*, which neither could without much loſſe be ſuddenly gotten, nor was able to doe any harme: The Regent, with all his Companies, directed his iourney towards *Poyſie*: and being come thither, he ſet his Armie in a warlike maner; nothing doubting, but that the *French* King (whoſe ſtrength was much increaſed, by the repaire of the chiefeſt Lords, and gallantrie of *France*) would haue anſwered him, in the open field; but hee kept himſelfe cloſe within the Towne. In ſo much that when the Regent perceiued that no bold bragging, nor ſcornefull tauntings, could moue his patience, nor make him valiant: Hee left him there, and by eaſie Marches he came to *Roan*.

He is dared, yet playes the Coward.

Ponthoys beſieged the ſecond time.

The *French* King, as ſoone as hee heard that the *Engliſh* Armie was ſo farre off; entred into a ſerious conſideration of his eſtate. And (being mindfull that the *Pariſians*, by often ſcandals, had reproued his faint heart) and that the Towne of *Ponthoys* was an euill enemie to that Citie: To regaine his reputation and Honor, by winning of that Towne, he vſed extraordinarie expedition, and with a puiſant Armie hee beſieged it round about: And (becauſe hee feared, leaſt ſmall delayes might depriue him of his hopes) he aſſaulted it; almoſt euery houre, and loſt before it aboue three thouſand men. But in the end he wonne the Towne, and ſlaughtered foure hundred *Engliſhmen*; the reſt of them were taken Priſoners, and ordered according to the *French* Kings will. And when he had thus preuailed, diuers other Cities and townes (greedily embracing all reportes of their Kings valour) treacherouſly reuolted, and became *French*.

It is valiantly defended.

It is taken.

A Parley.

Naturaliſts haue taught vs, that when two Lions haue by Combate tired themſelues, they doe depart proudly each from the other, neither of them ſeeming to yeeld; and both of them expreſſing many ſignes of much triumph. And our Hiſtories doe report, that both King *Henrie*, and King *Charles*, being wearied with the infinite vexation of their Warres, and with their daily trauailes, ſeemed both of them to be Conquerours: yet were they both eaſily perſwaded to harken to ſuch indifferent motions for a Truce; as were propoſed by their friends. For this conference, *Callice* was appointed the place to meete in, which Towne was choſen before any other, becauſe *Charles* the noble Duke of *Orleance* (who euer ſince the Battaile of *Agencourt*, had continued a Priſoner in *England*) was to bee conueied ouer, that (for his Ranſome of three hundred thouſand Crownes if it could be gotten) he might be enlarged and ſet free. The Ambaſſadours which met there about this buſineſſe, conſulted often times, but at length they adiourned

iourned thoſe negotiations vntill ſome other time, becauſe the demands of King *Henrie* were thought to bee vnreaſonable in three points.

King Henries demands.

FIrſt, in regard of the ouer-great ſumme of Money, which was demanded for the Dukes Ranſome.

Secondly, for that the peaceable, and the quiet poſſeſſion of the whole and entire Dutchies of Aquitaine, and of Normandie, was required, and to bee inioyed freely, without any acknowledgement of Homage, or of Soueraigntie of the Crowne of France.

And thirdly, becauſe the ſurrendring and yeelding vp into King Henries hands, was vrged of all ſuch Cities, townes, Caſtles, Forts and Territories in France, as the Engliſh Nation had enioyed, at any time within the ſpace of thirtie yeares then laſt paſt.

The Parley is diſſolued.

Yet (not long after this meeting was diſſolued) *Philip* Duke of *Burgoine*, pitying the enthrals eſtate of the Duke of *Orleance*, and remembring *Iohn* his father, had cruelly murdered *Lewys* the father of the ſaid Duke: paide his Ranſome, and (at his own charge) tranſported him, with honourable attendance into *France*.

The Duke of Orleance is Ranſomed.

And now the Regent (purpoſing to preuent the *Frenchmans* Warres, with which they intended to diſturbe the Peace of the Duchie of *Normandie*) diuided all his Companies into foure Troopes, which were ſeuerally commanded by himſelfe, by the Duke of *Sommerſet*, by *Robert* Lord *Willoughby*, and by *Iohn* Lord *Talbot*. All theſe (in ſeuerall places) inuaded the Territories of *France* and of *Britaine*; and preuailed euery where: ſauing at the Towne of *Deepe*, which though they long beſieged, yet was it cleared in the end. And in the meane time the *French* King with his Sonne the *Dolphin* of *Vyen*, with the Baſtard of *Orleance*, ſurnamed the Lord *Dumoys*, entred into *Aquitaine* and *Guyan*, with an Armie of threeſcore thouſand men, and receiued many Caſtles, Townes and Cities into their hands: which voluntarily, and without blowes were yeelded vnto them, but they were not long inioyed. For the *French* Armie (being very great; and pinched with extreame Famine and diuers wants) was broken vp. And immediatly after their departure into *France*, the *Engliſhmen* recouered whatſoeuer was formerly gotten by the *French* King.

1440.
19
Cruell Warres

A huge Armie.

Much is gotten and loſt againe.

About

1441. 20

Diſſention betweene the Protector and the Cardinal. No redreſſe.

About the ſame time, the good Duke of *Gloceſter*, Protector of the Kings perſon, and of this kingdome. Diſliked much the vndue proceedings of his Vncle, the rich Cardinal of *Wincheſter*, and of the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*: Who (without his conſent; or the Kings Warrant) attempted, and did many publike things for their owne profit and priuate gaine. For the reformation whereof, hee preferred vnto the King, certaine Articles againſt them: The conſideration of which, was referred to the Priuie Counſell. But becauſe the moſt of them were Clergie-men, they afforded no manner of redreſſe; where at the Protector was much diſpleaſed. But to requite him with more vexation, and a greater trouble, they cauſed the Lady *Eleanor* his wife, to be accuſed, and conuicted for conſpiring of the Kings death with Witches: and ſuch like graceleſſe people, for which ſhee was inforced three times to doe publike Penance in the Citie of *London*, and afterwards ſhee was committed to perpetuall Impriſonment. But diuers of her condemned aſſociates were Executed, and put to ſundrie kinds of death.

The Protectors wife condemned for witchcraft.

1442. 21

Iohn, created Earle of Shrewsbury. A worthy Captaine.

And now to returne to the *French* Warres: King *Henrie* (in regard of former ſeruices, and of future hopes of the like performance) Created the Lord *Iohn Talbot* Earle of *Shrewsburie*, and ſent him into *Normandie*, with three thouſand ſelected men, for the better ſecuring of that Duchie. In which expedition, hee worthily demeaned himſelfe, and wonne much Honour.

This yeare the Counteſſe of *Coming* in *Guyen*, died without iſſue: and her inheritance was claimed by the *French* King. And likewiſe the Earle of *Arminacke* pretended himſelfe to be her next heire. And to ſtrengthen himſelfe the better to gaine his right, he offered his Daughter in marriage to King *Henrie*, with the gift of much money, and with the ſurrendring into his hands, of all ſuch Territories and poſſeſsions within the Duchie of *Aquitaine*; and *Guyen* as (either by Conqueſt, or by diſcent) did belong vnto him.

A mariage offered to King Henrie

The King is offered to the Earle of Arminaks daughter.

This offer was willingly hearkned vnto, and accepted by the King, who (by his Ambaſſadors) was publikly offered to the ſaid Lady. But the *French* King, minding rather to preuent dangers before they come, then to remooue them after they were happned) ſo ſuddenly inuaded the ſaid Earles Countries and Dominions with an Armie: that (with ſmall or no reſiſtance) hee quickly made himſelfe the Owner of them all. The newes whereof, ſo altered and changed the minde, and the affections of King *Henrie* towards his offered Lady, that he would neuer after be perſwaded to hearken vnto; or to thinke vpon that match.

The King refuſeth her.

1443. 22.

The grieued compaſſion, which forraine Princes tooke vpon the

the lamentable diſtreſſe of poore *France*, becauſe the bloud of Chriſtians was ſo vnmeaſurably and ſo vnmercifully ſhed in thoſe warres, incited them to mediate both theſe Kings to make a friendly peace: which was not effected according to their endeuours and deſires, but a truce only was concluded for eighteene moneths: In the handling whereof, the Earle of *Suffolke* (not warranted by his Commiſſion, nor making his aſſociates acquainted with his purpoſe) ſollicited a mariage betwixt his Lord and maſter King *Henry*, and the Lady *Margaret* coſen to the *French* King, and daughter vnto *Reyner* Duke of *Angeow*, being the titularie King of *Sicilie*, *Naples*, and *Ieruſalem*. With her hee made no demand for any money, becauſe her father was but poore; nay, (which was much worſe) hee conſented, that if the ſaid mariage might be effected, King *Henry* ſhould freely and frankly releaſe vnto her father all his right and title to the ſaid Dutchie of *Angeow*, and to the Country of *Mayne*.

A truce for eighteene moneths.

The Earle of Suffolke ſollicited another mariage for King Henry, without authority giuen to him.

A diſhonorable match propounded and concluded.

The Lords of *France* were quickly wonne to hearken to this motion, and King *Henry* was glad at the heart that he ſhould haue for his wife ſuch a faire and freſh Lady, as the Earle of *Suffolke* could neuer praiſe enough. But the Protector ſtrongly oppoſed himſelfe againſt this match, terming her deſcent to be but Titularie, and vrging much the pouertie of her father; and told the King, that his honour and reputation would receiue many ſcandals, if he ſhould reiect the Earle of *Arminaks* daughter, vnto whom with all due ceremonies he was publikely affied: and alſo, that his loſſe would be lamentable, if he releaſed his lawfull and iuſt title to the Dutchie of *Angeow*, and to the Country of *Mayne*, according to the Earle of *Suffolkes* vnaduiſed offer. But all his reaſons (as friuolous) were reiected, and his counſell was not cared for. But the King, to gratifie and to pleaſe ſuch of his Noble-men as therein enclined themſelues to his humour, beſtowed on them new Dignities and honours. For *Iohn* Lord *Holland* (Earle of *Huntingdon*) was created Duke of *Exeter*, as his father had beene: *Humfrey* Earle of *Stafford* was made Duke of *Buckingham*: *Henry* Earle of *Warwicke* was made Duke of *Warwicke*, and the ſaid Earle of *Suffolke* was created Marques of *Suffolke*. Which Marques (being very honourably accompanied with great troupes of Lords, Ladies, and other perſonages of great worth and honour) went richly prouided into *France*, and according to his condition, receiued the Lady *Margaret* from the *French* King, and from *Reyner* her father, and conueied her with great pompe and princely magnificence into *England*, where (within few daies after) ſhe was maried

Reaſons why this match was diſliked.

1.
2.
3.
4.

Creation of Lords.

1444.
23.

The new Marqueſſe fetcheth the yong Queen.

The King is maried.

to the King, and crowned Queene. Now as the prefixed time for the truce drew towards an end; ſo King *Henry* perceiued, that this his new alliance with the *French* King promiſed him not any certaintie that it ſhould be enlarged, or that he ſhould haue peace.

1445. 24. For in *France* freſh ſupplies were hourely prouided to reuiue the former warre, and euery day offered euident demonſtrations, that nothing was more to be expected then blowes. Wherefore to encounter thoſe preparations with the like prouiſions, the King aſſembled his high Court of Parlament: in which the Marques of *Suffolke* (in a powerfull, glozing, and tedious Oration) extolled his owne deſerts aboue the skies, as well in his ſeruice in the *French* warres, as alſo in mouing and in concluding the late truce, and the Kings mariage. He alſo admoniſhed his Highneſſe, and the two houſes there aſſembled, what preparations for warre were made in *France*, and how behoouefull it was for the King to doe the like. And vpon this motion (proceeding from his haughtie pride and ambitious minde) the whole aſſemblie became humble ſuters to his Maieſtie, that not only his ſaid admonition and aduice, but alſo all his ſaid former ſeruices and doings, might in moſt ample ſort be regiſtred among the Rolles of Parliament, for the perpetuallizing of his honour and of his name: which with wonderfull applauſe was conſented vnto; and ſhortly after he was created Duke of *Suffolke*. Yet for all this, before many yeares were expired, he was in the ſame place accuſed, conuicted, and condemned for ſundrie treaſons, miſpriſions, and offences; for which he was exiled, taken, and without law put to death, as hereafter wee ſhall ſee.

A Parliament.

The Marqueſſe of Suffolks oration.

His motion.

A Record made of his acts.

He is made a Duke.

Humana caduca.

Such is the continuall vncertaintie, and the aſſured inſtabilitie of worldly glorie, and the vanitie thereof; that when men doe imagine, that they doe ſecurely ſleepe on the bed of honour, then is their reſt moſt diſeaſefull, and their ſoundeſt ſleepe is but an vnquiet ſlumber, troubled with fearefull and ſtrange dreames; rather informing them of approching dangers, then aſſertaining them of the long continuance of that ſuppoſed felicitie, which ſo vnmeaſurably they doe deſire.

1446. 25 It will be worthie of our labour, in this place to obſerue, that from henceforth the affaires of *France* proceeded worſe & worſe: ſo that within few yeares that whole kingdome, with the Duchies of *Aquitaine* and *Normandie*, were vtterly loſt. The cauſes of which misfortunes are principally noted to be theſe.

The cauſes of the loſſe of France, Normandie, and Aquitaine.

1. The firſt was, the releaſement of *Lewys* the noble Duke of *Orleance* for his ranſome. For his wiſdome inſtructed the weake

Counſell

Counſell of *France.* His perſwaſions reconciled all ſuch iarres as were too too common among the Nobilitie of *France:* and his valour was put into execution with ſuch excellencie of diſcretion, that by his example the *French* cowards became valiant.

2. The ſecond was this vnhappie and this vnfortunate mariage betwixt the King and his Queene: for by meanes thereof the Earle of *Arminake,* his kinſmen, and his friends, became mortall enemies to the Engliſh Nation, hating them for their Kings ſake, becauſe he had vnfaithfully forſaken his affied wife. And beſides that, the King had not one penny with the Queene for her mariage portion; but ſpent on her many thouſand pounds before hee enioyed her as his wife. And by this match alſo the King did not ſtrengthen himſelfe with any new friends: for her fathers penurie and wants enforced him to liue almoſt as a priuate man.

3. Thirdly, the releaſement of King *Henries* right to his Duchie of *Angeow,* and to the Country of *Mayne,* which bordered vpon *Normandie,* ſo weakned the Kings Army in that Prouince, that ſhortly after he was driuen out and expulſed from that Duchie, and all *Aquitaine* by reaſon thereof was quite loſt.

4. The fourth was the guiltleſſe death and murder of the moſt noble and good Duke of *Gloceſter,* whoſe aduice and counſell were the ſinewes of thoſe warres.

5. To theſe alſo may bee added the diuers diſpoſitions and qualities of the King and of the Queene. For King *Henry* was exceeding milde, courteous, and gentle, patient in all aduerſities, moderate in proſperitie, a deſpiſer of couetouſneſſe, an hater of oppreſſion, a louer of quietneſſe and of peace. Hee loathed warres, and the toile and troubles of the world: hee ſpent much time in his priuate ſtudies, and in his religious exerciſes vnto God. Hee was not deſirous to meddle much with publike affaires, nor with the gouernment of his kingdome. He deſired not to reuenge any wrong which was done vnto him. He was more mercifull to ſuch as tranſgreſſed, then willing to extend the rigour of iuſtice againſt ſuch as had offended his lawes: yea, ſo little reſpectfull was hee of his owne greatneſſe, and of his knightly dignitie and honour, (in regard of his ſoules health) that hee loued rather to be ruled then to gouerne as a King. *The deſcription of King Henry.*

But the young Queene (who was faire and beautifull, ſtrong and luſtie, proud and haughtie, ſtout and reuengefull, craftie and politicke) was not well pleaſed with the ſoft nature and flexible diſpoſition of the King: neither could her ambitious ſpirit endure, *The deſcription of Queen Margaret.*

that he being more then of full yeares, ſhould (as a pupill) be ruled and directed by another man. Being therefore clearely reſolued to diſmiſſe the Duke of *Gloceſter* of his Protectorſhip and command, and making a publike ſhew of her inward intention to ſupplie his place, ſhee was encouraged and furthered therein by her truſtie friends the Duke of *Buckingham* and the Duke of *Suffolke*, who (by the ſecret inſtigation of the rich Cardinall of *Wincheſter*, and of the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, who mortally hated the Protector) not only remoued him from his place, but called him to a ſtrict account for the expence of the treaſure of this kingdome: which iuſtly and honeſtly was diſburſed by him, for the maintenance and furthering of the *French* warres.

The Queene diſmiſſeth the Protector of his office and charge.

And when they perceiued that they were vnable by that courſe and practiſe to attaine vnto their purpoſe, they procured the Queene (in the Kings name) to aſſemble his high Court of Parliament at *Burye*, where the ſaid Duke (ſurnamed for his ſurpaſſing and heroicall vertues, with which he was adorned, *The good Duke of Gloceſter*) was attached, and arreſted for high treaſon, and committed vnto priſon: and the next day he was found dead & breathleſſe in his bed, being cruelly and inhumanely murdered, without doubt. Aſſoone as he was thus diſpatched out of the way, *Richard* Duke of *Yorke* ſecretly conſpired with his great allies and truſtie friends, to ſet on foot his title to the Crowne. And likewiſe the Duke of *Suffolke* (who with the Queene ruled all the roſt) reſpected more his owne profit, then the benefit of the common-weale, and vſed ſundrie deuiſes and cunning practiſes to oppreſſe the people, that with their coine he might fill vp his owne purſe. By meanes whereof, no prouiſion of money was made for the ſupporting of the Kings warres in *France*; no Armie was newly raiſed to aſſiſt ſuch as were then abroad; no wages were paid to ſouldiers, or vnto Captaines: which made them diſcontentedly to murmure. Neither was the Kings Counſell of Eſtate ſufficiently able to rule and to direct as was needfull and neceſſarie for the Kings profit at home, or for his honour or aduantage abroad.

He is called the good Duke of Gloceſter.

He is murdered.

The French warres are neglected.

A weake Counſell.

Before the laſt prefixed time of truce was ended, Sir *Francis Surrayne* (an *Arragonoys*, but a Captaine ouer ſome Engliſh troupes) by a ſudden ſurpriſall in the night, tooke the Towne of *Fongyers*, which ſtanding in the frontier of *Normandie*, belonged to the Duke of *Britaine*, where hee ſlew the inhabitants, and rifled all at his pleaſure: for which no recompence was yeelded to the Duke; for hee was anſwered, that the fact was committed by a priuate Captaine, without the conſent of the King, or of the

The truce is broken.

Fongyers is taken.

Duke

Duke of *Somerſet*, who was then Regent or Lieu-tenant of the Duchy of *Normandy*, in which the ſaid *Surrayne* at that time liued.

The *Frenchmen* likewiſe, by the ſubtile policie of a Waggoner, (who with his Cart ſtopped the Draw-bridge vntill they were entred with their Companies) tooke from the *Engliſhmen* the town of *Pont larch*, which is diſtant from *Roan* about twelue miles, and is the kay of entrance from *France* ouer the Riuer of *Some* into *Normandie*, where the *Engliſhmen* were ſlain without pitie or compaſſion: and the goods and ſubſtance of the Inhabitants was taken away in like ſort, as it was done at *Fongyers*.

Pont-larch taken.

Thus was the Truce violated on both Parts: And thus were thoſe bloudie warres renewed, which were daily fed with the ſlaughters of the braueſt, and of the moſt valiant men. The *French* King (perceiuing that the *Engliſhmen* were not now as puiſant in thoſe Countries, as they had beene in former times: and being minded to hold faſt his good Fortune, which drew him by the hand into great hope of proſperous ſucceſſe) diuided his huge Armie into three parts, with which in few daies he tooke the townes of *Louyers*, *Gerbory*, and *Vernoyle*. The Inhabitants alſo of *Conſtance*, *Gyſours*, *Caſtle*, *Gayllard*, *Ponteau-du mere*, *S. Loy*, *Feſampe*, and many others in *Normandie*, and in *Guyan*, who were ſwayed by their Garriſons, ſurrendred themſelues into his hands. The Duke of *Sommerſet* likewiſe, and the Earle of *Shrewesbury* (being therevnto violently enforced by the *Roaniſts*, by compoſition yeelded vnto him that Citie, and departed with all their goods & ſubſtance to the Citie of *Cane*, vpon Hoſtages left behinde them; that ſundrie other Caſtles and Townes (according to their agreement and promiſe) ſhould alſo bee giuen vp without blowes to the *French* King. So that within few dayes, the Caſtle and Towne of *Harflew*, and many others, became *French*.

The French King preuaileth.

1448. 27

Roan is yeelded to the French King

Har-flew is yeelded.

1449. 28.

The vnhappie newes of daily loſſes in *Normandie*, and in *Aquitaine*, much appaled King *Henrie*, and troubled his Counſell, who (being vnable to direct, as they had done, whilſt the good Duke of *Gloceſter* liued, and did aſsiſt them) knew not what courſe was beſt to be taken, and they were the more perplexed in thoſe affaires, by meanes of a lewd and dangerous Rebellion, which (at the ſame time) hapned in *Ireland*. For the ſpeedie ſuppreſsing whereof, King *Henrie* was conſtrained to tranſport the Duke of *Yorke* with an Armie thither. In which ſeruice he ſo ſucceſſefully preuailed, that hee not only appeaſed that tumult, but (by his wiſedome, courteſie, and valour) wonne the fauour, and the heartie loue of that Nation.

A Rebellion in Ireland.

The Duke of Yorke appeaſeth it.

This Expedition much hindred the Kings preparations for the defence of his Duchie of *Normandie*; yet he ſent thither Sir *Thomas Kyriel*, a prudent, and a valiant man, accompanied with fourteene hundred Souldiers, who (with ſo ſmall a handfull) did as much as could in reaſon bee expected. For hee recouered diuers Townes and Caſtles, which had beene loſt: And (had his ſtrength conſiſted of a greater number) hee would aſſuredly by his valour, haue performed much more.

Cane is beſieged.

This worthie Captaine, finding himſelfe to be too weake, to encounter many thouſands of his Enemies, Vnited his forces with *Matthew Gough*, Sir *Henrie Norbery*, Sir *Robert Vere*, and ſome others: So that their Armie conſiſted of fiue thouſand approued valiant men, all which (with haughtie courage and reſolued minds to winne honour) encountred with an Armie of ſeuen thouſand of their Enemies, as they marched ſtrongly to the ſiege of the Citie of *Cane*. In the beginning of this fight the *Engliſhmen* preuailed according to their hearts deſire: But in the middeſt of all their hopes, they were deceiued. For being grieuouſly oppreſſed by *Arthur* Earle of *Richmont*, high Conſtable of *France*, *Iames* of *Luxenburgh* Earle of *Laualt*, and by many other Noble men of *France*, (who trauailed with many Cornets of Horſemen towards the ſame ſiege) and finding their Countrie-men beaten downe, fainting, and on the point to runne out of the field, relieued them with their freſh ſupplies, and ſo furiouſly aſſaulted the tyred *Engliſh* Armie, that it was quickly ouerthrowen, foure thouſand of them being ſlaine, Sir *Thomas Kyriel*, Sir *Robert Norbery*, with eight hundred more were taken priſoners: but *Matthew Gough*, and Sir *Robert Vere*, and the ſuruiuors of their Companies, ſaued themſelues by flight.

The Engliſh are ouerthrowne.

The firſt victorie in open field which the French in many yeares obtayned.

Thus were the *Engliſhmen* ouerthrowen and miſerably waſted: and this was the firſt Battaile in open field, which the *Frenchmen* wonne of the *Engliſh* in many yeares before, whereof their Hiſtorians doe not a little bragge. This victorie being thus obtayned, the Citie of *Cane* in *Normandie* was cloſely beſieged by the *French* King: and oftentimes her walls were aduenterouſly ſcaled: The aſſaylants made many braue and bold attempts, but were manfully repulſed and beaten back, with the loſſe of their limbs, and of their liues: Then were the walls daily battered, and the *Frenchmen* eagerly endeuoured to enter in: but their preſumption was ſharply checked by the beſieged, who did caſt them off as faſt as they enterprized to come in. Thus euery man contended to buy Honour, but none other paiment for it (but bloud) was currant in

Cane is battred, aſſaulted, & ſtoutly defended.

in that place. The Duke of *Somerset* (being daily importuned by the fearfull exclamations of his wife and children to surrender the towne) debated thereof seriously with Sir *Dauid Hall*, who was appointed to be the chiefe Captaine and Commander of that Citie, by the Duke of *Yorke*, whose Towne it was. But the couragious Knight would not in any sort consent to the Dukes will, whereat he was much displeased, and demanded whether the Kings Lieutenant Generall of that Dutchie had not sufficient authoritie and power of himselfe (without his leaue) to dispose of the Townes and Castles of that Prouince? No, quoth the Knight, the Kings Lieu-tenant here may not, nor can sell, or yeeld vp any mans right, but his only, whose person he doth represent: and this Citie being my Lord the Duke of *Yorkes*, quoth he, you haue no power to surrender it to the *French* King, nor shall, on any composition whatsoeuer. The Duke being highly displeased with this bold and peremptorie answere, informed the inferiour Captaines, common souldiers, and the poorer sort of the Inhabitants, of the approching dangers, which would vndoubtedly be the destruction of them all: and aduised them, not to be depriued of their liues, and of their liberties, through the desperate follie and wilfulnesse of their obstinate and indiscreet Captaine. This caueat made them clamorous, and this counsell so hardned their hearts against Sir *Dauid Hall*, that they resolued (in despight of him) to yeeld the Citie (vpon composition) to the *French* King. Thus was the peoples obedience seuered and diuided from him: and thus was their courage conuerted into feare: and on a sudden (vpon certaine Articles agreed on) the Citie was abandoned, and became *French*: so that *Roan* and *Cane* (being the chiefest Cities of the Dutchie of *Normandie*) being lost, all the whole Dutchie (in a short time after) reuolted from King *Henry*, and was lost likewise.

The Duke of Somerset would surrender Cane.

Sir Dauid Hall will not suffer it.

A valiant Knight.

A Mutinie

Cane is lost.

All Normandie is lost, and so is France.

The noble Captaine Sir *Dauid Hall*, being thus wronged and disgraced, forsooke *Normandie*, and sailed into *Ireland*, where hee informed the Duke of *Yorke* what the Duke of *Somerset* had done; whereat he was so highly displeased, that he neuer ceased priuatly and openly to practise, vntill the said Duke of *Somerset* deseruedly had lost his head. For this insupportable and vnfortunate losse of the Dutchie of *Normandie*, the Queene and the Duke of *Suffolke* were first secretly blamed by the whispering common people of this kingdome, who afterwards by open slanders, and with publike reprochfull speeches, exclaimed, and accused the said Duke of many notable trecheries and grosse treasons, which chiefly consisted of these particulars.

The Duke of Yorke maliceth the Duke of Somerset.

1450.

29

Treasons

Treaſons obiected againſt the Duke of SVFFOLKE.

FIrſt, That by his wicked and vngodly meanes, the Duke of Gloceſter was depriued both of his Protectorſhip and of his life.

2 Item, that by his appointment ſuch Counſellors of State were placed about the King and Queene, as aduiſed all things for their gaine, and not for the profit of the Common-weale.

3 Item, that the Queene and the ſaid Duke ruled the whole kingdome as they liſted: ſo that (by reaſon thereof) all things ſucceeded ill and hurtfull to this kingdome.

4 Item, that the ſaid Duke was the meanes and occaſion that the Kings right to Aquitanie and Guyan were yeelded vp, which weakned, and at length loſt all the Duchies of Aquitanie and of Normandie.

5 Item, that he had maried his ſonne Iohn to the Lady Margaret, ſole daughter and generall heire to Iohn Duke of Somerſet; and had reported, that ſhe was the next heire to the Crowne of England, if King Henry hapned to die without iſſue.

6 Item, that he had perſwaded the Earle of Dumoys, and other great Lords and Officers of France, to tranſport an Armie into this Realme, to deſtroy the King, and conſequently to make his ſaid ſonne Iohn ſucceſſor to this Crown and kingdome.

7 Item, that he procured the Duke of Orleance to be ſet at libertie for a ranſome, contrary to the commandement and the laſt Will and Teſtament of King Henry the fifth: by whoſe means afterwards the affaires of France were made more powerfull and fortunate then formerly they had been, and King Henries forces were daily enfeebled, and made more weake thereby in thoſe Countries.

8 Item, that he had counſelled the ſaid Duke (before his departure

parture out of England) to perſwade the French King to augment and to increaſe his armie, and to make ſharper warres both in Normandie and in France againſt King Henry; who ſo did: by which meanes the King loſt all his poſſeſſions in thoſe Countries.

9 *Item, that aſſoone as he came Ambaſſador into France, he ſecretly informed King Charles of the chiefe points of his Commiſsion, and inſtructions: by meanes whereof he grew obſtinate, and refuſed to conclude any peace.*

10 *Item, that the ſaid Duke (at his laſt being in France) reuealed to the French king the weakneſſe of King Henries prouiſions to withſtand him: by meanes wherof the Frenchmen became more bold and hardie in thoſe warres.*

11 *Item, that boaſtingly and fooliſhly he had reported, in the preſence of many noble and honourable perſonages, that he had as high a place in the Counſell houſe of France as bee had in England, and that by reaſon of his eſpeciall intereſt in the French Kings loue, hee could diſpoſſeſſe the neereſt and the greateſt of the French Kings Counſellours, if hee were diſpoſed ſo to doe.*

12 *Item, that when men, money, and munitions were in a readineſſe to be tranſported into France, to aide and to aſſiſt King Henries forces there, the ſaid Duke (being wickedly corrupted, and being a ſecret friend to the kings enemies) cauſed them to be kept at home, by meanes whereof the kings armies in thoſe Countries wanting due and neceſſary ſupplies, were vanquiſhed both in Normandie and in France.*

13 *And laſtly, that by meanes of his great fauour with the Queene, he had deceitfully and fraudulently enriched himſelfe with the kings lands and treaſures, and had procured to himſelfe a monopolie of all the greateſt offices for his owne gaine.*

Theſe and many more foule and treaſonable Articles were (in full Parliament) publikely obiected againſt him, and laid vnto his charge:

charge: all which hee faintly denied, but could ſcarce cleare himſelfe of one of them.

The Queens pollicie to helpe the Duke of Suffolke.

The Queene (to preuent the Duke of *Suffolkes* further perill and danger, becauſe ſhe entirely loued him) cauſed him to be committed to the Tower, where hee had libertie at his owne will: and then concluding the Parliament vpon a ſudden, ſhee not onely enlarged him, but reſtored him into high fauour with the King; ſo that he proudly ietted and ſwaggered, as formerly he had done.

The Commons are diſpleaſed.

The common people repined much thereat, and ſpake ſcandalouſly and reprochfully of the Queene, and of her gouernment: and ſome of them wickedly rebelled, making a turbulent mate (nick-named *Blew-beard*) their chiefeſt Captaine. But this inſurrection was quickly nipped in the budde: their ring-leaders were put to death, and the reſt of them receiued friendly admonition, and the Kings gratious pardon.

A rebellion, but appeaſed.

The King and Queene intending to reconcile all diſcords, and to giue ſome better contentment to the Commons, held a Parliament at *Leiceſter*. But their purpoſe failed them: for the lower houſe inſtantly importuned the King that iuſtice might be done vpon the Duke of *Suffolke*, and alſo vpon his aſſociating Conſpirators, *Iames Fynes* Lord *Say* and Lord Treaſurer of *England*, *Iohn* Biſhop of *Salisburie*, and vpon ſome others.

The Parliaments requeſt

The King (to pacifie this broile, and to weaken their importunitie, by doing of ſomething wherewith hee thought hee ſhould pleaſe them) exiled the ſaid Duke for fiue yeares. But as he ſailed towards *France*, he was taken by an *Engliſh* man of warre, who landed him vpon *Douer* Sands, and chopt off his head on a boats ſide. And thus was the guiltleſſe bloud of *Humfrey* the good Duke of *Gloceſter* in ſome meaſure reuenged: and the reſt of thoſe delinquents were ſequeſtred from their Offices, and impriſoned by the King.

The Duke is exiled.

He is taken at Sea, and beheaded.

The Duke of Yorke intendeth to claime the Crowne.

His practiſes to further it.

1. 2. 3. 4.

Whileſt theſe things were thus in handling, the Duke of *Yorke* (albeit reſiant in *Ireland*) ſollicited and procured his allies & friends in *England* (by ſome ſecret plottings, pretending ſome other ends) to ſet on foot his claime and title to the Crowne; hee being lineally deſcended from *Philip* the daughter and heire of *George* Duke of *Clarence*, who was the elder brother of *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, great grandfather to King *Henry* the ſixth. And firſt of all it was whiſpered, & priuately reported, that the Kings wits were weake, the Queens heart ambitious, the Kings Counſellors of State not wiſe enough to rule: and that all *France*, *Normandie*, and *Aquitaine* were loſt, becauſe God bleſſed not the vſurped ſucceſſion of King *Henry*.

Vpon

VPon theſe ſpeeches, too too commonly diuulged, a *Kentiſh* Rebell named *Iacke Cade*, but falſly nominating himſelfe *Iohn Mortimer*, made an Inſurrection in that Countrey, and with his rudely-armed crew, and banners diſplayed, he marched towards the King, who was then at *Greenwich*. But before hee came vnto him, by meſſengers he informed him, that hee intended not any hurt againſt his Royall Perſon, but would diſplace and puniſh ſome of his euill Counſellors, who were his flatterers, and partiall to their owne friends, bitter to their enemies, enrichers of themſelues, oppreſſors of the common people, greedie of too much honour, and who for rewards corruptly ordered (or rather diſordered) all things as they pleaſed.

A Rebellion in Kent. Iacke Cade.

His meſſage to the King.

When the King and his Counſell had maturely conſidered of this vndutifull and inſolent meſſage, he was aduiſed to encounter them, not with faire words, which might breed further contempt, but with the Sword, for enſamples ſake, that others might (by their puniſhment) afterwards take better heede. And thereupon a ſtrong Armie was ſuddenly prepared; of which when the Rebels were informed, (to gaine aduantage by their valour, vnder a falſe pretence of cowardly feare) they retired many miles. The Queene (who was reſolued that this retreat rather proceeded from baſeneſſe, then from pollicie and wit) ſent after them Sir *Humfrey Stafford*, and *William Stafford* his brother, they being accompanied with many luſtie Gentlemen and braue Souldiers. But moſt of them were quickly ſlaine by the Rebels, who boldly and couragiouſly confronted them when opportunitie and place gaue them good aduantage to returne.

The Kings Armie purſueth the Rebels.

Some of the Kings forces are ouerthrowen.

The Rebellion is appeaſed.

This victorie being thus obtained, *Iacke Cade* (to whom multitudes of rude and graceleſſe people from many ſhires daily reſorted) preſſed forth againe, and boldly came into *Blacke Heath*, and from thence to *London*, where they did much harme. But at length the Kings Generall Pardon was proclaimed by the Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, and by the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, to all ſuch as were not the Ring-leaders of that vngodly rebellion: by means whereof the inconſtant and fearfull multitude left their Captains, and returned home. Then was *Iacke Cade* proſcribed by the King, and proclamation was made, by which a reward by the gift of one thouſand markes was promiſed to him that could take him aliue or dead. The hope of this paiment occaſioned very many to make good inquiries and narrow ſearches after him: ſo that in the end being found, he was ſlaine as he fought deſperately for his life, and his head was preſented to the King, who willingly paid the reward

A good policie.

Iacke Cade is proſcribed and ſlaine.

ward which was promiſed. Thus was this caitiffe deſtroied, and thus was this commotion appeaſed, which threatned deſtruction to the King and Common-weale.

1451. 30 *The Duke of Yorke commeth into England.*

Such of the Nobilitie, and ſuch of the Commons, as could no longer endure or digeſt the euill gouernment of the Queene, and of her adherents, aduertiſed the Duke of *Yorke* (who remained in *Ireland*) that a Parliament was neere at hand, and praied him to conſider what was fitteſt to be done for the redreſſe thereof, and for his owne good. Whereupon he left his deputation in *Ireland*, and returned home, and openly conferred with his beſt friends, *Iohn* Duke of *Norfolke*, *Thomas Courtney* Earle of *Deuonſhire*, *Richard* Earle of *Salisburie*, *Richard Neuill* his ſonne Earle of *Warwicke*, *Edward Brooke* Lord *Cobham*, and with diuers others, how and by what meanes he might ſoberly, without vſurpation, or treaſon, ſet forth his right and title to the Crowne.

The cauſes for which he leuied an Armie.

1. 2. 3. 4. 5.

After this matter had beene long debated, it was concluded, that the Duke of *Yorke* ſhould raiſe an Armie, vnder pretence to remoue the Duke of *Somerſet* from the King and Queene, becauſe he ruled them both, and the Common-weale too: and againſt him it was publikely alleged, that he was an oppreſſor of the people, a deceiuer of the King, a ſecret friend to his enemies, a principall occaſion that *England* had loſt *France*, *Normandie*, and *Aquitaine*, and had (by his manifold treacheries and treaſons) deſerued ill of the Prince, and of his Countrey.

The King raiſeth an Armie.

The King alſo (fearing the worſt) raiſed another Armie; but being certified from the Duke of *Yorke*, that he intended nothing againſt his royall perſon, nor againſt his State, but onely craued that in a Parliament the Duke of *Somerſet* might receiue his triall, he committed the ſaid Duke (for a ſhew only) to the Tower: and thereupon the Duke of *Yorke* (expecting fitter opportunitie) diſſolued his Armie, and priuately repaired to the King, where (contrary to his expectation) hee met with the Duke of *Somerſet*, who accuſed him of treaſon, for that (without the Kings leaue or commandement) he had raiſed an Armie, with which he intended to haue murdered the King, and to make himſelfe the inheritor and poſſeſſor of his Crowne. And though the Kings iealouſie (being grounded vpon ſtrong preſumptions that it was true) cauſed the King to detaine and keepe the Duke of *Yorke* as a priſoner, yet within few daies after he was enlarged, becauſe it ſeemed vnlikely to the Kings Counſell, that his aime was directed to the Crowne, ſeeing that (without compulſion) he had diſſolued his Armie vpon the Duke of *Somerſets* commitment vnto priſon, when he was

A diſſembled pacification.

The Duke of Somerſet accuſeth the Duke of Yorke of high Treaſon.

He is impriſoned, and enlarged.

ſtrong

ſtrong enough to haue made his partie good againſt the King by force of Armes in the open field.

This buſineſſe was the more eaſily paſſed ouer by the King, becauſe that in the middeſt of thoſe diſturbances the Lords of *Aquitaine* (vpon whoſe fidelities, the *French* King being departed into *France*, King *Henry* much relied) by ſecret meſſengers had made offer to ſurrender al that Duchie againe into his hands, if he would ſpeedily ſend vnto them a conuenient Armie to defend and keepe it as his owne. And thereupon the Lord *Talbot*, Earle of *Shrewesburie*, was ſent thither with three thouſand ſelected and valiant men, who receiued that Duchie to the Kings vſe, as it was promiſed. But aſſoone as the *French* King had notice of this Reuolt, hee marched thither with an Armie of two and twentie thouſand men, fought with the *Engliſh*, ſlew the moſt renowned and braue Earle, and almoſt all his followers, and in few daies regained all *Aquitaine*, and almoſt all *Guyen* into his owne hands.

1452. 31 *Guyan and Aquitaine yeelded to King Henry, but regained by the French King.*

Iohn Earle of Shrewesburie ſlaine.

The Queene was now deliuered of a faire ſonne, who was afterwards named *Edward*, and liued vntill almoſt hee came to a mans eſtate. And neere about the ſame time King *Henry* created his two brothers by the mothers ſide, *Edmund Tuthar*, who was father to King *Henry* the Seuenth, Earle of *Richmond*, and *Iaſpar Tuthar* Earle of *Pembroke*, but he died without iſſue.

Prince Edward borne.

Creation of Lords.

France, *Normandie*, and *Aquitaine* being all loſt, and no warres now buſying the Nobilitie of this Realme, franke and free libertie was thereby giuen to the Duke of *Yorke*, grieuouſly to complaine to diuers Lords of the greateſt power, of the manifold trecheries and treaſons of the Duke of *Somerſet*, as formerly he had done. And at the ſame time *Richard* Earle of *Salisburie*, being the ſecond ſonne of *Rafe Neuil* Earle of *Weſtmerland*, whoſe daughter the Duke of *Yorke* had maried, and *Richard* his ſonne, who hauing maried *Anne* the ſiſter and heire of *Henry Beauchampe*, firſt Earle, and afterwards Duke of *Warwicke*, and in whoſe right he was created Earle, were men of prime honour, and of great power, and for their valour and their vertues were eſpecially obſerued and regarded both of the Nobles and alſo of the Commons of this Kingdome: but chiefly *Richard* the ſonne, Earle of *Warwicke*, whoſe courteſie, wiſdome, and true manhood, had gained him much loue.

1453. 32 *The Yorkiſh Conſpiracie.*

Theſe two Earles (among others) faithfully ioined themſelues and their fortunes with the Duke of *Yorke* and his: and chiefly by their meanes and good aſſiſtance he preuailed, as in the ſequell of this Hiſtorie it ſhall appeare.

When the Duke of *Yorke* had thus ſtrengthned himſelfe with

1454. 33

The Duke of Somerſet is arreſted for treaſon.

The Parliament breaketh off ſuddenly.

The Duke of Somerſet is enlarged and made Captaine of Calice.

The Duke of Yorke leuieth an Armie.

The King meeteth him with an Armie.

The battaile of S. Albons.

The King is ouerthrowen.

He is taken priſoner.

The King is vſed reuerently.

A Parliament.

The Duke of Yorke is made Protector.

theſe noble and powerfull friends, he cauſed the Duke of *Somerſet* to be arreſted of high treaſon in the Queens great Chamber, from whence he was drawen and conueied to the Tower: and ſhortly after in the Parliament the Duke of *Yorke* accuſed him of all thoſe treaſons which are formerly mentioned.

But becauſe the King indeed fell ſicke, or fained himſelfe (for the Dukes good) to be diſeaſed, the Parliament was ſuddenly adiourned, and the King by many proteſtations faithfully promiſed, that he ſhould anſwer thoſe accuſations at ſome other time. But within few daies after hee was not onely by the Queene ſet at libertie, but was graced with the Kings eſpeciall and publike fauour, and was made chiefe Captaine of the Towne and Caſtle of *Calice*, whereat the Nobilitie & the common people grudged much, and exclaimed vpon the vniuſt proceedings of the King and Queene.

The Duke of *Yorke* and his aſſociates ſuppoſing that their proiect would ſtill be croſſed if they remained quiet, & expected faire proceedings againſt the Duke of *Somerſet* by the ordinarie courſe of Law; reſolued once againe to ſhew themſelues with an Armie in the field, and by open warre not only to reuenge themſelues vpon their enemies, but alſo to ſettle the Crowne vpon the Duke of *Yorkes* head. For which purpoſe they raiſed a puiſſant Armie within the Marches of *Wales*, and confidently directed their march towards the Citie of *London*.

The King and his Counſell fearing leſt the Duke of *Yorke* and his complices would finde too many friends if they came thither, met them with another Armie at *S. Albons*: and betwixt them a doubtfull and a bloudie battaile was fought, from which the Duke of *Buckingham*, and *Iames Butler* Earle of *Ormond* and of *Wilſhire*, fled: and *Edmund* Duke of *Somerſet*, *Henry* the ſecond Earle of *Northumberland*, *Humfrey* Earle of *Stafford*, ſonne and heire to the Duke of *Buckingham*, *Iohn* Lord *Clifford*, and more then eight thouſand Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and common ſouldiers, were ſlaine on the Kings part, and the King himſelfe was taken priſoner and brought to the Duke of *Yorke*.

And albeit hee might then haue put him to death, and by that meanes might quietly haue poſſeſſed himſelfe of the Crowne, yet becauſe his riſing in Armes pretended none other thing but the reforming of ſome great abuſes in the Common-weale, hee reuerenced him with all dutie, & brought him with great honour vnto *London*, where he praied him to aſſemble his high Court of Parliament; which he did, & by that great Counſell & honorable eſtate the Duke of *Yorke* was made Protector of the Kings royall perſon,

and

and of his Realme, the Earle of *Salisburie* was made Lord Chancelor of *England*, and his ſonne the Earle of *Warwicke* was made Captaine of *Calice*.

The Earle of Salisburie is made Chancelor.
The Earle of Warwicke is made Captaine of Calice.

And thus all the regiment of the ciuill eſtate of this Commonweale was ſettled in thoſe former two, and the diſpoſing of warlike affaires and buſineſſe was conferred on the third. In the adminiſtration of which Offices, they ſhewed no iniuſtice, vſed no briberie, oppreſſed no man, were indifferent to the poore and rich, and ordered all things in a moſt commendable and praiſefull faſhion, to the good contentment of moſt of the Nobilitie, Gentrie, and Commons of this Realme.

Their good gouernment.

But *Humfrey* Duke of *Buckingham*, who in the battaile at *S. Albons* had loſt his eldeſt ſonne; and *Henry Beauford* the new Duke of *Somerſet*, who then alſo loſt his father; with reuengefull mindes and inraged ſpirits informed the Queene, that this faire and glozing ſhew was vſed but as a ſubtill meane to ſet the Crowne of *England* vpon the Duke of *Yorkes* head: That the Kings life and his ſonnes was ſecretly conſpired: That her vnfortunate miſeries approched neere vnto her: And that all would bee ſtarke naught, except the ſubtiltie and cunning of thoſe three Lords were wittily preuented, and their haughtie and ambitious ſtomackes were with force and violence ſubdued and beaten downe.

1455.
34

Hereupon the Queene and they aſſembled a great Counſell at *Greenwich*, by the authoritie whereof the Duke of *Yorke* and the Earle of *Salisburie* were remoued from their gouernment. This ſudden alteration bred many broiles in the Common-weale. For the *Engliſh* Merchants in *London* perceiuing that the Common-weales gouernment was vnſettled, quarrelled with the *Venetians* and *Italians* who dwelt among them, and by their trading in merchandizing, and by their parſimonie and ſparing waxed rich, and depriued them of their chiefeſt meanes to liue. Thoſe ſtrangers they rifled and robbed: for which offence (not without much trouble and difficultie) the principall offenders were corrected or put to death.

The Duke of Yorke and the Earle of Salisburie are remoued by the Queen.
A ſpoile on the Merchant ſtrangers in London.

1456.
35

The *Frenchmen* alſo being diuided into many warlike Fleetes, landed, robbed and burnt ſome Frontier Townes within this Realme. And the *Scots* (being conducted by *Iames* their King) did much harme to the Duke of *Yorkes* Countries in the North. Againſt whom the Duke himſelfe marched with a braue Armie. But the *Scots* (fearing the ſequell of their vnaduiſed inuaſion) ſuddenly fled, and returned into their owne Countrey.

The Frenchmen land and burne.
The Scots inuade.
They flie home.

The Queene diſſembleth with the Yorkiſh Faction.

The Queene (who now ruled the King and almoſt all other things at her pleaſure) could not be contented vntill the ſaid three great Lords (either by ſtrength or policie) were cut off: yet outwardly ſhe ſeemed in ſome meaſure to affect them, and with her cheerefull countenance and ſmoothing words ſhee made them a little to be credulous of her loue.

A ſubtill policie, but diſcouered.

But to effect what earneſtly ſhe intended, ſhe cauſed the King (for recreation, and for his healths ſake) to make his progreſſe towards the North, hunting, hauking, & vſing many other paſtimes and delightfull ſports: in the middeſt of all which (pretending buſineſſes of great import) ſhee cauſed letters to be written to thoſe three Lords, requiring them to come to a ſpeedie conference with the King: whereupon thoſe Lords (not ſuſpecting any guilefull treacherie to be conſpired againſt them) did as they were commanded, and were with all cheerefull familiaritie receiued by the King and Queene. But being ſecretly informed by their friends, that their deſtruction was neere at hand, the Duke of *Yorke* fled from thence into *Wales*, the Earle of *Salisburie* to his owne Countrey, and his ſonne (the Earle of *Warwicke*) vnto *Callice*: and yet by their daily meſſengers and letters ſent mutually the one to the other. New proiects were deuiſed and put in practiſe ſhortly after.

1457. 36.

The King laboureth for vnitie and peace.

The King being aduiſed by his Counſellors, that theſe mortall iarres at home would incite his enemies abroad to attempt much miſchiefe againſt him and his kingdome, endeuoured by gentle perſwaſions to reconcile his diſcontented Nobles, and to vnite their hearts in true friendſhip and in loue.

How both the Factions met at London.

For this purpoſe hee appointed a generall meeting of all his Lords at *London*, whither they reſorted, but were attended on by multitudes of their meniall ſeruants, and by ſuch as for that time were deſirous and willing to ſtrengthen them with their beſt ſeruice.

The *Lancaſtrian* Faction lodged themſelues in the Suburbes, and conſulted daily what courſe was beſt for them to take. The *Yorkiſh* Confederates ſoiourned within the walles of the Citie, and met daily, and aduiſed themſelues how all things ſhould be ordered in this buſineſſe. But neither of the aduerſe parties came neere vnto the other. And the Citizens of *London* being Neuters, and fearing the euent of blowes, furniſhed euery ſtreet with armed men both by day and night, to maintaine and to preſerue the Kings peace.

Thus whileſt euery houre bred much ſuſpicion, and when iealouſie

louſie among the Noble-men made the hearts of the Commons to be vnſtable; the Arch-biſhop of *Canterburie*, and ſundrie other Clergie-men (by fitting perſwaſions, and arguments of great force and conſequence) ſo preuailed, that the King, the Queene, and all the Lords were pleaſed, in friendly and in kinde ſort to meet and to entertaine each other; and all iarres and diſcontented humours were outwardly in words, but not inwardly in heart reconciled: and inſtruments in writing (for future amitie and loue) were mutually ſubſcribed, ſealed, and deliuered. And for the greater ſolemnitie of this new friendſhip, a religious proceſſion was made thorow the Citie of *London*; in which the Kings head was adorned with the Imperiall Crowne, and whereon the Duke of *Yorke* often times looked with a ſcornefull eie. And one Lord of either Faction marched together hand in hand. The Duke of *Yorke* lead the Queene, and with great familiaritie and gracefull honour ſeemed to be highly reſpected and eſteemed by her. The King likewiſe reioiced much at this Vnion: the Lords made ſhewes of much applauding: and the multitude being ignorant that ſecret rancour was dawbed ouer with counterfeited diſſimulation, skipped, leaped, and gaue great ſhouts for ioy.

A diſſembled friendſhip.

But within few daies after it hapned, that vpon a ſudden debate and falling out betwixt one of the Kings ſeruants and a gentleman belonging to the Earle of *Warwicke*, an affray was made neere vnto the Kings Court, in which the Kings ſeruant was grieuouſly wounded, and the other fled. Hereupon the Yeomen of the Kings Gard with Holberds and Swords, and the skullerie with Spits and Forkes, aſſaulted the Earle and his followers as he came from the Counſell Boord to take his Barge. Betwixt them many a rude blow was giuen, much bloud was ſhed, but no man ſlaine. The Queene, who was forward to picke a quarrell to the Earle vpon any ſmall occaſion, and knowing that in a whirrie he was paſſed into *London*, gaue ſtrait command for his apprehenſion and commitment to the Tower. But by reaſon that his ſecret friends had forewarned him to looke vnto himſelfe, hee poaſted with all expedition into *Yorkeſhire*, where hee diſcouered to his father and to the Duke of *Yorke*, the great iniurie and wrong which was done vnto him by the Kings ſeruants, and the intention of the Queene, notwithſtanding the late reconcilement and friendſhip which was concluded with great proteſtations and much ſolemnitie betwixt them.

1458. 37. *A dangerous affray.*

The Earle of Warwicke is aſſaulted.

He poſteth into Yorkeſhire.

And leſt ſome Carpet-fauourite might expulſe him for his place of truſt and Captainſhip of *Calice*, hee forthwith ſailed thither:

He ſaileth vnto Calice.

ther: and aſſoone as he was gone, his father the Earle of *Salisburie* marched towards the Kings Court with an Armie of fiue thouſand men, to complaine vnto his Highneſſe, not onely of the violence and wrong which his meniall ſeruants had done vnto his ſonne, but alſo of the ſugered and ſecret diſſimulation of the Queene. But when the Queene had certaine notice of his reſolued purpoſe, ſhe commanded the Lord *Awdley* to encounter him on his way with ten thouſand men which ſhe had leuied: and peremptorily ſhe required him to bring vnto her the ſaid Earle quick or dead. Her ſelfe alſo with another Armie came after him, and in *Shropſhire* in *Bloar-heath* the ſaid Earle and the Lord *Awdley* met each other; where the one fought for honour, but the Earle for his life, neither of them intending to yeeld, or to ſteppe backe. But at length the Earle & his followers (being in deſpaire of good ſucceſſe, or pardon if they maintained not the encounter with bold hearts and ſtrong armes) fought with ſuch reſolution and vnconquerable ſtomackes, that the Lord *Awdley*, with foure and twentie hundred of his ſouldiers and aſſociates, were ſlaine: the reſt fled, and the Earle of *Salisburie* was Lord and maſter of the field.

An Armie raiſed.

Bloar-heath field.

The Lord Awdley is ouerthrowen by the Earle of Salisburie.

1459.

38

The Duke of Yorke raiſeth an Armie, and claimes the Crowne.

By theſe practiſes the Duke of *Yorke* perceiued plainly, that the liues of him and of his Complices were ſecretly hunted for: and therefore he now determined no longer to hide and couer his purpoſe, as formerly he had done, but by armes in the open field to maintaine his claime and title to the Crowne. And therefore himſelfe with the Earle of *Salisburie* marched into *Wales*, and thither the Earle of *Warwicke* repaired to them, and brought with him for their aſſiſtance, *Andrew Trollop* and *Iohn Blunt*, two of the moſt approued *Engliſh* Captaines which then liued, and had beene beſt exerciſed in the warres of *France*. And when they had plentifully increaſed their Armie, partly in *Wales* and in the Marches thereof, and partly by ſuch companies as reſorted daily out of the North vnto them, they ſet onwards, and came vnto a little Towne called *Lud-low*, where the King and diuers of his Nobilitie preſented a ſtrong Armie to the view of the *Yorkiſh* Faction, ſo that they lay not farre aſunder that night. But in the euening the two braue Captaines (*Trollop* and *Blunt*) ſurueying the Kings forces, eſpied a certaine way and meanes to endanger the King and all his; ſo that it was reſolued by the Duke and Earles, that their aduice & counſell ſhould fiercely be executed the next morning before the King ſhould be able to ſet his Armie in a readineſſe to fight. But in the firſt watch thoſe two Captaines (making it a matter burdenſome

The Kings armie.

Andrew Trolop and Iohn Blunt flie into the Kings armie, and diſcouer all.

to

to their conſciences, not onely to fight againſt their Soueraigne Lord and King, but alſo to betray him into the hands of his owne ſubiects) ſecretly fled, and came vnto the King, to whom they plainly diſcouered the proiect and the intention of his enemies, and aduiſed him of the beſt and chiefeſt meanes, how not onely they might be reſiſted, but driuen to the worſt. And for this ſeruice they were gently receiued, and pardoned, and rewarded by the King.

The Duke and Earles being certified of their Reuolts, beganne to be diffident of their good ſucceſſe: and not daring to ſet vp their reſt on the next daies fight, they determined to expect another time, which might affoord them more ſuretie and better hopes. And taking aduantage by the darkneſſe of the night, they departed from their Armie into ſeuerall places: for the Duke with his younger ſonne *Edmund* Earle of *Rutland*, retired into *Wales*, and from thence they ſailed into *Ireland*. The other two (with *Edward* Earle of *March*, eldeſt ſonne to the Duke of *Yorke*) came into *Deuonſhire*, and being ſafely ſhipped in *Ex-mouth* Hauen, by the fauour and procurement of a worthy Gentleman named *Iohn Dynham*, they ſailed to *Calice*, where (notwithſtanding their misfortunes) they were receiued with much ioy.

The Lords flie in the night.

The King (who reioiced much at their departure) coaſted the Countries with multitudes of Horſemen to ouertake them: but all their labours were in vaine. For the preſent feare which alwaies remained with them, gaue them wings to flie. He alſo pardoned the ordinarie ſouldiers of the *Yorkiſh* Faction, which were forſaken by their chiefeſt guides, and as ſheepe were expoſed to a ſlaughter. But their Captaines who were deliuered vp into the Kings hands, were executed in ſundry places within this Realme.

The Lords are proclaimed Traitors.

Hee alſo proclaimed the ſaid Lords to be Arch-traitors to him and to his Kingdome, confiſcated their goods, offices, and their lands, committed the gouernment of the Northerne parts to the Earle of *Northumberland*, & to the Lord *Clifford*, his truſty friends, and made *Henry* the young Duke of *Somerſet* Captaine and chiefe Commander of his Towne and Caſtle of *Calice*, and of the Marches thereof; who ſailing thither with a purpoſe to take poſſeſſion of his new charge, and not ſuſpecting that his enemies were there, was on his firſt arriuall well beaten and battered with the great ſhot and ordinance which from the Caſtle plaied on him, and by thoſe meanes he was compelled to retire and to keepe off.

Henry Duke of Somerſet is made Captaine of Calice.
Hee was courſly entertained.

The Queene hauing intelligence of this rude and vnkinde entertainment of her new Captaine and great fauourite, reſolued to ſend

ſend vnto him freſh and new ſupplies : for which purpoſe ſome ſhips of the Nauie Royall were made ready within the Hauen of *Sandwich*. But the before-named *Iohn Dynham* diſpoſing himſelfe to all ſeruices which might ſupport the *Yorkiſh* Faction, and being furthered by the Mariners, who highly fauoured and inwardly loued the young and luſtie Prince *Edward* Earle of *March*, and being accompanied with many gallant ſpirits, and braue men, boorded the ſaid ſhips as they lay there at anchor, took the Lord *Ryuers*, who was appointed Admirall to conduct them, and carried him and thoſe ſhips to *Calice*, from whence the Earle of *Warwicke* ſailed in them into *Ireland*, and conferred largely with the Duke of *Yorke* concerning thoſe affaires. But in his returne the Duke of *Exeter* being Admirall of the Seas, and hauing vnder his charge a warlike and a ſtrong Fleet, making no doubt to haue taken him, was much deceiued : for his owne Mariners more adhered to the *Yorkiſh* faction then to the Kings, and ſhewed themſelues to bee exceeding cold and ſparing in the performance of their duties, when neede required their ſeruice ; ſo that the Earle of *Warwicke* returned back againe ſafely vnto *Calice*.

Iohn Dynham taketh ſome of the Kings ſhips.

The Earle of Warwicke ſaileth into Ireland.

He returneth to Calice.

And now the King vpon good aduice aſſembled his high Court of Parliament, in which hee cauſed all the Lords of the *Yorkiſh* Conſpiracie to bee attainted of High Treaſon. And leſt this Realme might be diſturbed by their inuaſion or ſecret entrance, diuers Captaines with their companies were lodged in all Townes and Ports which neare adioined to the Sea, and were the beſt likely places for their landing. Sir *Simon Mountfort* likewiſe, who was a right worthie and a valiant Knight, hauing vnder his charge diuers of the Kings ſhips, was appointed to keepe and to defend the Cinque-ports.

A Parliment.

Attainders for Treaſon.

Preparations againſt the landing of the Lords.

But nothing was done in the Kings Chamber, or in any other place of greateſt ſecrecie or counſell, whereof the ſaid Earles had not certaine and quicke intelligence at *Calice* : wherefore they prouided, furniſhed, and ſtrongly manned ſuch of the Kings ſhips as formerly by the ſaid *Iohn Dynham* had beene brought thither, in which they ſailed and ſafely arriued within the Hauen of *Sandwich*, and ſuddenly they tooke Sir *Simon Mountfort* priſoner, vanquiſhed the towne, and caried away with them ſuch of the Kings ſhips as they found there. And hauing receiued good intelligence from their friends, that nothing was more expected then their returne into *England*, they prepared for their iourney, and arriued the ſecond time at *Sandwich*, and were within few daies aſſiſted by the Lord *Cobham*, and by many Gentlemen and braue ſouldiers, inſomuch

The Kings Fleet taken in Sandwich.

The Lords doe land at Sandwich.

inſomuch that their Armie conſiſted of more then fiue and twenty thouſand men, with which they marched towards *London*. But the Lord *Scales* was ſent againſt them with a ſmall companie to that Citie, to defend it, and to ſecure the King of the fidelitie of the Inhabitants thereof when time ſhould ſerue. But the Lord Maior refuſed to receiue them, and told the Lord *Scales* that hee was able enough (without his helpe or counſell) to keepe that Citie, which by the King was committed vnto his charge; whereat he was much diſpleaſed, and went to the Tower, from which hee much wronged and damnified the inhabitants of *London*.

Their Army.

The Londoners refuſe to receiue the Lord Scales.

The King, to defend himſelfe, and to maſter his rebellious enemies, being accompanied with the Dukes of *Somerſet* and of *Buckingham*, and many other Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and a ſtrong Armie, marched towards them. And though the King himſelfe (for neceſſities ſake) was perſonally preſent, yet his minde and cogitations were more religiouſly bent to his praiers, and his deſires affected nothing more then quietneſſe and peace.

The King marcheth towards the Lords.

But the Queene (whoſe heart was manly, and whoſe anger threatned death) with ſouldier-like termes and ſpeeches cheared vp her followers, debaſed their enemies, promiſed rewards if they deſerued well, and the ſeuereſt of all puniſhments to ſuch as fled.

The Queene encourageth and threatneth.

At length neere vnto the Towne of *Northampton* the two Armies met: the Earle of *March* being very frolicke, and in the heat and flower of his youth, by the aduice and counſell of the Earle of *Warwicke*, ordered his Armie for the battaile. The Queene and her adherents did the like.

The Armies doe meet.
The battaile of Northampton.

The fight quickly beganne, and fiercely continued ſomewhat more then two houres: but at length the Earles became victors, ſlew more then ten thouſand men on the kings part, among which were *Humfrey* Duke of *Buckingham*, *Iohn Talbot* Earle of *Shrewesburie*, *Thomas* Lord *Egremont*, *Iohn* Viſcount *Beamond*, and many others.

The King is ouerthrowen.
Ten thouſand men ſlaine.
Slaughter.

The Queene, with the Duke of *Somerſet* and diuers others, taking with them the young Prince, fled into the Biſhopricke of *Durham*, where they hoped to raiſe a new Armie, or reſolued (in default thereof) to goe into *Scotland*, and to remaine there vntill fortune and their friends ſhould inable them to recouer what they had loſt.

Flight.

The King (who was left behinde) was taken priſoner, and conueied by the Earles with great pompe and much honour, vnto *London*, and at their comming thither the Tower was deliuered into their poſſeſsion by the ſouldiers, againſt the liking and good will

The King taken priſoner.
The Tower is deliuered to the Lords.

will of the Lord *Scales*, who attempted to flie from thence diſguiſed in a Whirrie. But being diſcouered by the Water-men, he was by them taken, and made ſhorter by the head, and his body was negligently left vpon the ſands. And *Thomas Thorpe*, the ſecond Baron of the Exchequer, who mortally hated the houſe of *Yorke*, purpoſing in the habit of a Monke with a ſhauen Crowne, to flie vnto the Queene, was taken, and brought to the Earle of *Warwicke*, who ſent him to the Tower, where hee remained long after.

The Lord Scales beheaded by the Watermen.

Tho. Thorpe taken and impriſoned.

The Duke of *Yorke* being ſpeedily informed of this victorie, left *Ireland*, and came to *London*, and procured a Parliament to be aſſembled in the Kings name: and in the preſence of all the Lords in the Vpper Houſe, hee ſate himſelfe downe in the Imperiall Seat, and in an eloquent and powerfull Oration hee diſcouered to the Nobles his rightfull claime and title to the Crowne; he being the ſonne and heire of *Anne* the daughter and heire of *Roger Mortimer* Earle of *March*, ſonne and heire to *Philip* the ſole daughter and heire of *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, the third ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, and elder brother to *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, who was father to the Vſurper King *Henry* the Fourth, who was father to King *Henry* the Fifth, who was father to the King who was vntruly named King *Henry* the Sixth.

The Duke of Yorke commeth into England.

A Parliament.

What the Duke of Yorke did and ſaid in the Parliament houſe.

The Duke of Yorkes title.

He alſo related vnto them, that becauſe God bleſſed not his vnlawfull gouernment, therefore the Common-weale of *England* had beene plagued with many miſchiefes: As firſt, by the murdering and by the executing of many honourable and great Lords.

Englands plagues.

1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6.

Secondly, by the ſlaughter of thouſands of the common people in *France*, *Normandie*, and elſewhere. Thirdly, by ciuill and bloudie warres at home. Fourthly, by the loſſe of all Territories beyond the Sea belonging to the Crowne of *England*, excepting *Calice* and the Marches thereof. Fifthly, by ſudden incurſions made by the *Frenchmen* and by the *Scots*. And laſtly, by all manner of violence, extortion, and oppreſſion practiſed vpon the poorer ſort. And in his concluſion hee craued no fauour, vnleſſe that iuſtice gaue them warrant; nor quiet poſſeſsion of the Crowne, except they found his deſcent and title to be infallibly true.

1460.

When the Lords and the Commons there aſſembled had with mature deliberation and good aduice debated ſoundly of this important buſineſſe, it was by them all enacted, that King *Henry* ſhould ſo long as he liued retaine the name and honour of a King, and that the Duke of *Yorke* ſhould be proclaimed to be the heire apparant of the Crowne, and ſhould be the Lord Protector both of

39

The title to the Crowne ſettled by act of Parliament.

1. 2. 3.

of the Kings perſon, and alſo of his dominions and countries; and that the ſaid Duke ſhould haue the preſent poſſeſſion of the Crowne of this Realme deliuered vnto him, if at any time King *Henry* or his friends, allies, or fauourites, in his behalfe attempted the infringing of the ſaid Acts, which were agreed and confirmed by their oathes. 41

The Duke of *Yorke* hauing by theſe meanes gotten the gouernment of the Kings perſon, and of all his dominions into his hands; diſpatched his letters into *Scotland* in the Kings name, requiring the Queene, the Dukes of *Somerſet* and of *Exeter*, the Earle of *Deuonſhire*, the Lords *Clifford* and *Roſſe*, and ſuch other great men as were fled, and remained in that Kingdome, to repaire with all expedition to the Kings preſence. But they all not onely refuſed to obey this peremptorie command, but with an Armie of eighteene thouſand *Engliſhmen* & *Scots* they marched boldly towards the Kings Court. *The Lords in Scotland refuſe to come to the Duke of Yorke.* *They come on with a great Armie.*

Whereupon the Duke of *Yorke*, with his younger ſonne the Earle of *Rutland*, and the Earle of *Salisburie*, leauing the King in the cuſtodie of the Duke of *Norfolke*, and of the Earle of *Warwicke*, and being accompanied with no more then fiue thouſand men, directed his iourney towards the Queene, and met her neere to the Towne of *Wakefield*, where no perſwaſions or good aduice could preuaile, but the Duke of *Yorke*, who euery houre expected the approch of *Edward* Earle of *March*, his eldeſt ſonne, with a ſtrong Armie, would forthwith fight; which vnfortunately he did: for in leſſer time then the ſpace of one houre, himſelfe, with almoſt three thouſand of his companie were ſlaine; and his younger ſonne, *Edmund* Earle of *Rutland*, being but twelue yeares old, kneeling vpon his knees, and deſiring mercie, was cruelly and wickedly ſtabbed to the heart by the Lord *Clifford*, who horribly did ſweare, that by that act he would be reuenged for his fathers death. And the reſt of that ſmall Armie being diſcomforted, confuſedly ranne away, and ſaued themſelues by flight. *They are encountred.* *The battaile of Wakefield.* *Haſte made waſte.* *The Duke of Yorke ouerthrowen and ſlaine.* *A bloudie fact.*

The Queene, who had taken the Earle of *Salisburie* priſoner, cauſed his head to be ſtricken off, and executed many others, all whoſe heads (to deſpight the *Yorkiſh* Faction) ſhe cauſed to be ſet vpon the walles of the Citie of *Yorke*. Which reuengefull deede not long after was requited by the ruine and deſtruction of the King, the Queene, the young Prince, and of the greater number of ſuch as fauoured and aſſiſted the houſe of *Lancaſter*, and oppoſed themſelues againſt the rightfull and iuſt claime of the Duke of *Yorke*, as hereafter we ſhall heare. *The Earle of Salisburie beheaded.*

The

The new Duke of Yorkes victorie.

The new and braue Duke of *Yorke* being informed of this ouerthrow, and of his fathers death, augmented his Armie, which was but ſmall, and conſiſted only of three thouſand men, with which hee fought with the Kings halfe-brother *Iaſpar* Earle of *Pembroke*, *Owen Tuthar* his father, *Iames Butler* Earle of *Ormond* and of *Wiltſhire*, and their companies. And almoſt at their firſt encounter thoſe two Earles fled, foure thouſand of their friends were ſlaine, many others were taken priſoners, and among them *Owen Tuthar* (father in law to King *Henry*) was one, who with ſome others were incontinently put to death. But the Queenes Armie neere about that time hauing fought with the Duke of *Norfolke* and all his forces, compelled them to flie, & to leaue King *Henry* behinde them, whereat ſhe conceiued much ioy.

Owen Tuthar beheaded.

The Queenes Armie preuailed.

The King is enlarged.

This victorie at the firſt made her inſolent and proud: but when ſhe vnderſtood how well the young Duke of *Yorke* had preuailed, and that his Armie was now winged with the Earle of *Warwickes* Regiments and Companies, ſhee with her adherents retired backe into the Northerne parts of this Realme, and raiſed a huge Armie of threeſcore thouſand men: and neere vnto a Towne called *Towton*, *Edward* Duke of *Yorke*, the noble and victorious *Richard* Earle of *Warwicke*, and almoſt nine and fortie thouſand men, met with the Queenes Armie, where they fought a cruell and a fierce battaile, in which more then ſix and thirtie thouſand *Engliſhmen* were ſlaine; among which were the Earles of *Northumberland* and of *Weſtmerland*, the Lords *Dacres*, *Welles*, and *Clifford*, Sir *Iohn Neuil*, *Andrew Trollop*, and many others. The two Dukes of *Somerſet* and of *Exeter* ſaued themſelues by flight: but the Earle of *Deuonſhire* with ſundrie moe were taken priſoners.

The Queenes Armie of 60000. men.

The Duke of Yorkes Army of 49000. men.

Towton field.

36000. Engliſhmen ſlaine.

The Dukes victorie.

The King and the Queene, with Prince *Edward* their onely ſonne, fled to the Caſtle of *Barwicke*, and from thence into *Scotland*, where they were courteouſly receiued and friendly entertained by the young King.

In recompence of which fauours, and in hope of future aſſiſtance, King *Henry* deliuered vnto him the Caſtle and Towne of *Barwicke*, which the *Scots* not only much deſired, but with exceeding great loſſe and detriment had oftentimes (but ſtill in vaine) attempted to make their owne.

Barwicke deliuered to the King of Scots.

This victorie being thus happily obtained, the Duke of *Yorke* rod triumphantly to the Citie of *Yorke*, from whoſe walles hee tooke the heads of his deceaſed father, and of his friends: and cauſing the Earle of *Deuonſhire* and ſome others to be executed, hee ſet vp their heads in the ſame places.

Execution.

King

King *Henry* being hopeleſſe of all other helpe and aſſiſtance, ſent the Queene his wife, and the young Prince their ſonne, to her father *Reyner*, the Titularie King of *Sicilia*, *Naples*, and of *Ieruſalem*, praying to vſe his beſt endeuours and diligence to procure him aide and ſuccour from the *French* King. And in the meane time he himſelfe remained in *Scotland*, patiently expecting the euent of his future Fortunes.

The Duke of Yorke commeth triumphantly into London.

T

he r
pref
be o
Cou
for t
Stat
him
and
and
ted
A
frie
Rich

THE HISTORIE OF KING EDVVARD *THE FOVRTH.*

EDVVARD Duke of *Yorke* hauing ouerthrowen the King & Queen, and hauing ſlaine and executed many of his greateſt enemies at *Towton* Field, returned triumphantly to the Citie of *London*, and was proclaimed King of this Realme the fourth day of March, and was crowned the nineteenth day of Iune then next following. 1461. 1 *Edward the Fourth proclaimed and crowned King.*

In the beginning of his Raigne he remoued from all Offices all ſuch as were voiced to be the oppreſſors of his people, and carefully prouided that all things might be ordered well for their commoditie and profit. And in his high Court of Parliament many things were eſtabliſhed and enacted for the peace and welfare of the Common-weale. And all former Statutes which had beene made by the laſt King, and conuicted him and his adherents of High Treaſon, were defaced, cancelled, and made void. *A Parliament.* *Acts for treaſons repealed.* The Earle of *Oxford*, and Sir *Aubrey Vere* his ſon, and ſome other Counſellors to King *Henry* the Sixth, being attainted of ſundrie treaſonable practiſes, loſt their heads. *Execution.*

And to ſtrengthen his part with powerfull and with faithfull friends, he created his two brothers, *George*, Duke of *Clarence*, and *Richard*, Duke of *Gloceſter*: and Sir *Iohn Neuil*, brother to the Earle *Lords created.*

of *Warwicke*, he created Lord *Montacute*: and *Henry Bourchier* (who had maried the Ladie *Elizabeth*, Aunt vnto the King, and was brother vnto *Thomas Bourchier* Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*) was created Earle of *Eſſex*: and *William* Lord *Fawconbridge* was made Earle of *Kent*.

1462. 2. *Some of the Kings enemies ſubmit themſelues, but afterwards doe reuolt.*

The Duke of *Somerſet*, Sir *Ralphe Percie*, and diuers others, being the Kings inueterated enemies, perceiuing this ſettlement of the State, and finding no hope for reliefe, but onely in the Kings grace and mercie, voluntarily and humbly ſubmitted themſelues to his Highneſſe; whereupon they receiued his pardon, and were entertained with his loue. Queene *Margaret* (who with the Prince her ſonne was abiding in *France*) by her fathers meanes procured from the *French* King certaine ſhips, and an aide of fiue hundred men, with which ſhe arriued ſafely in *England* at *Tyne* in the North Country. But her ſucceſſe was vnfortunate: for by the Kings friends foure hundred of them were taken priſoners, and ranſomed, and the reſt were ſlaine: and the Queene her ſelfe fled, and with much difficultie went into *Scotland*, where ſhee found ſuch fauour and ſuch friendſhip, that many a luſtie *Scot* accompanied her, the King, and the Prince their ſonne, to the Caſtle of *Barwicke*, where ſhe left her ſonne, and with the King began once more to leuie a ſtrong Armie in *Northumberland*, and in the Biſhopricke of *Durham*; whereof when the Kings reconciled enemies, the Duke of *Somerſet*, Sir *Ralphe Percie*, and ſome others had intelligence, they treacherouſly ſlunke away, and came vnto the Queenes aide.

The Queene landeth, and flieth into Scotland.

The Queene raiſeth a new Armie.

The Kings reſolution.

Now when King *Edward* perceiued, that neither his eſtate nor his ſucceſſion could be eſtabliſhed without bloud, he ſent a gallant and a ſtrong Fleet of ſhips well furniſhed into the Northern Seas: and raiſing a puiſſant Armie, hee ſent the Lord *Montacute* with ſome part thereof before him, and with the reſt hee himſelfe ſpeedily followed after. The ſaid Lord boldly ſeeking aduentures, and longing much to make himſelfe famous by his valour, couragiouſly did ſet vpon the Lords *Hungerford* and *Roos*, and vpon Sir *Ralphe Percie* and their troupes. Theſe Nobles (in the beginning of the fight) fearing their owne ſhadowes, quickly ran away: but Sir *Ralphe Percie* and ſome others (preferring an honourable death before a cowardly and a ſhamefull flight) diſdained to turne their backes, fought ſtoutly, and were ſlaine like valiant men of warre.

The Lord Montacutes braue victory

The Lord Montacute ſetteth on the Queenes Armie.

From this victorie the Lord *Montacute* (with much confidence and true magnanimitie) marched towards the King and Queenes Armie, and met with them in *Exhamſhire*. Many prouocations he vſed

Exham field.

vſed to dare them to the fight, whereof they ſeemed to take no notice: whereupon he furiouſly preſſed them in their owne Campe, ſo that deſpaire depriuing them of all good hope, except they fought like men, they confronted their aſſailants with ſuch courage, that nothing (for a while) was more vncertaine, then vnto whom the honour and victorie of that day would fall. But in the end the Lord *Montacute* determining to enlarge his fame with the hazard of his life, before King *Edward* ſhould enter into the field to ſuccour him, ruſhed with ſuch violence into the Kings battaile, that he diſordered it wholly in a moment.

The King and Queene are ouerthrowen.

Then blowes were exchanged (with deſperate reſolution) on both ſides; and either partie fought in bloud. But in the end the Kings Armie was diſcomforted and ouerthrowen, and ſuch as were vnſlaine, fled. But in the purſuit there were taken theſe priſoners, *Henry* Duke of *Somerſet*, *William Taylboys* (who enſtiled himſelfe Earle of *Kent*) the Lords *Roos*, *Molynes*, and *Hungerford*, Sir *Henry Neuil*, Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, and Sir *Richard Tunſtal*: all which were beheaded in ſundrie places, and ſeuen and twentie others ſuffred the like executions ſhortly after. But King *Henry* with faſt riding eſcaped into *Scotland*: ſo did his halfe-brother *Iaſpar* Earle of *Pembroke*, Sir *Ralphe Grey*, and ſome others. And King *Edward* when he came forth with his Armie, and vnderſtood perfectly what was done, humbly thanked Almightie God, and then praiſed the Lord *Montacute* and all his followers for this honourable and great victorie: and with part of his Armie he ſent the Earle of *Warwicke* and the Lords *Montacute*, *Fawconbridge*, and *Scrope* into *Northumberland*, for the recouerie of ſuch Forts and Caſtles as were detained and kept from him: where they wonne the Caſtles of *Alnewike* and *Dunſtanburgh*, with the Caſtle of *Bambrough*, in which was Captaine Sir *Ralphe Grey*, who had formerly ſworne his ſeruice to King *Edward*. Him they beheaded, when they had degraded him from the honour of Knighthood, by hewing off his ſpurs, renting in peeces of his Coat of Armes, and breaking his ſword ouer his head. The King, to deſpight the Earle of *Northumberland*, who fought againſt him, dignified the Lord *Montacute* with his Title, and gaue the Earledome of *Pembroke* from *Iaſpar Tuther* vnto *William* Lord *Harbert*. But within few daies after, the ſaid late Earle of *Northumberland* in all ſubmiſſiue manner reconciled himſelfe to the Kings fauour, and was by him reſtored to his poſſeſſions and eſtate. And leſt hee ſhould diſgrace and wrong the Lord *Montacute*, by taking from him ſo quickly that dignitie which ſo lately for his great ſeruice he had beſtowed on him,

A terrible execution.

An Armie ſent into the North.

Sir Ralphe Grey degraded and executed.

The Lord Montacute is created Marqueſſe Montacute.
1463.
3.

he created him Marqueſſe *Montacute*, and gaue him full contentment in that behalfe.

Captaines and ſouldiers rewarded.

After this victorie was thus obtained, the King beſtowed many rich and princely gifts vpon his Lords and Gentlemen, which ſerued him faithfully and valiantly in his warres: and with ſuch familiaritie and kindneſſe demeaned himſelfe among them, that they were confidently aſſured of his loue. Hee alſo ſhared and diuided the lands and goods of his ſlaine enemies among his ſouldiers, and wonne their hearts by his great bountie. He augmented ſome of his coines of ſiluer, and of gold; and with new ſtampes and inſcriptions he minted others.

The Kings care of his Common-weale.

Hee publiſhed ſundrie proiects, and effected them for the commoditie and welfare of his people.

He pardoneth offenders.

Hee pardoned ſuch as had borne armes againſt him in the field, or elſewhere, vpon their humble ſubmiſſion and contrition for their offence.

He fortifieth.

He builded ſtrong Forts, Caſtles, Rampiers, and Bulwarkes, vpon the Sea-coaſts, to prohibite his enemies landing within this Kingdome. And on the maine land hee did the like, to hinder all traiterous Rebels from collecting of new forces to do him harme.

King Henry is taken and impriſoned.

And whileſt King *Edward* was thus diſpoſing of his affaires, and ordering the buſineſſes of the Common-weale, King *Henry*, who in a diſguiſed faſhion (for ſome ſecret purpoſe) was trauelling towards *London*, was taken in the North, and brought vnto King *Edward*, who committed him to a ſtrait impriſonment within the Tower of *London*.

The King intendeth to marie.

And when he had ſettled and ordered his eſtate and kingdome, becauſe hee was young and luſtie, about the age of foure and twentie yeares, hee was intreated by his Counſell and Nobilitie, to conſider of his ſucceſſion, and to take a wife, whereunto he willingly gaue conſent. There were nominated vnto him the Ladie *Margaret*, ſiſter to the King of *Scots*, and *Elizabeth* the ſiſter and heire apparant to *Henry* King of *Caſtile*. But the former of thoſe two was thought to be vnfit, becauſe ſhe was continually diſeaſed and infirme. The latter alſo was not liked, becauſe ſhee was not ſeuen yeares old. But the Ladie *Bona*, daughter to *Lewys* Duke of *Sauoy*, and ſiſter to Queene *Carlot*, the wife of King *Lewys* the eleuenth of *France*, was moſt of all deſired. And for that purpoſe the Kings beſt friend, *Richard Neuil* Earle of *Warwicke*, was ſent Ambaſſadour into *France*, with an honourable traine, where (in the behalfe of the King) he wonne his ſute, and with much ioy on all parts obtained his requeſt.

The Earle of Warwicke obtaineth the Duke of Sauoyes daughter.

But in his abſence, the King (as hee hunted in *Wich-wood* neere to *Stony-Stratford*) came (for his repoſe) into the Lordſhip and Manour of *Grafton*, where the Ladie *Iaquet* (daughter to *Peter* of *Luxenburgh*, late Earle of *S. Paul*, and ſome-

ſometimes the widow of *Iohn* the renowned Duke of *Bedford*, and wife to Sir *Richard Wooduile* Lord *Ryuers*) then lay: vpon whom there attended her daughter, the faire and freſh Ladie *Elizabeth*, the widow of Sir *Iohn Grey*, who was ſlaine as hee fought for King *Henry* at *S. Albons* in the laſt yeare of his raigne. This Lady was on the ſudden ſo liked, ſo loued, ſo fawned and doated on by the luſtie and young King, that (for dalliance ſake) hee reſolued to make her his wanton play-fellow if he might. But her conſtant modeſtie and amorous denials repulſing him from his vnchaſte hopes, he (to obtaine the fruits of his deſires) without any further delay, aduice, or counſell, tooke her to his wife; and created the Lord *Ryuers*, her father, Earle *Ryuers*, and made him high Conſtable of *England*. Her brother *Anthony* (whom he had made Lord *Anthony*) was by his procurement maried to the ſole and only daughter and heire of *Thomas* Lord *Scales*, and was in her right dignified with that honour. Her ſonne, Sir *Thomas Grey*, was created Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, and was (by the Kings motion) maried to the Ladie *Cicilia*, the only daughter and heire to the Lord *Bonuyle*, and of *Harrington*.

The King in his abſence marieth the Lady Elizabeth Grey.

Creation of Lords.

And though this his mariage with the Queene were pleaſing for a time, yet was it moſt vnhappie and vnfortunate in the end. For it occaſioned his expulſion out of this Realme. Secondly, the deaths of his true friend *Richard* the moſt eminent and valorous Earle of *Warwicke*, and of the Marqueſſe *Montacute*, his brother. Thirdly, the ſlaughter and execution, and the murdering of many Nobles, Gentlemen, and braue ſouldiers. Fourthly, the deſtruction of the Kings two ſonnes, and almoſt the vtter ruine and deſtruction of the Queenes kindred, and of her bloud, as hereafter in this Hiſtorie it ſhall appeare.

Euill effects of the Kings mariage.
1
2
3
4
5

When the ſudden newes of King *Edwards* haſtie mariage was publiſhed in *France*, euery perſon whom it concerned was highly diſpleaſed at this frumpe which thereby hee gaue to his worthieſt and deareſt friend the Earle of *Warwicke*: and the Earle himſelfe (by reaſon thereof) conceiued ſuch an inward hatred againſt the King, that in his heart he reſolued (when time ſhould ſerue) to depoſe him if he might: yet notwithſtanding he made faire weather, and at his returne ſeemed rather to make ſport at his own diſgrace, then to take any diſcontented notice of it.

1464.
4
The Earle of Warwicke hateth the King.

He diſſembleth for a time.

The King alſo (who chiefly by this Earle was ſeated and ſetled in his Throne) endeuoured ſecretly to abridge him of his authoritie and power, becauſe hee feared leſt his greatneſſe might doe him harme. And the Earle, although hee ſtaied a while at the Court after his returne out of *France*, yet as long as hee remained there,

there, he imagined that he ſtood on thornes. Wherefore hee aſked leaue of the King to depart vnto his Caſtle of *Warwicke* for his repoſe, and for recreations ſake: But being come thither, his head was buſied with new proiects, and all his thoughts were imployed, how, and by what meanes hee might ſubdue and depoſe the King. And at this time was borne the Lady *Elizabeth*: who was afterwards the wife of King *Henrie* the ſeuenth, and mother vnto king *Henrie*, the eight.

The Lady Elizabeth borne.

1465. 5.

The King (purpoſing to gaine the loue of forraine Princes, that by meanes thereof, he might with the more ſecuritie defend himſelfe againſt *Lewis* the *French* King, who threatned to bee reuenged for the iniurie which by King *Edwards* marriage was done to him, and to the ſiſter of his Queene) concluded a Truce for fifteene yeares with the King of *Scots*: Notwithſtanding that (by the deliuerie of the Queene *Margaret*) hee detained from him his ſtrong Caſtle of *Barwicke*. He alſo ſent vnto *Henrie* King of *Caſtiell*, and vnto *Iohn* King of *Arragon* many *Cotſhall* Sheepe, which neuer before vpon any entreatie, or requeſt, they, nor any other Prince could obtaine. From which Sheepe, ſuch a multitude haue increaſed, that it hath ſince turned to the vnſpeakable preiudice, and hurt of this kingdome and Common weale.

A truce with the Scots.

Engliſh ſheep ſent to the Kings of Caſtiell, and of Arragon.

1466. 6.

The King alſo (contrarie to the opinion, and good liking of the Earle of *Warwicke*) contracted and afterwards married his Siſter the Lady *Margaret* vnto *Charles* the Duke of *Burgoine*, as formerly he had done two other of his Siſters, to the Dukes of *Exeter* and of *Suffolke*. The Earle of *Warwicke* (who ſecretly thirſted for reuenge; and thought the time to be long before hee had reſtored king *Henrie* the ſixt to his libertie, and Crowne) by faire promiſes, and inſinuating perſwaſions, wonne his two brothers, the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, and the Marques *Montacute*, to take his part. But the Marques (who was exceeding hardly induced to giue his conſent to ſo ill an intended action) performed all things with an vnwilling minde: which in the end turned to his owne ruine, and to the deſtruction of his brethren. The Earle likewiſe (being right wel aſſured, that the Kings brother *George* Duke of *Clarence* ſecretly enuied the King, becauſe he had preferred *Anthonie* the Queenes brother in marriage with the ſole daughter and heire of the Lord *Scales*; and Sir *Thomas Gray* her Sonne, in marriage with the ſole daughter and heire of the Lord *Bonuile* and *Harrington*; and the Lord *Haſtings*, to the ſole daughter and heire of the Lord *Hongerford*; & was careleſſe of his aduancement by ſuch a match) watched a fit opportunitie to complaine to the Duke of *Clarence* of

The Duke of Burgoine marrieth the Kings Siſter.

1467. 7.

The Marques of Montacute, was ſtill a ſecret friend to king Edward.

The Duke of Clarence ioyneth with the Earle of Warwicke againſt his brother the King.

of the Kings ſullen vngratefulneſſe towards him. Why, quoth the Duke, can you (my Lord) thinke that the King will be thankfull to his friend, who is too too vnkind to his owne brethren? Thinke you that friendſhip or good deſerts, can worke in him more vertuous effects, then nature hath afforded him? Is hee not now ſo highly mounted, that hee vouchſafeth not to caſt downe an eye vpon ſuch as are of his owne bloud? Nay, who lay in his owne Mothers wombe? Are not the allies and kinsfolkes of his Wife preferred by him to all Promotions, Dignities, Offices and good places? And are not his owne brothers, and his trueſt friends (who haue fought in many aſſaults, skirmiſhes and battailes, to make him a Soueraigne King) neglected? vnrewarded? and vncourteouſly ſhaken off? Were my brother of *Gloceſter* of mine humour and diſpoſition (my Lord) we would (with your aſſiſtance and aide) make him to know himſelfe better, and to ſet a difference betwixt his auncient and truely dignified Nobilitie, and ſuch new Gentlemen, as vnworthily doe rule and gouerne all, to our diſhonour and reproach.

The plot is ſtrengthened by a mariage.

The Earle of *Warwicke* (finding the Duke of *Clarence* thus tractable; and inclining to his humour) conſulted with him oftentimes, touching this buſineſſe. And to tie him vnto himſelfe by a faſt bond of friendſhip and of loue, He offered to him in marriage one of his daughters, who was named *Iſabel*, with halfe the inheritance of his wife. Whereof the Duke in all kindly and friendly ſort accepted.

The plot againſt King Edward.

And thereupon the plot was contriued thus. The Earle himſelfe, with the Duke of *Clarence* would goe vnto *Calice*, where the yong Lady (who was there) ſhould bee married. And (in their abſence) as if it hapned without their knowledge or conſent; the Earles two brothers, the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, and the Marques *Montacute*, were appointed with their friends, to raiſe a Rebellion in the Countie of *Yorke*. And this proiect was put into Execution in this maner.

The cauſe of the Rebellion

The Husbandmen of *Yorke-ſhire* (by an ancient cuſtome) in the end of Harueſt, vſed yearely to giue a certaine quantie of Corne and Graine, towards the maintenance and reliefe of diuers poore people, who liued in the Hoſpitall of Saint *Leonard* within the Citie of *Yorke*. Now, the Earles friends, ſcandalouſly, and falſely reported in the Countrie thereabout: That the ſaid poore people were not relieued by the ſaid Almes, but that the Gouernour and Prieſts of the ſaid Hoſpitall, enriched and fatted themſelues therewith. So (when the Proctors, according to their wonted faſhion, came

there, he imagined that he ſtood on thornes. Wherefore hee aſked leaue of the King to depart vnto his Caſtle of *Warwicke* for his repoſe, and for recreations ſake: But being come thither, his head was buſied with new proiects, and all his thoughts were imployed, how, and by what meanes hee might ſubdue and depoſe the King. And at this time was borne the Lady *Elizabeth*: who was afterwards the wife of King *Henrie* the ſeuenth, and mother vnto king *Henrie* the eight.

The Lady Elizabeth borne.

1465.
5.

The King (purpoſing to gaine the loue of forraine Princes, that by meanes thereof, he might with the more ſecuritie defend himſelfe againſt *Lewis* the *French* King, who threatned to bee reuenged for the iniurie which by King *Edwards* marriage was done to him, and to the ſiſter of his Queene) concluded a Truce for fifteene yeares with the King of *Scots*: Notwithſtanding that (by the deliuerie of the Queene *Margaret*) hee detained from him his ſtrong Caſtle of *Barwicke*. He alſo ſent vnto *Henrie* King of *Caſtiell*, and vnto *Iohn* King of *Arragon* many *Cotſhall* Sheepe, which neuer before vpon any entreatie, or requeſt, they, nor any other Prince could obtaine. From which Sheepe, ſuch a multitude haue increaſed, that it hath ſince turned to the vnſpeakable preiudice, and hurt of this kingdome and Common weale.

A truce with the Scots.

Engliſh ſheep ſent to the Kings of Caſtiell, and of Arragon.

1466.
6.

The King alſo (contrarie to the opinion, and good liking of the Earle of *Warwicke*) contracted and afterwards married his Siſter the Lady *Margaret* vnto *Charles* the Duke of *Burgoine*, as formerly he had done two other of his Siſters, to the Dukes of *Exeter* and of *Suffolke*. The Earle of *Warwicke* (who ſecretly thirſted for reuenge; and thought the time to be long before hee had reſtored king *Henrie* the ſixt to his libertie, and Crowne) by faire promiſes, and inſinuating perſwaſions, wonne his two brothers, the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, and the Marques *Montacute*, to take his part. But the Marques (who was exceeding hardly induced to giue his conſent to ſo ill an intended action) performed all things with an vnwilling minde: which in the end turned to his owne ruine, and to the deſtruction of his brethren. The Earle likewiſe (being right wel aſſured, that the Kings brother *George* Duke of *Clarence* ſecretly enuied the King, becauſe he had preferred *Anthonie* the Queenes brother in marriage with the ſole daughter and heire of the Lord *Scales*; and Sir *Thomas Gray* her Sonne, in marriage with the ſole daughter and heire of the Lord *Bonuile* and *Harrington*; and the Lord *Haſtings*, to the ſole daughter and heire of the Lord *Hongerford*; & was careleſſe of his aduancement by ſuch a match) watched a fit opportunitie to complaine to the Duke of *Clarence* of

The Duke of Burgoine marrieth the Kings Siſter.

1467.
7.

The Marques of Montacute, was ſtill a ſecret friend to king Edward.

The Duke of Clarence ioyneth with the Earle of Warwicke againſt his brother the King.

of the Kings ſullen vngratefulneſſe towards him. Why, quoth the Duke, can you (my Lord) thinke that the King will be thankfull to his friend, who is too too vnkind to his owne brethren? Thinke you that friendſhip or good deſerts, can worke in him more vertuous effects, then nature hath afforded him? Is hee not now ſo highly mounted, that hee vouchſafeth not to caſt downe an eye vpon ſuch as are of his owne bloud? Nay, who lay in his owne Mothers wombe? Are not the allies and kinsfolkes of his Wife preferred by him to all Promotions, Dignities, Offices and good places? And are not his owne brothers, and his trueſt friends (who haue fought in many aſſaults, skirmiſhes and battailes, to make him a Soueraigne King) neglected? vnrewarded? and vncourteouſly ſhaken off? Were my brother of *Gloceſter* of mine humour and diſpoſition (my Lord) we would (with your aſſiſtance and aide) make him to know himſelfe better, and to ſet a difference betwixt his auncient and truely dignified Nobilitie, and ſuch new Gentlemen, as vnworthily doe rule and gouerne all, to our diſhonour and reproach.

The plot is ſtrengthened by a mariage.

The Earle of *Warwicke* (finding the Duke of *Clarence* thus tractable; and inclining to his humour) conſulted with him oftentimes, touching this buſineſſe. And to tie him vnto himſelfe by a faſt bond of friendſhip and of loue, He offered to him in marriage one of his daughters, who was named *Iſabel*, with halfe the inheritance of his wife. Whereof the Duke in all kindly and friendly ſort accepted.

The plot a-gainſt King Edward.

And thereupon the plot was contriued thus. The Earle himſelfe, with the Duke of *Clarence* would goe vnto *Calice*, where the yong Lady (who was there) ſhould bee married. And (in their abſence) as if it hapned without their knowledge or conſent; the Earles two brothers, the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, and the Marques *Montacute*, were appointed with their friends, to raiſe a Rebellion in the Countie of *Yorke*. And this proiect was put into Execution in this maner.

The cauſe of the Rebellion

The Husbandmen of *Yorke-ſhire* (by an ancient cuſtome) in the end of Harueſt, vſed yearely to giue a certaine quantie of Corne and Graine, towards the maintenance and reliefe of diuers poore people, who liued in the Hoſpitall of Saint *Leonard* within the Citie of *Yorke*. Now, the Earles friends, ſcandalouſly, and falſely reported in the Countrie thereabout: That the ſaid poore people were not relieued by the ſaid Almes, but that the Gouernour and Prieſts of the ſaid Hoſpitall, enriched and fatted themſelues therewith. So (when the Proctors, according to their wonted faſhion, came

came abroad, to collect the peoples deuotion in that kind, they were ſhrewdly beaten by the Ruſtickes; and miſuſed beyond meaſure. Hereupon, many Religious and well diſpoſed people tooke part with the Proctors; and with rough words and ſome blowes, they requited the iniurie which was done vnto them. From this beginning, ſprang forth a dangerous Inſurrection: So that (within few dayes) there were vp in Armes, more then fifteene thouſand men. Who (with their ring-leaders) came proudly before the Citie of *Yorke*, and (with vnciuile and rude tearmes) they threatned the ruine and deſtruction of it. But (in the darkeneſſe of the night) the Marques *Montacute*, being accompanied with many luſtie and braue men, ſet vpon the Rebels, ſlew many hundreds of them: and ſtrake off the Captaines head; and ſtrongly fortified that Citie.

This was done by him, in fauour of the King: as it ſeemes afterwards.

When the King (who was truely informed of this Rebellion) was told this newes, hee reſted doubtfull whether his old friend the Marques had done this ſeruice, to make an amends for his reuolt, or elſe to colour his ill intendements thereby. The Rebels (who ſtill increaſed) perceiuing that they ſhould looſe their labour to linger about the Towne, left the Citie, and marched towards *London*, being then conducted by Sir *Iohn Conyers*, a worthie and a valiant Knight.

Sir Iohn Conyers captaine of the Rebels.

The King (being hereof aduertiſed) commanded the Lord *William Herbert* Earle of *Pembroke*, and *Humphrie* Lord *Stafford* of *Southweeke* (who was nominated in hope of future good ſeruice, but not indeed created, Earle of *Deuonſhire*) to leauie a ſtrong power in *Wales*, and with all expedition to fight with the Rebels: And hee himſelfe promiſed to aſſiſt them with a faire Armie.

The Lord Stafford ouerthrowne.

Theſe Lords, with eight or nine thouſand men, right well ordered and apointed, marched towards theſe Rebels: And (as they drew neere to *Northampton*) they vnderſtood that they were not farre off. Whereupon the Lord *Stafford*, and Sir *Richard Herbert* (a valiant Knight, and brother to the Earle of *Pembroke*) taking with them out of the whole Armie, two thouſand ſtrong & skilful Archers, plotted a ſecret Ambuſh, to take a view of the *Northren* Rebels as they paſſed by, but as ſoone as they were gone beyond them, theſe Archers ruſhed violently vpon their Rereward. But the Rebels (who were nimble, and well ordered by their careſull Generall) turned about, ſtuck to their tacklings, and with their greater numbers, ſlew moſt of thoſe *Welchmen*, and the reſt fled haſtily to their owne Campe.

An vnfortunate diſſentiō

And the next night by reaſon of an vnkind diuiſion which happned

ned betwixt the Lord *Stafford* and the Earle of *Pembroke*, who at *Banburie* remoued him from a common Inne, where hee vſed to lodge with an vnchaſte Queane, the Lord *Stafford* with his Archers departed from the Armie, and left them to their fortunes among their foes.

This froward ſlinking away nothing at all diſmaied the noble Earle, though (as he had iuſt cauſe) he were much diſpleaſed thereat: but made him to reſolue with the more alacritie and courage to ſet vpon the Rebels, with whom hee fought the next day, and with his *Welſhmen* ſaw many tokens of victorie neere at hand. *Banburie field.*

But ſuddenly a Gentleman named *Iohn Clapham*, and ſeruant to the Earle of *Warwicke*, hauing his maſters Banner with the white Beare, trouped towards the battaile with fiue hundred men, who were by him collected of the off-skumme of the raſcall and baſeſt ſort of the inhabitants of the Towne of *Northampton*, and of the villages thereabout. All theſe preſenting themſelues afarre off, and aduancing their Standard, and crying, A *Warwicke*, A *Warwicke*, ſo incredibly daunted and confounded the *Welſhmen*, who ſuppoſed that the Earle of *Warwicke* was come thither with another Armie, that they began to flie, and were on the ſudden ouerthrowen, and more then fiue thouſand of them were ſlaine. And Sir *Richard Harbert* and eight others being taken priſoners, were beheaded at *Banburie* by the Rebels. *A policie.* *The Kings forces are ouerthrowen.* *5000. men ſlaine.*

This fortunate ſucceſſe animated ſundrie leaud and ill diſpoſed people of *Northamptonſhire* to enter into new broiles, inſomuch that they (making a notorious Raſcall, named *Robin* of *Riddiſdale*, their Captaine) entred into the Manour of *Grafton*, where they apprehended the Earle *Ryuers*, whom they loued not, and Sir *Iohn* his ſonne, caried them to *Northampton*, and without queſtioning with them, or any legall proceeding, ſmote off their heads. And the Lord *Stafford*, being by the Kings directions taken at *Brentmarſh* in *Somerſetſhire*, was caried to *Bridgewater*, and was there executed, becauſe hee trecherouſly departed with his companies from the Earle of *Pembroke*, as formerly we haue heard. *The Queenes father is beheaded by the Rebels.* *The Lord Stafford beheaded.*

The King (notwithſtanding theſe troubles) was ſo full of courage and heroicall magnanimitie, that hee was not any thing at all diſmaied with any croſſe or ill newes, but marched confidently with his Armie againſt the Northerne Rebels, to whom the Earle of *Warwicke* had ioined himſelfe with a great power; and likewiſe the Duke of *Clarence* brought all his forces to the Earle: ſo that now a fearfull expectation of vnchriſtian crueltie diſquieted the vaſt and great body of the Common-weale. But to preuent that *The King marcheth towards the Rebels.* *The Duke of Clarence and the Earle of Warwicke doe ioine with the Rebels.*

miſchiefe,

A parly for peace.

miſchiefe, manie of the Nobilitie endeuoured day, and night, to mediate, and to conclude a Peace: ſo that Letters were written from the one part, to the other: Heralds of Armes were ſent, and the word of Peace was ſo pleaſing to them all, that euerie circumſtance ſeemed to giue warrant that all things ſhould bee qualified, and ſet in tune.

This parly made the King too ſecure.

By meanes of this parlie, King *Edward* became more careleſſe of himſelfe, and of his charge then was fitting. VVhereof, when the Earle of *Warwick* was informed; hee reſolued (though diſloyally, and diſhoneſtly) to make an aduantage thereby vnto himſelfe: ſo that in the midſt of the Night, when ſecuritie ſuſpected none euil,

The King is taken in his Bed.

the ſaid Earle, being accompanied with manie of his friends, well armed, and thorowly appointed, ruſhed into the Kings Campe, ſlew his Watches, and tooke him in his Bed, and (as ſecretly as hee could) he ſent him as a Priſoner to the Caſtle of *Middleham* in *Yorkſhire*, there to be ſafely kept by the Archbiſhop his brother; who either repenting what hee had done againſt the King, or being wonne by large promiſes of great fauour, and good rewardes, ſuffered him (with his Garders) to hunt and to hawke at his pleaſure.

He is ſent Priſoner to the Archbiſhop of Yorke.

The King eſcapeth.

By meanes whereof, fit opportunitie for a reſcue was giuen to Sir *William Stanley*, Sir *Thomas Burgh*, and ſome others of his faithfull friends, who not only did ſet him free, but alſo by their carefull helpe, and aſſiſtance, conueighed him from place to place, vntill the Earle of *Warwick* was certainly informed, that hee was within the Citie of *London*.

The King commeth to London.

This his deliuerance much encumbred the ſaid Earle, the Duke of *Clarence* and their Confederates, with new troubles, and daily conſultations, what courſe was fitteſt for them to take. For they had diſſolued their Armie, and permitted the kings to depart from them vntouched, when he was taken, ſuppoſing that by his Captiuitie there had beene a finall end of all thoſe Ciuill wars.

But at length, they reſolued to rayſe another Armie vnder colour of ſome Rebellion in the North, and the King (on his part) was determined by one meanes or other, to make them better minded, and more dutifull: or elſe to roote them and their Poſteritie out of the Land.

Thus, whileſt all things were in a Combuſtion, and nothing but Ciuill war was threatned in euerie place: The Common Lawes were neglected, Iuſtice was laid a ſleepe, Robberies and oppreſſions were too too rife: and open violence (without correction) was practized vpon the weaker ſort. The Lords and Great men of the Land, once more endeuoured to preuent this future miſcheif: and

(vpon

and vpon ſolemne oathes receiued for a quiet and friendly enterview, the King and the confederated Lords met kindly in the great Hall at *Weſtminſter*, where the obiections of good deſerts and of vnthankfull requitals, were with ſuch proud and bitter words repeated, and maintained by the Earle of *Warwicke*, that in a great furie they all departed one from another. Whereupon the King went to *Canterburie*, and the confederated Lords into *Lincolnſhire*, where they raiſed an Armie, of which they made Captaine Sir *Robert Welles*, ſonne and heire apparant to the Lord *Welles*, becauſe hee was a man right valiant, and of good direction and iudgement in the Art of warre. The King (who was inwardly vexed with this new preparation) was by neceſſitie enforced to leuie another Armie; which when he had done, he ſent for the Lord *Welles*, who with his brother in law Sir *Thomas Dymocke*, comming towards the King, tooke Sanctuarie at *Weſtminſter*, becauſe their hearts failed them to goe forward, for that they heard that the King was exceeding angrie. But vpon the Kings ſolemne word and promiſe that no wrong ſhould be done vnto them, they came into his preſence, and were by him required to command the Knight to deſiſt from his rebellious purpoſe, and to repaire to the Kings Armie for his ſeruice: and they accordingly tooke much paine and trauell to that purpoſe. But as the King marched forth towards the Rebels, he was informed, that the ſaid Sir *Robert Welles* was reſolued to perſeuere in that action: whereat the King was ſo exceedingly enraged, and ſo forgetfull of his princely promiſe, that in his vnaduiſed furie he cauſed the heads of the ſaid Lord & Knight to be ſmitten off; for which crueltie hee was euilly ſpoken of by many Nobles and inferiour men, who otherwiſe wiſhed him good ſucceſſe in all his affaires and actions.

An enterview.

The parley broken off.

An Armie raiſed by the Lords.

An Armie raiſed by the King.

A cruell deed

When both theſe Armies had pitched themſelues neere to each other, Sir *Robert Welles* for a while doubted whether he ſhould begin the fight, or ſtay till the repaire of the confederated Lords, who were within a daies iourney of him with an Armie. But in the end, deepe hatred to reuenge his Fathers and his Vncles deaths, and an ardent deſire which inflamed his heart, with a ſmall number to win much honour, bred in him a conſtant reſolution to begin the fight; which forthwith hee did, and for a long time maintained it with great diſcretion and true valour. But the Kings numbers being farre the greater, ſo tired out the Rebels by their freſh ſupplies, that they began to flie, and the King by violent purſuit followed after, vntill he clearly won the honour of that day. This meeting was called the battaile of Looſe-coats, becauſe the

The battaile of Looſecoats

The Rebels ouerthrowen.

Rebels threw off their coats, that they might therby make themſelues more actiue and more nimble to run away. In this battaile were ſlaine aboue 10000. men. And Sir *Robert Welles*, with ſome others of good account, being taken priſoners, loſt their heads.

10000. men ſlaine. Execution.

1469. 9.

The Duke of *Clarence* and the Earle of *Warwicke* being informed of this miſhap, although they were guarded with a huge Armie of deſperate and wilful people, yet fearing leſt this ouerthrow would make them faint-hearted, mutable, and vnconſtant, they left their charge, and ſecretly fled to the Citie of *Exeter*, and from thence to *Dartmouth*, where they ſhipped themſelues, and came before *Calice* with their friends. The King was much grieued, becauſe they had not been ſlaine, or taken; but eſpecially the ſafetie of the Earle of *Warwicke* perplexed his minde, becauſe he knew him to be exceeding gratious and in much fauour with the common people, who indeed were perſwaded, that the Sunne ſhined not cleare any where, but where hé was; and that they could not miſcarrie in any danger if he himſelfe were preſent.

Clarence and Warwicke doe flie from their Armie, and come before Calice.

Warwicke is exceedingly beloued by the common people.

Now to preuent his future landing in *England* with a forraine power, the King by his letters intreated his brother in law *Charles* Duke of *Burgoine*, to prohibit his ſubiects and his friends from giuing to the ſaid Earle any aide, helpe, or ſuccour, and with a Nauie to ſurpriſe him. The Duke willingly conſented to the Kings requeſt: Firſt, becauſe the ſaid Earle oppoſed himſelfe againſt his mariage with the Ladie *Margaret* the Kings ſiſter. Secondly, becauſe the ſaid Earle loued *Lewys* the *French* King, whom the Duke mortally hated. And laſtly, becauſe the Earle was ſo generally beloued of the *Engliſh* Nation, that when he was at home, he clipped the wings of the Kings authoritie in his owne Kingdome.

Warwicke is enuied by the Duke of Burgoine.

1.

2.

3.

When the Duke of *Clarence* and the Earle of *Warwicke* came before *Calice*, hauing their wiues and many other Ladies and Gentlewomen with them, in ſtead of friendly entertainment, the Earles vnkinde Deputie, *Monſieur de Vawcler*, kept their ſhips off with the great Ordinance of the Caſtle. And though the Ducheſſe was in ſhip-boord deliuered of a ſonne, yet would hee not permit that it ſhould be landed or Chriſtned there; neither would hee affoord any thing needfull and neceſſarie in that extremitie to the ſaid diſtreſſed Ladie. The King tooke ſo much ioy to heare of this good newes, that forthwith by his Letters Patents, hee granted the chiefe Captainſhip of that place to the ſaid Deputie. And the Duke of *Burgoine* ſo thanked him, that he gaue him an yearely penſion of one thouſand Crownes. Yet for all this, *Monſieur de Vawcler* was ſo vncertaine in all his dealings towards the King, that hee aduiſed

Clarence and Warwicke beaten off at Calice.

The Ducheſſe deliuered of a ſonne in the ſhip-boord.

Monſieur de Vawcler made Captaine of Calice.

A penſion is giuen him.

uiſed the ſaid Earle to direct his courſe to the King of *France*, and promiſed to yeeeld vnto him a good account for *Calice*, when time and opportunitie ſhould it require. This counſell gaue ſome hope and contentment to the Earle, who intending to do as he directed, lanched his ſhips into the ſea, where hee met with diuers of the Duke of *Burgoines* ſubiects, fully loaden with great varietie of rich merchandiſes of all ſorts, all which he rifled and tooke away, and landed at the Towne of *Deepe* : and from thence (by the *French* Kings inuitation) they came to the Caſtle of *Amboys*, which ſtandeth vpon the riuer of *Loyer*, where hee met them, receiued them cheerefully, feaſted them with great bountie, ſupplied their preſent wants, and faithfully promiſed to aid and to aſſiſt them (when time ſhould ſerue) with his beſt meanes: all which hee did, not in regard of any grounded loue towards them, but becauſe he knew that they were enemies to his enemies, King *Edward* & the Duke of *Burgoine*. Queene *Margaret* and Prince *Edward* her ſon, together with *Iaſpar* ſometimes Earle of *Pembroke*, & ſome others, who with him had broken priſon in *England*, & were fled into *France*, vnderſtanding that the Duke of *Clarence*, the Earle of *Warwick*, and others of their friends, were friendly entertained in the *French* Court, repaired to them, where they entred into new conferences and communications for the reſtoring of K. *Henry* to his Crowne & Kingdome, and ſolemnly tooke their oathes, neuer voluntarily to leaue each other, vntill they had done their beſt to effect the ſame. And the Earle of *Warwicke* (to make his own part the ſtronger) gaue his ſecond daughter in mariage to Prince *Edward*, whereof when the Duke of *Clarence* had deliberately conſidered, and thought what might be the ſequell of this buſineſſe, hee euidently foreſaw, that this mariage and their newly intended warres would be the vtter confuſion of him and of the whole familie and houſe of *Yorke*. For Kings doe alwaies looke with a iealous eie vpon all ſuch as by any poſſibilitie may lay any leuell towards their Crowne. This conſideration (not without good cauſe) made him very diſtruſtfull of his own fortunes. And to preuent a great miſchiefe, which (as hee thought) began to threaten him and his eſtate, his loue & his heart began ſecretly to forſake the Earle of *Warwicke* and that Faction, inſomuch that hee gaue priuate intelligence to his brother King *Edward*, that at their landing within the Kingdome of *England*, he would be but a faint and a weake enemie in thoſe affaires. Thus when thoſe Lords had concluded to returne, they were with all expedition well furniſhed with men, munition, money, ſhips, and all things fitting, by the *French* King.

The Earle of Worwicke taketh the Duke of Burgoines ſubiects at Sea.

The French King is gratious to the Lords.

New plotting againſt K. Edward.

Prince Edward maried to Warwickes ſecond daughter.

This mariage maketh Clarence a ſecret enemie to Warwicke.

Clarence his meſſage to the King.

The Lords preſſe forth for England.

But being in a readineſſe to paſſe out of the Riuer of *Seyne*, the *Burgundians* met them with a ſtrong Fleet at the mouth of that Riuer, and purpoſed to defeat them if they might. But an euening ſtorme approching with vnwonted rage and furie, compelled the *Burgundians* to runne into the Sea, where many of them were drowned, ſome were driuen into *Scotland*, and the reſt, being all diſperſed, laboured and toiled hardly to ſaue themſelues.

The Burgundians drowned.

The Earle of *Warwicke*, who by letters ſome few daies before receiued from his friends, was certified that his landing was hourely expected, and ſufficient ſtrength prouided to backe him and his, although they came deſtitute of all other helpes and ſuccours, determined to looſe no time: but making a preſent benefit to himſelfe and his of the *Burgundians* miſhap and hard fortune, and leauing the Queene and the Prince her ſonne behinde him, the next morning entred into the Sea, and with much ſpeed and ſafetie he landed with all his companies and friends at *Dartmouth* in *Deuonſhire*; from whence hee gaue ſpeedie notice of his arriuall to his deareſt and neareſt friends.

The Lords doe land at Dartmouth.

The King ſo much relied vpon the bold ſeruice intended by the *Burgundians* Fleet, and not knowing what ſhipwracke and damage it had receiued, made no preparation at all, either to withſtand their arriuall, or to encounter them after they were landed: but hauked, hunted, and ſolaced himſelfe (according to his humour and wonted faſhion) in the ſocietie and companie of young Ladies and faire maidens, to whom his affections were more obliged then to the warres.

The King was too ſecure.

But the Earle of *Warwicke* marſhalled his ſmall companie in good order, and by publike Proclamations which he made in King *Henries* name, he required all men to repaire vnto his aide, with money, victuall, armour, and all things needfull for that purpoſe, and valiantly to fight againſt the Duke of *Yorke*, who (as hee affirmed) by meere vſurpation and bloudie tyrannie, vntruly and falſly called himſelfe King. This politicke practiſe within few daies increaſed his ſmall companies to a huge Armie, with which they marched towards *London*.

Warwickes Proclamation.

He hath a huge Armie.

And ſuch were the quicke endeuours, and ſo induſtrious was King *Edward*, (who was compelled by neceſſitie to make prouiſion for his owne ſafetie) that hee leuied a ſtrong Armie, and went forth with an high courage, and with princely valour, againſt the Rebels of his Countrie. But being informed, that all the Countries, Cities, Townes, and places thorow which his enemies paſſed, were aiders to their fortunes, and hearing them oftentimes with

with loud voices to crie, King *Henry*, King *Henry*, A *Warwicke*, A *Warwicke*, and diſtruſting vtterly the inconſtant mindes and diſpoſitions of his owne ſouldiers, his heart failed him, ſo that in ſecret manner, and in the night, with eight hundred of his beſt friends, he left his Armie, and poſted into *Lincolnſhire*: and when all his hopes of helpe and ſuccour there, were ſpent in vaine, they being altogether deſtitute of money, and other prouiſions needfull for a iourney into a forraine Countrey, tooke ſhipping, and ſailed into *Holland*, purpoſing to remaine with the Duke of *Burgoine*, vntill they might haue good meanes for their returne, and to be reuenged on the Earle of *Warwicke*, and of all other their mortall enemies.

The King flieth in the night.

As ſoone as it was certainly knowen that King *Edward* was fled, a rude multitude of factious *Kentiſhmen* (delighting tumultuouſly and in a braine-ſicke manner to fiſh in troubled waters) came to the Gates of the Citie of *London*, and would haue entred it: but being reſiſted in their purpoſe, they rifled and robbed the Suburbes, burnt diuers houſes, murdered many people, and at *Radcliffe* and *Lime-houſe* they did the like. But by the Earle of *Warwickes* power and endeuours, they were quickly ouerthrowen, and puniſhed ſharply for their offence, which wonne him much fauour and loue among the better ſort of the common people.

A rebellion in Kent.

Warwicke ſubdueth them.

The Earle afterwards came to the Tower, where he not onely enlarged the depoſed King *Henry*, but in moſt triumphant faſhion conducted him thorow the Citie of *London* to *Pauls* Church. And when he had concluded his deuotions, and performed his offrings, as the Kings of this Realme haue beene accuſtomed to doe, hee was brought to the Biſhops Palace, where he kept his Court with great magnificence and much bountie.

King Henry is enlarged.

Hee alſo aſſembled his high Court of Parliament at *Weſtminſter*, in which the late King *Edward* the Fourth and all his principall adherents were attainted of High Treaſon, and all their goods and poſſeſſions were confiſcate and giuen to the King.

A Parliament. Attaindors.

The Duke of *Clarence* was by the ſame authoritie publiſhed to be the next heire of the deceaſed *Richard*, late Duke of *Yorke*, his father. And albeit that hee was but his ſecond ſonne, yet all that Duchie was ſettled in him and in his heires. The Crowne alſo was entailed to King *Henry*, and to the heires males of his bodie: and for default of ſuch iſſue, to the ſaid Duke of *Clarence*, and to his heires. *Iaſpar* Earle of *Pembroke* was alſo reſtored to his honour and his lands, and ſo was *Iohn* Earle of *Oxford*, and many others. And the Earle of *Warwicke*, and the Duke of *Clarence*, who were

The Duke of Clarence aduanced.

The Crowne entailed.

enſtiled friends to the King, and friends to the Common-weale) were eſtabliſhed and made chiefe rulers in all things vnder the King.

The Queene dares not to put into the Sea.

When theſe affaires were thus ordered, Queene *Margaret* with the Prince her ſonne, and their whole traine, ſhipped themſelues. But ſo violent were the raging ſtormes, and ſo furious was the troubled ſea, that albeit many profers were made, yet durſt they not to aduenture for that time. Whereupon the common people of this Realme (of whom the Queene was not beloued) murmured and muttered, ſaying, that God was not pleaſed that ſuch a woman as had occaſioned ſo many battailes, and ſuch ſlaughters and executions in *England*, ſhould returne thither to plot more trecherie, and to deuiſe more miſchiefe.

The Duke of Burgoine furniſheth King Edward with money, men, munition, and ſhips.

The Duke of *Burgoine*, although he entreated King *Edward* and his friends kindly, yet becauſe hee himſelfe had warred with *France*, and feared leſt the Earle of *Warwicke* would buſie him with a new warre, ſent word to King *Henry*, that hee would not in any ſort aſſiſt his enemie for his returne into *England*. Yet not long after, when he vnderſtood that King *Edwards* friends by daily meſſengers and by letters importunated his returne, and had by their faire promiſe ſtrengthned him with good hopes of fortunate ſucceſſe, hee deliuered to him fiftie thouſand Floreines of gold, and furniſhed him with eighteene tall and warlike ſhips, in which he had only two thouſand ſouldiers for ſeruice on the land.

1470.
10
King Edward landeth in England.
A ſmall hope.

With theſe ſmall forces hee ſailed into *England*, and landed at *Rauen-ſpurre* in the Countie of *Yorke*, where his expectation failed him very much. For few or none reſorted to him for his helpe; but all men there acknowledged themſelues to be the friends and ſubiects of King *Henrie*. This checke, though it much troubled him, yet was hee not vtterly diſmaied thereby: for meere neceſſitie and danger enforced him to march to the Citie of *Yorke*.

He only claimeth his Duchie of Yorke.

And in his paſſage thither, he publiſhed to the people, and to the inhabitants of that Citie, that he came not to lay any claime or to make any challenge to the Crowne, but intended only to poſſeſſe himſelfe of his Duchie of *Yorke*, of which vniuſtly hee was depriued: wherein he affirmed, hee ought by the lawes of equitie and right, to be aſsiſted and ſuccoured by them, and by all good men.

He ſweareth it to the Citizens of Yorke They receiue him, and releeue him.

The Citizens at his firſt repaire denied his entrance: but by reaſon of a ſolemne oath which he tooke before them, that he only intended the regaining of his Duchie, and would remaine a true, faithfull, and an obedient ſubiect to King *Henry*, he was receiued, entertained, and monied at his owne will. But when he had ſtaied

in

in that Citie a day or two, hee forgat the oath which ſo lately hee had ſworne: for hee placed a ſtrong Garriſon within the Towne, and enforced the inhabitants to furniſh him with many requiſites and prouiſions for an Armie. And then leauing the Citie (which was by ſtrength reſerued to his vſe) he hired ſouldiers euery where for money as he paſſed by towards *London*. And in his march, he came within foure miles of the Marqueſſe *Montacute*, his old familiar and truſtie friend, who being accompanied with braue troupes and companies of valiant men of warre to encounter him, gaue vnto him free paſſage (without reſiſtance) to march forth; ſo that by eaſie iournies hee came to *Nottingham*, where diuers Nobles and Gentlemen (who fauoured his proceedings) made him liberall offers and tenders of their ſeruice, if he would reſoluedly take vpon him the ſtile and title of the King, which he then did. And thus as a riuer by running farre is ſtill augmented by the acceſſe of other brookes and ſtreames which fall into it; ſo King *Edwards* ſmall forces ſtill increaſed as he marched forwards, vntill they were indeed a ſtrong Armie.

He breaketh his oath, He getteth money, and wageth ſouldiers. He had neuer riſen by all likelihood, if he had beene defeated by the Marqueſſe.

He ſtileth himſelfe King. He hath a powerfull Armie.

The Earle of *Warwicke* (hauing in his companie the Earle of *Oxford*, many other Nobles, and a puiſſant Armie) came to the Citie of *Warwicke*, and intending to giue battaile to King *Edward*, directed and ſent his letters and meſſengers with all ſpeede to the Duke of *Clarence*, certifying him of his purpoſe, and praying him quickly to come forward with his forces, and to ioine with him. Yet for all this the Duke paſſed on with a lingring pace, ſo that the Earle (ſuſpecting his fidelitie) went with his Armie into the Citie of *Couentrie*, and King *Edward* with all his Companies came before the Towne, and dared the Earle into the field. But becauſe hee purpoſed to make ſome triall what the Duke of *Clarence* would doe, he therefore kept cloſe within the walles.

Clarence faileth Warwicke in his neede.

Warwicke keepeth cloſe in Couentrie with all his Armie.

The King perceiuing that he would not fight, bent his courſe towards his brother the Duke of *Clarence*, who (with his Armie) did the like towards the King; ſo that a great ſhew was made betwixt them, that many blowes ſhould be giuen. But the Duke of *Gloceſter* being brother to them both, became an earneſt mediator to reconcile them each to other: wherein he ſo well preuailed, that (being vnarmed) they courteouſly met, and publikely proclaimed, that they and their Armies were good friends.

The King and his brother & their Armies are made friends.

The three brothers hauing thus combined themſelues, made triall whether they could by any faire meanes and liberall promiſes, allure the Earle of *Warwicke* to their loue. But he (who with many curſes and diſgracefull ſpeeches publiſhed the Dukes periu-

Warwicke wil not be allured to leue by faire promiſes.

ric,

His anſwere.

rie, in forſaking his Confederates, and friends, returned them anſwere; That he would rather die like himſelfe, then ceaſe to make ciuill warre, vntill hee had confounded them, as his mortall Enemies.

The cauſes why London receiued King Edward.

1. 2. 3. 4.

The King (who knew well enough that the Earle was as valiant as he himſelfe was reſolute) feared not his power, but wiſely conſidered, That the daily encreaſing of his owne ſtrength, would be his beſt meanes, to winne the victorie: Wherefore he departed from *Couentrey*, and marched towards *London*, where (for a time) hee was kept out: But when the Citizens had duly conſidered of the Rightfulneſſe of his Title to the Crowne, Of his skill, and noble courage in feats of warre; Of his diſcretion, which enabled him (of himſelfe) to rule wiſely; And of his puiſant Armie, which he then commanded: And on the other ſide, when they had meditated vpon the ſoft Nature of King *Henrie*, his ſmall reach, ſhallow wit, inſufficiency to raign, and of the continuall dangers which would ſtill aſſault them, if the *Lancaſtrian* faction were maintained;

1. 2. 3. 4. 5.

They opened their gates; ranne out in troupes to meet him; Saluted him for their King, and brought him triumphantly into the Citie; where he ſeized againe vpon King *Henrie*, and committed him to the Tower. Thus may we ſee, vpon what vnſure foundation they build, who doe relie vpon the Peoples loue, and that nothing is more variable and vnconſtant then the Multitude, who (like vnto Weather-cocks) are turned about with euery winde.

Inconſtant Multitude.

King Henrie againe is impriſoned.

Warwicks laſt reſolution.

The Earle of *Warwick*, when hee perceiued, that King *Edward* was gone from *Couentrey*, followed after him with his Armie, purpoſing to haue ſet vpon him, before hee ſhould haue recouered *London*. But when hee perceiued that his intendments were preuented, he reſolued to ſet his whole fortunes vpon one Battaile. For which purpoſe he marched fourth vntill he came to the towne of *Barnet*, which by an equall diſtance often miles, lyeth betwixt *London* and *S. Albons*; there hee ſtayed, reſted, and refreſhed his Armie for a while.

The Kings reſolution.

Barnet field.

The King alſo (being perſwaded, that nothing could better procure his future right, and ſafetie, then once more to trie his manhood in the field, and taking King *Henrie* with him) marched with his armie (which by the Citie of *London* was frankely furniſhed with all things needfull) vnto *Barnet*, and encamped himſelfe neare to the Earle all that night: and early in the morning the Earle of *Warwick* diuided his forces into three parts: The right wing was commanded by his Brother the Marques *Montacute*, (whom by neceſſitie he was enforced to truſt) and by the Earle of

Oxford

Oxford. The left wing was directed by himſelfe, and by the Duke of *Exeter.* And his maine battaile was led by the Duke of *Somerſet* and ſome others. All theſe the Earle manfully encouraged, by telling them, that they were to fight for their ſoueraigne and lawfull King, for a good man, and for their natiue Countrey, againſt an Vſurper, a Tyrant, a mercileſſe and an vngodly wretch, whom neither reſpect of Conſcience, Iuſtice, Obedience, nor Honeſtie could reclaime; and againſt ſuch a one, as (if hee liued) would be the confounder and the deſtroier of them all.

The Earles encouragements to his Armie.

1
2
3

The King (on his part) made the Duke of *Gloceſter* chiefe leader of his Vant-guard: himſelfe and the Duke of *Clarence* ordered the Maine Battaile, in which King *Henry* the Sixth was: and the Rereward was conducted by the Lord *Haſtings*, Chamberlaine to the King.

1
2
3
4
5

What the King ſaid by way of encouragement to his ſouldiers, we may eaſily coniecture: for as hee had a wit and a tongue which neuer did deceiue him; ſo he wanted not matter nor arguments to maintaine his quarrell to be good.

The Fight (after it was begunne) was ſo deſperately continued on either part for the ſpace of fiue or ſix houres, that no man could coniecture to whom the victorie would incline: ſo that ſome of thoſe horſemen who were lookers on, and fought not, gallopped amaine to the Citie of *London*, and affirmed that King *Edward* was ouerthrowen. But among them by and by ſome others poſted with countermanding reports, and aſſured the Citizens, that the Earle of *Warwicke* had loſt the Field. And thus many men (in few houres) related what they wiſhed for: and in the meane time, ſuch as were moſt valiant, ſooneſt loſt their liues, and the beſt men lay breathleſſe vpon the ground. But when the Earle perceiued, that freſh ſupplies continually oppreſſed and preſſed vpon his wearied and tired friends and ſouldiers, who would not yeeld becauſe he could not then be ſafe, hee diſmounted himſelfe quickly from his horſe, and making an incredible ſlaughter of his enemies, he preſſed ſo farre into their battaile to be reuenged on his chiefeſt aduerſaries, that hauing no power nor meanes to returne againe, he was ſlaine: and the Marqueſſe *Montacute* (who euer honoured King *Edward*, and was his ſecret friend) ruſhing into King *Edwards* Armie, not to doe it any harme, but to reſcue and to releeue his brother, met with the like fortune. Thus both of them being dead, their whole Armie ran away, and King *Edward* was maſter of the Field. And in the afternoone of the ſame day (carrying with him King *Henry* as his priſoner) hee returned triumphantly like a Conquerour

The victorie was vncertaine.

The Earle of Warwicke is ſlaine.
So is the Marqueſſe his brother, whom King Edward loued.
The King hath the victorie.

querour into the Citie of *London*; and in *Pauls* Church hee offred vp his Standard, and rendred thankes to Almightie God for his victorie thus happily obtained. In this battaile there were ſlaine at the leaſt ten thouſand men: but none other of any noted name, ſauing only on the Kings part Sir *Humfrey Bourchier*, ſonne to the Lord *Barnes*, who was a right valiant and an approued man in Armes.

A thankeſgiuing to God.
10000. men ſlaine.
Sir Humfrey Bourchier.

The King ſorrowed much, and was greeued exceedingly at the death of the Marqueſſe *Montacute*, becauſe hee had loſt a faithfull and a deare friend. Yet to aſſure the people that thoſe two brothers were dead indeed, he cauſed them to be brought into *London* in one coffin, and for the ſpace of three daies to lie open faced in *Pauls* Church: and then among their honourable Anceſtors in the Priorie of *Biſſam* they were both buried in one graue.

The dead bodies of the two brethren laid open in Pauls Church.

Queene *Margaret* (not hearing of this newes, but intending to bring ſome ſuccours to the Earle) landed at *Waymouth*, where theſe tidings appalled her ſences, and depriued her of all future good hope or good hap. Wherefore in the Abbey of *Beawly* in *Hampſhire* ſhee with the Prince her ſonne tooke Sanctuarie: and thither repaired to her the Duke of *Somerſet*, *Iaſpar* Earle of *Pembroke*, *Thomas Courtney* Earle of *Deuonſhire*, *Iohn* Lord *Wenloke*, and diuers others. And when the Queene and they had thorowly debated what courſe was fitteſt to be taken, they reſolued, once more to aduenture their fortunes in the Field: for which purpoſe, euery one of thoſe Noblemen reſorted into their own Countries, where they prepared ſuch men and furnitures for the war as they could get. The Queene and the Duke of *Somerſet* leuied an Armie about *Briſtow* and *Gloceſter*, and from thence they endeuoured to goe into *Wales*, to ioine their forces with ſuch companies as the Earle of *Pembroke* had raiſed there.

Queene Margaret landeth too late.
Noble men doe repaire to her.
They raiſe a new Armie.

The King, who was more ſtrong then they, purpoſed to preuent their meeting if he might, and ſo cloſely followed them, that though the Queene and moſt of her aſſociates ſuppoſed it to bee beſt to flie diſordered into *Wales*, yet the Duke of *Somerſet* would not conſent thereunto; by reaſon whereof, both thoſe Armies met neere vnto *Tewkesburie* in *Gloceſterſhire*, and after a long fight, which with a ſmall companie the Duke of *Somerſet* had maintained againſt the Duke of *Gloceſters* battaile, he (not being ſeconded by the Lord *Wenloke*, by whom their middle Ward was commanded) retired towards the ſaid Lord, and with curſed words hee bitterly reuiled him for his baſe cowardlineſſe, and with his Poleaxe he ſuddenly ſtrake out his braines. But within one houre after,

The King preuenteth them.
The Duke of Somerſets reſolution to fight.
Tewkesburie field.

ter, King *Edward* ouerthrew them all, hauing ſlaine aboue three thouſand of them; among whom were the Earle of *Deuonſhire*, the Lord *Iohn*, brother to the Duke of *Somerſet*, Sir *Iohn Lewknor*, Sir *Iohn Delues*, and many others. There were alſo taken priſoners the Queene, the Duke, the Prior of *S. Iohns* of *Ieruſalem*, Sir *Geruaſe Clifton*, Sir *Thomas Treſham*, and twelue others of eminencie and of note: all which (Queene *Margaret* only excepted) were beheaded the next day. And the young Prince *Edward* (who was taken priſoner by Sir *Richard Crofts*) was preſented to the King: and becauſe he anſwered him ſtoutly to ſome queſtions which he demanded of him, hee was ſlightly ſtricken by the King, and ſuddenly murdered by the Dukes of *Clarence* and of *Gloceſter*, and by *Thomas* Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, and the Lord *Haſtings*. And this was the laſt Ciuill Battaile which was fought in *England* in King *Edwards* daies.

The King getteth the victorie.

Great Priſoners.

Execution. Prince Edward cruelly murdered.

Queene Margaret is a priſoner.

When the King had thus obtained this victorie, hee returned to *London*, carrying with him Queene *Margaret* as his priſoner, and was with triumphant ioy receiued into the Citie, from whence he ſent one *Roger Vaughan*, a powerfull Gentleman, into his Countrey of *Wales*, requiring him, by ſome ſecret traine or other to entrap the Earle of *Pembroke*, and to behead him if he could. But the Earle being informed of his comming, and of his errand, cauſed him ſuddenly to bee apprehended and put to death. And then the ſaid Earle, with his nephew *Henry* the young Earle of *Richmond*, who was but ten yeares old, ſailed into *Britaine*, and were courteouſly receiued, and louingly entertained by *Francis* the Duke of that Prouince.

Roger Vaughan is diſcouered and beheaded.

Not long after, *Reyner* the Titularie King of *Naples*, *Sicile*, and of *Ieruſalem*, with the ſale of the Kingdomes of *Naples* and of *Sicilie* for money, ranſomed Queene *Margaret* his daughter: and vpon that Title, and none other, *Charles* the Eighth, King of *France*, conquered *Naples*, as in the Hiſtorie of thoſe warres it appeareth.

Queene Margaret is ranſomed.

Now when no man (by reaſon of King *Edwards* peace and proſperitie) thought of any euill tidings, ſuddenly it was noiſed thorowout the Citie of *London*, that King *Henry* was found dead in his chamber within the Tower; and ſo he was indeed, being cruelly and wickedly murdered and ſtabbed with a dagger, by *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*, brother to King *Edward*, as the report commonly went. And his bodie was brought into *Pauls* Church, where his face lay vncouered one whole day, that thereby the people might bee aſſured that he was dead. And thus was King *Edward* freed from his great enemies. But his two brothers, of *Clarence* and of *Gloceſter*,

King Henry is found dead in the Tower. The Duke of Gloceſter murdered him.

King Henry brought open faced into Pauls Church.

Gloceſter, being for their periuries, murders, and euill courſes, puniſhed by Almightie God, embrewed their hands in their owne bloud not long after.

1473. 13 *The Duke of Burgoine animateth K. Edward to worre for his title to France.*

When King *Edward* for two or three yeares had enioied an happie peace, his brother in law, *Charles* Duke of *Burgoine*, heartily deteſting the *French* King, and ſecretly intending to worke him ſome deſpight, perſwaded King *Edward* to renew his *French* warres, for the recouering of his right and title to that Crowne and Kingdome.

Reaſons moouing the King ſo to doe.

The King and his Counſell thereupon quickly reſolued to vndertake that buſineſſe, principally for theſe reaſons.

1. Firſt, becauſe the Crowne of *France* was not ambitiouſly, but iuſtly deſired by the King, who thought hee had good right and title thereunto.

2. Secondly, becauſe *French* warres enriched *Engliſh* ſouldiers.

3. Thirdly, becauſe thoſe warres kept them at home, and gaue them not any libertie to inuade this Realme.

4. Fourthly, becauſe the *French* King had aſſiſted Queene *Margaret*, the Earle of *Warwicke*, and their Complices, againſt King *Edward* in the late Ciuill Warres.

5. And fifthly, becauſe the ſaid *French* King made warres vpon the Duke of *Burgoine*, who had formerly aided King *Edward* for the regaining of his Crowne and Kingdome.

A benenolence craued by King Edward.

But becauſe money wanted for the defraying of ſo great a charge, King *Edward* (without a Parliament) craued a beneuolence to be freely enlarged to him by his Subiects, who gaue him ſome money, but with an euill will. Yet among others, a rich, yet a ſparing and a nigardly widow, did cheerefully giue vnto him twentie pounds. The King himſelfe (who was preſent, but to her vnknowen) perceiuing that vnexpectedly ſhee had beſtowed vpon him ſo good a ſumme, did not only giue her thankes, but merily came and kiſſed her, telling her, that for her money ſhee ſhould kiſſe a King. The old woman was ſo much gladded with that courteſie, that ſhee told the King his kiſſe was worth more money, and therefore ſhe added twentie pounds more to the former ſumme.

A merie ieſt.

1474. 14 *The King tranſporteth an Armie for France.*

The King hauing in a readineſſe before *Douer* a Fleet of fiue hundred ſhips and boats, and hauing a puiſſant and a compleat Armie of fifteene hundred men at Armes on horſebacke, and fifteene thouſand tall Archers, beſides all ſuch as attended for other needfull ſeruices, departed from *England*, and landed ſafely at *Calice*, where hee was receiued with great honour and ſtate. But he

he was much greeued, becauſe the Duke of *Burgoine* (vpon whoſe motion, and at whoſe entreatie and promiſe to be met by him at *Calice* with two thouſand men at Armes, hee came thither) trifled with his whole Armie in the ſiege of *Nuyce*, which he was not likely to winne, and at length (after much time ſpent in vaine) had ſent all his forces to *Berroys* in *Lorrayne*, to be reuenged vpon *Reyner*, Queene *Margarets* father, Duke of that Prouince, for that hee had vſed foule and vnſeemely words towards him, when he lay at the ſiege of *Nuyce*; whereas if the ſaid Duke of *Burgoine* had ioined with King *Edward* againſt the *French* King, and with the Duke of *Britaine*, who ſided with King *Edward*, they would haue put into hazard of winning the whole kingdome of *France*.

The Duke of Burgoine breaketh promiſe, and aids him not.

Yet King *Edward* with his owne Companies marched by *Bollen* to *Perone*, into the Duke of *Burgoines* Countrey, where the ſaid Duke had not made any manner of prouiſion for the refreſhing of the *Engliſh* Armie, according to his promiſe, but ſuffred them to lie without his Townes in the cold and in the open fields, whereat they were all diſpleaſed. From thence king *Edward* (with the ſaid Duke) marched towards *S. Quintens*, which was ſecretly promiſed to be deliuered to him, by *Lewys* of *Luxenburgh*, great Vncle to king *Edwards* wife. But when they came before it, their entrie was not only denied, but ſallies were made vpon them, and the great Ordinance plaied from the Towne vpon the kings Armie, ſo that plainly he perceiued, that nothing was to be obtained there without blowes.

He breakes his promiſe againe.

Hee was Earle of S. Paul, and Conſtable of France.

The King is kept out of S. Quintens.

To theſe breaches of promiſe was added one vnkindneſſe more by the Duke of *Burgoine*, who to viſit his Armie, which then lay in *Berroys* in *Lorrayne*, vnexpectedly left king *Edward*, and rode thither, leauing word behinde, that hee would come vnto him with his whole Armie as ſoone as he ſhould be able.

A peace is concluded for nine yeares.

The *French* king being politicke and wiſe, and knowing that if all thoſe his enemies ſhould ioine their ſtrengths againſt him, they would put him in hazard of his eſtate, and being informed that king *Edward* was highly diſcontented, by reaſon of the Duke of *Burgoines* vnfaithfull vſage, and knowing that he beganne to feele the extremities of a winter warre, mediated a friendly conference and a firme peace, which by their Commiſſioners was effected for nine yeares, in this ſort.

1

2

3

4

The Articles of peace.

First it was agreed, that the French King should forthwith pay to King Edward towards his forepassed charges, threescore and fifteene thousand Crownes: and also the summe of fiftie thousand more for an yearly pension so long as King Edward liued.

2. *Secondly, that the French King within one yeare should send for the King of Englands daughter, the Ladie Elizabeth into France, and marie her to the Dolphin, for whose maintenance the French King should for nine years space pay yearly to them fiftie thousand Crownes, and at the end of those yeares should deliuer to them the quiet and peaceable possession of the whole Duchie of Guyen.*

3. *And thirdly, that the Lord Hawards, and Sir Iohn Cheney master of the Horses, should staie (as hostages) with the French King, vntill the whole Armie had quited France, and were landed in the Kingdome of England.*

Reasons moouing King Edward to conclude this peace.

To these propositions King *Edward* and his Counsell consented for these reasons.

1. First, as the Duke of *Burgoines* promises were seldome or neuer honestly performed, so with the King (whom hee had drawen into those Countries, and into those warres) hee did but gloze and faine.

2. Secondly, because the Earle of *S. Paul*, Constable of *France*, did but dissemble when hee protested to deliuer to King *Edward* the Towne of *S. Quintens*, which he did not, but offered violence to his Armie in stead thereof.

3. Thirdly, because the winter (which approched sharply) would haue enforced him for that time to haue returned dishonourably into *England*.

4. And last of all, because the late Ciuill Warres had consumed most of his best souldiers and chiefest Leaders, and the greatest part of his treasure; so that King *Edward* was hardly able to maintaine a great Armie any long time.

But the Duke of *Gloucester* and his friends (who mortally hated the

the *French* King) ſtriued much to diſſwade King *Edward* from theſe concluſions, but all in vaine: for thoſe Articles were ſealed and publiſhed, the money was paid, both the Kings in a familiar and kinde enteruiew, by their ſolemne oathes had ſworne to obſerue and keepe them, and hoſtages were deliuered accordingly.

The Duke of Burgoine ſtormeth at this peace.

His obiections.

It is to be noted, that within this peace the Dukes of *Burgoine* and of *Britaine* were included, if they would conſent thereunto. But when this newes was told to the Duke of *Burgoine*, he with all celeritie and ſpeed poſſible haſted to King *Edward*, and in his melancholie mood he told him, that it was in a high meaſure diſhonourable for him, to returne into *England*, not hauing burnt in *France* one poore cottage, nor hauing ſlaine as much as a flie with his whole Armie. He told him alſo, that his Anceſtors, King *Edward* the Third, and King *Henry* the fifth, neuer paſſed into *France* to demand their right, but that they obtained and won it victoriouſly with their ſwords; and ſwore, that King *Edward* had loſt more glorie and honour by his infamous peace made with *France*, then he had won by all his victories in nine battailes which he had fought; and that he himſelfe ſo ſcorned the *French* Kings malice and his power, that he would and did abſolutely refuſe to be included in the ſaid diſhonourable league, vntill ſix moneths were fully ended after King *Edwards* Armie was landed againe in *England*.

The Kings anſwere.

The King ſeeing the vnfaithfull Duke ſo angrie, made him this replie: That King *Edward* the Third and King *Henry* the Fifth entred into *France* with their Armies of their owne accord, to gaine their inheritance, and not otherwiſe, nor for any other purpoſe, which they performed with true valour and wiſdome: And that hee himſelfe would neuer haue departed out of that Kingdome, vntill he had done the like, if hee had come thither in that manner of his owne accord. But (quoth hee) I vndertooke this iourney vpon your requeſt, for your aide, and to aſſiſt you and your Territories, by plucking downe the pride of *France*: and the claime which I made to that kingdome, was at this time only publiſhed, to giue mee ſome colour to helpe you. And albeit you vaunt much of your owne ſtrength, and doe ſeeme little to regard the *French* King and his anger, yet me thinkes you cannot well forget, how by his ſtrength and power he hath wonne from you the faire Citie of *Amyens*, and the ſtrong pile of *S. Quintens*, and other Caſtles and Townes within your dominions; which (notwithſtanding all your crakes and brags) you neither dare to attempt, nor can againe winne. You know likewiſe, that your ſelfe and mine Vncle of *Luxenburgh* (to traine mee into *France*) promiſed to mee

mountaines of gold, but they quickly changed into ſnow, and are now diſſolued into water. If your faith, your offers, and your promiſes had beene honeſtly performed, I would ſooner haue loſt my life, and haue aduentured for you my Crowne and Kingdome, rather then I would haue beene found vnfaithfull or vnthankfull to you. But if any thing be amiſſe, you your ſelues haue beene the occaſioners thereof, and therefore you may thanke none others. And ſo farewell.

Hereupon the angrie Duke in a pelting chafe, tooke his horſe, and rode away. And from that time forward they neither loued nor ſaw one another.

The French Kings bountie to the Engliſh Armie.

After the aforeſaid Articles were concluded and ſealed, and a little before the enteruiew betweene the two Kings, the *French* King (of his owne bountie) ſent into the *Engliſh* Armie one hundred Wagons loaden with the beſt wines which he could procure, and licenced the ſouldiers for the ſpace of three or foure daies to diſport and recreate themſelues within the Citie of *Amyens*: and at their comming thither they found many Tables thorowout both ſides of the ſtreets richly and plentifully furniſhed with great ſtore of coſtly diſhes both of fleſh and fiſh, and many Gallants and Bon-companions of purpoſe were choſen to make them mirth, and to attend them; ſo that nine thouſand *Engliſh* armed men were within the ſame Citie at one time.

But when the *French* King was informed how great a number of them were within the walles of ſo ſtrong a Towne, hee reproued and condemned his owne kindneſſe, and feared leſt hee might looſe it by reaſon of his great loue, and by that meanes might occaſion more iarres betwixt *England* and his Kingdome of *France*.

The French Kings bountie to the Engliſh Captaines.

But the *Engliſhmen* diſdaining to be found falſe or vnthankfull, merily paſſed away the time with the *Frenchmen*; and hauing ſufficiently ſolaced and refreſhed themſelues, they departed out of the Citie, and quietly returned to their owne Campe. And the *French* King being well pleaſed with this their honeſt and plaine dealing, ſent vnto the *Engliſh* Captaines rich preſents in plate and in coined ſiluer and gold. And then King *Edward* with his whole Armie returned to *Calice*, and from thence into *England*, where hee was cheerefully receiued with much ioy. And thereupon the aforeſaid Hoſtages (receiuing great gifts and honourable vſage) were ſet at libertie, and returned home.

The King arriueth in England.

1475.

15

The *French* King (if hee might) would faine haue excluded the Duke of *Britaine* out of the former league. But in regard that the young

young Earle of *Richmond* was in his poſſeſſion, and whoſe returne into *England* to make challenge to the Crowne King *Edward* euer feared, he would not in any ſort agree thereunto.

Henry Earle of Richmond deliuered by the Duke of Britaine to K. Edwards Ambaſſadors

And not long after, King *Edward* (by his Ambaſſadours) with much entreatie, rich gifts, and vpon ſolemne proteſtation that he only intended to marie one of his owne daughters to the ſaid Earle, obtained his deliuerie to thoſe meſſengers, who being glad at the heart that they had obtained what King *Edward* ſo inſtantly deſired, tooke their leaue of the Duke of *Britaine*, and brought the young Earle of *Richmond* to *S. Malloes*, where they were enforced to ſtay, expecting a faire and a good winde.

Good counſell

But in the meane time, the Duke being informed by *Iohn Cheuelet* his true and faithfull ſeruant, that the ſaid mariage was but colourably pretended, to get the young Earle into King *Edwards* hands, and that his death was certainly pretended if hee could bee brought home; and being alſo told, that his honour would perpetually be obſcured by ſo foule a deede: the ſaid Duke could neuer be at reſt, vntill *Peter Landoys*, his chiefeſt Treaſurer, attempted the repoſſeſſing of him with the ſaid young Earle. Whereupon the ſaid *Peter* repaired to *S. Malloes*, and pretended much loue and familiaritie with the *Engliſh* Ambaſſadours, with whom hee pleaſantly conuerſed and ſpent his time. But in the meane ſeaſon the ſeruants of the ſaid *Peter* (being thorowly inſtructed for that purpoſe) conueied the ſaid Earle into a Sanctuarie, whoſe priuiledges might not by any meanes be infringed. The *Engliſhmen* vnderſtanding what had hapned, were much diſpleaſed, and condemned the ſaid Treaſurer for this vnfriendly practiſe and too much skill. But hee (on the other ſide) aſſigned the whole fault to their owne negligence and follie. And by this meane, the harmeleſſe and ſillie Sheepe was deliuered from the Woolfe. And thus was King *Edward* defrauded and beguiled of his money and of his hopes. But vpon the Dukes faithfull promiſe that the ſaid Earle ſhould euer remaine with him as a priſoner, the King was ſomewhat pacified, and neuer after attempted to haue him in his owne power.

Peter Landoys recouereth the Earle of Richmond into the Duke of Britaines poſſeſſion.

1476.
16

King *Edward* being now at eaſe, and enioying a bleſſed peace both at home and abroad with all forraine Princes, did many things which highly aduanced his honour, and were very profitable to the Common-weale. But the Duke of *Burgoine* (who by nature was vnconſtant, haſtie, turbulent, and wholly addicted to the warre) was in this yeare ouerthrowen in three ſeuerall battailes which he fought againſt the *Suiſſes*.

The Duke of Burgoine is thrice in one yeare ouerthrowen.

1. In the firſt at *Granſon*, where hee loſt his honour and his wealth.

2. In the ſecond at *Morrat*, where hee loſt his honour and his men.

3. And in the third at *Nancie*, where he loſt his honour, his riches, his men, and his owne life.

1477. 17 *The Duke of Clarence impriſoned and murdered.*

About this time, the Duke of *Clarence*, brother to King *Edward*, was ſuſpected, accuſed, and condemned of high Treaſon, for that he (with many others) had ſecretly contriued the Kings death: and thereupon hee was returned a priſoner to the Tower. But within few daies after, hee was wickedly drowned in a Butte of Malmeſie, not without the Kings notice, as moſt men did ſuppoſe. Hee left behinde him but two children, *Edward* and *Margaret*, which *Edward* was created Earle of *Warwicke*, and was executed for High Treaſon in the raigne of King *Henry* the Seuenth. And *Margaret*, who being wife and Dowager to *Richard de la Pole*, Earle of *Salisburie*, was put to death for Treaſon in the raigne of King *Henry* the Eighth.

1479. 19 *The King changeth his forme of gouernment of the Commonweale. Penall lawes. He loſt the loue of his Subiects.*

The King in the fiue laſt yeares of his raigne vtterly changed his former humours. For whereas before that time he had beene bountifull and liberall, loued magnificence and honourable hoſpitalitie; he now began to be ſo wretched, couetous, and miſerable, that to get money, and to augment his treaſure, hee extraordinarily vexed and troubled his ſubiects, by inflicting vpon them the execution of penall lawes; by meanes whereof, hee as quickly extinguiſhed and quenched their heartie loue and good affection towards him, as water doth the fire.

1480. 20 *Lewys the eleuenth.*

In the twentieth yeare of his raigne, hee much deſired that the mariage which the *French* King had promiſed, betwixt the *Dolphin* and his daughter, might be conſummate: for which purpoſe he ſent an honourable Ambaſſage into *France*, willing them to tell the *French* King, that he had broken his promiſe and his oath, for that hee had not ſent for the ſaid Ladie into *France* within one yeare after the concluding of the ſaid former Articles. But *Lewys* the *French* King returned friuolous excuſes, and promiſed very ſhortly to ſend for her, when as indeed hee meant nothing leſſe. For ſuch was his nature, and ſuch were his euill qualities, that where he might procure any benefit or aduantage to himſelfe, he would pleaſantly flatter, plentifully reward, and aſſuredly deceiue.

1481. 21 *A mariage intended with Scotland.*

About this time, *Iames* the Third, King of *Scots*, ſeeming earneſtly to deſire that the Ladie *Cicilia* (one of the Kings daughters) might be giuen in mariage to *Iames* his eldeſt ſonne, ſent his Ambaſſadours

baſſadours into *England*. And King *Edward* (ſuppoſing that hee had meant plainly, and knowing that by ſuch an alliance his owne eſtate would be the better ſecured) did not only grant his requeſt, but forthwith (to ſupplie his preſent wants) hee disburſed to him great ſummes of money for part of his ſaid daughters portion, but yet vpon this condition, that the ſame ſhould be repaied if afterwards king *Edward* diſliked, and would diſſolue that match.

Money is conditionally disburſed.

1482.

22

When all thoſe things were concluded, ſecuritie giuen, and the money paid, the king of *Scots* (very treacherouſly) ſent an Armie into the Northerne parts of this kingdome, which burnt, ſpoiled, and ſlew in euery place as it paſſed by: whereupon king *Edward* (as well to repreſſe his furie, as alſo to correct his infidelitie and follie) ſent againſt him the Duke of *Gloceſter* with a ſtrong Armie of one and twentie thouſand men, who firſt of all by force entred into the Towne of *Barwicke*, and then beſieged the Caſtle, which was valiantly kept and defended by the Earle *Bothwel*.

The Scots inuade the Northerne parts.

Gloceſter marcheth with an Armie againſt the Scots.

The Caſtle of Barwicke is beſieged.

The Duke (not purpoſing to imploy his whole ſtrength in that place) left the Lord *Stanley* there with foure thouſand men, and with the reſidue of his forces hee entred into *Scotland*, whither the *Scottiſh* king was for feare retired, killing, burning, and ſpoiling in all places at his pleaſure, and compelling the king to hide himſelfe in the ſtrong Caſtle of *Maydens* within the Citie of *Edenburgh*.

Gloceſter entreth Scotland, and ſpoileth at his owne will.

The Nobilitie of *Scotland* perceiuing the miſerable eſtate of their waſted and poore Countrey, ſent vnto the Duke, and craued peace; which he granted vpon theſe foure conditions.

Peace is granted on certaine conditions.

1. Firſt, that full amends and reſtitution might be made and giuen to king *Edwards* ſubiects for all ſuch dammage, iniurie, and wrongs, as by their laſt incurſions they had ſuſtained.

2. Secondly, that the *Scottiſh* king would againe reſtore his owne brother the Duke of *Albanie* (who was in the *Engliſh* Armie) vnto his eſpeciall fauour, and to all his honours, dignities, offices, and poſſeſſions in that kingdome.

3. Thirdly, that the Caſtle of *Barwicke* ſhould be yeelded vp, or not reſcued from the ſiege wherewith it was then compaſſed.

4. And laſtly, that repaiment might be made of all ſuch ſums of money as king *Iames* had receiued of king *Edward* vpon the motion for mariage with his daughter to the ſon and heire apparant of the king of *Scots*: or that good ſecuritie might be giuen by the Prouoſt and Citizens of *Edenburgh* for the ſaid repaiment, if (before a prefixed day) king *Edward* did giue them notice that there ſhould not be any further proſecution concerning the ſaid mariage.

The

The Nobilitie of *Scotland*, knowing the ſtate of that kingdome to be vnable to performe the firſt demand, to pacifie the Duke of *Gloceſter*, and to preuent the ruine and deſtruction of their natiue kingdome, yeelded vnto the latter three. And for the due obſeruing of them, they ſent vnto him ſuch an Inſtrument, ſealed and ſubſcribed by the King and them, as he had required. And to the Duke of *Albanie* was ſent a free pardon, and reſtitution was made vnto him of all things accordingly as the Duke of *Gloceſter* had deſired. Whereupon the ſaid two Dukes, taking a friendly farewell each of other, departed, the one into *Scotland*, and the other vnto *Barwicke*, where the Earle of *Athol* (being of nothing more aſſured, then that by his King and Countrimen he ſhould neuer be releeued) by compoſition ſurrendred the Caſtle into the Dukes hand, who making the Lord *Stanley* the chiefeſt Captaine and Commander thereof, returned ioifully with his whole Armie, and was much praiſed and thanked by the King.

The Caſtle of Barwicke is deliuered to the Duke of Gloceſter.

This good newes from *Scotland* was quickly checked with a bad out of *France*. For the *French* King not only refuſed to pay vnto King *Edward* the foreſaid tribute of fiftie thouſand Crownes by the yeare, which was granted to him during his life, but alſo maried his ſonne the *Dolphin* to the Ladie *Margaret*, daughter to *Maximilian* the ſonne of *Fredericke* the Emperour, thereby breaking his oath, and infringing thoſe Articles which (vpon the laſt concluſion of peace) he had ſworne ſolemnly to obſerue and keepe. Whereat King *Edward* iuſtly conceiued ſuch an high diſpleaſure and hatred againſt King *Lewys*, that (after long and ſerious conſultation with his Counſell, Nobilitie, Clergie, and Commons) he did reſolue to paſſe againe with a royall Armie into *France*, and to reuenge himſelfe of all thoſe iniuries and wrongs.

The French King breaketh all the Articles of Peace.

1483. 23

K. Edward reſolueth to goe with an Armie into France.

But whileſt thoſe preparations made manifeſt to the world the Kings intention to make warre, hee being either ſurcharged with deepe melancholie, or with ſome ſurfet, (for exceſſe of diet and of pleaſure did oftentimes diſquiet him) waxed exceeding ſicke, and ſhortly after died, when he had raigned more then two and twentie yeares.

He ſickneth. He dieth.

Profitable

Profitable Notes extracted out of the troublesome raignes of King HENRIE the Sixth, and of King EDVVARD the Fourth.

THe whole Kingdome of *France* was loſt in the ſeuen and twentieth yeare of King *Henry* the Sixth. And the next yeare after all *Normandie* was loſt. And in the one and thirtieth yeare of his raigne the Duchie of *Aquitaine* was quite taken from him. 27. H. 6. 28. H. 6. 31. H. 6.

It is likewiſe to be obſerued, that whileſt hee gouerned and enioied *Normandie* and *France*, theſe heroicall Nobles loſt their liues there: that is to ſay, *Thomas Montacute* Earle of *Salisburie*, who was ſlaine at the ſiege of *Orleance*; *Iohn* Earle of *Arundel*, who was ſlaine at the ſiege of *Rue*; the noble and renowned Lord *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford* and Regent of *France*; and *Richard Beauchampe* Earle of *Warwicke*, both which died of a greeuous ſickneſſe, and *Iohn* Lord *Talbot* Earle of *Shrewesburie*, who was ſlaine at the battaile of *Chaſtilion*. 6. H. 6. 12. H. 6. 14. H. 6. 18. H. 6. 31. H. 6.

Beſides many braue skirmiſhes and ſtrong encounters, there were fought during his raigne, betwixt the two factions and Confederates of the houſes of *Lancaſter* and of *Yorke*, fiue cruell and fierce battailes.

1. The firſt was called the battaile of *S. Albons*, wherein the *Yorkiſh* did preuaile; and (among others) *Edmund* Duke of *Somerſet*, *Henry* the ſecond Earle of *Northumberland*, *Humfrey* Earle of *Stafford*, and *Iohn* Lord *Clifford*, were then ſlaine. 34. H. 6.

2. The ſecond was termed the battaile of *Bloarheath*, in which the confederated Lords wonne the victorie, in which the Queenes Generall the Lord *Awdley* was ſlaine. 37. H. 6.

3. The third was the battaile of *Northampton*, in which King *Henry* was ouerthrowen. In this battaile there died aboue tenne thouſand men, among which were theſe Nobles, *Humfrey* Duke of *Buckingham*, *Iohn* Earle of *Shrewesburie*, *Thomas* Lord *Egremont*, *Iohn* Viſcount *Beamount*, and the Lord *Scales* was beheaded. 38. H. 6.

39.H.6. 4. The fourth was the battaile of *Wakefield*, in which the King was victorious. In this battaile there were ſlaine almoſt three thouſand men, among which was the renowned and moſt valiant *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*, and many others. And certaine priſoners were then taken, and loſt their heads, among which *Richard Neuil* Earle of *Salisburie*, and father to *Richard* Earle of *Warwicke*, was the chiefe. And at the end of that battaile, the young Earle of *Rutland*, named *Edmund*, being of the age of twelue yeares, and ſecond ſonne to the ſlaine Duke of *Yorke*, was cruelly murdered by the Lord *Clifford*.

39.H.6. 5. The fifth battaile was called the battaile of *Towton*, in which the new Duke of *Yorke* preuailed: and in the ſame there were ſlaine almoſt 37000. *Engliſhmen*, among which were the Earle of *Weſtmerland*, *Henry* Earle of *Northumberland*, the Lords *Dacres* and *Welles*, and many worthie Gentlemen and Knights. And the Earle of *Deuonſhire*, with ſome of his Complices, being taken priſoners, loſt their heads.

29.H.6. Whileſt this King liued, there were alſo executed for diuers Treaſons touching the ſaid two Factions, *William de la Pole* Duke of *Suffolke*, and *Iames Fynes* Lord *Say*, High Treaſurer of *England*.

25.H.6. And *Humfrey*, ſurnamed *The good Duke of Gloceſter*, being Vncle and Protector to the King, and being vniuſtly committed to the Tower, for ſurmiſed, but not for approued Treaſons, was cruelly murdered in his chamber.

King EDVVARD the Fourth.

IN the raigne of King *Edward* the Fourth there were principally fought fiue battailes betwixt the houſes of *Lancaſter* and *Yorke*.

2.E.4. 1. The firſt was the battaile of *Exham* in the North, in which King *Edward* obtained the victorie, and tooke theſe priſoners among many others, *Henry* Duke of *Somerſet*, *William Taylboys*, who named himſelfe Earle of *Kent*, the Lords *Roos*, *Molynes*, and *Hungerford*, all which were within few daies after put to death.

8.E.4. 2. The ſecond was called *Banburie* Field, in which were ſlaine aboue 8000. men.

8.E.4. 3. The third was called the battaile of *Looſe-coats*, becauſe the ſouldiers

ſouldiers threw off their coats to run away the faſter. And in it aboue ten thouſand men loſt their liues.

4. The fourth was *Barnet* field, in which more then ten thouſand died, among which were the moſt renowned *Richard Neuil* Earle of *Warwicke*, *Iohn* Marqueſſe *Montacute* his brother, whom King *Edward* entirely loued. And on King *Edwards* part there was ſlaine a noble and a valiant Gentleman, named Sir *Humfrey Bourchier*, ſonne to the Lord *Barnes*. 10.E.4.

5. And the fifth was called *Tewkesburie* Field, in which 3000. *Engliſhmen* were ſlaine, among which were the Duke of *Somerſet*, and the Lord *Iohn* his brother, and the Earle of *Deuonſhire*. 10.E.4:

In this Kings raigne there were beheaded the Lord *Stafford*, who left the Earle of *Pembroke* (vpon a priuate falling out) in the Field, and caried from him part of the Kings Armie. 8.E.4.

The Lord *Welles*, and Sir *Thomas Dymocke*, without any offence at all by them done. 8.E.4.

Richard Wooduile Earle *Ryuers*, and father to Queene *Elizabeth*, King *Edwards* wife, was taken by the Rebels, and loſt his head. 8.E.4.

And the Lord *Wenloke* was murdered by the Duke of *Somerſet*, becauſe he came not to his reſcue with his Companies in the field. 10.E.4.

The young Prince *Edward*, eldeſt ſonne to King *Henry* the ſixth, (to pleaſe King *Edward*) was cruelly murdered by the two Dukes of *Clarence* and of *Gloceſter*, and by ſome others. 10.E.4.

King *Henry* the ſixth was himſelfe ſtabbed with a dagger, and ſlain in the Tower of *London* by the ſaid *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*. 10.E.4.

And not long after, the Duke of *Clarence* was found dead in his bed, he hauing beene drowned in a Butte of Malmeſie, not without the Kings conſent, as it was ſuppoſed. 10.E.4.

And thus open and ciuill warres by the ſword, and the common Executioner with his axe, and inueterated enuie and malice, with bloudie hands, bereaued and tooke away the liues of the greater number of the moſt renowned and valiant Noblemen, Captaines, and Gentlemen of this Realme.

T

derate
familia
That
well :
uiſed i
too wa
he had
By
ged fo
declar
died,
repair
they

THE HISTORIE OF KING EDVVARD *THE FIFTH.*

1483. 1

Edward the Fourth described.

FOur memories be pleaſed to take a reuiew of the life and actions of the late deceaſed King *Edward* the Fourth, wee may thereon make this pretie abbreuiate and ſhort collection: That hee was of a goodly perſonage, and of a kingly preſence: That he was very ſtrong, and paſſing valiant, not proud in proſperitie, nor deiected with aduerſe fortune: That hee was moderately pleaſant and merie: That he was pleaſing to his Nobles, familiar with his ſouldiers, and amiable to his inferiour ſubiects: That he was mercifull to offenders, and fauoured all ſuch as did well: That he was very wiſe, diſcreet, prouident, and ſoundly aduiſed in all his actions. Yet was he ſomewhat too credulous, and too wanton, and in his latter daies more couetous then formerly he had beene.

His affabilitie.

By many worthy endeuours he expreſſed how much hee longed for his peoples loue: and by one action hee more particularly declared it, then by all the reſt. For in the next Summer before he died, hee required the Lord Maior of *London* and his brethren to repaire to his Caſtle of *Windſour*, where hee then lay. And when they expected ſome extraordinarie imploiment in State affaires,

becauſe ſo many of them were called thither, not troubling them with any buſineſſe, either great or ſmall, priuate or publike, nor requiring of them any ſupplies from their plentie, hee royally feaſted, banqueted, and entertained them, not only with the choiſeſt, beſt, and moſt coſtly delicates that could bee gotten, but alſo hee gladded them vnſpeakably with his owne preſence and companion-like behauiour. Hee afterwards carried them into his Parke, where the thicke fall of fat Deere (beſides many other things) gaue them warrant of their kinde welcome. And at their departing from him, he ſent ſuch great ſtore of veniſon into the Citie, for the friendly feaſting of their neighbours there, that nothing euer won him more heartie loue among his ſubiects of that place.

He left behinde him two ſonnes; *Edward*, who being of the age of thirteene yeares, vnfortunately ſucceeded him in this Kingdome; and *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*, who was two yeares younger; and fiue daughters, namely *Elizabeth*, who afterwards maried King *Henry* the ſeuenth, and was mother to King *Henry* the eighth, and *Cicilie*, *Bridget*, and *Katherine*, whoſe fortunes ſeldome laughed, and *Anne*, who maried *Thomas* Lord *Haward*, who after was created Earle of *Surrey*.

Richard Duke of Gloceſter deſcribed.

The ſaid noble King (when he died) left behinde him but one brother, namely *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*, who was (by common report) a monſter in nature. For he had many teeth when he was borne. He was exceedingly deformed in the compoſure of his bodie: for of ſtature he was but low, crooke-backed; his left ſhoulder was much higher then the other: his viſage was vncomely, his complexion ſwart and browne: he was exceeding ſtrong, yet much withered in his left arme: he was violent, fierce, and bloudily cruell; a good ſouldier, diſcreet to order well, and politicke to rule. Hee was very haſtie and forward in great expeditions and weightie actions; yet wiſe, and well aduiſed before hee would attempt to fight. He was ambitious beyond meaſure, and his deſires for ſoueraignetie had no bounds. What he contriued, were it good or bad, hee would by one meanes or by another aſſuredly effect it. Hee made his conſcience in all things to ſerue his will, though his will could not bee obtained without the effuſion of guiltleſſe bloud. He would oftentimes make himſelfe poore by his laviſh bountie to ſuch as wickedly ſerued his turne: and would againe quickly enrich himſelfe by pilling and by polling of ciuill and of honeſt men. Hee was ſo cunning a diſſembler, that hee would accompanie moſt familiarly and ieſt pleaſantly with ſuch as hee inwardly hated in his heart. Hee ſpared no mans death, whoſe life

reſiſted

reſiſted his vngodly purpoſes; nor puniſhed any man for any offence, if his wickedneſſe might be applied to his ſeruice. This ambitious, this fierce, and this cruell man, in his brother King *Edwards* daies (as wiſe men did coniecture) directed his aime to make himſelfe a King. For he with others murdered Prince *Edward* the eldeſt ſonne of King *Henry* the Sixth: and with his owne hand hee ſlew the ſame King when he was a priſoner in the Tower; and was conſenting (as the world blabbed) to the death and deſtruction of his elder brother, *George* Duke of *Clarence*, in the ſame place. 10. E. 4. 10. E. 4. 10. E. 4.

King *Edwards* death, and the minoritie of his two ſonnes, gaue him fit opportunitie to worke miſchiefe, which firſt of all he reſolued to proſecute by the reuiuing of olde grudges betwixt the Queenes kindred and the Kings, although the laſt King in his death-bed had reconciled them, and made them all friends. For he knew, that where malice and hatred are of counſell, there no good action or ſound concluſion can be expected. And by this practiſe he endeuoured firſt to make himſelfe equall with the beſt, and then to be the beſt of all. *Richard aimeth to the Crowne.*

Wee muſt alſo now obſerue, that at the time of King *Edwards* death the young Prince in his owne perſon kept his reſidence and Court at *Ludlow* in the dominion of *Wales*, that by his preſence he might reſtraine the *Welſhmen* from ſuch outragious enterpriſes as oftentimes their licentious and bad manners incited them to commit. And the protection of his perſon was by the laſt King appointed to *Anthonie* Earle *Ryuers* the Queenes brother, and by the mothers ſide Vncle to the ſaid Prince. And her allies and her kinſfolkes did now poſſeſſe all roomes and offices of honour and of profit about him, hee being King: which the Duke of *Gloceſter* much maligned, and ſo ſcorned it, that in his conceits he contriued how he might thruſt them all out of thoſe places. For which purpoſe hee oftentimes ſecretly and ſeriouſly conferred with *Edward* Duke of *Buckingham*, and *Richard* Lord *Haſtings*, who was Chamberlaine to the laſt King. To them hee diſcouered the meane deſcent of the Queene, and of her kinsfolkes in reſpect of theirs, and told them plainly, that if thoſe Vpſtarts remained ſo neere vnto the King in his youth, they would (through his fauour) be ſo powerfull when he came to his full age, that all their honours, their poſſeſſions, and their liues, would be in danger to be made ſubiect to their willes. And therefore he aduiſed them to ioine with him for their remoue, and to diuide and ſhare betwixt themſelues all ſuch benefits as by thoſe meanes ſhould be atchieued.

Theſe faire perſwaſions, and their owne ambitious humours,

His practiſe againſt the Queenes kindred.

quickly wrought the ſaid two great Lords, not onely to hearken willingly to this diſcourſe, but alſo to bee confederates with the Duke of *Gloceſter* in that practiſe, which quickly was attempted in this manner.

The Queene with the Earle *Ryuers* her brother, and with her ſonne *Richard* Lord *Grey*, and with her other friends, being guarded with a ſtrong power of armed men and ſouldiers, intended to bring the young King from *Wales* towards *London* to be crowned. And the Duke of *Gloceſter* knowing that if his feat were not wrought before that time, it could not eaſily be effected after; and conſidering likewiſe, that if he with his confederates ſhould come armed againſt the King to meet him, and by open violence attempt to get the Kings perſon into their poſſeſſion, their ſaid enterpriſe would be cenſured and adiudged to be a rebellious action, and no leſſe then Treaſon. Wherefore he cunningly directed and ſent his letters to the Queene, and called to her remembrance the heartie loue and friendſhip which the late King her deceaſed huſband in his death-bed had ratified and confirmed betwixt the Lords of his owne bloud and alliance, and the kinsfolkes of the Queene. He likewiſe informed her, that it was commonly reported, that her brother and her friends which were neere about the Kings perſon, intended with a ſtrong power and with many armed men to conduct his Maieſtie (for his Coronation) from *Wales* to the Citie of *London*. He proteſted and ſwore vnto her, that his humble dutie to his Soueraigne, and his vnfained loue to her and to her kinsfolkes and children, incited him ſeriouſly and earneſtly to aduiſe and counſell her and them, to diſmiſſe thoſe companies of armed men, for that he feared much leſt the gathering of them together would be the occaſion of new broiles, and of ciuill wars. For ſeeing (quoth he) that many former battailes triumphing in bloud, haue now made peace, and ſeeing that the ſtate of the whole Kingdome hateth Armes, and ſeeing that the King hath no Competitor for his Crowne, and that loue and friendſhip hath vnited and knit together the mindes and the hearts of all his Nobles, and ſeeing that perfect tranquillitie and a ſecure reconciliation hath quieted and gladded all the people, certainly the Kings comming towards the Citie of *London* with an armed traine, will make the Lords of the deceaſed Kings bloud, and many others, exceeding iealous of their intention, and to be fearfull leſt ſome ſecret plot be cunningly contriued to ſurpriſe them, when in dutie and for ſeruice they ſhall make their acceſſe vnto the King; and that ſuch feare and iealouſie will occaſion them (for their defence and

and ſafetie) to raiſe the like forces, whereof might enſue much danger, diſcontentment, and perhaps blowes.

The Queene and her friends (who meant none ill) taking much comfort in this aduice, becauſe ſhe ſuppoſed it ſprang from heartie loue, and alſo becauſe the Duke of *Gloceſter* had at the ſame time with all reſpectiue dutie and reuerence likewiſe written vnto the King, and louingly to the Earle *Ryuers* her brother, and vnto *Richard* Lord *Grey* her ſonne, cauſed all ſuch ſtrength of armed men as was prouided for the Kings conduction towards *London*, to bee diſmiſſed and ſent away. And the ſaid Earle, and Lord, and ſome others of their friends, brought the King forth in his iourney to the Citie of *Northampton*, and the next day to *Stony Stratford*, being ten miles from thence. And becauſe that little Towne was not capable of the whole traine, the Earle *Ryuers* and his priuate followers remained that night in *Northampton*. But on the ſudden and vnlooked for, the Dukes of *Gloceſter* and of *Buckingham* (being ſtrongly accompanied with great ſtore of reſolute attendants) diſmounted themſelues in the Earles Inne, and with all complements of loue and friendſhip they paſſed the time with him; and by reaſon of their extraordinarie familiaritie, he ſecured himſelfe of their heartie and vnfained loue. But aſſoone as their companies were in their beds, the two Dukes ſeiſed vpon all the keies of the ſame Inne, and cauſed all the waies betwixt thoſe two Townes ſo to be watched and warded, that no perſon (of what degree or qualitie ſoeuer he were) could haue any paſſage there. And they reuealead, that the pretence of their ſo doing was becauſe no man before them ſhould in the morning preuent them for diligence to attend vpon the King. Whereof when the Earle *Ryuers* had intelligence, neceſſitie compelled him to diſſemble, and to ſeeme as if he ſuſpected none euill, although he knew that by the Dukes policie and craftie cunning he was ouertaken and beguiled. Yet in friendly and in a iocund manner he came vnto the two Dukes, and asked them why they had ſo done. But ſuddenly they entred into a needleſſe and cauſeleſſe quarrell with the ſaid Earle, ſurpriſed his perſon, and committed him to ſafe keeping. And then in good and quiet manner the two Dukes rode to *Stony Stratford*, and humbly preſented their duties and their ſeruice to the King, who being altogether ignorant of that which ſo newly had hapned, receiued them with a cheerfull countenance and with much ioy. But preſently they alſo ſeiſed vpon *Richard* Lord *Grey*, the Kings halfe-brother, and vpon Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and ſome others, all which they ſent (vnder a ſtrong Guard) to the Caſtle of *Pomfret* in the

The Kings ſtrength is ſent away.

The Queens kindred is betraied.

They are impriſoned.

North, where without any iudiciall ſentence, or legall proceeding againſt them, they were beheaded vpon the ſame day that the Lord *Haſtings* Lord Chamberlaine (who conſpired in that action with the two Dukes) did loſe his head.

The Kings ſeruants are remoued.

The two Dukes alſo and the Lord Chamberlaine remoued from the King all his other Officers, and moſt of his meniall ſeruants, informing all men which attended the King, or expected the ſequell of this buſineſſe, that the ſaid Earle, Lord, and Knight, with ſome others, had reſolued to deſtroy all the Lords of King *Edwards* bloud, and to rule both the King and Common-weale according to their owne will.

The Queene with her children take Sanctuarie.

When the Queene (who at that time lay, with the Kings brother, the young Duke of *Yorke*, and with her fiue daughters, at *Weſtminſter*) heard of theſe tumults, and what had hapned to her brother, ſonne, and friends, it repented her much that ſhe had adviſed them (vpon the Duke of *Gloceſters* cunning letters) to diſmiſſe and to diſcharge their ſouldiers and men of warre. And becauſe ſhe had good cauſe to feare the euent thereof, ſhee with her children entred into the Sanctuarie there. The young King alſo mourned grecuouſly to ſee the wofull tragedie wherein his friends misfortunes were ſo vnexpectedly acted. But the two Dukes recomforted him with the expreſſion of their humble duties and ſeruice, and with a thouſand proteſtations of their fidelitie and troth towards his Highneſſe during their liues: and then they brought him with great honour neere to the Citie of *London*, where he was met by the Lord Maior, and fiue hundred graue Citizens more, in whoſe preſence the Duke of *Gloceſter* vſed ſuch humble dutie and reuerence to the King, and ſo diſcreetly demeaned himſelfe towards him, that none of them ſuſpected that any thing was done but for the Kings preſeruation, and for his good: yea the Nobilitie and Counſellors of Eſtate were ſo inwardly perſwaded to reſt in the ſame beleefe, that (by their generall conſent) they forthwith made him the Protector both of the Kings royall perſon, and of his Kingdome.

The King is brought to London.

The Duke of Gloceſter is made Protector.

He poſſeſſeth himſelfe of the Kings brother the Duke of Yorke.

When the Duke of *Gloceſter* had procured and obtained this high place which his heart infinitely deſired, (the ſame being an office of greateſt honour, of confidence, and of truſt) hee made no doubt but that his purpoſe would quickly (though wickedly) bee brought to paſſe as himſelfe wiſhed, if he could alſo get the young Duke of *Yorke* into his hands. And to the end that his deſires might not remaine fruitleſſe, hee greeuouſly complained to the Kings Counſell of the froward obſtinacie of the Queene, who detained the

the ſaid young Duke diſhonourably in the Sanctuarie as an offender, and in priſon, cauſing thereby the gouernment of the whole Kingdome, and the Nobles and officers thereof, to be exceedingly blamed and taxed, not only at home, but alſo in all other Chriſtian Prouinces and Kingdomes. He vrged alſo, that his Grand-maſter the young King was infinitely wronged and diſheartened, for that he was not permitted to enioy the ſocietie and the companie of his owne and only brother, whom aboue all other creatures in the world he reſpected and longed for.

The Lords hauing conſidered of the Dukes motion, reſolued that he had ſpoken well, and that it was fitting it ſhould be hearkned vnto. And thereupon, they made eſpeciall choice of the Cardinall Archbiſhop of *Yorke* (vpon whoſe fidelitie and loue, the Queene did not a little relie) to goe to her, and to praye her (without further trouble) to ſend the yong Duke her Sonne to the king his brother: That he might be comforted with his ſight, and bee made merrie and iocund with his companie. And withall they required him to tell her, that for many reaſons the young Duke might not be detained there.

Reaſons why the young Duke ought not to be in the Sanctuarie.

1. Firſt, becauſe the whole eſtate of this Kingdome would be ſlandered at home and among forraine Nations, if it ſhould permit ſo young a childe, by birth ſo noble, ſo neere vnto the King, and ſo innocent, to liue in priſon: (for euery Sanctuarie is a priſon.)

2. Secondly, becauſe none could claime the benefit of ſuch a place, but he whoſe conſcience did accuſe him of ſome offence, for which he feared to be puniſhed by the law. But the conſcience of this young Duke cannot be ſo burdened, becauſe his infancie and his innocencie doe excuſe him of any ſuch fault, and therefore hee needed no protection there.

3. Thirdly, that none might enioy the priuilege of a Sanctuarie, but ſuch a one as is enabled by true diſcretion to demand it. But the young Duke (by reaſon of his infancie) hath not ſufficient diſcretion to require it, and therefore hee is not capable of it, nor may enioy it.

4. And laſt of all, hee was required to aſſure her, that any perſon might be taken out of a Sanctuarie, if it bee for his good and welfare, and not to his hurt, or to puniſh him: and that therefore if the Queene did obſtinately refuſe to deliuer him, it was reſolued and determined, that hee ſhould be taken from thence, and from her without her leaue; and the rather, for that great ſuſpition and feare was iuſtly conceiued, that her frowardneſſe or her iealouſie would perſwade her to ſend him beyond the Sea, as if

if hee ſhould bee more ſafe there then in his brother the Kings Court.

When this round meſſage was done vnto the Queene, though it ſo nipped her at the heart, that willingly ſhe would not let him goe, alleadging that none but his owne mother was more fit to tutor him, or to attend him, hee being ſo young, ſickly, and very weake; and that each of thoſe two brethren was the others ſafetie ſo long as they were kept aſunder, and that the life of the one was maintained in the bodie of the other, and that if one of them did well, the other was in no perill or danger, and that nothing was more hazardous then to keepe them both in one place together: yet when ſhee perceiued which way the game went, and that it was reſolued by the Protector, and by his friends, that arguments ſhould not preuaile, ſhee embraced the louely young Duke in her armes, ſhe kiſſed him many times, ſhe wept bitterly, and praying Almightie God to preſerue and to defend him from all iniurie and dangers, ſhe deliuered him to the Arch-biſhop, telling him, that ſhee would require that poore and innocent childe at his hands. And thus vnwillingly and ſorrowfully ſhe did let him goe.

A monſtrous diſſembler.

When the harmeleſſe infant was by the Arch-biſhop deliuered into the Protectors hands, who with many other Lords attended the Queenes anſwere in the Starre-chamber, he tooke him (before the whole aſſemblie) in his armes, he hugged and embraced him, and kiſſed him once and twice, and againe and againe, proteſting vpon his ſoule, that no worldly thing (his Maieſtie only excepted) was ſo deare vnto him as that young childe, when as indeede hee meant nothing more then the deſtruction and ruine of them both. And hauing brought him to the King, who was infinitely ioied with his preſence and companie, hee conueied them (within few daies after) with princely pompe and attendance thorow the Citie of *London* to the Tower, vnder the pretence of an eſpeciall care and prouidence that they ſhould in ſafetie remaine there vntill the Common-weales troubles were thorowly quieted and appeaſed, whereas in truth and in deede nothing was out of frame, nothing was ill ordered, but by himſelfe, and by ſome other great Lords who wholly applied themſelues to his will.

The King and his brother ſent to the Tower.

A bloudie conſpiracie.

When the Protector had thus couped vp thoſe two young Princes, he then beganne more ſeriouſly to determine how hee might ſpeedily make himſelfe a King. And though for a while he ſtaggered whether or no hee might make the Duke of *Buckingham* acquainted with his purpoſe, yet in regard that hee ſtood aſſured of his loue, and knew that his proiect could not be effected without his

his priuitie and assistance, because he was so mightie and so powerfull, therefore hee found a fit time and a secret place to conferre with him about that businesse: and with small perswasions, and by the offer of his daughter to the Dukes sonne in mariage, with the gift of the whole Earldome of *Hartford*, whereunto the Duke pretended a rightfull title, but neuer could obtaine it from King *Edward* the Fourth, and by the diuiding and sharing of the greater part of the Kings treasure among themselues, hee wonne him not only to consent vnto his villanie, but also to assist him in that plot.

The Lord Hastings could not be wonne.

The Lord *Hastings* (whom the Protector for old acquaintance, friendship, and loue, had newly settled in the office of Chamberlaine to the young King) was euer faithfull and trustie to King *Edward* the Fourth, and had vowed his heart to the seruice of his new master, insomuch that the Protector was not assured whether he might attempt to winne him to ioine with himselfe and with the Duke of *Buckingham* in his conspiracie, or no. But in the end hee fearing lest he could not doe that mischiefe safely, except the said Lord were either wonne or destroied, hee resolued vpon one of them. Wherefore first of all by liberall gifts, and by large promises of extraordinarie aduancement and preferment, hee wonne to his will one *Catesbie*, who was both wittie, and well learned in the Lawes of this Realme, and was the most inward of all others with the said Lord *Hastings*, from whom hee had receiued his best fortunes, and his chiefest meanes to gaine. Him the Protector imploied and instructed, that by darke speeches and by some mysticall propositions, hee should afarre off feele and vndermine the inclination of the said Lord his deerest friend touching that matter. Which when he treacherously and craftily had done, he informed the Protector that there was no possibilitie euer to winne him thereunto.

A plot full of villanie.

Hereupon the Protector resoluing to cut him short, called a Grand Counsell of the Lords at the Tower of *London*, proposing to them for their taske the consideration of all fitting preparations for the speedie Coronation of the King, when as indeed hee intended no such thing.

The Lords being assembled, and set downe in their places, and all of them long expecting the repaire of the Protector, who staied long, at length he came in, tooke his chaire, saluted them all kindly, excused his long absence, merily iested with some of them, and was more then ordinarily pleasant with them all. But assoone as he had proposed some method to their present conference, he told

Doctor

Doctor *Morton*, Biſhop of *Elie*, whom he loued not, that hee was informed that he had ſtore of Straberies in his Garden in *Holborne*, and intreated him to ſend for ſome, which with all expedition he did, being much gladded that he found the Protector (as hee conceiued) ſo kinde towards him. But (behold) vnexpectedly and vpon a ſudden the Protector (faining ſome neceſſitie of a ſhort abſence) roſe vp, and requeſted the Lords to proceed in the matter which then they had in hand, and promiſed to make a quicke returne, which within one houre after hee performed accordingly. But being placed in his chaire, the Lords perceiued that ſome things were amiſſe: for he bent his browes, bit his lippe, caſt his eies vpon the ground, wrung his fiſts, looked fiercely, ſighed deepely, and by euery vnpleaſing geſture he openly expreſſed the diſquieted paſsions of a troubled minde. The Lords (who looked on him ſadly, and were perplexed with ſudden perturbations) wondred much at this ſudden change, but knew not what it meant. And when a profound ſilence had prepared them all to hearken what would be ſaid, the Protector by way of queſtioning propoſed what they deſerued who wickedly had intended and practiſed his deſtruction, hee being Vncle and Protector to the King? The Lords (who were all free and abſolutely guiltleſſe of any ſuch crime) ſate ſtill as men amazed, and not one of them ſpake a word. But at length the Lord *Haſtings* (who by reaſon of his great familiaritie with the Protector, imagined that hee was higheſt in his fauour) anſwered, thus: My Lord, ſuch as haue ſo tranſgreſſed the Law, deſerue the ſeuereſt puniſhments which by the Law may be inflicted vpon them, and all the Lords aſſented thereunto. Then quoth the Protector, that Sorcereſſe (meaning the Queene) and that Strumpet *Shores* wife, haue conſpired together by witchcraft to depriue me of my life: and that you may be right well aſſured that it is true, behold (I pray you) and ſee how their villanie hath alreadie ſeiſed vpon my bodie. For by it my left arme is alreadie waſted and conſumed, and therewithall hee ſtroke vp his ſleeue, and ſhewed his arme naked before them all. Thus dared hee to doe, albeit that all ſuch as were there preſent were well aſſured that his arme had neuer beene otherwiſe from his mothers wombe. And moreouer, no man was ſo full of follie to beleeue that if the Queene had intended ſuch a miſchiefe, ſhee would haue conſorted with *Shores* wife aboue all other women, becauſe ſhee was the Concubine of King *Edward* her deceaſed husband. And beſides all this, they all knew that the Queene was religious, temperate, milde, charitable, and vertuous in

A likely matter.

1.

2. *Shores wife was King Edwards Concubine.*

3.

in all her actions, hating to reuenge although meanes and opportunitie were offered vnto her to doe miſchiefe.

The Lord Haſtings puniſhed for his whoredome.

The Lord *Haſtings* (who after King *Edwards* death, conuerſed with *Shores* wife; vſing her as his Concubine; and but the ſame Morning leauing her in his owne bed) being deſirous (if he might) to appeaſe the Protectors rage towards her: And (in ſome ſort) being willing to excuſe her, Replied thus, My Lord, if the Queene and ſhee haue ſo done, and therewithall the Protectors indignation (waxing intemperate) interrupted him, thus: Thou Traitor (quoth hee) telleſt thou me of Iffs and Ands; I tell thee they haue done it, and as he ſpake thoſe words with a lowd voice, hee clapt his hand rudely vpon the Table board; vpon the noyſe whereof, the whole Chamber was ſuddenly ſtuffed and filled with Armed men. And one of them (at his firſt entrance) ſtrake with his Holbard at the Lord *Stanleys* head: who preuenting the violence, but not all the blow, to ſaue his life fell vnder the Table but did looſe much bloud. The Protector himſelfe arreſted the ſaid Lord *Haſtings*, and accuſed him (by generall tearmes) of high Treaſon: and forthwith without any other proceeding or Iudgement, cauſed him to be carried out into the Greene, and his Head vpon a Logge to be chopped off.

Armed men.

The Lord Haſtings beheaded.

And it is to be noted, that this Execution was thus done on him the ſame day, and at the ſame hower, that the Earle *Ryuers*, the Lord *Richard Gray*, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and their other friends, were executed without legall proceeding in the Caſtle of *Pomfret*: which Execution was appointed by the Protector, by the Duke of *Buckingham*, and by the ſaid Lord *Haſtings*, who little dreamed that he ſhould in the like maner haue died at the ſame time.

Murder puniſhed.

This Execution being thus diſpatched, the Protector cauſed thoſe Armed to ſeiſe vpon the Cardinall Archbiſhop of *Yorke*: and vpon the Biſhop of *Elie*, and vpon the Lord *Stanley*, and ſome others, all which were ſeuerally committed to ſeuerall Priſons in that place.

A bad ſhift.

And preſently the Protector and the Duke of *Buckingham*, thruſting themſelues into vile and vncomely harneſſe, as if neceſſitie had compelled them to ſhift themſelues into the firſt and worſt that came vnto their hands: They ſent for diuers worthie Citizens of London, and required them with all poſting ſpeed to repaire thither, which they did. And vnto them the Protector paſsionately related, that his death was conſpired, and that his life ſhould haue beene taken from him as he ſate that morning in Counſell with the Lords, by the Lord *Haſtings*, and by his wicked

ked complices, if by ſudden force and violence he had not preuented that miſchiefe: and ſo much they were required to tell their friends, that they might haue true notice of the cauſe of this ſudden broile and execution in the Tower. And within two houres after that the Lord *Haſtings* was depriued of his head, a ſolemne and a long Proclamation written with a faire hand in parchment, and being vnder the Great Seale of *England*, was brought into the Citie, and with great ſolemnitie proclaimed there by an Herald of Armes. But by all circumſtances it was coniectured by all wiſe men, that the ſame was indited, written, and ſealed ſome daies before.

Doctor Shaas Sermon.

Thus when the wicked Protector had impiouſly cut off the heads of thoſe Lords, who would ſtill haue kept him backe from doing of too much miſchiefe if they had liued, hee cauſed Doctor *Shaa* (a man more learned then vertuous, and as wicked in practiſes as the Protector was, who did inſtruct him) in a Sermon the Sunday following at *Pauls* Croſſe, to blazon the honourable birth and parentage of the Protector, to relate his vertues, to commend his valour, to weaken the fame and honour of the deceaſed King *Edward* by reaſon of his laſciuious wantonneſſe with *Shores* wife, and with many others, to baſtardize all his children, as being borne in adulterie, and out of lawfull mariage, for that King *Edward* was ſolemnly contracted (as he affirmed) vnto the Ladie *Elizabeth Lucie* (whom he begat with childe) before ſuch time as hee maried with the Ladie *Elizabeth Grey*; and alſo becauſe hee was in the perſon of *Richard* the great Earle of *Warwicke* (before his ſaid mariage) affied vnto the Ladie *Bona*, ſiſter to *Carlot* the wife of the *French* King.

He alſo accuſed the Protectors owne mother of great incontinencie, when King *Edward* and *George* Duke of *Clarence* (his two elder brothers) were begotten. And thus he ſtriued to make euery one crooked beſides himſelfe, who was moſt crooked of all. And (in concluſion) the Doctor applying his ſpeech to the worthineſſe and goodneſſe of the Protector, he ſuppoſed that the people could not chuſe but receiue him for their vndoubted ſouereigne Lord and King, and therefore hee ſtriued to prepare the multitude to haue ſhouted out when the King came in, and to haue cried, King *Richard*, King *Richard*: but he failed of his purpoſe; for euery man was ſilent, and more ſurpriſed with wonder then with applauſe, to ſee and to perceiue how cowardly, how vnnaturally, and how wickedly theſe affaires and buſineſſes were carried, not to continue the Protector to be a ſubiect any longer, but to be a King.

And

And the next day in the *Guildhall* of *London* the Duke of *Buckingham* by like arguments endeuoured to make the Protector the rightfull and vndoubted heire and inheritor of the Crowne. And albeit that the Townesmen tooke no contentment in this message, nor did by their voices assent to that which to them was deliuered, yet (against their willes) the Duke of *Buckingham* procured them the next day to goe with him and with many other Lords to *Baynards Castle* to the Protector, where they offred to receiue him for their lawfull King, and praied him to vndergoe that burden. But oftentimes he refused to grant them their request. But at last he granted it. And thus he gained and wonne (by their perswasions) his hearts desire.

The Duke is now King Richard.

T

ley, i
had
prete
not c
own
H
ctor
who

THE HISTORIE OF KING RICHARD THE THIRD.

WHen King *Richard* had taken vpon him the gouernement of this Kingdome, and was crowned, in ſtead of noble and prince-like courteſie, he applied himſelfe to all baſeneſſe, ſtriuing thereby (but all in vaine) to winne the loue and fauour of his people. And not ſeeming to take any notice that the Lord *Strange*, ſon and heire apparant to the Lord *Stanley*, intended to raiſe an Armie in the North, becauſe his father had beene wronged, and was then impriſoned by the King, but pretending that he loued him when he might puniſh him, hee did not only ſet him at libertie, but alſo made him the Steward of his owne houſe. 1483. 1

Cowardly diſſimulation.

He alſo enlarged the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, but committed Doctor *Morton* Biſhop of *Elie* as a priſoner to the Duke of *Buckingham*, who was afterwards a principall meanes of his confuſion, and of

D. Morton committed.

King *Richards* deſtruction, as in the ſequell of this Hiſtorie more particularly it ſhall appeare.

Nobles created.

The King, to make himſelfe ſtrong, by conferring of great honours vpon others, created his onely childe *Edward* (who was of the age of ten yeares) Prince of *Wales*: and *Iohn Howard* (who was both valiant in the field, and wiſe in counſell) was by him created Duke of *Norfolke*. And Sir *Thomas Howard* (his eldeſt ſonne) was made Earle of *Surrey*. The Lord *William Barkley* was aduanced to the Earledome of *Nottingham*. And *Francis* Lord *Louel* (whom he entirely loued) was made Viſcount *Louel*.

The French King deſpiſeth King Richard.

And when hee had (as hee imagined) ſo ſurely ſettled his eſtate, that froward fortune could not change it, by his Ambaſſadors he made offer to *Lewys* the *French* King to conclude a peace. But *Lewys* ſo much deteſted his bloudie cruelties and his murders, that hee would not vouchſafe to ſee the Ambaſſadors which hee ſent, nor to heare the meſſage which they brought.

The two yong Princes are murdered.

This frumpe and ſome others ſo pinched him at the heart, and the Deuill tooke ſuch an aduantage of him, by reaſon of his ambitious and wicked minde, that he ſuppoſed he could neuer be reputed and truly honoured as a King, ſo long as his two harmeleſſe and poore nephewes drew any breath, as though ſo horrible and ſo execrable and bloudie a murder could winne him loue and reputation among his diſcontented people.

Thus whileſt his head forged this vile and villanous conceit, he made his progreſſe towards the Citie of *Gloceſter*, as if hee only intended by his preſence to honour that place from whence his former title of dignitie was deriued, ſtrongly perſwading himſelfe, that if this vngodly and hainous fact were committed in his abſence, no man would then repute him to bee guiltie of that miſchiefe.

Sir Robert Brackenburie.

Wee muſt be informed here, that becauſe from a meane eſtate hee had raiſed Sir *Robert Brackenburie* to the dignitie of Knighthood, and had made him Lieu-tenant of the Tower, hee coniectured that thoſe his fauours, and many more which hee might hope for, would haue incited him (for his ſake) to haue committed any villanie whatſoeuer. But the loue which this vertuous and good Knight bare to vertue, and the great care which hee had to keepe a quiet and a guiltleſſe conſcience, made him to refuſe to perpetrate that murder, which by the Kings letters hee was peremptorily enioined and commanded to performe.

Iames Terril.

Whereat when the King had ſtormed, ſworne, and curſed like a Fiend, hee called to his remembrance, that in the Tower there lodged

lodged one *Iames Terril*, a man who was needie both in vertue, and of good meanes, to ſupport his haughtie and his ambitious minde, and who was likely (for rewards and promotions ſake) to kill his owne father and his friend. To him the King by his letters diſcloſed the earneſtneſſe of his deſires, and promiſed larger recompence if the fact were done, then ſuch a helliſh ſeruice could deſerue.

Thus when he had made him pliant to his will, he then by his letters required the Lieu-tenant to deliuer to him the keies of the Tower, which he forthwith did. And thus euery thing being fitted according to his deſires, the next night *Iames Terril* ſent *Miles Foreſt*, *Iohn Dighton*, and two other graceleſſe and cruell Executioners, into the poore childrens chamber, where they wickedly ſmoothered them in their beds, and buried them at the ſtaires foot, from whence they were remoued, and obſcurely beſtowed in an vnknowen place.

The newes which proclaimed that the two young Princes were vnfortunately found dead in their bed, ſo amazed the Nobles and the common people of this Kingdome, and ſo inwardly perplexed the dying Queene, that euery place returned Ecchoes of lamentations and of ſorrow, and euery mans eies ſent forth ſtreames of teares in token of their griefe. Only the Tyrant and his Confederates, for a few moneths, ſolaced themſelues in this, that *Richard* was now a compleat King, and with admired policie had ſurely ſettled himſelfe and his poſteritie in this Kingdome.

But wicked and bloudie Tyrant, let ſuch as hate thy vices, demand of thee ſome queſtions; and then thou ſhalt plainly ſee, and be thine owne Iudge, whether this land did euer breed a more vngodly mõnſter then thy ſelfe.

1. Could not the infancie and the imbecillitie of thoſe tender and ſweet babes (who were vnable to reſiſt or to doe thee harme) perſwade thee to ſuffer them to liue?

2. Could not their innocencie incline thine heart to pitie and to take compaſſion on them?

3. Could not their proximitie of bloud with thine induce thee to ſpare theirs?

4. Could not the confidence which by the Common-weale was repoſed in thee, make thee faithfull, being truſted?

5. How came it to paſſe, that thou (by violence and by villanie) ſhouldeſt dare to take away the life of thy Maſter, nay of thy ſoueraigne Lord and King, the annointed of the Lord?

6. Could not the ſhame which the world would ſpot thee

with, when thou haddeſt done it, deterre thee from conſenting to it?

7. Diddeſt thou not foreſee how hatefull thy ſelfe, nay how odious thy name would be vnto all good men, when thy wickedneſſe ſhould be reuealed?

8. By Gods Commandement thou wert prohibited to doe murder. What then made thee ſo to neglect and to contemne the precept of thy God, that (in deſpight of him and of his Law) thou committedſt this execrable murder?

9. Could not the gaſtly examples of Gods ſeuere iudgements, wrathfully poured downe vpon ſuch murderers, make thee afraid to kill thine owne kinſmen?

10. Why ſhould the Deuill and boundleſſe ambition carie thee headlong into ſuch a Sea of wickedneſſe, to thine owne ruine and deſtruction?

11. What couldeſt thou deſire to haue, which thou haddeſt not?

12. Diddeſt thou want riches? Why, the whole treaſure of the Kingdome was to be diſpoſed of as thou liſtedſt.

13. Diddeſt thou want lands and liuings? Thou couldeſt not haue wiſhed for any that the King had, but with a word thou mighteſt haue had thy ſhare therein.

14. Diddeſt thou want authoritie to command, and to make thee great? No, thou diddeſt not: for thou ſwaiedſt the Kings perſon and his whole Kingdome at thy will and pleaſure.

15. No, no. But thou waſt deſtitute of the grace of God, which made thee emptie of all goodneſſe. From henceforth when thou art named, the paper, the tongue, and the eare ſhall ſharply accuſe thee of innocent bloud, yea thine owne conſcience ſhall condemne thee, and (as a hangman) torment and torture thee with paines and puniſhments which ſhall not quickly end.

The puniſhment of a murderer.

Euery man already ſeeth, and reioiceth to ſee, how thou art perplexed, and canſt not be in reſt. Thou feareſt leſt thine enemies will ſubdue thee. 1. Thou diſtruſteſt thy friends, leſt they will betray thee. 2. Thou eateſt little, becauſe nothing can doe thee any good. 3. Thou ſleepeſt vnquietly in thy bed, becauſe viſions, fantaſies, and fearfull dreames doe tell thee, that (except thou ſpeedily doe repent) 4. thou muſt expect vengeance for the guiltleſſe bloud which (like a monſter) thou haſt ſpilt. 5. Thou art vnpatient with all men, becauſe thine owne heart is ſtill troubled. 6. Thou biteſt thy lippe, becauſe thou deuiſeſt how thou maieſt doe greater miſchiefes. 7. Thou ſetteſt thine hand furiouſly vpon thy dagger, purpoſing

poſing to kill other, becauſe thou art ſurpriſed with continuall feare leſt euery man will kill thee. Thou bendeſt thy browes, and lookeſt ſullenly, becauſe no good mans endeuours can content thee. What ſhall wee more ſay? The ſhortneſſe of thy life, thy ſorrowes whileſt thou breatheſt, and the aſſurance of thy ſhamefull death, doe tell vs, that theſe bloudie facts of thine doe make the earth loth and vnwilling to ſuſtaine ſo heauie and ſo bad a burden. And therefore to Gods mercie we muſt leaue thee, but cannot leaue (as yet) to ſpeake of thee, vntill the bloud of thy two innocent Nephewes, and of all others whom vniuſtly thou haſt ſlaine, be reuenged in this world by thy ſhamefull death. 8 9. 10 11 12

Now when King *Richards* progreſſe was ended, and hee returned vnto *London*, he endeuoured by the making of good Lawes, and by executing of them with fauour and with mercie, and by his bounteous liberalitie to the poorer ſort, and by his humilitie, gentleneſſe, and courteſie, to inſinuate himſelfe into the loue and fauour of his people. But God (who would not ſuffer him long to enioy his worldly dignitie and honour without croſſes) depriued him of his only childe, the young Prince of *Wales*, for whom hee was much greeued. *Good fruits from an euill tree.* *K. Richard is made childleſſe.* 1484.

Now muſt wee know, that as Doctor *Morton* Biſhop of *Elie*, was ſingularly well learned, ſo was he exceeding wittie, politicke, and cunning. And of all thoſe his qualities hee made ſuch vſe, that in the end he obtained his libertie, occaſioned the Duke of *Buckinghams* ouerthrow, procured the deſtruction of King *Richard*, conioined (by mariage) the two Houſes of *Lancaſter* and *Yorke*, aduanced the Earle of *Richmond* to the Crowne, and alſo preferred himſelfe to great honour, as hereafter it ſhall appeare. 2 *Doctor Morton.*

The Duke of *Buckingham* (to whom he was a priſoner) was not only great in regard of his high dignitie and large poſſeſſions, but by his learning and much applauded courteſie hee alſo wonne the extraordinarie loue and fauour of all ſorts and degrees of people in this Kingdome. But his wittie priſoner perceiuing that hee was ambitious, and greedie of his owne praiſe and commendation, as commonly great men are, inſinuated himſelfe into his eſpeciall loue and fauour, by applying his talke and conference to thoſe humours, inſomuch that within a ſhort time the Dukes heart conceiued nothing which his tongue reuealed not to the Biſhop, yea they began to ſpeake their mindes freely each to other touching the bloudie villanies and tyrannie of the King. *He applieth himſelfe to the Dukes humour.* *They beginne to be inwardly familiar.*

This craftie Biſhop likewiſe, to prouoke the Duke not onely to a further deteſtation of thoſe cruelties, but alſo to a reſolued purpoſe *Morton raileth on the Vſurper.*

poſe to depoſe him, firſt of all recounted how ſlenderly the Vſurper had rewarded the Duke himſelfe, without whoſe aide and countenance he could neuer haue aduanced himſelfe (ar he did) to the Crowne. Then he minded him of the inſtabilitie of the Kings word, who reſtored not to the Duke, nor to his ſonne, the Earledome of *Hartford*, according to his promiſe in that behalfe. Now vnto that he remembred him of the iealouſie which the King conceiued of the Dukes greatneſſe, ſo that he rather diminiſhed, then in any ſort graced or augmented his authoritie & power. Fourthly, the vilifying of the honour and reputation of his owne mother, making her vnchaſte, and ſuch a woman as proſtituted her bodie vnto ſtrangers, in the conceptiō of his two elder brothers, King *Edward* and the Duke of *Clarence*, to make himſelfe more legitimate then they. Fifthly, his vnlawfull and bloudie executing of *Anthonie* Lord *Ryuers*, *Richard* Lord *Gray*, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and of the Lord *Haſtings*, chiefe Chamberlaine to the two laſt Kings. Sixthly, his horrible murdering of Prince *Edward*, the eldeſt ſonne of King *Henry* the Sixth, and of the ſame King, and of the Duke of *Clarence* his owne brother. And laſt of all, and the worſt of all, the baſtardizing, depoſing, and murdering of his poore, innocent, and guiltleſſe nephewes, which gaue him (by wicked vſurpation) his paſſage to the Crowne and Scepter of this Kingdome.

Mortons motiues.

All theſe things when the Biſhop had recounted, then (for a full concluſion to all that had beene ſpoken) he aduiſed the Duke of *Buckingham*, for the ſafetie of his owne life, and for the preſeruation of his Countrey, either to make vſe of his owne vertues and greatneſſe, and of the extraordinarie fauour and loue which all the people bare him, and to make himſelfe their King; or otherwiſe, to further the vniting of the two houſes of *Lancaſter* and of *Yorke*, by marying of King *Edwards* eldeſt daughter, the Ladie *Elizabeth*, with the Earle of *Richmond*, the ſonne and heire apparant of *Margaret* Counteſſe of *Richmond*, daughter and heire to the Duke of *Buckinghams* great Vncle *Iohn* Duke of *Somerſet*, ſonne to *Iohn* of *Gaunt* the fourth ſonne of King *Edward* the Third; and ſo to make the ſaid Earle a true and a lawfull King, by means whereof the Crowne of this kingdome ſhould not only be ſettled where iuſtly it ought to be, but alſo all future occaſions of Factions and of Ciuill warres would bee taken cleane away, and the world ſhould be quited of ſuch a Monſter, who was loathed and hated by all good men.

Buckinghams reſolution.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, although he were ambitious beyond meaſure, and liked well to be ſtiled by the great name of a King, yet

yet becauſe vſurpation muſt needs haue beene his beſt title, (and Vſurpers neuer wanted enuie) hee therefore imploied his wits to conclude that match, and to make the Earle King.

Morton would faine be at libertie.

When the Biſhop (by often diſputes) had thorowly confirmed the Duke in this his reſolution, hee made him a ſolemne proteſtation, that if he would permit him to goe into his Ile of *Elie*, he then would quickly furniſh the ſaid Duke with ſtore of money and of men. But the Duke was moſt deſirous of his companie for two reaſons. Firſt, becauſe his eſcape would vndoubtedly be laid vnto his charge, and reuenged, if that proiect were not ſupported with ſufficient ſtrength. And ſecondly, becauſe by his abſence he ſhould be depriued of ſuch a friend, as was right well able to aduiſe and counſell him at his neede.

1.

2

Morton eſcapeth.

The Biſhop knowing that whileſt he was a priſoner, his head was ſubiect to King *Richards* command, and that his great familiaritie with the Duke cleared him of all ſuſpition vnmannerly to depart, watched his fitteſt time of opportunitie, and being diſguiſefully apparrelled in baſe clothes, he ſecretly ſtole away, and came to *Elie*, where hee furniſhed himſelfe among his friends with ſtore of money and other neceſſaries, and then (without lingring) hee ſailed into *Flanders*, where by his counſell and beſt meanes he animated the Earle of *Richmond*, who was in *Britaine*, to returne into *England*, to take to wife the Ladie *Elizabeth*, King *Edwards* eldeſt daughter, to depoſe the Tyrant, and to make himſelfe a true and a lawfull King. He alſo ſollicited by his letters, and by ſecret meſſengers, diuers Noblemen and Gentlemen of this Realme, to bee aiding and aſſiſting to the ſaid Earle at his returne. And the Earle himſelfe ſo preuailed with *Francis* Duke of *Britaine*, that albeit King *Richard* by his Ambaſſadors had ſtriued by the diſburſement and gift of much money, rich iewels, and by franke promiſes, to make him a new Priſoner, and conſequently to depriue him of all good hope, yet the Duke of *Britaine* (as his faithfull and conſtant friend) began to ſuccour him with his beſt helpes.

He flieth into Flanders.

His motion and encouragement to the Earle of Richmond and to others.

K. Richard practiſeth to get the Earle of Richmond.

1485.

3.

And albeit that this plot (deuiſed by *Morton*) was exceeding ſecret, as all the Conſpirators did imagine, yet was King *Richard* acquainted therewith as well as they. And therefore, to cut off the Duke of *Buckingham* from that Faction by violence, or elſe to win him by faire promiſes to take his part, he courteouſly importuned his companie at the Court. But he hauing a guiltie conſcience, and knowing that King *Richard* was not niggardly in ſhedding of bloud, nor vſed to ſpare any man of whom hee doubted or feared, ſubmiſſiuely and with humble tearmes excuſed his not comming, by

K. Richard knoweth Mortons plot.

Buckingham refuſeth to come to the Court.

by reaſon of his indiſpoſition to trauell, occaſioned by the infirmitie of his weake bodie. The King (who could skilfully caſt his water) perceiued that he was not ſicke in bodie, but in minde towards him: wherefore by letters and ſharpe threatnings, hee peremptorily commanded and required him to come. But the Duke rather deſiring to haue a publike enemie then a diſſembling friend, boldly returned him this anſwere, that hee reputed him to bee a monſter, a tyrant, a murderer, his enemie, and an vnlawfull King, and therefore that he would not come vnto him. And knowing that his life was neere ended, except he could maintaine what hee had ſaid by ſtrength of armes in open field, hee went haſtily into *Wales*, and raiſed a powerfull Armie: and in *Deuonſhire*, and in *Cornwall*, Sir *Edward Courtney*, and *Peter Courtney* his brother, being Biſhop of *Exeter*, did the like. So did Sir *Richard Guilford*, and ſome other Gentlemen in *Kent*. And *Thomas Grey* Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, who forſaking the Sanctuarie rode into *Yorkſhire*, leuied there much people. Wherefore King *Richard* (to ſupport his owne eſtate, and to preſerue his life, and to vanquiſh his ſtout and bold enemies) raiſed another Armie.

Armies are raiſed.

Theſe preparations being thus made, King *Richard* marched againſt the Duke, becauſe he accounted him to be the head of this conſpiracie, and did perſwade himſelfe that hee ſhould bee quited of all feare, if hee could vanquiſh him before he ioined his forces with his friends.

The Duke perceiuing the Kings intention, reſolued brauely to confront him, and to dare him face to face, for which purpoſe he determined to lead his whole armie thorow the Riuer of *Seuerne* at a low foord not far from the Citie of *Gloceſter*. But in the night before he ſhould paſſe ouer, ſuch an incredible abundance of raine fell, and the ſhowres ſo mainly poured downe for ten daies following, that not only the Riuer was made vnpaſſable, but alſo the whole Countrey thereabout was ſurrounded with an exceſſiue floud, inſomuch that grounds, villages, townes, and people were drowned or carried away, to the great hurt and preiudice of the inhabitants, who greeuouſly bewailed and ſorrowed for their loſſe.

This floud haſtned the Dukes death, who conſented to the murder of the two young Princes.

This enforced lingring, together with the Dukes wants of victuall, money, and of other neceſſaries, ſo diſcomforted the wauering and vnconſtant *Welſhmen*, that when he thought himſelfe ſure of their helpe, they then ran away, and left him alone: and he himſelfe (by perillous and hard ſhifting) was enforced to harbour himſelfe neere vnto *Shrewesburie* in the houſe of one *Humfrey Banaſter*, who

who was his ſeruant, and whom from a low degree hee had raiſed to a faire eſtate, authoritie, and worſhip. And the reſt of the Dukes friends in other Prouinces (when they heard the certaintie of the Dukes ill ſpeeding) vpon a ſudden diſperſed all their companies, and euery one of them carefully ſhifted for himſelfe, and many of them (by meanes of their diligence and good fortune) entred into the Sea, and arriued ſafely in the Duchie of *Britaine*, among whom were Sir *Edward Courtney*, *Peter Courtney* his brother, Biſhop of *Exeter*, *Thomas* Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, *Iohn* Lord *Welles*, Sir *Iohn Bourchier*, Sir *Edmund Wooduile* the old Queenes brother, Sir *Robert Willoughby*, Sir *Giles Dawbney*, Sir *Thomas Arundel*, Sir *Iohn Cheney*, his two brethren, Sir *William Barkley*, Sir *William Brandon*, Sir *Richard Edgecombe*, and ſome others.

The Duke is proſcribed.

The King hauing diſperſed this cloud, which threatned a terrible ſtorme, proſcribed the Duke of *Buckingham*, and propoſed the gift of a thouſand pounds to him that ſhould be the meane to take him: whereupon his faithleſſe, treacherous, and vnthankfull ſeruant *Humfrey Banaſter* betraied him to *Iohn Mitton* Sheriffe of *Shropſhire*, who with a ſtrong Guard of armed men conueied him to *Shrewesburie* to the King, who being examined, confeſſed all in hope of fauour, but forthwith and without any legall proceedings or iudgement he loſt his head.

His ſeruant betraieth him.

He is beheaded.

In the meane time, whileſt theſe things were in doing, the Earle of *Richmond* (who neither heard of this misfortune, nor of the arriuall of his worthie friends, who flying out of *England* came into *Britaine*) hauing in his companie almoſt fiue thouſand men, entred into the Sea, and directed his courſe for this Realme. But in the euening after his departure out of *Britaine*, hee was ſo cruelly beaten with an hideous ſtorme which ſo ſuddenly aſſailed him and his, that ſome of his ſhips were driuen backe to the place from whence they came, others into *Normandie*, and only one of them (beſides that in which himſelfe was) remained at the Sea. The next day as the Earle came before *Pole*, he perceiued that all the Coaſts and hilles adioining were thickly ſprinkled with armed men, who eagerly attended his arriuall by the commandement of King *Richard*: and diuers practiſes were vſed to traine him in. But becauſe he feared the worſt, as hee had good cauſe, taking the benefit of a faire winde, he returned, and landed ſafely within the Duchie of *Normandie*, from whence he ſent to the new and young King of *France*, *Charles* the Eighth, deſiring that by his free leaue and licence hee might ſafely paſſe thorow that Prouince into *Britaine*; who not only granted his requeſt, but alſo (pitying his wants and

Richmond ſaileth for England.

A ſtorme taketh him, and he returneth.

Hee is releeued by the French King

andeuill fortune) releeued and furniſhed him with much money. So he hauing collected his diſperſed ſhips, ſent them into *Britaine*, and himſelfe by land went thither, where (to his exceeding comfort and great ioy) hee met with his diſtreſſed friends, all which were valiant men, and great Commanders in the times of warre. With theſe Captaines hee entred into new conſultations, and giuing to them his ſolemne oath to take to his wife the Ladie *Elizabeth*, eldeſt daughter to King *Edward* the Fourth, if his ſucceſſe were fortunate, they all became his ſubiects, and honoured him as their King: and all of them (by the Duke of *Britaines* aide and ſuccours) endeuoured to make readie a new Fleet, and ſuch ſouldiers as they could get, for his returne. In the meane time King *Richard* by ſundrie executions ſhortned the number of the Earles friends, and procured him and his aſſociates by an Act of Parliament to be attainted of High Treaſon, and thereby hee enabled himſelfe to ſeize vpon all their lands and mouables which hee could finde. But his cruelties were ſo inhumane and barbarous, that they were condemned in the opinions of all his people, who ſharply accuſed Sir *Richard Ratcliffe*, Sir *William Catesbie*, and the Viſcount *Louel*, his three minions, and wicked counſellors, as furtherers and abettors in thoſe miſchiefes: ſo that (among others) one *Collingborne* was executed as a Traitor for making and diſperſing of this ſhort ryme:

The Rat, the Cat, and Louel the Dogge,
Rule all England vnder the Hogge.

Now though the Duke of *Buckingham* could not hurt King *Richard*, (for a dead dogge biteth not) yet he reſolued by new friendſhip and alliance to make himſelfe more ſtrong, for which purpoſe he not only concluded a peace with *Iames* then King of *Scots*, but alſo a mariage betweene a neece of his, named the Ladie *Anne*, and the Prince of *Rothſay*, the eldeſt ſonne of the ſaid King. Hee alſo attempted once more (by lauiſh prodigalitie) to get into his hands the worthie and braue Earle of *Richmond*, and for that purpoſe he ſent his Ambaſſadors into *Britaine* to the Duke, to offer to him great ſtore of ſiluer and of gold, and all the Rents and the Reuenues of the ſaid Earle and of his Confederates, if he would be pleaſed to giue him the quiet and the ſafe poſſeſſion of him. The Duke at that time was exceeding ſicke, ſo that his High Treaſurer *Peter Landoys* (who at *S. Maloes* had freed the ſaid Earle from the Ambaſſadors of King *Edward* the fourth, as formerly we haue heard) ordered and diſpoſed of all the affaires and buſineſſes of that Countrey: wherefore thoſe bribes and promiſes were made and

He taketh an oath.

He is attainted of treaſon.

Collingborne executed.

Richard gaue a Hogge for his Supporter

He attempteth to get Richmond into his hands.

Peter Landoys a baſe ſlaue.

and tendred vnto him, and hee (being greedie of ſo great a prey) did vndertake with great expedition to effect all things according to their deſire. But notwithſtanding all this ſecret practiſing and cunning iuggling, this miſchieuous plot and intended villanie was by ſecret meſſengers reuealed to Doctor *Morton* Biſhop of *Elie*, he being in *Flanders*, and he with all celeritie and poſting ſpeed aduertiſed the Earle of the danger which he was in, by meanes whereof, and to ſaue themſelues, he with his chiefeſt friends and followers as priuately as they could departed from *Vannes*; and paſſing thorow the Countrey of *Britaine* in great haſte, they came into *France*, and preſented themſelues to the *French* King, who not onely receiued them ioifully as his friends, but promiſed ſufficient aid and ſuccour to the Earle for his releeſe. But in the meane time *Peter Landoys* (ſuppoſing that the Earle of *Richmond* and his aſſociates had left *Vannes* but for a few daies to viſit ſome inward friends) prepared certaine troupes of reſolued ſouldiers well armed at all points, pretending in outward ſhew that they were by him prouided to goe into *England* for the Earles aid; but (to ſay the truth) they were only fitted to haue ſurpriſed him and his Confederates, and to haue tranſported them all to King *Richard*. But when hee was certainly informed of their eſcape into *France*, hee was ſore troubled and vexed at the heart, becauſe he was diſcouered to be ſo treacherous, and yet could not effect the miſchiefe which by him was intended.

D. Morton diſcouereth the danger.

Richmond and his friends eſcape narrowly.

Now when it was voiced abroad, that the young *French* King and his Counſell would aſſiſt the Earle in his enterpriſe to gaine the Imperiall Crowne of this Realme, Sir *Iames Blunt* Captaine of the Caſtle of *Hammes*, and Sir *Iohn Forteſcue* Porter of the Towne of *Calice*, and *Iohn Vere* Earle of *Oxford*, who was a priſoner with the ſaid Sir *Iames*, ſecretly repaired to the Earle, who (becauſe they were valiant men at armes, and skilled much in martiall diſcipline) receiued them courteouſly, and with much ioy.

When King *Richard* was by his owne Ambaſſadors truly aſſured in what ſtrange manner the Earle of *Richmond* and his friends had ſaued themſelues, by flying into *France*, and that he was preparing of new forces to trie his fortune when he ſhould land, and that the *French* King and his Nobles both fauoured and aſſiſted him, and that the Earle of *Oxford*, with the other two, were with him, his continuall feare gaue him no reſt, vntill hee had (in ſome ſort) pleaſed himſelfe by a new deuice. And his plot was thus: By ſubtill and craftie meſſengers he made large profers of maſsie ſiluer and of gold, beſides his earneſt promiſe of much aduance-

Another villanous practiſe of King Richards.

ment and eſpeciall fauour to the mother Queene, conditionally, that ſhee would commit vnto his cuſtodie and keeping her fiue daughters, ſo that by meanes thereof the Earle of *Richmond* might vtterly be depriued of all hope to match with the Ladie *Elizabeth* as he intended: for hee ſtrongly perſwaded himſelfe, that if that mariage were by craft and ſubtiltie preuented, few men would then engage themſelues to depoſe him and make the Earle King.

The olde Queens follie and couetouſneſſe.

The vnconſtant and the vnprouident Queene, whom couetouſneſſe and ambition had made credulous, and willing to beleeue him, who in the field had formerly ſlaine Sir *Iohn Gray* her firſt husband, vniuſtly had executed her brother and her ſonne, and who had not only baſtardized her two other ſonnes, but had wickedly and villanouſly cauſed them both to bee murdered in the Tower, accepted of thoſe his gifts and promiſes, and deliuered vnto him her fiue daughters.

K. Richard is poſſeſſed of K. Edwards fiue daughters.

His inceſtuous purpoſe.

And no ſooner had hee gotten them into his cuſtodie, but (to make his title to the Crowne more ſure) he longed in his heart inceſtuouſly to marie with his owne brothers daughter, the ſaid Ladie *Elizabeth*. But the life of Queene *Anne* his wife, who was the daughter of *Richard* Earle of *Warwicke*, and the former wife of Prince *Edward* the ſonne and heire of King *Henry* the Sixth, and whom himſelfe and his brother the Duke of *Clarence* had murdered in King *Edwards* preſence, was the onely impediment to that match.

The Queene ſuddenly died.

It muſt now be diligently obſerued, that ſuddenly vncertaine Authors made report that Queene *Anne* (who was not ſicke) was dead: and moreouer, King *Richard* himſelfe forſooke her companie and her bed, pretending much diſcontentment and great diſlike becauſe ſhe was barren, and not likely to haue any more children to eſtabliſh his ſucceſſion in the Crowne. The Queene (who ſhrewdly gheſſed at the wicked intention of her graceleſſe husband) much greeued and vexed her ſelfe thereat: and whether her priuate conceits that her death was conſpired, or whether any poiſon (as many did imagine) ſhortned her daies or no, it was vncertaine; but within few daies after ſhe was ſuddenly found dead indeed.

He maketh loue to his owne Neece.

The King ſo little regarded the death of his ſaid Queene, that preſently he began to make loue to the Ladie *Elizabeth* his owne Neece, who being diſcreet and modeſt, and hating his deteſted villanies, and well conſidering what perill and danger her ſelfe and all her ſiſters were in, if the Tyrant ſhould raſhly be reiected, tempered her denials with tempting and alluring lookes, and prettily

She makes him hopefull.

fed

fed his fancie with the muſicke of her ſweet tongue, and inſtantly requeſted him, not to vrge his ſute with too much loue, vntill he had defeated the Earle of *Richmond* of all his hopes, and had finiſhed his owne troubles, and that he would with carefull diligence make good prouiſion to defend himſelfe. Thus liuing in hope of her liking, and pleaſing himſelfe by yeelding to her requeſt, hee diſpoſed himſelfe wholly in making all needfull preparations to reſiſt. But whileſt he was thus buſied, hee was informed by ſuch Flatterers as neuer ceaſed to abuſe him, that his Arch-enemie the Earle of *Richmond* and his coadiutors receiued ſuch ſmall comfort of the *French* King, that all their hopes were vaniſhed, and that they were ſo infinitely oppreſſed with many wants, that hee needed not to feare any oppoſition which they could make.

Falſe newes makes him ſecure.

This newes was by him ſo quickly credited, that too much ſecuritie made him careleſſe to proceed; nay, he diſcharged all his Garriſons, which formerly (with great charge and trauaile) he had placed neere vnto the Sea-coaſts: ſo that we may by the way make this profitable vſe thereof, that ſuch is the ſtrength of Gods iudgements and iuſtice, that wicked and vngodly men are euermore leaſt heedfull and vigilant for their own ſafetie and good, when puniſhments are neereſt at hand to correct them for their grecuous offences and tranſgreſſions againſt God. Whileſt theſe things were thus acting in *England*, the Earle of *Richmond* was informed that his Ladie and her ſiſters were by their mother deliuered into King *Richards* hands, that his own Queen was ſuddenly found dead, and that the old Lecherer made loue and daliance to the Ladie *Elizabeth*, who was the anchor and the ſtay of all his hopes. Wherefore it is not to be wondred at, that now (with more then wonted importunitie) he ſollicited the young *French* King and his Counſell for preſent aid. And (to ſay the truth) ſo gratiouſly was he fauoured by them all, that he obtained a quicke ſupplie of money, ſhips, armour, artilleric, and two thouſand men, to make triall if his fortune had determined that he ſhould weare a Crowne. With this little (but reſolued) companie hee arriued and landed at *Milford Hauen* in *Wales*, when he was leaſt thought on, where hee ſaw no great appearance of ſuch ſuccours as he hoped for.

A note.

Richmond ſaileth into England, being aided by the French King.

He landeth.

But when the *Welſhmen* were put in minde, that (being the ſonne of *Owen Tuthar*) hee was of their owne bloud, and would bee an eſpeciall fauourer of them all, and that his mariage with the Ladie *Elizabeth* would ſettle the whole eſtate of this Kingdome in perfect vnitie and in peace, they flocked vnto him, and thronged about him with reſolued mindes and willing hearts, vnder their skilfull

The Welſhmen do ſticke vnto him.

and hardie Captaines, among which *Iohn Sauage*, *Arnold Butler*, *Richard Griffith*, *Iohn Morgan*, and *Rice Ap Thomas*, were the chiefe.

More aid.

To him alſo repaired Sir *George Stanley*, who conducted the power and ſtrength of the young Earle of *Shrewesburie*, (he being then in ward) which conſiſted of two thouſand men. Sir *Walter Hungerford* and Sir *Thomas Bourchier* (two valiant and worthie Leaders of many a luſtie man) preſented vnto him their ſeruice: ſo did *Thomas* Lord *Stanley*, father in law to the ſaid Earle of *Richmond*, who was accompanied with fiue thouſand fighting men. All theſe forces were firſt leuied and prouided for King *Richards* aide: but God (who purpoſed to correct and puniſh him for his forepaſſed wicked deeds) conuerted their hearts, made them to reuolt from a Tyrant, and to ſubmit themſelues to a more lawfull power; whereat King *Richard* greeued and tormented himſelfe in vaine. Yet hauing leuied an Armie of more then twentie thouſand, (few of which, beſides his true friend *Iohn* Duke of *Norfolke* and his followers, remained firme and faithfull) he marched againſt his enemies, fully reſoluing to caſt all his fortunes in the aduenture of one battaile, thereby to eſtabliſh himſelfe without further feare in his Kingdome, or elſe (by his death in the open field) to conclude the wofull tragedie of his wicked life.

K. Richards people reuolt.

K Richard is deſperate.

Iohn Duke of Norfolke.

And albeit that many practiſes were daily vſed to haue withdrawen the Duke of *Norfolke* from King *Richards* ſeruice, yet none of them preuailed. Wherefore to make him icalous and diffident of the caſe wherein he ſtood, the night before the two Armies ioined, this ryme was fixed vpon his chamber doore:

Iacke of Norfolke be not too bold,
For Dickon thy maſter is bought and ſold.

1485. Yet for all this he perſiſted loyall vntill his death: and the next morrow, being the two and twentieth day of *Auguſt*, and in the third yeare of King *Richards* raigne, at *Boſworth* in *Leceſterſhire* the two Armies met and encountred each other, and fought for the ſpace of two houres.

Boſworth field.

But when King *Richard* perceiued that the ſmalleſt number of his ſouldiers contended to winne the victorie, and that the reſidue of them either cowardly left the field, or reuolted to his enemie, or ſtood as Neuters, intending to ioine with him who was beſt likely to ouercome, deſpairing of his fortune, and knowing that death was readily prepared to attache him, he left his owne Armie, and daſhing his ſpurres into his horſes ſides, he ruſhed furiouſly into the

K. Richard is valiant.

the Earles battaile, and with his ſword he deſperately made himſelfe a free paſſage, vntill he was ſtrongly encountred by Sir *William Brandon*, who was Standard-bearer to the Earle: him he ſlew valiantly. And then ſingling out Sir *Iohn Cheyney*, a right hardie man in armes, by meere courage and fine ſtrength he tumbled him to the ground, and came to the Earle of *Richmond*, with whom he fought with deſperate reſolution hand to hand, vntill hee was by him ſlaine. And thus by his death this mortall quarrell ended, the Earle hauing loſt in this battaile not aboue one hundred men, and King *Richard* about one thouſand, among which the Duke of *Norfolke* was the chiefe.

The Earle of Richmond ſlaieth King Richard.

When King *Richard* was thus ſlaine, his carrion carcaſe being found ſtarke naked in the field, and being wounded and filthily polluted with dirt and goarie bloud, was caſt vpon a horſe backe behinde a Purſuiuant at Armes, to bee carried to the Towne of *Leceſter*, his head and his hands hanging downe on the one ſide, and his legges on the other ſide like a calfe: and there it was interred with as baſe a funerall as was beſtowed vpon his two Nephewes in the Tower.

His bodie rudely vſed.

Gods iudgement on a wicked murderer.

His Crowne being found among the ſpoiles and dead men in the field, was brought to the Earle of *Richmond* by his father in law the Lord *Stanley*, who with the generall acclamations of the people, who ſhouted for ioy, and cried King *Henrie*, King *Henrie*, crowned him therewith in the open field.

The Earle of Richmond is crowned in the field.

And then the Earle with all his Armie in the field gaue heartie and humble thankes to Almightie God for this great victorie: and (with promiſes of large rewards) the whole Armie was diſſolued, and the Earle and his Nobles departed to their reſt.

He thanketh and praiſeth God.

Thus liued, and thus died King *Richard*, when he had raigned as a Tyrant two yeares, two moneths, and one day.

T

all *E*
King
tuou
ioini
Yorke
nite
deſtr
N
happ
ſites
King
plac
Cro
ſake

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE SEVENTH.

AS after a ſharpe winter men doe receiue the ſweet comforts of a pleaſant Spring, and like as Aduerſitie is fully recompenced with more ioifull tidings when abundance of Proſperitie doth follow; ſo the hearts of all ſuch as were ſad and heauie by reaſon of the ciuill wars, were now cheered and made iocund by the happie peace and concord which at this inſtant bleſſed all *England* in the ſucceſſion of King *Henrie*, who being crowned King, according to his oath and promiſe, maried the faire and vertuous Ladie *Elizabeth*, eldeſt daughter to King *Edward* the fourth, ioining thereby in one the two great Families of *Lancaſter* and of *Yorke*, betwixt whom (for Principalitie and for the Crowne) infinite contentions and mortall warres had formerly conſumed and deſtroied many thouſands of braue and valiant men. 1485. 1.

The King marieth the Ladie Elizabeth.

Now that the ſtate of this Kingdome might be confirmed in its happineſſe, by the ſafetie of the Kings perſon, and by other requiſites, King *Henrie* (taking his Preſident and enſample from the Kings of *France*) ſelected a certaine number of warlike men in all places to attend vpon him, whom he termed the Yeomen of his Crowne. He alſo rewarded with great bountie all ſuch as for his ſake had beene eminent in his ſeruice; and created his vncle, *Iaſper* Earle

The King chuſeth a Guard.

Rewards giuen. Noblemen created.

Earle of *Pembroke*, Duke of *Bedford*. His father in law, *Thomas* Lord *Stanley*, was made Earle of *Darbie*. He alſo made his faithfull and firme friend and fauourite, the Lord *Chandew* of *Britaine*, Earle of *Bath*. Sir *Giles Dawbeney* was made Lord *Dawbeney*, Sir *Robert Willoughbie* Lord *Brooke*, and *Edward Stafford* the eldeſt ſonne of *Humfrey* Duke of *Buckingham* (who in his quarrell loſt his head) was by him reſtored to his fathers dignitie and poſſeſſions.

A Parliament.

Acts repealed.

The Crowne is intailed.

New Lawes.

His Pardons.

Then hee aſſembled his High Court of Parliament at *Weſtminſter*, in which hee fruſtrated, cancelled, and made void all former Acts which conuicted him and his adherents as guiltie of High Treaſon. The Crowne of this Kingdome was entailed to him and to the heires of his bodie. Hee alſo cauſed ſuch Lawes and ſuch Statutes to bee made, as were behoouefull and beneficiall to this Common-weale. Hee pardoned all ſuch as (hauing conſpired or borne armes againſt him) ſubmiſſiuely by their oathes acknowledged and receiued him for their true and lawfull King.

His Counſellors.

Hee elected the moſt noble, graue, and wiſe men of this Kingdome, to be of his Priuie Counſell, by whoſe direction and aduice the gouernment of this Realme was eſtabliſhed in proſperitie and in peace.

The Duke of Britaine is recompenced.

Hee bountifully recompenced the Duke of *Britaine* for all his former courteſies towards him, and alſo paid vnto him all ſuch ſummes of money as at any time hee had diſburſed for his maintenance and releeſe.

So is the French king.

The like he did to the *French* King, and thereby redeemed his two Hoſtages, the Lord Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, and Sir *John Bourchier*, whom he left there.

1486.
2

A Rebellion.

Thus whileſt King *Henry* was carefull, willing, and endeuoured to pleaſe all men, and by his vertuous imploiments laboured to ſettle things in peace, the malignant ſpirits of ſuch as tormented themſelues at his happineſſe, and placed their owne hope for preferment in rebellious attempts and ſeditious courſes, would not permit him to liue at reſt, and quietly to performe the duties of a gratious King. For *Francis* Lord *Louel*, *Humfrey Stafford*, and *Thomas* his brother, leauing the Sanctuarie at *Colcheſter*, which for their ſafetie they had taken, ſeduced and animated much people in the North againſt King *Henry*, and cauſed them (vpon vntrue ſurmiſes) raſhly and without aduice or counſell to put themſelues in armes.

The Kings celeritie in raiſing an Armie.

The King (who was not farre away from them) being ſomewhat troubled with this newes, began to raiſe an Armie to withſtand them; and ſuch was his ſtrange and wonderfull celeritie and expedition to preuent the increaſe of their further ſtrength, that haſtily he ſent againſt them his Vncle the Duke of *Bedford* with three

three thouſand men, whoſe breaſt-plates were made of tanned leather, for want of other armour: and he himſelfe trauailed day and night to ſecond his ſouldiers with a better ſtrength. But when the Lord *Louel* and his aſſociates perceiued that King *Henry* reſolued to make them fight before they were ſufficiently prepared, and that freſh forces would giue them a ſecond onſet, if at the firſt they ſhould happen to bee victorious, their courage failed, their hearts fainted, ſo that in the darkneſſe of the night they fled, and left their vnarmed Armie to the mercie of King *Henry*, the two *Staffords* taking Sanctuarie in the Abbie of *Culnham*, not farre from *Oxford*, and the Lord *Louel* being ſhrowded by Sir *Thomas Broughton* in the North.

The Rebels flie.

The next day the poore diſtreſſed Rebels (being deſtitute of their Leaders) humbly ſubmitted themſelues to the Kings mercie, and receiued his free pardon. But becauſe no Sanctuarie could protect malefactors in caſes of High Treaſon, therefore the two *Staffords* were by violence ſeized on, and the ſaid *Humfrey* (being indicted, arraigned, found guiltie, and condemned) was put to death: but his younger brother was preſerued by the Kings fauour, becauſe it was conceiued that his tranſgreſſion was not hatched by his owne malice, but by the peaceleſſe inſtigation of his brother.

Humfrey Stafford is executed.

1487. 3.

No ſooner was this flame quenched, but a greater fire was preſently kindled by a Prieſt, whoſe name was Sir *Richard Symond*, a man very leaud, but well learned, and in all his actions vniuſt, craftie, and too too cunning. Hee knowing that *Edward Plantagenet* Earle of *Warwicke*, and ſonne and heire vnto *George* Duke of *Clarence*, brother to King *Edward* the Fourth, being now of the age of ſeuenteene yeares, had from his infancie beene kept as a Priſoner by the two laſt Kings in the Caſtle of *Sherry-hutton* in the Countie of *Yorke*, and that King *Henry* had ſecretly remoued him to the Tower, got into his tutorſhip a young boy, prettie and wittie, yet borne of a baſe parentage and ſtocke, whoſe name was *Lambert*. Him hee inſtructed with as much varietie of learning, Court-like complements, and Gentleman-like behauiour, as his yeares would ſuffer him to comprehend; and then hee informed him, that by his birth and linage hee was not onely noble, but deſcended of the royall bloud: that hee was the onely ſonne of the Duke of *Clarence*, and the firſt heire male of the houſe of *Yorke*, and therefore inheritable to the Crowne. This leſſon, with the daily repetitions of his heroicall Pedegree, hee ſo inculcated into his young Scholar, that hee was as able and as ready to diſcourſe thereof,

Richard Symonds conſpiracie againſt K. Henry.

Lambert the counterfet Duke of Yorke.

thereof, as if by inſpiration that knowledge had beene infuſed to him from aboue.

The Iriſh were too credulous.

Thus when this ſubtill Prieſt had prepared his Pupill for his purpoſe, he tranſported him into *Ireland*, where hee firſt vented and ſpred abroad this falſe and vntrue noueltie, among the wilder and more barbarous ſort of that fickle and buſie Nation, who (being too too credulous and flexible to any change) gaue to the youth all honour and reuerence, as vnto their ſoueraigne and liege Lord. And within few daies after, diuers of the Nobilitie of that Countrey were taken in the ſame net of follie, and beleeued as the Commons did, among whom the Lord Chancellor, Sir *Thomas Gerandine*, was the chiefe, who hauing had much familiar conference with the young counterfet, and finding his amiable aſpect, the trimme compoſure of his bodie, his princely preſence, his pregnancie of wit, his ſufficient learning, his ingenious capacitie, his quicke ſpirit, his diſcreet ſpeech, and ſeemely complements, to be anſwerable and fitting to a Prince, not onely cenſured him to bee the true and the vndoubted ſonne and heire of the Duke of *Clarence*, and pitied his eſtate, but (endeuouring to doe him good) diſburſed vnto him for the enlargement of his expenſes, traine, and honour, diuers and ſundrie great ſummes of money, and perſwaded many other great Lords of *Ireland* to doe the like. He alſo with great ſpeed and ſecrecie informed the Ladie *Margaret*, ſiſter to King *Edward* the Fourth, and Ducheſſe Dowager vnto *Charles* the deceaſed Duke of *Burgoine*, and the ſuppoſed Aunt of this counterfet, of his being there. And albeit that ſhee was well aſſured that this newes was falſe, yet becauſe (being of the houſe of *Yorke*) ſhee mortally hated and enuied King *Henry*, who was the head and the chiefe of the Familie of *Lancaſter*, ſhe not only gladded her heart to heare thereof, but alſo pleaſed her conceits with infinite delectation, that now an opportunitie was preſented to her to execute her furie vpon King *Henry*, and that ſhee might by this plot (if it ſucceeded well) enlarge her true Nephew the young Earle of *Warwicke*, and make him King. Firſt of all therefore ſhee cauſed the falſe report of this young counterfet to bee noiſed thorowout *England*, that thereby ſhee might vnſettle the mindes of ſuch as were credulous, and might be inclined to take his part. She alſo publiſhed, that the *Iriſh* Nobilitie and Nation had not onely receiued him for their Lord and Soueraigne, and would take his part, but alſo that ſhee her ſelfe would ſtrengthen his attempts with money, men, and armes to the vttermoſt of her power.

The malice of Margaret Ducheſſe Dowager of Burgoine to K. Henry.

1.

2

3.

Theſe vaine and fabulous reports carried vnto her into *Flanders*

Francis

Francis Lord *Louel*, and her nephew the Earle of *Lincolne*, ſonne and heire to *Iohn de la Pole* Duke of *Suffolke*, and of *Elizabeth* one other of the ſiſters of King *Edward* the Fourth, Sir *Thomas Broughton*, and ſome others: and after many ſpeeches and much conference touching thoſe affaires and buſineſſes, the Ducheſſe cauſed to be leuied in her Country about two thouſand men, which were conducted by *Martin Sward* an approued Captaine of great reſolution and much skill. All theſe (with quicke expedition) ſailed into *Ireland*, and ioined with Sir *Thomas Gerardine* the Chancellor, who was in a readineſſe with more then two thouſand men of his owne Nation: and they all determined to tranſport themſelues into *England* with all ſpeed.

The Traitors land in England.

Wee may not imagine that King *Henry* (who was valiant, prouident, and wiſe) was ſecure, careleſſe, or negligent in theſe affaires and weightie buſineſſes. For (to the end that certainly it might bee knowen that *Lambert* was but a counterfet) hee cauſed *Edward* the young Earle of *Warwicke* to be publikely brought thorow the ſtreets of *London* from the Tower vnto *Pauls* Church, where infinite numbers of the Nobilitie, Gentrie, and Commons of this Kingdome had the ſight and view of him, and many of them ſpent ſome time in conferring with him. He alſo made great preparations to repell and to ſubdue all ſuch as (in *Lamberts* aide) ſhould either attempt any ciuill warre, or inuade his land. And thus (when he had ordered all things well) theſe forraine powers arriued neere vnto *Lincolne*, where they expected more ſuccour then they found, or were in any poſſibilitie to haue. But when the King was informed that they were come, he marched towards them with a conſtant reſolution to trie the vtmoſt of his fortune in the field, inſomuch that it was now too late for thoſe Inuaders to ſtep backe: for vrgent neceſſitie did require, that either they muſt flie, fight, or yeeld. But the truth is, though they were not ſtrong, yet they were no cowards. The *Iriſh* people were ſtrangely actiue, and paſſing valiant, but they wanted Armes: and their braue reſolution ſo animated their courage, that with haughtie ſtomackes and Lions hearts they ioined in battaile with the King. But within leſſe ſpace then one houre, the vnprouided and vnfurniſhed *Iriſh* with their Captaines, the Earle of *Lincolne*, *Francis* Lord *Louel*, Sir *Thomas Gerardine*, *Martin Sward*, and Sir *Thomas Broughton*, were all ſlaine, and the reſt ſubmitted themſelues to the King, who pardoned their offence, and committed the Prieſt, Sir *Richard Symond*, vnto perpetuall impriſonment: and his counterfeited Pupill (being firſt abaſed in the Skullerie) was within few

A politicke act.

The King prepareth againſt Lambert.

Lambert landeth in England.

The battaile of Stoke.

Lambert is ouerthrowen.

Lambert is made a Skullian, and then the Kings Faulconer.

The Queene is crowned.

D. Morton made Archbiſhop of Canterburie, and Lord Chancellor, and a Cardinall.

The French King quarrelleth with the Duke of Britaine.

few yeares after chiefe Faulconer to the King. Then was the Kings wife with all honour and princely ſolemnities crowned Queene, and *Thomas Bourchier* Archbiſhop of *Canterburie* died, and was ſucceeded by *Iohn Morton* Biſhop of *Elie*, who was alſo made Lord Chancellor of this Kingdome: and not long after hee was dignified with the Hat and habit of a Cardinall by Pope *Alexander* the Sixth.

Now though King *Henry* (through the benefit of a generall peace at home) was made fortunate and happie, yet forraine iarres among his neighbours prouoked him to new imploiments, vpon this occaſion.

Charles the *French* King hauing warred ſucceſſefully againſt *Maximilian* King of the *Romans*, complained that he was much wronged by *Lewys* Duke of *Orleance*, who had married the Ladie *Iane* his ſiſter, and was his next heire apparant to the *French* Crowne, for that hee with ſome others tooke part againſt him with his enemie. But in the end when King *Charles* had affied himſelfe to the Ladie *Margaret*, daughter to *Maximilian*, and had concluded a peace betweene themſelues, the ſaid Duke of *Orleance* and his complices fled into *Britaine* to Duke *Francis*, who gaue them courteous entertainment, and kindly ſupplied all their wants.

1488.
4.

King Henry mediateth a peace.

The *French* King (apprehending this as a fit occaſion offred to him to quarrell with the Duke of *Britaine*, becauſe hee longed to poſſeſſe his Countrey) without any parley or conference touching that matter, proclaimed warres againſt him. And before it was notified that he had raiſed an Armie, he entred into *Britaine*, and planted a ſtrong ſiege before the ſtrong and faire Citie of *Nantz*. And by his Ambaſſadors hee importuned King *Henry* either to take his part, or (as a Neuter) to giue aime vnto them both. But King *Henry* being at the firſt doubtfull what courſe to take, becauſe hee had receiued much comfort and many courteſies from them both, reſolued at the laſt to requite ſome part of both their loues, by mediating of a friendly peace, which (with his vtmoſt endeuours) he laboured to effect.

Some Engliſh doe aide the Duke.

The *French* King (who was both wittie and craftie) made an outward ſhew as if he ſeemed heartily to deſire it, and was thankfull for it, although in truth and in deede hee intended nothing leſſe. But the Duke of *Britaine* (following the directions of his *French* gueſts) refuſed plainly to conſent vnto that motion. And within few daies after, *Edward* Lord *Wooduile*, Captaine of the Ile of *Wight*, and vncle to the Queene, without the Kings knowledge or licence, being accompanied with foure hundred of his moſt expert

pert and skilfull ſouldiers, ſailed into *Britaine* for the Dukes aide. And ſoone after his arriuall, and neere vnto *Fongiers*, a battaile was appointed to bee fought betweene King *Charles* and the *Britons*. And (the more to haue terrified the *French*) ſeuenteene hundred *Britons*, being clad in coats with red croſſes, as if they had beene *Engliſhmen*, were ioined to the Lord *Woodviles* companies, and were ſubiected to his command. But the contrarie was to the *Frenchmen* too well knowen. Then (at the appointed time and place) the two Armies met together, and fought fiercely for a ſeaſon. But in the end the poore *Britons* being found counterfets as they were, and their whole Armie being vnable to reſiſt ſo great a puiſſance as encountred them, were ſlaine together with the Lord *Woodvile*, and the greater number of his aſſociates, and the victorie fell to the *French* part.

The Britons are ouerthrowen. The Lord Woodvile is ſlaine.

Within few daies after, in *England* it was concluded by Parliament, that albeit King *Henry* had louingly beene aided by the *French* King for the recouerie of his Crowne, yet in regard that the Duke of *Britaine* for many yeares together had in all friendly, gentle, and liberall ſort, entertained, protected, and maintained him when he was vnable to releeue himſelfe, and likewiſe becauſe it was conſidered, that if King *Charles* ſhould winne and annex that Duchie to the Crowne of *France*, himſelfe and his poſteritie might and were likely to proue bad neighbours to this Kingdome, King *Henry* ſhould take part with the Duke of *Britaine*.

K. Henry aideth the Britons againſt the French King.

This buſineſſe being ſo determined, the King ſent into that Prouince an Armie which conſiſted of eight thouſand men, vnder the conduct of the Lord *Brooke*. And for the maintenance of thoſe warres, a taxe (by the ſame Parliament) of the tenth pennie of the value of all the moueable goods and chattels of the Subiects was granted to the King.

An armie is ſent into Britaine.

A Taxe which occaſioneth a Rebellion.

No ſooner was the *Engliſh* Armie arriued in *Britaine*, but the Duke (who had beene long ſickly) died: and therefore (vpon a compoſition made betwixt his Nobles and King *Charles*) hee was affied to the Ladie *Anne*, the ſole daughter and heire to the deceaſed Duke, who was formerly betrothed to *Maximilian* King of the *Romans*, and ſo was the ſaid *French* King likewiſe aſſured to the Ladie *Margaret* daughter to *Maximilian*. And thus the *Britiſh* warres were at an end: and the *Engliſhmen* hauing only ſeene thar Countrey, and done nothing, returned ſafely into *England*.

A ſudden peace is concluded.

Now muſt we vnderſtand, that the Ruſtickes and rurall Swads of the Countie of *Yorke*, and of the Biſhopricke of *Durham*, not onely refuſed peremptorily to pay any part of the Taxe which

1449. 5. *A Rebellion.*

was granted to King *Henry* for the maintenance of the *Britiſh* wars, but alſo that in a moſt rebellious faſhion they boldly ruſhed vpon and cruelly murdered *Henry* the fourth Earle of *Northumberland*, who by the King was appointed to cauſe the extracts of that Subſidie to be leuied by diſtreſſe vpon the goods of all ſuch as he found ſlacke or obſtinate in thoſe paiments: which when they had done, truſting to their owne ſtrength and numbers, they beganne a ciuill warre, ſo that as they paſſed thorow thoſe Countries, they forcibly compelled Gentlemen and others to take their parts.

The Earle of Northumberland is murdered.

The King (to repreſſe and puniſh the Ring-leaders of this tumultuous inſurrection) ſent againſt them a ſtrong and a well prouided Armie, vnder the eſpeciall command of *Thomas* Earle of *Surrey*, who hauing beene taken priſoner as hee fought for King *Richard* at *Boſworth* field, was now enlarged, and deliuered out of priſon, and receiued into the Kings fauour: and the King himſelfe in his owne perſon followed after him. But the fooliſh Rebels (as men amazed, witleſſe, and wanting counſell to direct their actions, and cowardly diſtruſting their owne power and abilitie to reſiſt) threw off their armour, ſhifted hardly to ſaue themſelues, and fled euery man to his owne home. But the King (who reſolued by ſeuere executions to terrifie ſuch others as otherwiſe were likely to contemne him, and to deſpiſe his gouernment) by exquiſite and ſharpe enquiries, found out and apprehended the chiefeſt authors of this miſchiefe, who (in ſundrie places of this Realme) were puniſhed by death. But the multitude and the baſer ſort obtained the Kings gratious fauour.

The Rebels flie.

They are puniſhed.

1490. 6. The *Britiſh* Nobles calling to minde that their young Ducheſſe was eſpouſed firſt vnto *Maximilian* King of the *Romans*, and ſecondly to *Charles* the *French* King, and perceiuing (vpon more ſound conſideration) that the *French* King would alwaies beare a heauie hand ouer them, if indeed he were once maried to her, began to reuolt from their promiſe, and to reſiſt his intention and deſire by ſtrength of armes.

But the *Frenchmen* (according to their cuſtome) being more victorious by their prodigall gifts then by their true valour, corrupted the *Britiſh* Nobilitie, and ſuch Matrons as daily attended vpon their young Ducheſſe, in ſuch ſort, that King *Charles* got her into his poſſeſſion. And then he publiſhed, that his owne former contract with the Ladie *Margaret*, daughter to *Maximilian* King of the *Romans*, and alſo that the other contract made by the ſaid *Maximilian* with the ſaid Ducheſſe of *Britaine*, were nullities, void, and fruſtrate in the Law, for that the ſaid two Ladies (at the times of thoſe

thoſe affiances made) were too young, and wanted good diſcretion to make their choice. And thereupon King *Charles* returned the ſaid Ladie *Margaret* to her father, and was forthwith maried to the ſaid Ducheſſe: and by this meane he ioined that Prouince to the Crowne of *France*.

The King of the Romans craueth aide, and obtaineth it of King Henry.

The King of the *Romans* (ſcorning and diſdaining thus to bee diſgraced, and that his daughter ſhould ſo vnkindly bee ſent home) ſeemed eager, and reſolued to reuenge thoſe iniuries and wrongs: and finding his owne ſtrength to bee too weake for ſo great an enterpriſe, ſollicited King *Henry* (by his Ambaſſadors) to aſſiſt him in thoſe warres. Whereupon King *Henry* (partly in regard of the loue which he bare to the ſaid King *Maximilian*, and partly becauſe hee ſaw that the *French* King was not only become Lord of *Britaine*, but attempted likewiſe to bring the Low Countries vnder his ſubiection) concluded ſo to doe, by the generall aſſent of his Nobilitie and Commons in full Parliament at *Weſtminſter* aſſembled. And becauſe the poorer and the inferiour ſort ſhould not be greeued with any taxe to ſupport thoſe warres, the King ſollicited his Nobles, Gentrie, and rich men only, by way of a Beneuolence to enlarge their bountie towards that charge, as formerly (in the like caſe) they had done to his Predeceſſour King *Edward* the Fourth. By this motion and deuice he gathered much money, but loſt more loue: for many men gaue ſomewhat with their hands, whoſe hearts were vnwilling, and repined to depart with ſuch gifts.

A Beneuolence.

1491. 7. *Maximilian is vnable to performe his promiſe.*

The King (for the expediting of this waightie buſineſſe) cauſed a gallant Fleet of warlike ſhips to bee apparrelled, and furniſhed them with all things needfull for the tranſporting of his Armie which hee had raiſed, and committed them to the generall command of his Vncle *Iaſpar* Duke of *Bedford*, and of *Iohn* Earle of *Oxford*.

But when all things were prepared, and the Armie readie to be imbarked, the King (by his owne Ambaſſadors which were in *Flanders*) was informed, that *Maximilian* was altogether vnprouided of armour, men, money, munition, victuals, and of all other things requiſite for the warre, and that King *Henry* might not depend to be aided by him with one man.

This newes vexed and perplexed him at the heart: for wiſely hee conſidered, that if ſuddenly hee ſhould deſiſt from his enterpriſe, and diſmiſſe his Armie, then theſe inconueniences would enſue.

1. Firſt, his enemies (being elated thereby) would deride, mocke,

and ſcorne him, and perhaps endeuour to brand him with the infamous title of a coward.

2. And ſecondly, becauſe his owne people might thereby imagine and ſuppoſe, that by a cunning ſhift, and by a craftie tricke (vnder a fained pretence to make warre, which by him was not intended) he had picked their coine out of their purſes to enrich himſelfe.

King Henry ſaileth with an Armie into France.

Theſe cogitations perſwaded him to take ſound aduice of his Nobles in this buſineſſe, and to purge himſelfe, which in ſuch a faſhion, and with ſuch a martiall reſolution he did, that in the end (according to his owne hearts deſire) it was concluded by a Parliament, that hee alone, with his owne Nation, ſhould warre vpon the *French* King, to reuenge many diſgracefull wrongs which of latter times he had offred to King *Henry*.

When this newes was diuulged, and publikely knowen, and the valorous determination of the King by certaine demonſtrations notified to his people, they not onely applauded his courage, and reioiced in it, but (by the readie and voluntarie profers of their beſt ſeruice) they much increaſed his Armie, with which King *Henry* himſelfe landed ſafely at his Towne of *Calice*. And (to ſet his Armie in an order anſwerable to his minde) hee marſhalled his whole numbers into foure battailes, and marched from thence vntill hee came before *Bulloigne*, which he girded about with a ſtrong ſiege, and daily battered and aſſaulted it without ceaſing.

K. Henry beſiegeth Bullen.

Wee muſt now know, that the *French* King, though hee were the abſolute Lord of the Duchie of *Britaine* by his late mariage, yet the Nobles and the Commons of that Prouince diſliked and grudged at many things which he attempted (againſt their willes) to innouate among them, becauſe they tended much to their diſhonour, detriment, and wrong, inſomuch that King *Charles* feared leſt they (ioining with King *Henry*) might ſhake off his yoke, and ſet vp another Duke. Wherefore by his Ambaſſadors he propoſed to King *Henry* certaine Articles of peace, which were both honourable and alſo profitable vnto him.

K. Charles deſireth peace.

An honourable peace concluded.

This vnexpected newes croſſed the humours of moſt men in the *Engliſh* Armie, whoſe hopes were confident that the *French* warres would make them rich. But when King *Henry* had thorowly conſidered that the right to the Duchie of *Britaine* was ſo inſeparably vnited and knit by the ſaid mariage to the Crowne of *France*, and that no poſſibilitie appeared to diuide them, and that in regard that hee alone had vndertaken thoſe warres chiefly for the preſeruation of his name and honour, he ſhould immortalize his

his fame, if vpon kinde intreaties, and termes of credit and of gaine, he ſhould returne, hee not onely hearkened attentiuely to that motion, but within few daies after he concluded a peace with the *French* King, to continue during both their ioint liues, and receiued (to defray his charge) ſeuen hundred fortie and fiue thouſand Ducats, which in our ſterling mony amounteth to the ſumme of one hundred foureſcore and ſix thouſand and two hundred pounds, or thereabout, beſides an yearely penſion of fiue and twentie thouſand Crownes, which were alwaies duly paid ſo long as King *Henry* liued. Thus the King (hauing concluded all things for his honour and profit, and to his owne good liking and contentment) raiſed his ſiege, returned to *Calice*, and ſafely from thence into *England*.

A new practiſe by the Ducheſſe Dowager of Britaine againſt King Henry.

About the time in which King *Henry* aſſumed to take part with *Maximilian* againſt the *French* King, the Ladie *Margaret*, Ducheſſe of *Burgoine*, his ancient enemie, as wee haue heard, neuer ceaſing to contriue hurtfull and malicious practiſes againſt King *Henry*, not for any wrong or iniurie which euer hee had done her, but onely becauſe hee was the higheſt of the houſe of *Lancaſter*, which was oppoſite to her linage, had gotten into her poſſeſſion a young Dutch boy, who was very comely, learned, and wittie, but deſcended from baſe and vnworthie parentage. His true name was *Peter Warbecke*, but hee was nicke-named in ſcorne by the *Engliſh*, who called him *Parkin*, which in the Dutch Tongue ſignifieth weakneſſe, or ſuch a one as is vnable, impotent, or infirme.

Perkin Warbecke.

This youngling did perfectly ſpeake the *Engliſh* tongue, and was by this Ladie receiued into great fauour, and not onely inſtructed by her prouiſion in literature and good manners, but hee was alſo diligently and carefully trained vp in the imitation of all princely entertainment, complements, and behauiour, ſo that all ſuch as beheld him and his Heroicall Qualities, pronounced their ſentence, that hee was deſcended of a Noble Familie, and that ſome extraordinarie Fortune was at hand, and attended to make him more happie then a thouſand others.

Thus when this Ladie had procured her counterfeited Idoll to bee adored and wondered at, by reaſon of his maieſticall carriage and behauiour, ſhe informed him, that vnder the name of *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*, ſecond ſonne to King *Edward* the Fourth her brother, ſhee intended to aduance him to the Crowne of *England*, and to make him King, which that ſhe might with the more eaſe and facilitie effect, ſhee ſecretly and ſo ſubſtantially taught

him in the whole Pedigrees of the Houſes of *Lancaſter* and *Yorke*, that within few daies no *Engliſhman* was more expert and cunning therein then he.

Perkin is aided by the Iriſhmen.

When ſhee had thus furniſhed him according to her will, ſhee cauſed him to be tranſported into *Ireland*, where he made himſelfe knowen among thoſe Nobles to bee by his birth a great Prince; and therin he ſo artificially demeaned himſelfe, that by the whole Nation of the *Iriſh* he was receiued, reuerenced, and maintained as their ſoueraigne and rightfull Lord.

The French King ſendeth for Perkin Warbecke.

About the ſame time the *French* King (who daily expected the landing of an *Engliſh* Armie within his Duchie of *Britaine*, or in ſome other place ſubiect to his dominion, as formerly wee haue heard) intended to diſturbe the intention and purpoſe of King *Henry*, by ſetting vp of another King in this Realme; for which purpoſe hee ſent for *Perkin Warbecke* into *France*, and promiſed with all kinde of friendly entertainment to receiue, helpe, releeue and ſuccour him, vntill hee had inueſted him into his right and Kingdome.

No ſooner was this mocke-prince come to the *French* Court, but ſuch was the generall applauſe of the *Frenchmen*, and ſo extraordinarie was their madneſſe and braine-ſicke ioy, that the poore Swad could in no wiſe chuſe but imagine ſtrongly that hee was borne to be a King. But in the middeſt of his flattering, vaine, and fooliſh hopes, the aforeſaid peace betwixt the two Kings of *England* and of *France* was concluded, and this young Nouice (fearing leſt he ſhould be deliuered to King *Henry*) ran ſecretly away, and came to his Titularie Aunt the Ducheſſe of *Burgoine*, who receiued him with great ioy and much honour, giuing vnto him princely entertainment, filling his purſe with gold, clothing his bodie with coſtly and with rich apparell, and appointing thirtie gentlemen of worth and qualitie (as his Guard) to giue their daily attendance vpon his fantaſticall perſon.

Perkin flieth out of France The Ducheſſe honoureth and maintaineth him.

Her practiſe for aſſiſtance in England.

Then ſhee cauſed it newly to be publiſhed in *England*, that her Nephew *Richard* Duke of *Yorke* was yet aliue, and liued in her Court, and that he (according to his right and title to the Crowne of *England*, as being the heire male of the Houſe of *Yorke*) expected the aſſiſtance of all his true and louing ſubiects towards his attaining thereof.

Perkin is fauoured in England.

No ſooner did this newes wax common among the Vulgar, but it was generally beleeued by them, and alſo by diuers others of better ranke and faſhion, inſomuch that many for malice onely, and for grudge which they conceiued againſt the Houſe of *Lanca-*

ſter,

ſter, others becauſe they deemed themſelues not to be ſufficiently rewarded for their aduentures in King *Henries* warres againſt King *Richard*, others becauſe they were ambitious, and ſaw none other meanes to raiſe their fortunes, others becauſe their fancies were eaſily deluded by nouelties and deuiſed newes, and others becauſe they delighted to fiſh in troubled waters, determined to take his part. And vpon that reſolution the Conſpirators (by ſecret combination) ſent Sir *Robert Clifford*, a man of much valour, wiſdome, and great diſcretion, into *Flanders*, to enquire and to ſearch out the truth of the conception, birth, and parentage of this new-found Duke. 2 3. 4. 5. 6. *Sir Robert Clifford.*

This Knight, after his arriuall, and when hee had conferred againe and againe with the buſie-headed Ducheſſe of *Burgoine* touching this buſineſſe, and with an obſeruing eie had beheld the young counterfet, and had communed oftentimes with him, perſwaded himſelfe that he was the very true, naturall, and yongeſt ſonne of King *Edward* the Fourth, and ſo he certified his friends in *England* by his letters, and by meanes thereof, euery day freſh reports gat greater ſtrength and credit among ſuch as were willing to be partakers in his fortunes. Wherefore as a ſharpe Feuer ſuffreth not the Patient to take any reſt, ſo this fantaſticall dreame and vaine imagination troubled King *Henry* aboue meaſure: and wiſedome made him prouident to prepare for future ſtormes, ſo that he ſtrongly guarded and fortified all places which bordered vpon the Sea, and by his letters hee informed the *Burgundians* and *Flemings* of the vanitie and falſitie of this deuiſed foolerie, and of this fained King, vſing his beſt meanes both to preuent all ciuill wars, and alſo to withſtand all inuaſions which might bee attempted againſt his Crowne and Kingdome. *King Henries preparations againſt Perkins inuaſion.*

And to make himſelfe more ſtrong, hee ſelected and appointed diuers men of wiſdome and of worth, ſecretly to flie out of *England* into *Flanders* to the Ducheſſe, and to this fained Duke, that by their meanes and endeuours hee might haue true intelligence of ſuch as (being of name and qualitie) conſpired to ioine with this ignoble counterfet; vpon whoſe information, and after legall trials, the chiefeſt actors in that buſineſſe (as Traitors) were put to death. 1493. 9 *A wittie policie.*

King *Henry* alſo recounting how that by the late breach of promiſe *Maximilian* the King of the *Romans* failed to aſſiſt him in his warres againſt *Charles* the *French* King, and finding that his ſonne *Philip*, Arch duke of *Auſtria*, and Duke of *Burgoine*, ſecretly fauouuoured the attempts of the Ladie *Margaret* concerning *Perkin Warbeckes*

The Engliſh Mart is remoued from Flanders to Calice.
A reſtraint of wares and merchandizes.

Warbeckes conſpiracie, remoued his Mart of *Engliſh* merchandizing from *Flanders* to his owne Towne of *Calice*, and alſo he prohibited all men whatſoeuer to bring any *Flemiſh* commodities or wares into this Kingdome. This reſtraint notwithſtanding, the bribing *Eaſterlings* were vnder hand permitted to bring into *England* what they would. And likewiſe King *Maximilian* and his ſonne by ſtrong Edicts forbade and publiſhed the confiſcation of all *Engliſh* commodities, as leather, tallow, woolles, lead, tinne, and ſuch like, if they were brought into thoſe Countries.

An aſſault on the Flemings in London.

This reſtraining of the Kings owne ſubiects, and that libertie which was allowed to thoſe ſtrangers, vexed and greeued the *Engliſh* Merchants at the heart, and ſo it did many others: for by meanes thereof a great part of their trade (which in former times ſupported their charge, and maintained their houſes and families) was taken from them. And thereby they were alſo diſabled to entertaine ſuch and ſo many Iourney-men, couenant ſeruants, and apprentices as they had formerly done. Neither could or would they giue to ſuch as they had, ſuch large and liberall wages, penſions, and rewards, as was expected by them for their paines and ſeruice.

1.

2.

3

Theſe extremities occaſioned multitudes of Apprentices and of Iourney-men (without the procurement or allowance of their Maſters) to runne with great violence and furie to the Stilliard in *London*, where they brake vp and robbed many Ware-houſes and ſhops, and rifled whatſoeuer did come athwart their hands. And beſides all this, they offred much violence (in a ſtrange manner) to the *Eaſterlings*, being the owners of thoſe commodities and wares, vntill the comming thither of the Lord Maior with a band of armed men both terrified them, and alſo made them flie. Of theſe malefactors ſome were taken and impriſoned in the Tower, and (due examination being taken of them, and of their offence) the principall Ring leaders among them (being in number about foureſcore) were continued priſoners for many weekes. But in the end they all were freed, and receiued the Kings Pardon.

1494. 10 *Sir Robert Clifford forſaketh Perkin Warbecke.*
A notable policie.

About the ſame time the before named Sir *Robert Clifford* (vpon his repentant motion, and by the mediation of his friends at home) procured leaue for his returne, and pardon for his offence, ſo that when notice was giuen of his landing, the King appointed him to meet him at the Tower, that there before him and his Nobilitie hee might diſcouer plainly and at large the whole practiſe, deuice and purpoſe of the Ladie *Margaret*, and of her baſe nephew *Perkin Warbecke*, and of all other the Conſpirators in that buſineſſe.

And

And this place of meeting (aboue all others) the King in policie appointed, becauſe if any of his Lords or great ones were by the ſaid Sir *Robert Clifford* accuſed as being guiltie of that offence, they might (without blowes or ciuill warres) be apprehended and committed in the ſame place.

The Knight (at his firſt appearance in the Kings preſence) humbly kneeled downe, confeſſed his tranſgreſſion, expreſſed many true ſignes of heartie and vnfained repentance, and receiued the Kings fauour.

Sir William Stanley is accuſed by Sir Robert Clifford.

Among the great men attending on the King, he onely accuſed Sir *William Stanley*, whereat the King much maruelled, becauſe he not only entirely loued him, but alſo had by his bounteous liberalitie increaſed his poſſeſſions, made him honourable, and Lord Chamberlaine to his owne perſon.

Sir William Stanley is beheaded.

This fault was ſo plainly and ſo particularly diſcouered before the King, that the accuſed Gentleman (not being able to excuſe himſelfe) was forthwith committed to priſon, and within few daies after, being by the due courſe of Law condemned, (for examples ſake vnto others) he loſt his head.

Yet for all this, ſo delirous were many of nouelties, others of ſpoiles, ſome of reuenge, and others of ciuill warres, that they began to ſpeake contumeliouſly, deſpightfully, and too too leaudly againſt the King. But for this maladie he quickly prouided a double remedie: Firſt, by making of himſelfe ſtrong with ſuch Forces as he had leuied, and ſecondly by taking of a ſtrait account, and by ſeuere puniſhing of ſome of thoſe, whoſe tongues (as Raſours) had deepely wounded his honour and his good name. And by their enſamples hee reduced the reſt to more conformitie, and compelled them to obey.

1495. 11

An armie is tranſported into Ireland.

He alſo ſent an Armie into *Ireland*, vnder the command of Sir *Edward Poynings*, to correct and puniſh with great ſeueritie ſuch of the *Iriſh* Nation, as two yeares before had giuen aid and aſſiſtance to *Perkin Warbecke*. But the offenders being for the moſt part wilde, rude, barbarous, and ſauage people, delighting in war, and being neuer better contented, then when they were tumultuous, and in horrid actions, aſſembled themſelues in great multitudes, and (according to their vſe and faſhion) they ranne into the woods, mountaines, and bogges, whom the Knight was the more vnable to purſue, becauſe the Nobilitie of that Iland (who promiſed to ſend him much aid) performed nothing, which careleſneſſe he imputed to *Gerald* Earle of *Kyldare*, who as he was a man by his birth, poſſeſſions, and friends, moſt powerfull among the *Iriſh*, ſo was

was he chiefe Deputie of that Countrey to the King. Him (vpon the falſe and ſlanderous accuſations of his malignant enemies) the Knight apprehended as a Traitor, and brought him into *England*. But (before the King) his fidelitie and his innocencie freely deliuered him from further trouble and danger: ſo that being graced, thanked, and rewarded for his true and honourable ſeruice, he was not only enlarged, but obtained the continuance of his Deputation as before.

Perkin Warbecke landeth ſome of his men in Kent.

In this meane time *Perkin Warbecke* (being by the Ladie *Margaret* furniſhed with a Fleet of ſhips, and being accompanied with Roagues, Vacabonds, Slaues, Theeues, Robbers, Murderers, Banke-rupts, ſeditious Varlats, and with the off-ſcumme of many Nations) came vpon the *Kentiſh* Coaſt, where they caſt Anchors, and landed ſome of thoſe Vaſſals, who endeuoured to informe themſelues whether the people determined to follow poore *Perkin Warbecke* or no. The anſwer made by the multitude (who began to riſe in armes) gaue good contentment: for outwardly they firmely promiſed (vntill death) to ſupport and to maintaine him and his quarrell againſt the King. But when (by faire words and ſoothing ſpeeches) they had trained thoſe Raſcals vp into the land, they fiercely ſet vpon them, ſlew many, and tooke one hundred and threeſcore priſoners, whom they deliuered into the cuſtodie of Sir *Iohn Peachy* high Sheriffe of that Prouince, who railed them in ropes (like vnto horſes drawing carts) and conueied them in that faſhion to the Citie of *London*, where they receiued their trials, and were executed in ſundrie places of this Realme. And the counterfeited Duke of *Yorke* (expecting better fortune at another time) returned into *Flanders* to his penſiue and carefull Aunt, where (becauſe he ſuppoſed that delaies would proue dangerous, and that much lingring would be vnprofitable for him) he ſpeedily collected ſuch numbers of baſe and vnworthie Peſants, as by neceſſitie were compelled to enter into his ſeruice: which being done, he embarked them, hoiſed his Anchors, and ſailed into *Ireland*, purpoſing with thoſe wilde and ſauage men to augment his numbers, and then to land in the Weſterne parts of this Kingdome.

His men are ſlaine and executed.

He returneth into Flanders

He landeth in Ireland.

But when experience aſſured him that hee might haue men enow, but little armes, hee then reſolued, not to make warre by the helpe of ſuch as were naked: wherefore he left them, and came into *Scotland*, and preſented both himſelfe and his cauſe to *Iames* the Fourth, who at that time was very young, and ſwaied the Scepter of that Kingdome.

He commeth into Scotland

The

The *Scots*, although they knew that *Perkin* was a counterfet, yet they reioiced that opportunitie had offred them that occaſion to inuade *England*; not to make a conqueſt thereof, nor to helpe *Warbecke*, but only by valuable booties and large ſpoiles to enrich themſelues. Whereupon the young King, being accompanied with his fooliſh gueſt, and many thouſands of luſtie and tall men, marched forth, and entred into *Northumberland*, where they exerciſed all kinde of rigour, violence, and wrong, burning, robbing, rifling, ſtealing, and ſpoiling in all places, and deſtroying with the ſword both young and old, ſtrong and feeble, healthie and infirme, rich and poore, with ſuch barbarous inhumanitie, and ſtrange crueltie, as neuer was committed before by that Nation. And as ſoone as they had almoſt deſolated all that Prouince, finding no helpe nor ſuccour from the *Engliſh* to aſſiſt their new King, they returned into *Scotland*, and neglected to giue vnto him any more aide.

The Scots inuade England, vnder a colour to aide Perkin Warbecke.

Their crueltie.

King *Henry* vnderſtanding what rapine, ſpoile, and violence was done by the *Scots* vnto his people, and being ſicke vntill hee had requited thoſe wrongs with ſeuere and ſharpe reuenge, ſummoned his High Court of Parliament, in which it was concluded, that forthwith an Armie ſhould be ſent againſt thoſe enemies, leſt perhaps long forbearance might encourage them at another time to doe the like miſchiefe. And for the maintenance of thoſe warres a ſmall taxe or ſubſidie was granted to the King, which occaſioned him much trouble. The King (who vſed great expedition in this buſineſſe) raiſed a puiſſant Armie, which hee committed to the charge and gouernment of his Chamberlaine *Giles* Lord *Dawbeney*, who was a wiſe and a valiant man. But no ſooner was this Armie on foot marching towards the North, but ſuddenly it was recalled to withſtand as great a miſchiefe, which otherwiſe might giue a deadly blow to the ſtate of this Kingdome and Common-weale. For the *Corniſhmen* (who were ſtrong, ſtout, and couragious, yet poore, and oppreſſed with many wants) not onely refuſed to pay the ſaid Subſidie and taxe, but in a braine-ſicke and ſullen humour they accuſed *Iohn Morton* Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, and Sir *Reinold Bray*, (who were two of the graueſt, wiſeſt, and moſt honeſt Counſellors aboue others to the King) that they (as enemies to their Countrey) oppreſſed the inferiour ſort, and were prollers, pillers and pollers for their priuate commoditie and gaine: And that they ſeduced the King by leaud aduice and bad directions, and were the Authors of much euill: And that therefore they would take it on themſelues, not onely to remoue them from the King,

1496. 12

A puiſſant Armie is leuied to goe into Scotland

A Taxe which occaſioned a rebellion.

The Corniſhmen rebell.

King, but alſo to correct and puniſh them as euill doers, and as foes and enemies to their Natiue Countrey and Common-weale. And pleaſing their vnaduiſed paſſions with this fantaſticall and vntruly grounded reſolution, they (by the prouokement and incitation of *Michael Ioſeph* a ſturdie Blacke-ſmith, and of *Thomas Flamocke*, a man learned in the Law, yet factious, and of a tumultuous diſpoſition) put themſelues in Armes, and determined to effect their purpoſe, though with violence, yea in the preſence of the King. Wherefore hauing augmented their numbers, and hoping that as they marched a long iourney, ſo their forces would daily bee increaſed; and nothing doubting but that (according to the common voice and fame) the *Kentiſhmen* would bee partakers with them in their Rebellion, they preſſed and paſſed forth towards *London*, and in their iourney were much comforted by *Iames Twichet* Lord *Audley*, who (with many others being his adherents) ioined with thoſe Rebels, and gained from them the chiefeſt authoritie to command.

They march towards London. The Lord Audley is their chiefe Captaine.

In this meane while the King perceiuing their intentions, and hauing recalled his Armie which was trauelling towards the North, handled this buſineſſe with ſuch policie, that hee would not ſuffer one man to moue one foot towards the Weſt, for theſe eſpeciall reaſons. Firſt, becauſe that on better termes hee ſhould encounter with them when they had waſted their beſt ſtrength, and tired out themſelues with a wearieſome and with a tedious iourney. And ſecondly, becauſe thoſe Rebels (being ſo farre off from home) ſhould bee altogether deſtitute of kinsfolkes and of friends to releeue them, and of conuenient places of Retrait, if neceſſitie ſhould compell them thereunto.

1.

2.

The Kentiſhmen are againſt them.

The *Corniſhmen* after much labour and paine, comming into *Kent*, not onely failed of their expected aide, but alſo found the *Kentiſhmen* armed, reſolued to withſtand their force, and by their beſt endeuours to ſubdue them. Yet were not the audacious and bold *Corniſhmen* affrighted with this checke, but retired ſtrongly to *Blacke-heath*, not many miles from *London*, intending there to abide the vtmoſt of their fortune, and either like men to be victorious, or at a deare price to ſell their liues.

Black-heath field.

The King with his Armie drawing neere towards them diuided it into three parts. Two of them hee placed vpon the ſides of the Rebels, and thoſe were commanded and directed by *John* Earle of *Oxford*, *Henry Bourchier* Earle of *Eſſex*, *Edmund de la Pole* Earle of *Suffolke*, Sir *Rice ap Thomas*, Sir *Humfrey Stanley*, and diuers others. The King himſelfe led the third, and brauely charged the Rebels,

Rebels in the face, and the reſidue did the like on eyther ſide, and though the poore ſturdie and ſtout *Corniſhmen*, were oppreſſed with multitudes on euerie part, yet they fainted not, but fought like men for a long time, ſtil preſſing forth and making no ſtaie, but as they were compelled by the ſword. The Lord *Dawbenie* was at length taken priſoner by them, but they enlarged him incontinently of their owne accord, thinking by his meanes to find ſome mercie. This fight and battaile was couragiouſly maintained for ſome houres, during which ſpace, there were ſlaine on the Kings part about three hundred, and of the Rebels more then two thouſand. Their chiefeſt Captaines, and manie hundreds beſides were taken Priſoners: the reſt fledde, and King *Henrie* wonne the field.

The Rebels are ouerthrowne.

And within few dayes after, the Ring-leaders of that rebellious inſurrection, were in ſundrie places of this Realme executed as Traitors, and their heads and quarters were ſent, and diſpoſed in ſundrie Townes, Cities, and Caſtles of this Realme, for a terrour to all ſuch as ſhould attempt the like enormious offence againſt their Soueraigne.

Traitors heads and quarters ſet vp in Cities & in townes.

Now muſt we be informed, that though the King had recalled the Lord *Dawbenie*, and his Armie to withſtand theſe Rebels, yet hee knew that the young King of *Scots* (in the meane time expecting puniſhment, except he could by force of Armes auoid it) made great prouiſion and daily preparations to defend himſelfe. Which forces would againe inuade the Northerne parts of this Kingdome, aſſoone as they were informed of King *Henries* imploiment againſt his owne Subiects: wherefore (to preuent that emminent and like danger) he by his letters required *Thomas* Lord *Howard*, Earle of *Surrey*, and *Richard Fox*, ſometimes Biſhoppe of *Exeter*, and then promoted to the See of *Durham*, to raiſe a ſtrong Armie: and to withſtand the *Scots* (if they endeauoured to attempt any ſuch thing) vntill he ſent another power to aid and to aſſiſt them, which thing ſhould with all celeritie and diligence be performed, aſſoone as hee had vanquiſhed the *Corniſhmen* who ſo deſperately oppoſed themſelues againſt him.

1497.

Prouiſion againſt the Scots.

Now as the King imagined, ſo fell it out true indeede. For the *Scots* (proudly inſulting at his troubles, and expecting the worſt that hee could doe when hee ſhould bee in peace at home) reſolued, by anticipating warre, to enrich themſelues with new Rapines, and Spoiles, aud to make hauocke vpon the Borderers: that by meanes thereof they might the more weaken him, and the better enable themſelues, to make reſi-

The Scots inuade England

ſtance when time and opportunitie ſhould ſerue.

With the ſame reſolution, the King of *Scots* and his Armie againe entred vpon the *Engliſh* Pale. But ere they could proceede farre, or doe much harme, the aforeſaid Earle, and Biſhoppe, and manie other Nobles, Knights, and Gentlemen of the *North*) aſſembled themſelues and their friends, to the number of twentie thouſand fighting men, and marched boldly towardes the *Scottiſh* Armie: vntowhich when they drew neare, their King (vpon good occaſion being timerous and feareful) retired haſtily, and fled into his owne Countrie. But the *Engliſh* forces with braue courage and manly reſolution entred into his Kingdome, and battered, aſſaulted, wonne, and razed to the ground many of his ſtrongeſt Townes, Caſtles, and Holds, and were not reſiſted, albeit the *Scottiſh* King with all his Armie was not diſtant from them aboue one mile. Only hee challenged the field the next daie, which was accepted, but in the night before hee raiſed his Armie, and diſperſed them, who ranne into the Woods, and high Mountaines, and were to no purpoſe purſued and hunted by the *Engliſhmen*, ſix or ſeuen daies.

The Scots flie.

The Engliſh Armie hauoketh in Scotland.

But ſo barren was that Countrie, and ſo poore and deſtitute of all good things, and ſo vnſeaſonable was the weather there, which abounded with continuall Raine, Wind, Snow, Haile, Thunder, and Hideous ſtormes, and tempeſts, that the Earle and the Biſhop returning brake vp their Armies, and themſelues went to *Barwick*, where they attended directions from the King.

Whileſt theſe thinges were thus in action, *Peter Hyalus*, who was ſent Embaſſador from *Ferdinando* King of *Caſtile*, to mediate a peace betwixt the kings of *England* and of *Scotland*, could not effect that buſineſſe according to his mind. Yet a Truce was concluded betwixt them, to endure for certaine yeares, conditionally that *Perkin Warbecke* were forthwith baniſhed and exiled out of that Countrie.

A truce with Scotland.

Perkin Warbeck is ſent out of Scotland.

The *French* King alſo, at the ſame time ſent his Embaſſadors into *England*, to ratifie the former peace eſtabliſhed betwixt the King and him, which was performed with much honour, and ſolemnitie; to the great contentment, and ioy, of all the People of both thoſe Kingdomes.

The peace with France newlyratified.

Likewiſe, *Philip* the Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and Duke of *Burgoine*, ſonne to *Maximilian*, King of the *Romans*, by his Embaſſadors importuned the reſtitution of the *Engliſh* trade, and the returne of the Marchants into his Countrie of *Flanders*, becauſe his ſubiects were exceedingly impoueriſhed, by them & did obtain his ſute: wher-

The Engliſh trade is reſtored to the flemings, and their ioy thereat.

whereat ſuch comfort was conceiued, that when the *Engliſhmen* were for trade returned againe vnto *Antwerpe:* they were receiued into the Citie with ſolemne Proceſſions, Princely Triumphs, Sumptuous Feaſtings, Rare Banquettings, and with the expreſſion of great loue, and of much ioy.

And thus was King *Henrie* (at this time) made fortunate, and happie: for he enioyed peace, and friendſhip, both at home and abroade, ſauing only with *Perkin Warbeck*; who ceaſed not to vexe and trouble him for a while, to his owne ouerthrow and deſtruction. For being compelled to forſake *Scotland*, and vnderſtanding that though the *Corniſhmen* had lately been ouerthrowne, yet were they not pacified or appeaſed, he with foure ſhips only, and with ſixe ſcore ragged landing Souldiers, and no more, ſailed into *Cornwall*; where hee was receiued by the ruſticke, and meaneſt ſort of the Inhabitants of that Prouince, with ioyfull acclamations, and with good welcome. And within few dayes after, they aided him with three thouſand men.

Perkin Warback ſaileth into Cornwal.

The Corniſh men rebell, and doe take Perkin Warbecks part.

With theſe, and with ſome others he marched Eaſtwards, and came as farre as the Citie of *Exeter*, where hee vſed manie perſuaſiue and rethoricall arguments, and ſpeeches, to incite the Inhabitants, voluntarily to become his ſubiects, and to ſurrender the Citie into his hands. But finding that the fidelitie of the Cittizens was conſtant and vnremoueable from their King: And that their reſolutions (to indure extremities, if otherwiſe they could not be auoided) was ſtrongly ſetled and vnchangeable, they beſieged the Citie round about. And becauſe they wanted artillerie, and great Ordinance to make batteries vpon their walles: therefore (with Ladders, Crookes, Ropes, and other Engines,) they deſperately attempted to ſcale them in manie places, at one inſtant. But ſtill and euery where (with manlike Courage and with approoued Valour) they were repulſed, ouerborne, and tumbled into the Ditches, and deepe Trenches, with which that Citie is enuironed on all parts. So that (in thoſe aſſaults) many of thoſe Rebels with great obſtinacie loſt their liues.

Exeter is beſieged.

Now when they perceiued, that thoſe their attempts daily failed, and ſucceded not: they deſperately approached, vnto the Citie gates, which they endeuored by manie ſlights to open, or to ouerthrow. But when none of their practiſes, could preuaile, then they cauſed great fires to be kindled againſt thē: ſo that by conſuming of them they might make an eaſie paſſage, & entrance into the Citie.

Fire encountred by fire.

This ſtratagem of warre (becauſe it was vnuſuall) did at the firſt ſomewhat abaſh the Cittizens. But they (conſidering with them-

themſelues, that baſe cowardlineſſe was the betraier of true manhood, and that perfect valour deſpaired not in any danger) aſſumed the hearts of vndaunted men, and by their endeuourous attempts and imploiments, they ceaſed not to prouide for their owne preſent ſafetie: inſomuch that with fire they encountred fire, and made greater fires within their Gates then the Rebels did without, which they maintained by adding ſtore of matter and of fewell for a long time, vntill that with rampiers, bankes, bulwarks, and other defenſiue fortifications, they had ſecured thoſe places from the entrie of their enemies.

When this their practiſe auailed not, then they againe buſied the Citizens with daily ſcalings and climings againſt their walles. But the inhabitants ſo confidently perſiſted to defend themſelues, that poore *Perkin* began to hang downe his head; and being troubled with melancholicke paſſions, filled the aire with ſighes and groanes, and was perplexed at the heart, being weary of his match.

The King commeth into the Weſt Countrey with an Armie.

The King, who had beene ſpeedily informed how violently that Citie was enuironed, and how couragiouſly the Rebels were reſiſted, ſo carefully regarded it, and the inhabitants thereof, that with a faire Armie he himſelfe (in his owne perſon) marched towards the Rebels with all ſpeede. But before hee could come neere vnto them, *Edward Courtney* Earle of *Deuonſhire*, and the Lord *William* his ſonne, Sir *Wymond Carew*, Sir *Thomas Trenchard*, Sir *William Courtney*, Sir *Thomas Fulford*, Sir *John Halwell*, Sir *John Crocker*, *Walter Courtney*, *Peter Edgecombe*, and their luſtie followers, repaired to the ſaid Citie of *Exeter*, and intended to giue ſuch good helpe and aſſiſtance to the inhabitants thereof, that the Rebels (leauing the ſiege) marched into *Somerſetſhire*, where they beſieged the Towne of *Tawnton*. But the King vnderſtanding that they were remoued from the Citie, and where they then were, directed his courſe towards *Tawnton*, he hauing with him in his Armie *Edward* the young Duke of *Buckingham*, who was a Prince of haughtie courage, and of a gallant reſolution, *Giles* Lord *Dawbeney* his chiefeſt Chamberlaine, *Robert* Lord *Brooke*, Lord Steward of his houſe, Sir *Alexander Baynam*, Sir *Maurice Barkley*, Sir *Robert Tame*, Sir *Iohn Guiſe*, Sir *Robert Poynts*, Sir *Henry Vernon*, Sir *Iohn Mortimer*, Sir *Thomas Tremaile*, Sir *Edward Sutton*, Sir *Amias Paulet*, Sir *Iohn Sapcots*, Sir *Hugh Lutterel*, Sir *Francis Cheyney*, and ſundrie other Knights and Gentlemen of great place and valour.

The ſiege of Exeter is abandoned. Perkin Warbecke beſiegeth Tawnton.

Perkin and the Rebels flie.

But when *Perkin Warbecke* and his fellow Captaines heard of the Kings approche, they fled with threeſcore horſe vnto *Beauly* neere to *South-hampton*, where poore *Perkin* and moſt of thoſe his companions

panions entred into the Sanctuarie, and regiſtred their names there: but the reſidue of them were taken priſoners by the Kings light horſemen, and being brought into the Kings Armie (for examples ſake vnto others) they were ordered and executed by the martiall law in ſundrie places in the Weſterne parts. But the rude rabble which were left behinde (perceiuing that their Ring-leaders had left them, and were run away) fell downe vpon their knees, craued mercie, promiſed faith and loyaltie in future times, and not only receiued the Kings pardon, but were reuiued by his expreſſing of much fauour and grace towards them.

The common ſort of Rebels are pardoned.

This victory being thus obtained without blowes, the King, with his greateſt Lords, and the braueſt Gallants in his trayne; came to the City of Exceter; and was lodged in it certaine daies, where he commended and thanked the inhabitants, for their faithfull and valiant ſeruice, promiſed them the fulneſſe of his fauour, and (for an addition of Honour to that City) gaue vnto them his ſword from his owne ſide, and commaunded that in future times and in all publike places within that Citie, it ſhould bee borne before the Maior, as formerly and for the like purpoſe his noble predeceſſor King *Edward* the fourth had done.

King Henry commeth to the Citie of Exeter.

The King giues his Sword to the Citie of Exeter.

Then the King (intending to make a finall end of theſe ciuill warres) ſent ſome of his choſen Captaines, with certaine bands of armed men, to apprehend poore *Perkin*, who compaſſed the Sanctuarie at *Bewly* round about, ſo that he (recounting with himſelfe his ſundrie miſhaps, and his hopeleſſe fortunes to be a King) yeelded himſelfe, and was brought vnto the King, who carried him as his priſoner vnto *London*: where albeit hee was cloſely kept, and narrowly watched by diuers of the Kings Guard, yet hee eſcaped. But being daily and hourely ſearched for, hee voluntarily committed himſelfe to the Abbot of *Shene*, neere to the Kings Palace of *Richmond*, intreating him to haue compaſſion on him, and to procure for him the Kings pardon, which hee did. Then was hee brought to the Kings Court at *Whitehall*, where all his baſe deſcent and ignoble pedegree being in a paper fully written, and pinned vpon his backe, hee was ſtocked one whole day: ſo was he the next morning vpon a high ſcaffold in Cheape-ſide within the Citie of *London*, from whence hee was committed a cloſe priſoner to the Tower.

Perkin Warbecke is brought to the King.

1498.
14
Perkin eſcapeth, and is taken againe.

He is ſtocked
He is committed to the Tower.

1499.
15
He practiſeth to eſcape and to conuey away the young Earle of Warwicke.

Hee being in priſon there, corrupted (by infinite promiſes of honourable aduancement) the ſeruants of Sir *Iohn Digbie* Lieutenant of the Tower, to ſuffer him and *Edward* the young Earle of *Warwicke* (who had been a priſoner from his infancie) to eſcape.

Perkin Warbecke beheaded.

But this plot being diſcouered, *Perkin Warbecke* was ſhortly after by the due courſe of Law condemned for High Treaſon, and was executed at Tyburne within two daies after: and the young Earle of *Warwicke*, who conſented to haue eſcaped likewiſe, being altogether innocent of all crime, and onely affecting libertie, which men, beaſts, birds, and fiſhes doe naturally deſire, was indicted, arraigned, conuicted, and adiudged guiltie of the like offence, and was executed on a Scaffold at the Tower Hill. His death much blemiſhed the fame and reputation of King *Henry*, who being mercifull and compaſſionate by nature, and hauing extended it oftentimes vnto notorious malefactors, now (to worke his owne ſecuritie, and without any iuſt offence) would not pardon him who all his life time had beene ſo ſecret a priſoner, reſtrained from all companie, and from the view of this vaine and tranſitorie world, that he ſcarcely knew a Capon from a Gooſe, nor euer attempted any thing which might offend the King, ſauing only to ſet himſelfe at large.

The young Earle of Warwicke is beheaded.

1500. 16

As ſoone as theſe buſineſſes were thus ended, *Arthur* the noble Prince of *Wales*, being of the age of fifteene yeares, was by an honourable deputation betrothed to the Ladie *Katherine* daughter to *Ferdinando* King of *Spaine*, ſhee being of the age of eighteene yeares; and the next yeare after with triumphant ioy and princely entertainment he receiued her into *England*, and was maried to her in *Pauls* Church within the Citie of *London*.

Prince Arthur marieth Katherine daughter to Ferdinando King of Aragon.

1501. 17

And not long after, *Iames* the Fourth, King of the *Scots*, vſed the mediation of *Richard Fox*, then Biſhop of *Durham*, but ſhortly after tranſlated vnto *Wincheſter*, that hee might haue to wife the Ladie *Margaret* the eldeſt daughter of King *Henry* the Seuenth. And though the King (for many important reaſons) might haue beſtowed her vpon the greateſt and moſt honorable Kings or Potentates in the Chriſtian world, yet for theſe good reſpects hee cheerefully conſented to his requeſt. Firſt, becauſe (by all likelihood and probable coniecture) this mariage would eſtabliſh a perpetuall peace betwixt thoſe two Kingdomes. And ſecondly, becauſe if iſſues males and females failed of the bodies of his two ſonnes, then the Kingdome and the Crowne of this Realme deſcending to the ſaid Ladie *Margaret*, and to her iſſue, would draw the *Scottiſh* King into *England*, as vnto an eſtate of greater power, magnificence, honour, and riches; whereas if ſhe were ioined to a Prince equall, or exceeding her father in thoſe reſpects, this Kingdome would then wait vpon the greater and more worthie, and ſo might be guided, gouerned, directed, and commanded by a Deputie,

The Kings eldeſt daughter affied and after maried to Iames the fourth, King of Scots.

1.

2.

Deputie, or a Subſtitute, which would bee derogatorie from the maieſtie of ſuch a Monarchie and Common-weale.

These Halcyon daies, which made King *Henry* fortunate and happie, were ſuddenly exchanged into daies of heauineſſe and of ſorrow: for Prince *Arthur*, within fiue moneths after he was maried, departed out of this troubleſome and tranſitorie vale of miſerie, and was buried with great pompe and incredible lamentation both of the Nobles, Gentlemen, and common people, in the Cathedrall Church within the Citie of *Wincheſter*: by whoſe deceaſe without iſſue, his brother *Henry* Duke of *Yorke* (without Creation) was Prince of *Wales*, as vnto him (of right) that dignitie did belong and appertaine: and the next yeare after he was created Earle of *Cheſter* by his Father. *Prince Arthur dieth.* 1502. 18

The King not long after (by an honorable attendance of Lords, Knights, Ladies, and men and women of eſpeciall note and qualitie) ſent his eldeſt daughter, the Ladie *Margaret*, into *Scotland*, to her eſpouſed husband *Iames* the Fourth, who receiued her vpon the limits of his owne Kingdome, from the Earles of *Surrey* and *Northumberland*, and was the next day maried to her in his Citie of *Edenburgh*, to the great reioicing of the people of both thoſe Nations. 1503. 19

Now when King *Henry* had thus ouercome his enemies and the Rebels, and had ſettled himſelfe in peace, hee determined to plucke downe the high ſtomackes and ſtout courage of his people, ſuppoſing that their wealth and riches occaſioned their rebellions, and was the cauſe that many enormous inſolencies were done and committed in the Common-weale. And by that meane hee alſo intended to enrich himſelfe. And the plot whereby he intended to effect it, was, by taking of the aduantage of the breach of Penall Lawes. And the principall charge of that polling buſineſſe hee committed to Sir *Richard Empſon* and *Edmund Dudley*, men learned in the Law, but ready enough to execute the Kings commands in a worſer matter, if occaſion did ſo require. 1504. 20 *The King taketh aduantage of forfeitures vpon Penall Lawes.* *Empſon and Dudley.*

These two being attended by troupes of baſe Informers, Promoters, Catch-poles, Cheaters, Knaues, and couſening Raſcals, proſecuted and perſecuted many of the Kings good Subiects, to their vtter ruine and ouerthrow; inſomuch that many people in euery Shire of this Kingdome (by their oppreſſions) waxed poore, and were vtterly decaied in their eſtates. But the Kings Coffers were filled, his Bagges were ſtuffed, and thoſe two graceleſſe and cruell Cormorants got to themſelues the Deuill and all. But no remedie there was to cure this maladie: for the King authorized them, *Many are vndone.*

them: and they ſo rigorouſly, and ſo vnconſcionably executed their tyrannie, that no man could aſſure himſelfe, that hee was free, and without the danger of their laſh.

1605. 21

In the 21. yeare of K. *Henries* raigne, *Elizabeth* Q. of *Caſtile*, & wife to *Ferdinando* K. of *Aragon* and *Spain*, died without iſſue male of her bodie, ſo that her Kingdom not being deuidable among ſiſters (according to the cuſtome of that Conntrie) diſcended to her eldeſt daughter the Ladie *Iane*, wife to *Philip* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and Duke of *Burgoine*, ſo that hee (being King of *Caſtile* in her right) prepared a Nauie of ſtrong, and well appointed ſhips, and entred into the Sea, purpoſing to take the poſſeſſion of his new Kingdome. But (by the violence of an outragious ſtorme) himſelfe with his Queene was driuen into *Waymouth* in *Dorſet* ſhire: where (at his landing) hee was receiued by Sir *Thomas Trenchard* a worthie, and a compleate Knight who inſtantly importuned the King to accept of the entertainment of his houſe, vntill King *Henrie* were certified of his being there, which courteouſly he did. Whereof when he had louingly accepted hee was conducted thither, and feaſted like (as hee was) a King. The Knight forthwith ſent diuers Poſters to King *Henrie*, who (being much gladded by this newes) becauſe the ſaid King, and he were vnfained and faithfull friends, forthwith ſent for his better direction, and attendance, the Earle of *Arundell* and ſome others, who inuited him and his Queene, and their Companie to the Kings Court, which was then at his Caſtle of *Windſor*, of which great courteſie he accepted with a kind hart: and as he came within fiue miles of the Caſtle; he was met by the Noble *Henrie* Prince of *Wales*, who was accompanied by diuers Earles, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of choice reckoning aad account: and within halfe a mile of his iournies end, the King himſelfe with the greateſt part of his Nobilitie, Ladies, and Perſonages of great worth and honour (being richly apparrelled, and brauely mounted) met him likewiſe, where kind ſalutations, and friendly greetings proceeded from the heart; and were performed with moſt exquiſite complements of loue, that by any could be imagined.

The King and Queene of Caſtile doe come into England by a ſtorme.

Sir Thomas Trenchard entertaineth them at his houſe.

They are entertained by the King.

From the Kings Caſtle of *Windſor*. the King conducted him and his Queene to the Citie of *London*: where nothing was omitted, that anie deuiſe, or coſt, could make ſumptuous: thereby to expreſſe the heartie welcome of ſuch beloued gueſts. And thus when (with great contentment, mirth, and paſtime) the King and he had ſpent ſome dayes, they renewed the League which was betwixt them, and taking kind farewels, each of other, the ſaid King

King and Queene, imbarked themſelues againe, launched into the Sea, and ſafely arriued according to their owne wils. But not long after, King *Philip* and his wife died, and that Kingdome diſcended to *Charles* his eldeſt ſonne.

1506. 22

From this time forwards King *Henrie* waxed ſickly, weake, and infirme, and by meanes thereof, the two ſcourgers of the Common-weale *Empſon*, and *Dudley*, tooke larger libertie to extend their villanies, then was giuen to them, and did oppreſſe, torment, and vex the People of this land,

1507. 23

The King waxeth ſickly. His deeds of charitie.

But when the King perceiued that his time was ſhort, hee depriued them of their authoritie: remitted and pardoned all offences, committed againſt his penall Lawes, and enlarged all priſoners, which were in durance for any offence (treaſon and murder excepted only) he alſo paid the debts of all ſuch, as for trifling and ſmal ſummes, were priſoners in any Ward, and gaue certaine ſummes of monie vnto ſome poore folkes, who had beene vnconſcionably deuoured, robbed, and ſpoiled, by thoſe two graceleſſe and vngodly Cormorants. He alſo was exceeding penitent and ſorrowfull for thoſe wrongs and iniuries which (with too much ſeueritie) they had done vnto many: and hee diſburſed by way of loane freely, and without reward, diuers great ſummes of monie to his Merchants. By meanes whereof their gaines and his cuſtome were mightily encreaſed. Finally, when hee had raigned twentie and three yeares and ſome moneths, and when hee had liued fiftie and two yeares, he died, and was buried with great ſolemnitie and honor by Queene *Elizabeth* his wife, in his owne Chappell at *Weſtminſter*: which he had with great coſt and skill founded, and cauſed to be built not long before.

He repenteth of his exactions by the penall lawes.

1508. 24

A notable policie.

The King dieth.

T

wife:
disco
In
loue,
And
much
Proc
lame
gree
ther
redr
thro
King
leaſt
denc
tutio

THE HISTORIE OF KING HENRIE THE EIGHT.

KIng HENRIE the *Eight*, being of the Age of eighteene yeares, began to Raigne the two and twentieth day of *Aprill*, in the yeare of our *Lord God* 1509. And being diſpenced with by Pope *Iuly* the ſecond, hee maried the Ladie *Katherine*, daughter to *Ferdinando* King of *Aragon*, Aunt to Prince *Charles* of *Caſtile*, who afterwards was Emperor; when as not long before ſhee had beene his brother Prince *Arthures* wife: by which match, much trouble afterwards enſued, as in this diſcourſe of his gouernement it will appeare.

1509. *The King marieth his brothers wife.*

In his firſt beginnings he ſeemed tenderly to affect his peoples loue, and to execute his Lawes with mercie, and with compaſſion. And whereas oppreſſion (in the end of his Fathers dayes) had much vexed and grieued the Subiects of this Land, Hee (by open Proclamations) made it knowne, that he would not only heare the lamentable complaints of ſuch as by the Tyrannous Rapine, and greedie Couetouſneſſe of *Empſon* and *Dudley*, and of ſome other tormenting Promoters had beene vndone; but would alſo redreſſe and recompence their wrongs. By meanes whereof great throngs of People daily reſorted, flocked, and ruſhed into the Kings Court: Among whom many complained moſt who had leaſt cauſe, but they receiued ſharpe puniſhment for their impudencie and boldneſſe; and, to the reſt, the King gaue liberall reſtitution and amends. And the more frankely and freely to content ſuch

The King is gratious to ſuch as were oppreſſed by Empſon and Dudley.

ſuch as had beene iuſtly offended by thoſe extremities, after all legall proceedings finiſhed, hee cauſed the heads of thoſe two deuouring Caterpillers to be ſtriken off at the Tower hill: and the reſt of that raſcall rabble were diſgracefully corrected by the ſtocks and pillories in ſundrie places of this Realme.

Empſon and Dudley put to death.

1511.

Thus when the King had well buſied himſelfe in the ſettlement of his Kingdome the firſt two yeares of his raigne, hee was by his wiues father, *Ferdinando* King of *Aragon*, entreated to enter into more turbulent actions, by aiding and aſſiſting him againſt the *Moores*, which willingly he did. But by reaſon of a ceſſation of thoſe iarres, the *Engliſhmen* returned out of *Spaine*, hauing beene rudely entertained, and ſpent all.

3 *Ferdinando craueth and obtaineth aid, but did nothing.*

About the ſame time the *French* King *Lewys* the twelfth (by reaſon of ſome priuate quarrellings betwixt himſelfe and Pope *Iuly* the ſecond) tranſported an Armie into *Italie*, and by ſtrength and violence (as a Conquerour) hee poſſeſſed himſelfe of the faire and rich Citie of *Bologna la Graſſa*, and inſolently did much harme.

The French King warreth on the Pope.

Whereupon King *Henry* (in fauour to the Pope, becauſe he diſpenſed with his late mariage, and was vnited vnto him by more then by the ordinarie bonds of friendſhip and of loue, and becauſe the Pope himſelfe was vnable to reſiſt, or to maintaine his owne quarrell) interpoſed himſelfe as an indifferent mediator, and as an interceſſor for amitie and for peace.

King Henry mediateth a peace, but he is neglected. Warres betwixt King Henry and Lewys the twelfth.

But the *French* King (taſting the pleaſant and the profitable fruits of his ſucceſſefull fortune, and longing to extend his gouernment into ſo rich a Countrey) turned the deafe eare, and would not hearken to this motion. Whereupon King *Henrie* (whoſe bodie was young and luſtie, and whoſe high heart was repleniſhed with true fortitude, magnanimitie, and valour) made it knowen to the Chriſtian world, that as hee ſcorned to be neglected in ſo good a ſuit, ſo he loathed to be idle, and a looker on, in a time of ſuch negotiation and imploiment, and therefore would attempt by his beſt meanes to withdraw the *French* Kings warres from the Popes Countries. Vpon which reſolution, forthwith, by his Ambaſſadors hee required the *French* King to giue vnto him the full and peaceable poſſeſſion of his two Duchies of *Guyen* and of *Normandie*, together with his ancient inheritance of *Angeow* and of *Mayne*, which wrongfully was kept and deteined from his Anceſtors and from him.

The ſmall acquaintance which at that time the *French* King had with King *Henry*, and the contempt of his youthfull yeeres, made him

him to returne a ſcornefull deniall to his demand; inſomuch that King *Henrie* proclaimed warre againſt him, and prepared daily to ſend a puiſſant Armie into *Guyan*. Vpon which occaſion, and others, and in regard that thoſe broiles were chiefly vndertaken to releeue the Pope, King *Henry* was by him enſtiled with this addition to his kingly Title, *Defender of the Faith*.

Defender of the faith.

This reſolution being notified to his father in law *Ferdinando* King of *Aragon*, (who was craftie, and cunningly intended, vnder the colour of much friendſhip, to vſurpe, and treacherouſly to winne vnto himſelfe the Kingdome of *Nauarre*, for which immoderately his ambitious heart did thirſt) hee made vnto King *Henry* a large profer of great aſſiſtance and helpe, with horſes, tents, carriages, ordinance, and ſundrie other things needfull and expedient for thoſe warres, if hee would land his Armie within his Countrey of *Biskey*, and march from thence into *Guyan*.

Ferdinando promiſeth aid to King Henry.

The King (who dreamt not of any fraud, but was perſwaded of good performance of more then had beene offred) moſt thankfully accepted of this great courteſie, and ſent (for the aforeſaid purpoſe) ten thouſand men into *Biskey*, vnder the principall command of *Thomas Gray* Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, who was their Generall in that warre.

The Kings Armie landeth in Biſkey.

But *Ferdinando* (whoſe owne plot touching the ſurpriſall of *Nauarre* was not fully perfected, and who intended nothing leſſe then according to his promiſe to aid the *Engliſh* Armie) by flattering meſſages to the Marqueſſe maintained his hopes, but yet ſuffered both him and his (without imploiment or ſuccour) to lie idle, to their great diſhonour and reproch.

Ferdinando yeelds no helpe.

In the end he prepared a ſtrong Armie, which was conducted by the Duke *D'Alva*, and outwardly pretended to vnite them to the *Engliſh* forces. But as a Riuer growing outragious by the abundance of much raine, ouerfloweth the low adiacent grounds, ſo this Armie with great violence and ſtrength vnexpectedly ruſhed into the vnprouided Territories of *Nauarre*, ſurpriſed the Citie of *Pampalona*, and treacherouſly (without blowes or reſiſtance) ſubdued the greateſt part of that Kingdome, which (without right or title) the *Spaniards* doe hold and enioy at this day.

The Kingdome of Nauarre taken and conquered by the Spaniards.

And although that King *Ferdinando* (by this vniuſt and deceitfull practiſe) had eaſily attained to the height of his ambitious deſires concerning that conqueſt, yet did hee continue falſe and vnkinde to the *Engliſh* Armie, whom he aſſiſted not at the laſt, but ſuffred them for the ſpace of foure moneths to be oppreſſed with a thouſand wants, and to be conſumed by the flux and other cala-

Ferdinando affoords no helpe or aſſiſtance at laſt.

mities in the open field : by meanes whereof, the common ſouldiers (being heartleſſe, and hopeleſſe of better vſage from the King of *Aragon*) forſooke the field, and (without the licence of their Generall) returned ſtraglingly into *England*. And thus was *K. Henry* groſly abuſed and wronged by his father in law the ſecond time.

The Engliſhmen returne home without leaue.

1512. 4.

Whileſt the *Engliſh* Armie was thus vnkindly deluded in *Biſkey*, the right valiant Knight Sir *Edward Howard* (Lord Admirall of *England*, and a younger ſonne to the Earle of *Surrey*) with a well appointed Fleet of ſhips (which were well furniſhed with braue and luſtie men) kept and commanded the Narrow Seas, daily tooke the *French* Merchants, oftentimes landed in ſundrie places within the Duchie of *Britaine*, forraged their Fields, ranſacked their Villages and their Townes, ſet them on fire, and enriched his companies with great ſpoiles.

Sir Edward Howard plagueth the Brittons.

The Brittons dare him, but run away.

The *Brittons* (being hourely endammaged, and knowing that no better fortune would attend them, except by true valour and manhood they encountred the *Engliſh* aſſailants) braggingly dared the Admirall into the Field; of which challenge he ioifully accepted, although that with ſix and twentie hundred (and no more) he was to fight againſt more then ten thouſand men. And incontinently with martiall skill and policie hee ordered his battaile in the open field. But when the *Brittons* approched neere, and with iudicious eies beheld the order and the courage of the *Engliſh* ſouldiers, their hearts fainted, their Leaders retired, their common ſouldiers fled, and would not once looke on an *Engliſh* face.

The King ſendeth him more aid.

The King being aduertiſed of the valour of his Admirall, and of the haughty courage of his men, & intending to giue them ſtrength which ſhould bee anſwerable to their deſires, did ſend vnto them ſome of his ſhips royall, & many others, which were well ordinanced, and plentifully manned, both for the Sea, & alſo for the Land.

He fighteth at Sea with the French Fleet.

When the Admirall was thus prouided, and had reduced all his ſhips into one Fleet, within few daies after he met and fought with the *French* Nauie; at which time death was deſpiſed, in regard that euery man ſought by bloud to purchaſe honour and renowne: vntill the Regent of *England*, and in her Sir *Iohn Carew* of *Deuonſhire*, and Sir *Thomas Knyuet*, with ſeuen hundred more, and the great Carricke of *Breſt*, and in her Sir *Pierce Morgan*, and nine hundred men of warre, (both thoſe ſhips being faſt grapped together) were vnfortunately burnt, ſlaine, and drowned in the Sea. The view whereof being vnuſuall, was ſo terrible, that whileſt men fearfully looked on, the fight ceaſed, and the *Frenchmen* (ſcattering themſelues) returned into the Sea.

The Regent and the Carricke are burned.

The

The *French* King (to make his match the better with the *Engliſh* Nauie) augmented the number of his ſhips and men, and ſent them thorowly prouided with ordinance, powder, ſhot, and other neceſſaries, into the Hauen of *Breſt*. And King *Henry* (who ſcorned that his Admirall ſhould be oppreſſed with a greater ſtrength then he ſhould be well able to reſiſt) rigged vp the moſt part of his Royall Fleet, and ſome others, which ſafely arriued in *Bartram Bay* within the Duchie of *Britain*. With theſe, and with all the reſt, the braue Admirall attempted to aſſaile the *French* Bottoms as they lay at ancors within the Hauen of *Breſt*. But as he was entring in, the foremoſt ſhip, which *Arthur Plantagenet* did command, was ſplitted in ſunder vpon a rocke, which made the reſt doubtfull to proceed, except with better guidance they might ſafely enter in.

The French Fleet entreth into the Hauen of Breſt.

King Henry augmenteth his Fleet.

The *French* Captaines perceiuing the *Engliſhmens* intent, ancoured as neere to the Caſtle of *Breſt* as they were able, and placed foure and twentie old *Flemiſh* Hulkes towards the mouth of the Hauen, betwixt themſelues and the *Engliſh* Fleet, which they appointed to bee ſet on fire, and to bee vnmoared when the ſhips of *England* did approch towards them, that by them they might bee endangered. They alſo raiſed and fortified diuers Rampiers and Bulwarkes vpon the entrance of the Hauen, from which their great Ordinance might play vpon their enemies.

The Frenchmen doe fortifie the Hauen.

The Lord Admirall of *England* (doubting leſt the Hauen of *Breſt* was too ſhallow to ſupport his ſhips of greateſt ſtrength and burden, and finding that the *French* cowards meant nothing leſſe then to expreſſe their manhood by a reſolute encounter) reſolued with oared Barges to be rowed into the Harbrough, and there to doe ſome memorable exploit vpon his enemies ſhips. With this determination (which more manfully then aduiſedly he did put in practiſe) hee with ſuch an haughtie courage and with ſuch violence aſſailed the three great Gallies of the Rhoads, which were brought thither by a gallant Knight, named *Prior Iohn*, that hee wonne them quickly, and poſſeſſed them as his owne. But when the *Frenchmen* perceiued that the *Engliſh* Barges were gone out of the Hauen, and were returned to their owne Fleet, they then with great numbers of well armed men ruſhed into the ſaid Gallies, where the braue Admirall with that ſmall remnant which were with him, defended themſelues a long time with great courage. But being ouer-maſtered, and too much wearied with freſh ſupplies, which euery minute did aſſaile them, the greater part of his men were ſlaine, the Admirall with a pike was violently borne

1513. 5.

The Admirall in Boats entreth into the Hauen.

He taketh the three Gallies of the Rhoads.

He is drowned.

ouer boord, and drowned in the Sea, and the reſt of them were taken priſoners by their enemies. And thus were they ouerthrowen, who (if they had beene more prouident, and better counſelled) might haue triumphed in their victories. And within few daies after, the Lord *Thomas Howard*, the eldeſt brother of the ſaid deceaſed Knight, was by the King made Admirall, who with all the extremitie of warre became a cruell reuenger of his brothers death.

His brother is made Lord Admirall.

Two Armies ſent into France.

The King (not minding any longer to trifle or to dallie with the *French* King) leuied two Armies. In the one of them were eight thouſand men, and in the other ſix thouſand. The former of them was commanded by *George* Lord *Talbot* Earle of *Shrewſburie*, and the other by Sir *Charles Somerſet*, Lord *Harbert*, Chamberlaine to the King. Theſe two Generals with their companies (departing from *Portſmouth*) arriued ſafely at *Calice*, from whence they marched to the ſtrong Citie of *Tyrwyn*, and beſieged it on euery ſide. And within few weekes after, the King himſelfe (hauing firſt committed the gouernment of this Kingdome to the generall charge of the Queene his wife, and the particular protection of the Northerne parts vnto the noble and worthie Lord *Thomas Howard* Earle of *Surrey*, if peraduenture the *Scots*, according to their cuſtome, ſhould in his abſence beyond the Seas, enter into thoſe Countries) being accompanied with many of his Nobles and Gentrie, and hauing an Armie of eleuen thouſand luſtie and gallant men, departed out of *England*, came to his Towne of *Calice*, and marched forth in warlike order, vntill hee had ioined himſelfe with all his other force, which lay ſtrongly encamped before *Tyrwyn*.

Tyrwyn is beſieged.

The King with a third Armie commeth before Tyrwyn.

Now whileſt King *Henry* thus lay in this ſiege, the inhabitants oftentimes ſallied out of their gates, and with great reſolution skirmiſhed with their enemies, but were alwaies looſers in their Retreats.

By the *Engliſhmen* likewiſe daily batteries and hourely aſſaults were made, and manfully reſiſted by the Citizens, vntill the *French* King (to raiſe the ſiege) cauſed a huge Armie to be leuied, which appeared, and approched neere to the *Engliſh* Campe, and made many a boaſting and a proud bragge, as if they were determined to doe much: but ſtill and ſtill they trifled, not doing any thing which might merit praiſe. But in the end (they being prouoked more by the taunting reproches of their owne Nation, and by the daily ſcornes which for their want of courage they receiued from the ſharpe tongues of their daring enemies, then by their owne valour)

The French Armie attempteth to raiſe the ſiege.

valour) they attempted to raiſe the ſiege by ſtrong blowes: In ſo much, that the two Armies met together, fought ſtoutly, and on either part performed many braue deedes of Chiualrie, with great courage: But the preſence of King *Henrie*, and his example of good Knighthood, ſo animated his men of Warre, that with vndaunted ſpirits, they redoubled their ſtrength, in times and in places of greateſt neede and extremities, ſo that at the laſt, the *Frenchmen* being diſſolued into many heaps of breathleſſe carkaſſes, and many of their Nobles and Gentrie being taken priſoners, the reſt fled; and within few dayes after, the Citie of *Tyrwin* (by compoſition) was yeelded to King *Henrie*, who (only preſeruing the Biſhops Palace, in which hee lodged, and the Cathedrall Church) razed the Walls, Towers, Bulwarks, and Fortreſſes thereof to the ground: and conſumed the reſt of that Citie with fire.

The French Armie is ouerthrowne. Tyrwyn is yeelded and burnt.

In this ſiege *Maximilian* the Emperour, with thirtie approued men at Armes, repaired to the Kings camp; and (after his great welcome, amply expreſſed by his Princely entertainement) hee with them were al enrolled into the Kings pay.

The Emperor ſerueth vnder King Henrie.

This victorie, and the ſaid Citie, being thus wonne, King *Henry* (with all conuenient expedition) beſieged the ſtrong and the warlike Citie of *Tournay*, which (for a while) was by the Inhabitants manfully defended and preſerued: But (after many bitter and ſharpe aſſaults, and bloudie skirmiſhes) when they perceiued that their hopes for ſuccour and helpe were fruſtrated and in vaine: they then, by compoſition, yeelded themſelues to the Kings mercie; who, for the ſumme of ten thouſand pounds, gratiouſly receiued them as his owne ſubiects, and by his Almoner, *Thomas Wolſey*, tooke the oathes of their fidelitie and alleageance, as to their ſoueraigne Lord and King. And then King *Henrie* (leauing there a ſtrong Garriſon) hee committed the gouernement and ſafetie of that Citie to Sir *Edward Poynings*, who was valiant, and a worthie Knight. And (diſſoluing his Armie, becauſe the cold winter was vnfit for the continuance of warlike imployments) he ſafely returned to *England*, where he was receiued by his ſubiects with louely acclamation, and great ioy.

Tornay is beſieged and yeelded.

King Henrie returneth into England.

Now muſt we vnderſtand, that whilſt the king was thus buſied in *France*, the Lord *Thomas Howard*, his chiefeſt Admirall, intollerably tormented, vexed, and daily grieued the *French* Nation, both by Sea and Land.

The Lord Admirall vexeth the Frẽch nation.

And likewiſe at the ſame time, *Iames* the Fourth, king of the *Scots* (although he had maried with the Ladie *Margaret*, the eldeſt ſiſter of king *Henrie*) made open warre, and wilfull breach of his Promiſe,

Iames the 4. King of Scots (in the abſence of his brother, king Henrie) invadeth England.

miſe, and of the Peace, which had been confirmed by his ſolemne Oath; and beganne vniuſtly to pick quarrels againſt the King. In ſo much, that (vpon notice giuen to the Earle of *Surrey*, that in *Scotland* daily preparations and prouiſions were made for warre) He commanded Sir *William Bulmer*, a valiant Knight, with two hundred luſtie and tall Archers, to harbour in ſome Towne, or Village, neare to the *Scottiſh* Pale; to the intent, that hee might not only giue ſpeedie notice and intelligence how things paſſed, but alſo might doe his beſt, to withſtand and to reſiſt their power.

Sir William Bulmer, a valiant Knight.

Within few dayes after, the Lord *Humes*, Chamberlaine to the King of *Scots*, entred with an Armie of eight thouſand men into the Kingdome of *England*: ſlew the Inhabitants, burned their houſes, ranſacked their goods, and foraged their fields: And hauing enriched himſelfe and his ſouldiers with money, and great ſpoyles, he returned ſecurely, not thinking that any reckoning was to bee made for his good ſpeeding. But on a ſodaine, and vnexpectedly hee was encountred by *Sir William Bulmer*, who with one thouſand Archers, and no more, ſo thickly ſhowred arrowes vpon the *Scots*, and with their ſwords in ſuch a deſperate and ſtrange manner aſſailed, and aſſaulted them, that quickly they were ouerthrowen: and fiue hundred of them being ſlaine, and foure hundred at the leaſt taken priſoners, the reſt fled, leauing their ſpoiles and their booties behinde them, and ſo returned beggerly into *Scotland*.

100000. *fighting men.*

The King of *Scots* (who not only meant to reuenge this diſgrace, but alſo to worke wonders, if hee might, in the abſence of King *Henrie*) entred into this Realme with an Armie, in which were more then one hundred thouſand fighting men; and beſieged the ſtrong Caſtle of *Norham*, which (through the Captaines prodigall expence, of all his powder and ſhot, to little, or no purpoſe) hee tooke, and kept it as his owne.

The Earle of Surrey marcheth againſt the King of Scots.

The valiant and renowmed Earle of *Surrey*, was no idle perſon in this buſineſſe: But (being aided and aſſiſted by his eldeſt ſonne the Admirall, who vnderſtanding of his Fathers preparations for thoſe warres, came from the Sea to New-caſtle, and brought with him one thouſand Mariners, and luſtie fighting men) and by the Lords *Dacres*, *Clifford*, *Conyers*, *Latymer*, *Scrope*, *Ogel*, and *Lomley*, and by Sir *Edward Stanley*, Sir *William Bulmer*, Sir *Nicholas Appleyard*, Sir *William Sydney*, Sir *Stephen Bull*, Sir *Iohn Everningham*, Sir *Henrie Sherborne*, Sir *Thomas Metham*, Sir *Marmaduke Conſtable*, Sir *William Percy*, Sir *Chriſtopher Ward*, Sir *Philip Tylney*, Sir *William Gaſcoyne*, Sir *Thomas Barkeby*, Sir *Walter Griffeth*, Sir *George Darcy*, Sir

Sir *Chriſtopher Pickering*, Sir *Thomas Butler*, Sir *Guy Dawney*, Sir *Iohn Booth*, Sir *Iohn Rowcliffe*, Sir *Iohn Stanley*, Sir *Iohn Normauile*, Sir *Lionel Percie*, Sir *Iohn Willoughby*, Sir *Edward Echingham*, and Sir *Brian Stapleton*, Knights; and by *Ralfe Brearton*, *Iohn Laurence*, *Brian Tunſtall*, *Richard Bold*, *Iohn Donne*, *Iohn Bygod*, *Iohn Clarus*, *Thomas Fitz-Williams*, *Brian Stapleton*, *Robert Warcop*, and *Richard Cholmley*, Eſquires, and by many other Gentlemen of worthie reputation and great valour. And hauing in his Armie ſix and twentie thouſand men, able and fit for warre, he marched towards the King of *Scots*: and vpon the ninth day of *September*, in the yeare of our Lord God 1513. in a Field which was called *Flodden*, both the Armies came in view each of other. The *Engliſh* forces (being marſhalled in good order) made two maine battailes, both which were politickly and ſtrongly guarded by their wings. And the *Scottiſh* Armie was diuided into foure battailes. All theſe (after ſome few skirmiſhes, and the expence of much ſhot, both ſmall and great) ioined together pell mell, and fell to handie ſtrokes, and made ſuch an incredible expreſſion of their manhood, by the indifferent exchange of blowes and wounds, that many a ſtrong and luſtie man was quickly depriued of his life. Nobilitie and Gentrie were no priuiledges to protect any man from danger, nay from death; inſomuch that King *Iames* himſelfe fighting couragiouſly among his people as a common ſouldier, triumphed ouer the dead carcaſes of ſuch as (by his ſword) hee had prepared for the graue. But in the end he himſelfe was alſo ſlaine, and ſo were two Biſhops, twelue Earles, fourteene Lords, and twelue thouſand Knights, Eſquires, Gentlemen, and common ſouldiers of the *Scottiſh* Nation. And on the *Engliſh* part, fifteene hundred and no more were ſlaine. Thus was this Field wonne by the bleſſing of Almightie God, and by the victorious courage and true manhood of the Earle of *Surrey*, and of his ſonne, and of ſuch Nobles, Knights, Gentlemen, and braue ſouldiers, as in that battaile approued themſelues hardie and ſtrong in Armes. And the ſuruiuing *Scots* (finding their chiefeſt helpe and ſafetie to conſiſt in the agilitie and nimbleneſſe of their light heeles) forſooke the Field, and with more then poſting ſpeede they fled, and returned with heauie hearts into their owne Countrey.

26000. *fighting men.*

Flodden field 1513.

The Scots are ouerthrowen.

The King of Scots is ſlaine.

King *Henry* (after his returne into *England*) bountifully rewarded ſuch as in *France*, and againſt the *Scots* in *England*, had done him the beſt ſeruice, and ſome of them he aduanced to higher places, by giuing to them an increaſe of dignitie and of honour. For he created *Thomas Howard* (who was then Earle of *Surrey*) Duke of

Noblemen created.

of *Norfolke*, and the Admirall his ſonne was made Earle of *Surrey*. Sir *Charles Brandon* (being Viſcount *Lyſle*) was made Duke of *Suffolke*. Sir *Charles Somerſet* (being then Lord *Harbert*, and Chamberlaine to the King) was created Earle of *Worceſter*. Sir *Edward Stanley* was made Lord *Mountegle*. And the Kings Almoner *Thomas Wolſey* was created Biſhop of *Lincolne*, which fauour hee vnthankfully requited, to his owne ruine, as hereafter wee ſhall ſee.

The enclo-ſures about London throwen downe.

In the end of this yeare, the inhabitants of *Iſlington*, *Hoxſton*, *Shordich*, and of other Townes and Villages bordering neere to the Citie of *London*, incloſed their Champion Fields (in which the Citizens were accuſtomed, for their recreation and paſtimes ſake, to walke, runne, ſhoot, leape, and to vſe ſuch like ſports at their willes and pleaſures) with high hedges, and wide ditches, becauſe they would more priuately appropriate the commodities of thoſe grounds vnto themſelues. But multitudes of the meaner ſort of the Citizens iſſued forth with mattockes, ſpades, ſhouels, and ſuch like tooles of husbandrie, with which they ouerthrew the ſaid hedges, filled vp thoſe ditches, and leuelled the ſaid grounds, vſing in them their former exerciſes and paſtimes, and ſo they are enioied at this day.

1514. 6 *Prior Iohn landeth, but is well beaten.*

Not long after the Kings returne into *England*, the before named *Prior Iohn*, with his Gallies, and ſome Foiſts, being well manned and prouided, arriued in *Suſſex*, and landed in the night, and burnt a poore Village named *Brigh-helmſton*. But being diſcouered, himſelfe wounded in the face with an arrow, and diuers of his men ſlaine, he with the reſt were compelled to runne into the Sea, out of which, being drawen into their veſſels, they returned with ſmall gaine.

Spoiles in Normandie by Sir Iohn Wallop.

But to requite their boldneſſe, the Lord Admirall of *England*, with ſome few ſhips, and eight hundred ſouldiers beſides the Mariners, ſent Sir *Iohn Wallop* to the Sea, whoſe often landing in *Normandie* was very preiudiciall to the inhabitants: for he burnt one and twentie of their Villages and Townes, and many boats and ſhips which were ancoured in *Traport*, and in other Hauens, ranſacked the Countrey, and ſlew much people. And much wondring there was, how with ſo ſmall a number he could land ſo often, and performe ſuch great things.

A peace concluded. The French king marieth with the Kings ſiſter.

The old *French* King *Lewys* the twelfth (vnderſtanding that the *Flemings* would not, according to their former agreements, receaue into their Countrie, the goodly, faire, and vertuous Ladie *Marie*, ſiſter to King *Henrie*, to be eſpouſed vnto *Charles*, the yong Prince of *Caſtile*, becauſe the *Spaniards* had not conſented to that match; by

by his Embaſſadors craued peace: and became an earneſt ſuter to the King, that ſhee might be his wife: whereupon (to ſettle loue and amitie betwixt thoſe two Kings, and their kingdomes: and to make the ſaid Lady ſo great a Queene, and that ſhee might be endowed with an yearely penſion of ten thouſand marks during her life, and might againe returne into *England* if the *French* King died) The King, and the ſaid Ladie conſented and yeelded to his requeſt: And therupon the Duke of *Longvyle*, and ſuch other *Frenchmen*, as had beene taken at the battaile of *Tyrwyn*, were now releaſed and ſet free. And within few dayes after, the ſaid Ladie (being by the King and Queen accompanied to *Douer*, and there ſhipped, and attended on by *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolke*, *Thomas* Marques *Dorſet*, and his foure brethren, the Earle of *Surrey*, the Lords *De la ware*, *Barnes*, and *Mountegle*, Sir *Mawrice Barkley*, Sir *Iohn Peche*, Sir *William Sandes*, Sir *Thomas Bulleyn*, Sir *Iohn Carre*, and by many other Knights, Gentlemen, and Ladies of great worth: Shee landed at *Bollen*, where (with great magnificence and honor) ſhee was receiued by the Dolphin, and by many Lords of *France*, who brought her to *Abuyle*, where ſhee met with, and was married to the King: And (within few dayes after) at *Paris*, ſhee was crowned Queene; *The French Nation thinking their King and Countrie to bee happie, who to their Queene had the faireſt Ladie in the world.*

1. 2. 3. 4.

The French King dyeth. Francis the Firſt.

And at her Coronation, the *Dolphin* (vpon a generall challenge formerly made by himſelfe, *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolke*, *Thomas Gray* Marques *Dorſet*, his foure brethren, and two others, againſt all commers) erected many honorable and martiall games, as the Iuſts, Turnay, Barriers, and ſuch like: All which were performed with great valour, and to the great pleaſure of the King and Queen. But within twelue weeks after the ſaid mariage, King *Lewys* dyed, and *Francis* the firſt ſucceeded him in that kingdome. And by the Duke of *Suffolke* the ſaid Queene *Mary* was brought againe into *England*, where he won her loue, and maried her with the Kings conſent.

The French Queen returneth into England.

The peace with France renewed.

1515.

In the ſeuenth yeare of King *Henries* raigne, the former peace betwixt him and King *Lewys* the twelfth, was renewed and confirmed with King *Francis* the firſt, and great amitie and loue was exchanged betweene thoſe two kings.

7.

It now ſo chanced that *Thomas Wolſey* (who was borne of baſe Parentage in the Towne of *Ipſwich*, and was firſt made the Kings Almoner; then Biſhop of *Lincolne*, and then of the Priuie Counſell) ſucceeded the Archbiſhop and Cardinall of *Yorke*, who was named Doctor *Benbrike*, in the ſaid Archbiſhoprick. And not long after

All the deeds and actions of Cardinall Wolſey, touching this ſtorie are here ſet together, becauſe the diſcourſe of the reſt would otherwiſe by them be too much interrupted.

after hee was made Cardinall of *Yorke*, by the mediation and procurement of thoſe two Kings.

And now, becauſe the Kings affections towards him were extra ordinarie: His authoritie aboue all others eminent; his couetouſneſſe inſatiable, and his exceſſiue Pride and Ambition boundleſſe and vnlimitted, which made him bold and peremptorie, to doe all in all; From henceforth (for many years) all things were cõmanded and gouerned, according to his directions & will, vntill his monſtrous oppreſſions and ſawcie practizes brought him to ruine, and to deſtruction. And leaſt his deedes and his actions by often interviewing ſhould interrupt the other diſcourſe of other occurrences and negotiations, hapning in this Kings Raigne: We haue therefore thought it conuenient, yea neceſſarie, to proſecute the Hiſtorie of his proceedings to a concluſion, before wee intermedle much with the Narration of other paſſages and things.

He intermedles in other mens offices.

This prowd Cardinall, ſo egerly hunted after authoritie and power, to rule and to command all others: that (not contenting himſelfe with his owne offices, though they were great) Hee intruded malepertly into the Enquirie and determining of ſuch things, as properly belonged vnto others, but eſpecially into the Chancelorſhip of this Realme.

He is made Lord Chancelor.

The Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, vnto whom it appertayned, was much troubled with thoſe his intermedlings. But (being old and perceiuing that the Kings affections were faſt bound to his humours: and that to croſſe with him, it was the readie way to croſſe himſelfe) he therefore deliuered vp the Great Seale into the Kings hands, who no ſooner accepted of it, but hee beſtowed it vpon *Wolſey*: which fauour and dignitie might well haue ſatisfied his prowd humour, but nothing could. For now he (being an Archbiſhop, a counſailor of Eſtate, a Cardinall, Chancelor of *England*, and the Kings eſpecial Fauourite) directed all, commanded all, and did all.

1516. 8.

He demands accompts and enriched himſelfe thereby. Hee erecteth new Courts.

He being thus imperiouſly great, Required an accompt of the Captaines, Treaſurors, and other Officers of the kings warres: ſo that ſome of them (who by the Kings conniuence had gotten much) by exceſſiue Bribes excuſing themſelues, Inriched him, and left themſelues poore. Others whoſe Eſtates were more powerfull, to pleaſe him, ſhared that which vniuſtly they had gotten. And ſome others, who had deceiued the King, and had prodigally ſpent all, had nothing left, and therefore were puniſhed publikely, and expoſed to open ſhame.

He alſo erected ſundrie Courts of equitie (which might more truly

truly be termed Courts of Iniquitie) vnder a colour and pretence to heare and to determine the caſes of diſtreſſed and poore people: By meanes whereof the ſeates of Iuſtice, belonging to the cõmon Lawes, were little frequented for a while, and by them he gained a maſſe of treaſure to himſelfe, vntill the people (perceiuing that by them hee waxed rich, and they poore; and that the Sentences and Iudgements of thoſe Courts were not finall, but controlable, They (of their owne accord) forſooke them, and commended their Controuerſies to the cenſure of the common Lawes.

1517. 9

By ſubtiltie he is made a Legate.

In the ninth yeare of King *Henries* raigne, Pope *Leo* ſent vnto him Cardinall *Campeius* as his Legate, to ſolicite him (as likewiſe he had done to the Kings of *France* & *Spain*, and the Princes of *Germanie*) to make warre vpon the *Turks*. But ſo outragious was the ocean of *Wolſeys* pride, that (becauſe he knew that *Campeius*, in regard of his power Legantine, was to haue the Precedency of place when they two met) hee cunningly informed him by certaine Biſhops (who went vnto him to *Calice*, vnder a fained colour to viſite him) that his iourney would not be ſucceſſefull, but come to none effect, except *Wolſey* were ioyned in equall authoritie with him in that buſineſſe: whereupon *Campeius* (with all expedition) diſpatched Meſſengers vnto *Rome*, by whom within fortie dayes hee receiued a new Commiſſion; by which *Wolſey* was alſo made the Popes Legate and Commiſſioner as well as he. Then was *Campeius* admitted to come into this Realme, and both thoſe two Legates (within few dayes after) repayred to the Kings Court at *Greenwich* (hauing two ſiluer Croſſes, and two Pillars of the ſame mettel, two Axes gilted with fine gold, & two imbrodered Cuſhions borne before them: But the Cardinall of *Yorke* preferred his elder brother to the inferiour place. And by an eloquent Oration (which by an *Italian* was made vnto the King) he was informed of the ſubſtance of their meſſage; But to make anſwere therevnto, The King deſired reſpit for a few dayes, in which he might be adviſed and counſelled in that matter. Then did *Wolſey* (by his authoritie Legantine) erect an honorable Court, without the Kings notice or licence, and called it the Legantine Court. By the authoritie whereof, he viſited all Biſhops and their Dioceſſes, and other Clergie men; puniſhing ſuch as were poore and vnable to giue bribes, but enriching himſelfe by the enforced bountie of ſuch as had ſtore of money, and of faults.

Cardinall Campeius.

The Court Legantine.

By the ſame authoritie, hee alſo ſequeſtred vnto himſelfe the probate of all Wils and Teſtaments: and ſuch was his intollerable pride, by reaſon of his Legantine authoritie, that when (before and

Wolſeys intollerable pride.

and after meat) he waſhed his greaſie fiſts, he was at his Lauatorie attended and ſerued by Dukes and Earles, for that purpoſe.

This his example of hawtineſſe, made the Clergie of this Land ſo prowd and inſolent, that their induſtrious labours, which formerly they applyed to the ſtudies of morall Vertues, and of Diuinitie, were now imployed to deuiſe curious faſhions in their behauiour, in their apparell, and in their dyet.

1520. 12 *King Henrie and his queen goe into France.*

King *Henrie* and his Queene, in the twelfth yeare of his Raigne, reſolued to trauaile into *France*, for loue and friendſhips ſake, to glad themſelues with the ſocietie of the *French* King, *Francis* the firſt, and of his Queene. For which iourney, it cannot well bee reported what coſt in apparell, what prouiſion for attendance, what furniture for horſes, what charges for iewells, and what preparations for rare banquetings, and Princely gifts, were made both in *England*, and in *France*.

And when the appointed time drew neare, the King and the Queene (being accompanied with the Cardinall of *Yorke*, and with many Dukes, Earles, Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and faire Ladies of principall reckoning and accompt, ſayled from *Doner*, and ſafely came to *Calice*, and the *French* King and his Queene, with their Royall and goodly traine, came to *Arde*.

Two large commiſſions.

And (becauſe it was intended, that the peace which was betwixt the two Kings, ſhould be inlarged and confirmed) King *Henrie* appointed the Cardinall to goe before him to the *French* King, and to conferre with him touching that matter. For which purpoſe, hee gaue vnto him (by his Letters Patents, vnder the great Seale of his Kingdome of *England*) full power and abſolute authoritie, in all points, to doe therein as he himſelfe liſted.

The Cardinal going to the French king.

The Cardinall (being infinitely prided by reaſon of this vnreaſonable, and vnlimited authoritie and power, which hee had gotten) tooke his iourney towards *Arde*, being attended on by ſome hundreds of Lords, Knights, Eſquires, and Gentlemen: all which were clothed in crimſon Veluet, and ware chaines of gold; and with as many Yeomen and Groomes, whoſe apparell was made of rich Skarlet.

A Princely meeting.

Now, when he came vnto *Arde*, hee was Royally entertayned by the *French* King, and alſo by all the Nobilitie of his Court, who gaue their attendance on the King. But when the *French* Counſell had viewed his Commiſſion, and the vnlimited extent thereof: The *French* King (by their aduiſe and counſell) graunted to him the like authoritie and commiſſion, in all reſpects, vnder the great Seale of *France*: which hee diſſemblingly refuſed, vntill hee was licenced

licenced by King *Henry* to accept thereof. After this great honour vnto him done, both the ſaid Kings and their Queenes met together diuers daies in the Valley of *Andren*, where they feaſted, banqueted, cheered, and gladded each other, and with great bountie communicating their rich gifts each one to the other, and to the great men and Ladies of each others Nation, they tooke an vnwilling and a friendly leaue, and King *Henry*, with his Queene and honorable traine, returned to *Calice*, and from thence into *England*, where they were receiued with much ioy. But in the meane time the Cardinall ſo earneſtly gaped after honour, and the reuerence of the people, that hee did little or nothing touching the ſaid peace.

1521. 13 *The Cardinals large Commiſſion.*

Now muſt wee vnderſtand, that all places and all Countries were filled with the frequent reports of warre to be made betwixt the Emperour and the *French* King, with both which Princes King *Henry* was in league; by meanes whereof, King *Henry* ſollicited amitie and peace. Whereupon it was concluded, that the Commiſſioners of thoſe three great Princes ſhould meet together at *Calice*, where that matter ſhould be debated and concluded, if poſſibly it might be.

King *Henry*, the more to honour and to exalt his Cardinall, gaue vnto him, and to the Earle of *Worceſter*, and to the Lords *S. Iohn*, *Ferrers*, and *Harbert*, and to the Biſhops of *Durham* and *Elie*, and to Sir *Thomas Bulleine*, Sir *Iohn Peche*, Sir *Iohn Huſſey*, Sir *Richard Wyngfield*, and Sir *Henry Guilford* Knights, and vnto ſuch others as hee made Commiſſioners for that purpoſe, as large and as ample power and authoritie touching that buſineſſe, as by any meanes could be deuiſed, or by any words be vttered: and then (being fully furniſhed and prouided) this proud Cardinall with his Colleagues (whom hee reſpected as his vnderlings) paſſed to the Tower Wharfe thorow the Citie of *London*, and in his paſſage was met by the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and by the Companies in their ſeuerall Liueries, who did vnto him all honour and reuerence; and then proceeding forwards, he with the reſt of the Commiſſioners and their Attendants tooke their Barges, landed at *Grauеſend*, and comming to the Citie of *Canterburie*, the Arch-biſhop, and the prime ones of the Clergie of *England*, met the proud Cardinall without the Cities Gates, with a ſolemne Proceſſion, and magnified him as a King. Then being ſhipped at *Doner*, he with his companie ſafely arriued at *Calice*, where hee was too much elated, and made too arrogantly proud, by receiuing of too much reuerence and honour: yet all was done by the Kings command. Thither

The Cardinall is honored.

The Cardinall is reeeiued with Proceſſion. The King commands he ſhould bee honoured.

alſo reſorted the other Ambaſſadors, and betwixt them often conferences were had. But the Commiſſioners of the Emperour were ſtiffe, and the *French* were ſtout.

The Cardinall goeth to the Emperors Court.

The proud Cardinall (not contenting himſelfe with ſuch honors as formerly had beene giuen to him) would needs proclaime and publiſh his greatneſſe in the Emperour *Maximilians* Court at *Brudges*, where hee hoped to receiue the greater eſteeme, becauſe hee had with him the Great Seale of the Kingdome of *England*, which neuer before that time any Chancellor dared to tranſport beyond the Seas out of this Realme. For this purpoſe hee entreated ſome few daies abſence of the Commiſſioners of the two other Princes, that in the meane time he might viſit the Emperour: for hee pretended that their perſonall preſence and conference might greatly further and expedite that buſineſſe. Wherefore being accompanied with foure hundred and threeſcore horſe, hee paſſed by *Graueling*, *Dunkerke*, *Newport*, and by *Odenburgh*, and was euery where met and ſaluted by the Noblemen and Gentrie of thoſe Countries. And comming towards *Brudges*, hee was met one mile out of the Towne by the Emperour himſelfe, and by the Prime and Flower of all his Court: where the Emperour did him the more reuerence principally for two cauſes: Firſt, becauſe hee was informed of the large extent of his commiſſion, granted by King *Henry*. And ſecondly, becauſe the great ſeale of the Kingdome of *England* was in thoſe Countries borne with great ſtate before him, which ſeemed to be the chiefeſt marke and badge by which King *Henry* would expreſſe the extraordinarie truſt & confidence which he repoſed in him; when as in truth and indeed hee fooliſhly and vnaduiſedly caried the ſaid Seale with him for his owne glorie, without the Kings leaue: ſo that in his abſence no Sherifs could be made, nor any Writs, Commiſsions, or Patents could bee ſealed, which wronged many particular men, and was very preiudiciall to the preſent eſtate of the whole Kingdome.

He had the great Seale of England with him.

His great ſtate.

The Emperor meeteth him.

His Oration.

Within a day or two after the Cardinals comming to *Brudges*, the Emperour with his Counſell, and *Wolſey* with his Aſſociates, ſeriouſly diſputed and debated of the cauſes of the iarres and wars intended betwixt his Maieſtie and the *French* King. But when the Cardinall perceiued that the Emperour (without reſtitution vnto him made of ſuch of his Caſtles, Forts, Townes, Cities, and Territories, as by the *French* King were detained from him) would not incline to any peace, hee then (like a learned and like a wittie Oratour) diſcourſed largely of the happineſſe of peace, and of the vnſpeakable and inſupportable miſeries of bloudy war, and forgat not

not to ſhew vnto the Emperour the kingly ſtrength and puiſſance of his Soueraigne, both in men, and alſo in horſes, ſhips, armour, ordinance, and all other materials for the warre. And further adding, that in regard of the league which was betwixt thoſe two Kings, his Lord and maſter ſhould be vrged to take part with the *French* King, if any violence by any other Prince ſhould be offered to him.

The Emperors anſwer.

The Emperour, acknowledging all to bee true whatſoeuer the Cardinall had ſpoken touching the benefits of peace, & the incommodities of warre, anſwered, that God, who had giuen honors and poſſeſſions vnto Emperors & Kings, had (includedly in the ſame gifts) appropriated ſuch an inheritable right in them vnto thoſe to whom they were ſo giuen, that he doubted not but (with the pleaſure of Almightie God) they might not onely defend and keepe them with the ſword from all Vſurpers and Intruders, but might alſo by force and violence regaine them, if iniuriouſly and beſides right they were kept and detained. And ſeeing that all Kings and Princes were bounden to ſupport right, and to ſuppreſſe al iniuries & wrongs, he ſaid he doubted little of his vncle King *Henries* helpe and comfort, if betwixt himſelfe & the *French* King there were no peace to be made without blowes. He alſo informed the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners, that when his forces (hee being at that time but Arch-duke of *Auſtria*) had ouerthrowen the Armie of K. *Charles* the eighth at *Gingate*, then the ſaid King (to procure his peace) deſired and eſpouſed the Lady *Margaret* his daughter (now wife to the Duke of *Sauoy*) and vpon the ſame concluſion of the ſaid mariage, hee gaue with her to the ſaid *French* King a good portion in money, with diuers Townes and Caſtles in *Piccardie*, which were ſtill detained and kept from him, notwithſtanding that the ſaid King *Charles* perfidiouſly refuſed afterwards to marie her, and ſent her home.

The Emperors greeuances.

1. He told them likewiſe, that he himſelfe being lawfully betrothed vnto the Lady *Iane*, the yong Duches of *Britaigne*; hee trecherouſly gate her from him, and tooke her to his owne wife.

2. He ſhewed them alſo, that whereas the Duke of *Gue'ders* was his Subiect, and ought to liue vnder his homage and obedience, he (by the procurement of the now *French* King) ſtood out as a Rebell, Refuſing to be reformed without blowes.

3. Hee complained alſo that the *French* King trecherouſly ſurprized from the houſe of *Caſtile* the Realme of *Naples*, but ſhould reſtore it againe by friendſhip or by warre.

4. Thus when the Emperour had diſcourſed, and had made an

end of ſpeaking: the Cardinall replyed little, leauing him to his owne will; and taking a friendly and a kinde farewell, hee returned to *Calice*: where hee againe (but more coldly then before) debated with thoſe Embaſſadours vpon the concluſions of a peace: But when he perceaued that no ſuch matter could be effected, hee tooke his leaue and returned into *England*, and was gratiouſly welcommed as a friend, and liberally feaſted as a ſtranger, by the King.

1523. 15 1524. 16. 1525. 17.

In the fifteenth, ſixteenth, and ſeuenteenth yeares of King *Henries* Raigne: this prowd Cardinall (vnder the colour of the Kings partaking with the Emperor in his warres againſt the *French* king) of his owne authoritie, and without the Kings commandement, granted forth Commiſſions vnder the great Seale of *England*, into euery Shire and Prouince of the Kingdome, and directed them to the principall and chiefeſt men, and gaue vnto them priuate inſtructions, how, and in what ſort, they ſhould proceed, and demeane themſelues in the execution of that buſineſſe. And by the ſame Commiſſions, euery man was required to depoſe the certaine and true value of his Eſtate: And then, Of euery fiftie pounds and vpward, there was demanded foure ſhillings the pound; And for euery pound, aboue twentie, and vnder fiftie, two ſhillings; And for euery pound, aboue twentie ſhillings, & vnder twentie pounds, twelue pence. The payment thereof to bee in money, or in plate. And in *London*, hee made himſelfe the chiefe Commiſſioner: In which he behaued himſelfe inſolently as a Tyrant, not ſo much to enrich the King, as to ſtuffe vp his owne purſe. The like Commiſſions he granted forth againſt all the Clergie of this Land, of whom he demanded foure ſhillings the pound of all their liuings.

He granteth ſtrange commiſſions for taxes.

The commons will not obey.

These vniuſt proceedings grieued the Clergie, and common People at the heart; and generally they refuſed to ſubmit themſelues in that buſines.

Their reaſons

1. Firſt, becauſe thoſe Commiſſions were not eſtabliſhed, nor were grounded vpon the Lawes of this Kingdome and commonweale.

2. Secondly, becauſe the execution of them would be a dangerous preſident againſt the libertie and freedome of this kingdome, in time to come.

3. Thirdly, becauſe many mens credits exceeded their eſtates; and to diſcouer their inabilities, either vpon their oathes or otherwiſe; it might, and would tend to the ſubuerſion and vtter ouerthrow, both of them, and of their Families.

4. And laſtly, becauſe the thing demanded and required to be paid

paid was ſo much, That not one man (among ten generally) had that value in money, or in plate, though hee were worth much more: And therefore if the King, by force of theſe Commiſſions, ſhould get into his hands all his Subiects plate and money; they then ſhould for neceſſities ſake be conſtrayned to barter, and to exchange and chop Lead for Clothes, Tinne for Bread, and Cloth for Cheeſe.

But theſe reaſons preuailed not with the Cardinall: but contrariwiſe, he (being by a generall Petition entreated to perſwade the King, to deſiſt from that courſe, and by the Lawes to deuiſe ſome other: made this froward and ſullen anſwer: That he would rather haue his tongue plucked out of his mouth with pinſers, then hee would moue any ſuch matter; and that the ſaid ſummes demanded ſhould bee paid, or leuied, whether they would or no. And in *Hampſhire*, the common people ſo much repyned and grudged at theſe demands, That the Lord Viſcount *Lyſle*, and Sir *Richard Weſton*, and the other Commiſſioners for that buſineſſe, greatly doubted, what would enſue thereof. Wherefore (to pacifie the people) Hee, by his letters, moſt humbly entreated the Cardinall, that the twelfth peny, proportioned with the ſummes before demanded, might ſuffice, that thereby future dangers and troubles might bee auoided. But when the Cardinall with malignant eyes had peruſed the Viſcounts letters, he deeply ſwore, that they ſhould coſt him his head; becauſe in them his preſumption did manifeſtly appeare, taking to himſelfe leaue and libertie, to differ from thoſe inſtructions which were giuen him. Thus was hee requited and recompenced for his good ſeruice to the King: And for his dutious deſire to preſerue the peace and quietneſſe of his Countrie, and of this commonweale.

His tyrannie.

The Cardinall perceiuing, that the People would not ſupport this heauy burden, recalled thoſe Commiſſions, and ſent forth others; whereby a ſixt part of their ſubſtance was demanded, according to the aforeſaid rates, wherto hee doubted not but willingly they would yeeld: but they refuſed not only to ſubmit themſelues therein, but in euery Shire they curſed the Cardinall to the pit of Hell; and were ſo incenſed, that much trouble among them was likely to enſue. The King, who was informed in what ſtrange ſort, and faſhion, his people were vſed: and vnderſtanding that euery place was filled with clamors, with diſcontentment, and with danger, grieued thereat exceedingly. And being reſolued to reforme what was amiſſe: with all expedition, he (by his letters, which were directed into euery Countie within his kingdom)

New commiſſions.

The Cardinall is curſed.

The commiſſions are recalled.

commanded a preſent ceſſation of all executions of the ſaid Commiſsions, and proteſted that they were granted forth without his knowledge or conſent, and that he would not (but by the courſe of Law) require any thing from his people, though his wants were great to maintaine his warres. But if by way of a Beneuolence they would of their owne accord enlarge themſelues towards him, he then would accept thereof, and take it as an infallible proofe of their loue and dutie towards their King.

A Beneuolence.

The ambitious Cardinall priuately grudging that the King in his Letters had includedly laid the fault on him, and intending to robbe his Maieſtie of his peoples good affections towards him, and practiſing to winne it vnto himſelfe, required the Lord Maior and Aldermen of *London* to come before him, to whom by a ſubtill and a cunning ſpeech he proteſted, that becauſe hee ſaw and perceiued that thoſe Taxes were too heauie for them to beare, and becauſe in his heart he loued them, hee therefore had kneeled to the King, and had perſwaded him to reuoke the ſaid Commiſſions, and wholly to relie vpon their free beneuolence and good will. Wherefore hee courteouſly aduiſed them to be voluntarily bountifull and liberall of their owne accord. Then with great expedition he diſpatched his Letters to that effect into euery Shire and Countie of this Kingdome. But in regard that the King in his Letters had proteſted his ignorance touching the ſaid former taxes, therefore the proud Cardinall was ſtill condemned, and mortally hated by the people.

The Cardinals baſe flatterie.

Then forthwith (by the incitation of the Cardinall) new Commiſſions for the ſaid beneuolence were made. And in the execution of them ſome of the Commiſſioners endeuoured fairely to perſwade, but others of them by rough and vnkinde ſpeeches procured men to giue largely, whether they would or no. Yet they preuailed little: for the greateſt part of the people refuſed to giue any thing, ſome of them alledging the Statute which was made againſt the demanding of Beneuolences in the firſt yeare of the raigne of King *Richard* the Third, and ſome others alledging for their excuſe, their pouertie and their want.

Commiſſions for the Beneuolence.

It is now ſeriouſly to be obſerued, that the Cardinall hauing newly erected two Colledges, the one in *Ipſwich*, where hee was borne, and the other in *Oxford*, and intending to make their poſſeſsions faire and great, as their foundations were wide and large, procured a licence from the Pope, by vertue whereof (as hee was authorized) he plucked downe certaine ſmall Abbies, Frieries, and Religious Houſes, to appropriate their Lands and Reuenues to thoſe

The Cardinall ſuppreſſeth ſome Religious Houſes.

Note this.

thoſe Colledges : which example and preſident firſt moued the King, for other reſpects, within few yeares after to plucke downe all ſuch Religious Houſes. For if it were religious in the Pope and Cardinall ſo to doe, the King little doubted (ſeeing the groſſe enormities and euill life of moſt of thoſe men) but it was likewiſe lawfull for him to plucke them downe.

He reformeth the Kings houſhold.

And becauſe the buſie head of the Cardinall could not be idle, therefore he made the King to beleeue, that the eſtate and condition of his owne houſe was vnprofitably diſordered, and out of tune. Whereupon, for the reformation thereof, hee remoued diuers of the Kings menial ſeruants and houſhold officers from their places, and beſtowed them vpon others, whom hee more fancied, although they deſerued worſe. Hee alſo beſtowed his Manour of *Hampton* Court, with all ſuch coſtly buildings as hee had erected there, vpon the King; in regard whereof, the King gaue him leaue to keepe his Court in his Palace of *Richmond*, wherein King *Henry* the Seuenth did extraordinarily delight. Theſe his two actions made him hatefull to the Commons, who mutteringly repined, ſaying that the King and they were much abuſed, ſo to be vſed by a Butchers Dogge.

Hampton Court.

1527. 19

The Kings mariage called into queſtion.

At this time the *French* King became an earneſt ſuter to King *Henry*, to haue in mariage for the Dolphin, the Ladie *Mary*, the Kings only daughter, and heire apparant to the Crowne. But the ſaid motion was croſſed by a double encounter. The firſt was, the diſlike which the States-men and the Commons of this Realme had conceiued touching that match, which publikely they declared by their ſolemne proteſtations, and frequent ſpeeches, that if King *Henry* ſhould die without iſſue male of his bodie lawfully begotten, as he then had none, they would not receiue a *Frenchman* to be their King, becauſe he poſſeſsing a greater eſtate and Kingdome, would make this but a ſeruant and an attendant vpon that. The ſecond was a ſcruple caſt in the way (as moſt men thought, vpon the ſecret intimation of the Cardinall, in diſpleaſure to the Emperour, becauſe by ſtrength hee had not made him Pope) by the Preſident of *Paris*, who made it queſtionable, whether or no the Ladie *Mary* were legitimate, and borne in lawfull matrimonie, becauſe the King had begotten her vpon the bodie of the Ladie *Katherine*, Aunt to the Emperour, and who had ſometimes beene his brother Prince *Arthurs* wife. And from this doubt and from this ſcruple (which before that time was not thought on) infinite vexation and trouble did enſue, as in this diſcourſe it ſhall appeare. For thereupon the Kings Confeſſor, Doctor *Longland*,

1.

2.

land, Biſhop of *Lincolne*, and many other profound Diuines, informed the King, that almoſt twentie yeares hee had liued inceſtuouſly with the Queene, and that now (for his conſcience ſake) he ought truly and heartily to repent for that great ſinne, and to leaue her bed.

The Cardinall is Ambaſſador for France.

The Cardinall, who (as hee thought) had a long time laien lazily at home, would now be gadding into *France*, in an Ambaſſage to the *French* King, the ſubſtance whereof was only knowen to the King and him. And at his departure, the King (in the preſence of all his Lords) embraced him as his familiar friend. And at that time ſuch was his great eſtate, that paſſing thorow the Citie of *London*, he was attended by twelue hundred horſe. And when he came to *Calice*, hee was receiued with as much honour as by the Towne and Garriſon could be preſented vnto him. And at *Bulleine* (among many other deuices to magnifie his greatneſſe) hee was entertained with two ridiculous Pageants.

He is made proud.

Two ridiculous Pageants.

1. In the one of them there was a Nunne (called the holy Church) vnto whoſe perſon and chaſtitie three *Spaniards* and three *Almaines* attempted to offer violence, but by a Cardinall ſhe was reſcued and deliuered from them all.

2. And in the other there was repreſented a Pope lying on the ground, and an Emperour ſitting in an Imperiall Throne; but a Cardinall plucked him from his ſeat, raiſed the Pope, and placed him therein.

The French king meeteth him.

From *Bolleine* as he came towards *Amyens*, he was met vpon the way by the Prouoſt and the moſt ſubſtantiall Citizens on horſebacke, and by them he was ſaluted and reuerenced as a King. And when he came within halfe a mile of the Citie, the King himſelfe with his Nobles met him, cheerefully embraced him, and in a wonderfull and magnificent pompe conducted him to his lodging, on the gates whereof was written in large and faire letters, *Cardinalis pacificus*, *The peaceable Cardinall*, or *The Cardinall of peace.* And at their departure the proud Cardinall would haue vouchſafed to haue brought the King to his Court, but the King would not ſuffer him ſo to doe. Thus Kings, Nobles, Times and Places conſpired (if it had beene poſſible) to haue made him more proud, whoſe heart was ſo haughtie, that he ſuppoſed he could neuer be humbled and brought low.

He concludes a peace.

Then daily almoſt for the ſpace of three weekes together, the *French* King, his Counſell, and the Cardinall (with his Aſſociates, who were obſcured by his greatneſſe, as the Moone is by the direct oppoſition of the Sunne) conferred ſeriouſly: and in the end he

he concluded a peace betwixt the two Kings, in the honour whereof, and of the proud Cardinall, the inſtrument in which the Articles of the ſaid peace were contained, was ſealed with a ſeale purpoſely made of fine gold, whereof he boaſtingly bragged the next Terme in the *Starre-chamber*, affirming before the whole Aſſemblie, that the peace which by him was concluded, was ſuch an abſolute, perfect, and ſound peace, that it would continue *in ſecula ſeculorum*, world without end. But the people mutteringly repined thereat, ſaying that *England* neuer long enioied any benefit by any peace which was concluded with the *French*, whoſe propertie it was (for their aduantage, without cauſe) to ſtart aſide from any thing which they had ſaid, and ſworne to performe. They alſo ſaid, that to enter into a fained league with the *French* King, the Emperour and his friendſhip was abandoned, and that old enemies were entertained, and old friends were vnaduiſedly (by the Cardinals meanes) caſt off. And therein they ſpake truly: for by the Cardinals enticement, and ſecret perſwaſions, the King (without good cauſe) ſhewed himſelfe an enemie to the Emperour, and to the *Flemings*, and vnto others of his people, although the Emperour by all fitting and beſeeming meanes had wooed him to obtaine and to keepe his loue.

1528.

By theſe iarres, thus cunningly broached by the Cardinall, in fauour of the Pope, and of the *French* King, the queſtion touching the lawfulneſſe or nullitie of the Kings mariage was ſmoothered for a while. But not long after, ſuch as ſeemed to bee tender ouer the Kings conſcience, and prouident to eſtabliſh the true ſucceſsion of this Kingdome in a lawfull heire, reuiued the ſcruple, and therewithall ſo buſied the Kings cogitations and thoughts, that a religious ſorrow began to ſeiſe vpon him. And (to auoid the continuance in that inceſtuous ſinne, vntill by a iudiciall ſentence the doubts were cleared) hee refrained from the Queenes bed. And the Cardinall (to make himſelfe more great then he was) procured a commiſsion from the Pope, to bee directed to him, and vnto his ancient brother *Campeius*, that before them, as ſupreme Iudges, that queſtion (by legall proceſſes and proceedings) might bee heard, debated on, and cenſured, according to the Lawes of God and the Lawes of man.

20 *The mariage in queſtion.*

A power Legantine is granted.

Wolſey is accuſed.

Theſe two Legates (hauing receiued this commiſsion) informed the Queene of their authoritie and power: and ſhee (in ſome paſsion) accuſed *Wolſey* as the principall brocher of that doubt, and the maintainer of that contention, partly to bee reuenged thereby vpon her Nephew the Emperour, becauſe he would not make him Pope,

Pope (as ſecretly he had requeſted him) and partly, becauſe often times in a moſt ſecret, louing, and gentle faſhion, ſhee had admoniſhed and warned him of his couetouſneſſe and tyrannie; of his extortions and oppreſſions, and of his pride and lecherie: But hee excuſed himſelfe, as if he had beene an honeſt man.

The Queene chooſeth Counſelors.

The King (pretending nothing in this buſineſſe, but Truth, ſinceritie and iuſtice, according to the Lawes of God and Man) was well contented, that the Queene ſhould make choiſe of the greateſt Clerkes, and of the beſt learned men within his Kingdome, to defend and to maintayne her cauſe: Whereupon hee elected *William Warham* Archbiſhop of *Canterburie*, And *Nicholas Weſt* Biſhop of *Ely*, who were Doctors of the Lawes; and *Iohn Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, and *Henrie Standiſh* Biſhop of *Aſſaph*, who were Doctors of Diuinitie, and ſome others: And they (as occaſions did require) did for her aſmuch therein, as by wit and learning could be done.

1529. 21

The King and Queene are ſummoned.

Now for the proſecuting of this buſineſſe, the two Legates cauſed a ſtately Court to be erected at the *Black-fryers* in the great Hal, In which (for them) were placed two Chaires and two great Cuſhions, couered ouer with cloth of gold: And (at the appointed day) the two Legates tooke their places; but the Cardinal of *Yorke* (as his cuſtome was) preferred his elder brother *Campeius* to the left hand: and then, hauing cauſed their commiſſion publikely to bee read, the King and the Queene were cited in their owne perſons, or by their Proctors to appeare. The King by his Proctors ſubmitted himſelfe to the Apoſtolical authoritie and power, which by the Pope to the two Legates was giuen. But the Queen her ſelfe (being accompanied with many Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, and hauing firſt done great reuerence to the Legates) appealed from them (as from Iudges which were not competent, and indifferent to determine betwixt the Queene and King) to the Court at *Rome*. This appeale they allowed not: but in the ſame Court they ſate weekely. And before them many learned and ſubtile diſputations touching the lawfullneſſe, and alſo concerning the inſufficiencie of that mariage, were daily made before them.

The Queene appealeth.

The Kings proteſtation.

But the King (perceiuing, that no quick diſpatch was vſed, though oftentimes deliberately they conſulted) came with the Queene into the ſaid Court, where his Maieſtie ſolemnely proteſted his infinite loue towards her; acknowledging her to bee the moſt amiable, louing, kinde, dutious, modeſt, and ſweeteſt wife, that (he thought) was in the whole world; And that therefore hee ſhould not take ſo much ioy and comfort, in any thing elſe what-

whatsoeuer, as hee should doe in her, if by the lawes of God and Man shee might remayne his wife: and therefore, for the determining of that question, and for the quieting of his troubled conscience, he instantly importuned a quick dispatch and a finall end. Then was the Queen demanded, whether shee would stick to her appeale or no? who answered yea: yet (for all that) the Court proceeded weekly (though safely) as before.

He desireth a quick end.

Within few dayes after, the King being informed, that after the last day of that moneth of *Iuly*, the Legates would not sit any more, vntill the fourth day of *October*, Hee was thereat vexed and troubled aboue measure: Wherefore (at the next sitting) hee sent the Dukes of *Norfolke*, and of *Suffolke*, with some other Lords to the Legates; requesting them to dispatch their iudiciall sentence one way or other, that long delayes might not augment the anguish of his troubled conscience. The Dukes, in a reuerent, and in an earnest manner deliuered their message in the open Court. But by *Campeius* it was answered, That there was yearly, and of custom a cessation in the Court of *Rome*, betwixt the aforesaid dayes, from all Legall proceedings whatsoeuer: And that, if any sentence in the Interim were giuen, it was vtterly void in Law and of no force at all: And therefore, seeing that their Court was a branch of the Court of *Rome*, they could not (vntill the prefixed day) intermedle any further in that businesse. This answere so much offended *Charles* the Duke of *Suffolke*, that (striking his fist vpon the board) he swore, that the old saying was too too true: *That neuer Cardinall or Legate did any good in England*, and therewithall the offended Lords departed, and so did almost the whole companie, leauing the two Legates to looke one vpon the other.

The King is delaied.

The Duke of Suffolke is angrie.

The King being thus troubled with an enforced delay, contented himselfe as patiently as he was able, hoping that in *October* that businesse would haue an end. But within few dayes after, He was informed, that *Campeius* (being sent for by the Pope) made great preparations for his returne to *Rome*: Wherby he perceiued plainly, that the two Legates had grosly dissembled with him; and that they had secretly plotted these delayes; that the matter should not bee definitiuely censured and sentenced by them. But in the Court at *Rome*, where infinite costs and charges would bee expended: The businesse would be lingred on with arguments, and long disputes, and that his conscience should bee vnsetled in the meane time. And for this cause, from this time forward, the King in his heart hated and maligned his vnthankfull & dissembling creature base *Wolsey*, whom (from a contemptible birth and estate) hee had preferred,

Campeius is bound for Rome.

Two craftie mates.

The King hateth Wolsey.

preferred, and made Abbot of S. *Albons*, his Almoner, a Counſailor of Eſtate, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and of *Durham*, Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, an Embaſſador to Kings and Princes, his Chancelor, and a Cardinall.

And thus, this buſineſſe which hee plotted, to make himſelfe gratious with the King, eminent aboue others, and to bee reuenged vpon his enemies, turned to his owne ruine and vtter deſtruction in the end.

Articles againſt Wolſey.

For the Kings Counſell and the Nobles of this Land (perceiuing that the Kings heart was changed from him) were not a little glad, becauſe generally he was hated. And (to preſſe him downe in his falling) they framed againſt him diuers Articles, ſome demonſtrating his exceſsiue pride, others his inſulting tyrannie, others his greeuous oppreſsions, others his monſtrous iniuſtice, others his inſatiable couetouſneſſe, others his abominable lecherie, others his eager and ſharpe courſes to reuenge, and others his ſecret and his cunning dealing betwixt the Pope and him, whereby his Maieſties regall authoritie and his prerogatiue royall in all things touching the Clergie and Church, was made void. And thereupon they concluded that he was guiltie of the Premunire, and conſequently had forfeited all his promotions, lands, goods, chattels, and his libertie to the King. Theſe Articles being reduced into good forme, and fit order, were by the Nobilitie ingroſſed into a booke, ſubſcribed with their hands, and then it was deliuered to the King, who concealed it for a few dayes.

Premunire.

Campeius taketh his leaue.

The two Legates (not knowing what had paſſed) came to *Woodſtock* to the King, where *Campeius* tooke his leaue to goe to *Rome*: and *Wolſey* (who purpoſed to haue left him, and to haue remayned with the King) was frowningly commanded to accompanie his honeſt brother vnto *London*, where he ſhoùld be further informed of the Kings minde. When they were come thether, and from thence were iournying towards the Sea coaſts: By order and direction from the Councell, *Campeius* his truncks and cheſts were broken vp, and a diligent ſearch was made, to finde ſuch letters, as they coniectured were by *Wolſey* ſent to *Rome*: But none were found: For by a Poſt, they were ſent away a day or two before.

His cheſts are broken.

The Cardinal is indicted.

The next Terme, the King cauſed his Atturney Generall, named Sir *Chriſtopher Hales*, to preferre into the Kings Bench, an inditement vpon the Statute of Premunire, againſt the Cardinall, vpon the aforeſaid Articles, which hee performed accordingly: And by the Grand Iurie, it was found againſt the Cardinall. Then forthwith the Dukes of *Norfolke*, and of *Suffolke*, were required to take

The great Seale is taken from him.

take from him the great Seale, which the King beſtowed vpon Sir *Thomas Moore*: he alſo cauſed Sir *William Fitz-Williams*, Knight of the Garter, and Treaſurer of his Maieſties houſhold, and Doctor *Stephen Gardiner* his new Secretarie, ſo to gard, and ſo to watch his Houſe and Palace at *Weſtminſter*, that none of his moueables, whatſoeuer, might bee imbeaſeled, or purloined, or carried away from thence. And the Cardinall himſelfe being confined to *Aſher*, not farre from *Kingſton*, and moſt of his Attendants being diſplaced, and remoued from him: a ſmall allowance of things needfull was appointed to him for his neceſſarie vſe, whereat hee infinitely greiued.

His goods are ſeazed.

He is confined.

Then was he required by the King, to plead to the ſaid Indictment: but by his Atturnie (ſufficiently authorized vnder his hand and ſeale) he confeſſed euery materiall point thereof.

He confeſſeth this indictment.

Then the king conferred the Abbie of Saint *Albones* vpon the Prior of *Norwich*, the Biſhoprick of *Durham* vpon Doctor *Tonſtall*, and the Chancellorſhip was ratified to Sir *Thomas Moore*. But the king (of his gentleneſſe, and in regard of his former fauours towards the Cardinall) left vnto him the Arch-biſhoprick of *Yorke*: and the Biſhoprick of *Wincheſter*, and ſent vnto him much plate, houſhold ſtuffe, and many other things (part of that which had bin taken from him) to a great value. Yet in his heart, he remained vnthankfull, grudging, and malitious towards the king.

His dignities taken from him.

The king (in former times) had intermedled very litle with the gouernment of this Common-weale, for hee was almoſt altogether ruled and directed by the Cardinall, and by the Cleargie of this Land. But he now began to be ſenſible of that errour, and to caſt away that yoke: ſo that he tooke the raines into his owne hand. And (firſt of all) he aſſembled his high Court of Parliament, in which the Commons of the Lower houſe ſharply complained of the miſdemeanors of the Cleargie: But eſpecially in theſe ſix things.

Articles againſt the Cleargie.

1 *FIrſt, becauſe (with great extremitie) they exacted vnreaſonable ſummes of monie, as due fees, for the Probate of mens laſt Wills, and Teſtaments.*

2 *Secondly, Becauſe they were exceſſiuely couetous, and cruell, in demanding for Mortuaries, eſpeciall of ſuch poore*

people, as skarſly left two kine, for the maintenance of their wiues and children.

3 *Thirdly, Becauſe their full purſes made them to become Farmors of great Granges, Bartons, and temporall farmes, taking them in leaſe in euery Shire, and become Husbandmen and Graziers, to the preiudice and hurt of ſuch as were trained and brought vp only to be husbandmen.*

4 *Fourthly, Becauſe many of them kept Tanning houſes for their priuate gaine, and were Brokers, Buyers, and Ingroſſers of Wooll, Cloth, and other marchandizes, ſnatching vp all, and enforcing tradeſmen, and clothiers to buy thoſe commodities at the ſecond, or third hand, and at vnreaſonable prices.*

5 *Fiftly, Becauſe ſuch Clergie men as had the beſt, and the greateſt Spirituall liuings, did (with great extremitie) take the vtmoſt of their rights: And yet they liued in the Court, or in the houſes of Noblemen, and Biſhops; ſo that they ſpent nothing in Hoſpitalitie among their Neighbours, Nor did feede their flocke with the milke of Gods moſt holy and ſacred Word.*

6 *And laſt of all, Becauſe diuers ignorant men among them, held and enioyed eight, ten, twelue, yea more Benefices and Spirituall promotions to themſelues ſeuerally; and yet liued not vpon any one of them: but kept great Schollars and learned men, at a ſhort commons, in one of the Vniverſities, who were better able to doe more good then they.*

Doctor Fiſher wrongeth the lower houſe of Parliament.

The Biſhops perceiuing that theſe matters much concerned them, and the whole Clergie of this Land, ſtrongly oppoſed themſelues againſt ſuch as exhibited the ſame complaints. In ſo much that Doctor *Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter* (being more earneſt, then well aduiſed) deſired the Lords to remember well, and to conſider, that when the *Bohemians* abuſed the eſtate and dignitie of their Clergie, they then ruinated and deſtroyed their Kingdome, and Common weale: Wherefore hee inſtantly requeſted them, to bee well adùiſed, before they entertained theſe obiections: For (quoth he) they are not religious, nor doe proceed from Faith.

When

When the Commons had vnderſtood what the Biſhop of *Rocheſter* had ſpoken: Then by *Thomas Audley* their ſpeaker, and by thirtie others of the houſe, They informed the King of the ſaid iniurie and wrong: Alleaging that if the lower houſe of Parliament were reputed to want Faith, then they were eſteemed to bee Heretikes, and conſequently, that all ſuch Bills as they preferred, or did paſſe, ſhould bee preferred and concluded on by Panims, Pagans, and Faithleſſe men, and ſo were vnlawfull, and vnfit to rule, and to gouerne Chriſtians, and ſuch as truly, and ſincerely honored, and adored God.

They complaine to the King.

The King (who was much offended, and grieued at the Biſhops ſpeech) gaue them this gentle anſwere; That hee would vnderſtand his meaning, concerning thoſe wordes, and that (with all convenient expedition) hee would informe them of his anſwere. And within a day or two after, the ſaid Biſhop and ſix others were ſent for, and the Biſhop of *Rocheſter* was reprehended by the King. But with many ſolemne proteſtations, hee aſſured the King, that he referred thoſe wordes. *They proceeded not from faith*; to the doing deedes and actions of the *Bohemians*, and not to the doings of the lower Houſe, which likewiſe was affirmed by the reſt. This his excuſe was by the King ſent to the Commons; who ſpake liberally of the Biſhop, and repaied their debt with vnſeeming termes. In ſo much, that at a Committee (In which the Biſhops ſtrongly perſiſted, to maintayne, and to iuſtifie, the taking of their Fees for probates of Teſtaments, to be lawfull) becauſe the ſame paiments had beene of a long time vſed; a Gentleman of the lower Houſe replyed to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, That Theeues on *Shooters* Hill vſed to take purſes there: *Ergo*, it was lawfull. This ſpeech pleaſed the Commons well: For they thought, That they had now angred the Biſhops, as the Biſhop of *Rocheſter* had angred them. Then were the matters aforeſaid compriſed in the ſame complaint, reduced into formall Bill: which (being long, and ſubſtantially diſputed on, and in ſome points qualified) were aſſented vnto by both the Houſes, and afterwards (for Lawes) eſtabliſhed by the King.

A bad ſhift.

The articles againſt Wolſey

The Booke alſo, which contayned the Articles, which were drawne againſt the Cardinall, was ſent by the Lords to the lower Houſe. In which (among diuers other things) he was principally accuſed of theſe great faults.

1 FIrſt, *That by diſhoneſt and cunning reaſons, hee had deceitfully induced the King, to conſent that hee ſhould bee*

made a Legate to the Pope, which authoritie did (indeede and in effect) frustrate and make void, all the authoritie and iurisdiction of all other Bishops and Clergie men within this Kingdome, and also the authoritie of the King in Ecclesiasticall things and causes.

2 Item, That in all his letters, and other passages to forren Estates and Princes, his phrase in writing was, Ego, & Rex meus; I, and my King: as if the kings Maiestie had beene his inferior, and at his command.

3 Item, That (to induce the Pope to giue vnto him a power legantine) he in his letters for that purpose had this phrase: ecclesia Anglicana facta est in reprobum sensum, The Church of England is become reprobate: whereby hee vnchristianly disgraced and abominably slandred the Church of England, as being faithlesse. And that therefore necessity did instantly vrge and require, that by a power Legantine, to be granted vnto him, it might be reduced to a right beliefe.

4 Item, That when hee was sent an Ambassador to Calice, there to conferre with the Ambassadors of the Emperor, and of the French king, Hee carried with him, without the kings leaue, the great Seale of this kingdome: and from thence he also caried it into Flanders to the Emperors court for his owne honor, and vaine glorie.

5 Item, That without the kings knowledge or consent, he had sent a commission sealed with the great Seale of England, to Sir Gregorie de Cassado, authorizing him thereby in the kings name, to conclude a peace betwixt the Duke of Ferrara, and the kings Maiestie.

6 Item, that he, being filthily powdred with the french pocks, by reason of his excessiue lecherie, and dishoneſt life, did oftentimes presume to talke with, and to cast his vnholsome breath into the kings face.

7 Item, That to magnifie his owne power both at home, and with forren Nations, he caused a Cardinals hat to be stamped

ped on some of the Kings coine, without his Maiesties appointment or consent.

8. *Item, that hee would not suffer the Kings Clerke of the market to execute his office in S. Albons, because the same Towne was parcell of his Abbey.*

9. *Item, that (to obtaine his dignities, and to continue the loue and fauour of the Pope and of his Cardinals towards him) hee had in sixteene barrels conueied to Pope Clement the seuenth, and to his Cardinals toward their redemption out of prison, wherein after the sacking of Rome they were kept by the Emperour Charles the fifth, and to the French king in the Popes behalfe, to make warres vpon the Emperour, so much gold as did amount to the summe of two hundred and fortie thousand pounds at one time, and incredible summes of other money at other times, to the great impouerishing of this kingdome and Commonweale: and to enrich the king againe, had of his owne accord sent out such Commissions into all Shires within this kingdome, for the exacting of infinite summes of money, as quenched the peoples loue towards the king, and made them rebelliously to disturbe the peace of this kingdome in Norfolke and elsewhere.*

Wolsey confesseth the Articles.

These Articles and many more being compriſed in the ſaid booke, the Cardinall by a ſubſcription written with his owne hand, frankly and freely confeſſed, and ſubmitted himſelfe to the Kings mercie.

Noblemen created.

About the ſame time the King (for honourable and good ſeruice) created Sir *Thomas Bulleine* (who was Viſcount *Rochford*) Earle of *Wilſhire*, and Viſcount *Fitz-water* was made Earle of *Suſſex*, and the Lord *Haſtings* was created Earle of *Huntingdon*.

An ambaſſage.

The King (becauſe he was informed that the Emperour and the Pope were together in *Bononie*) ſent thither (as Ambaſſadors) the ſaid Earle of *Wilſhire* and ſome others, proteſting that the queſtion touching his mariage was not begotten nor motioned by him, nor by his conſent, but firſt by the Preſident of *Paris*, who receiued it (as he affirmed) from the Counſell of *Spaine*, and ſince by the graueſt and the beſt learned Diuines within his Kingdome,

and not vpon any diſlike which he conceiued againſt his Queene, nor for any deſire to change: and therefore hee earneſtly intreated them, that for the clearing of his troubled conſcience, the ſame matter might one way or other receiue a ſpeedie and a finall end by a ſentence or iudgement declaratorie in the Conſiſtorie of *Rome*. The Emperour ſaid little, but onely anſwered, that the iudgement of the Law ſhould content and ſatisfie him in that point. And the Pope ſaid, that when he came to *Rome*, the matter ſhould receiue an end; but yet hee meant nothing leſſe: for hee knew right well, that if he pronounced ſentence againſt the diſpenſation granted by Pope *Iulie* his predeceſſor, although hee knew well that it was flatly againſt the Law of God, then the Popes future diſpenſations would be little or nothing at all reſpected or regarded. And hee likewiſe knew, that by giuing of ſentence againſt the Queene, he ſhould againe make the Emperour his enemie, who was now newly become his friend. Thus this vnthankfull Pope flattered and dallied with the Kings Ambaſſadors, making them hopefull, but in vaine; yet with this anſwer they returned to the King, who (fearing leſt the Pope and his Cardinals would indeede by long delaies abuſe and dallie with him) imploied diuers Lords, and the greateſt Diuines within his Kingdome, at his exceeding great coſts and charges, to trauell into all the Vniuerſities in the Chriſtian world, and there to be reſolued of their opinions touching the validitie or nullitie of his ſaid mariage. And when they all returned, they brought with them twelue Inſtruments, ſealed with the publike Seales of ſo many Vniuerſities, and alſo the opinions of ſundrie great and famous learned men, by all which it appeared that they agreed and conſented in one, that the Kings mariage with his brothers wife was vtterly void, and contrary to the Lawes of God and man, notwithſtanding the diſpenſation of the Pope.

The King craueth a ſentence.

The opinion of Vniuerſities

Wolſey is licenſed to goe to Yorke.

The King at this time (by the aduice of his Counſell) licenſed *Wolſey* to liue within his Dioceſſe of *Yorke*; for which cauſe he went thither. But diuers of his ſeruants (by their friends meanes) got into the Kings ſeruice; among whom *Thomas Cromwell* (being a wiſe and a diſcreet man) was one, whom the King entertained with publike demonſtration of his good affections towards him, and of his fauour.

The Cardinals Colleges.

Now though ſuch of the Cardinals lands as he intended to haue beſtowed vpon his two Colledges were clearely forfetted vnto the King, yet his Maieſtie in regard of his great loue which he bare to learning, and vnto learned men, beſtowed the ſame wholly vpon his

his Colledge founded in *Oxford*, called the Cardinals Colledge, but then newly named the Kings Colledge, but now it is called *Christs Church*. And the other of his Colledges (founded at *Ipswich*) the King destroied, as being vnprofitable, and seruing to no purpose.

1530. 22

The King being secretly informed that the Cardinall had gotten a Bull from *Rome*, to curse him, except hee would restore him to all his goods, lands, and dignities, and that none but hee (no not the King himselfe) should for any offence whatsoeuer correct or punish any Clergie man, proclaimed that all prouisions, appeales, and instruments, within the space of one yeare next before that time procured, or which at any time from thenceforth should be procured from the See of *Rome*, whereby the authoritie royall and prerogatiue of the King might in any iot be lessened or diminished, should be vtterly void and frustrate in all respects, and that the procurers of them should be punished at the Kings will.

A Bull from the Pope.

A proclamation.

The proud Cardinall, scorning to bee humbled and trodden downe, and purposing to set new broiles and disturbances in the Common-weale, to molest the King, wrote secret letters to the Pope and to his Cardinals, to animate and to exasperate them against the King. And they (vnderstanding in what a disgracefull plight the Cardinall then stood) encouraged him not to faint, nor to shew himselfe a coward, and a heartlesse man, by yeelding to the peruersnesse of his present fortune, promising his restauration, and that (for his sake) the King should be effectually crossed in his weightie businesse betwixt the Queene and him.

Wolsey writes to Rome.

The answere.

Hereupon the Cardinall began to take heart: and nothing doubting but that hee should againe bee aduanced, if not by the Kings consent, yet *volens nolens*, and against his will, made great preparation for his enstalment into his Archbishopricke at *Yorke*, which hee intended to solemnize with such magnificence and pompe, as the like before had neuer beene seene in that place. For which purpose he erected in that Cathedrall Church a stately seat, of an extraordinarie height, not much vnlike to a Kings Throne. He also wrote to the Nobles, Knights, and chiefest Gentlemen in the North, many fawning, flattering, and kinde letters, entreating and inuiting them at a prefixed day to accompanie him (at his Instalment) to the Citie of *Yorke*, where he prouided for them great cheere, not sparing any cost.

His pride.

The King (who was aduertised what he had written to *Rome*, and what answer was made thereunto, and perceiuing that he intended with extraordinarie pompe and state to be installed, for which his doings hee had no licence from his Maiestie) imagined (and

(and therein hee was not deceiued) that thoſe great preparations were made of purpoſe, and in an out-facing faſhion, to confront him.

Wolſey is arreſted.

Wherefore, to preuent his ſaid inſtalment, he ſent a commiſſion vnder his great Seale of *England*, whereby he required *Henrie* the ſixt Earle of *Northumberland*, to attach and to arreſt the body of the ſaid Cardinall, to bring him to the Caſtle of *Sheffield*, and there to deliuer him to the ſafe cuſtodie and keeping of the Earle of *Shrewsbury*, which he did: Although the Cardinall prowdly checked him, and told him that hee was a member of the College of Cardinals in *Rome*, and that neither the King, nor any other temporall Prince vnder heauen could, or ought to intermedle with him for any cauſe, or matter whatſoeuer. Yet for all this (aſſoone as he was gone) all his plate, goods, horſes, and houſhold ſtuffe were ſeiſed on to the Kings vſe: his Officers were diſcharged, and his Phiſitian Doctor *Auguſtine*, was by Sir *Walter Welſh*, one of the Kings chamber, convayed to the Tower.

His goods are attached.

Aſſoone as the King was informed of the executing of his commiſſion, he ſent Sir *William Kingſton*, the Captaine of his Gard, and Conſtable of the Tower, with certaine Yeomen of his Gard, to fetch the Cardinall to that priſon.

The ſight of this Meſſenger more danted and appaled the Cardinall then all the reſt: For now he was right well aſſured, that his head was in great danger. This feare made him to fall into a ſudden ſickneſſe, ſo that (purpoſely, as it was coniectured, to diſpatch himſelfe out of this life) hee tooke a purgatiõ, which was more ſtrong, then the weakneſſe of his nature could controll, by reaſon whereof he dyed two nights after.

He dyeth.

Thus liued, and thus died this Cardinall, who was Prowd and Ambitious, Wanton and Lecherous, Rich and Couetous, a Lyar and a Flatterer, a Tyrant and Mercileſſe: Forgetfull of his beginnings, Diſdainefull in his proſperitie, and wretched in his end: *Whoſe death made the King ioyfull, his Nobles iocund, and the People glad.*

His deſcription.

Hee being thus dead, the King by his Councell was informed, that all the Clergie of *England* were guiltie of the Premunire; becauſe (in all things) they had ſupported and maintayned the authoritie, and power Legantine of the Cardinall: Wherefore (to preuent a miſchiefe before it fell vpon them) They gaue to the King for their redemption, and for their pardon, the ſumme of one hundred thouſand pounds: And by a publike inſtrument in writing, ſubſcribed, and ſealed by all the Biſhops and Fathers of the Church,

The Clergie feared the Premunire.

100000 *pounds.*

The Kings Supremacie acknowledged.

Church, they plainly, voluntarily, and willingly acknowledged the King (within his owne Kingdomes and Dominions) to be the ſupreme Head of the Church, as well in all matters Eccleſiaſticall, as in all Temporall things and caſes whatſoeuer. Yet not long after the King diminiſhed their number and their ſtrength, as hereafter it ſhall appeare.

Opinions ſhewed.

The Cardinall being thus gone, the King intending nothing leſſe then to dance attendance in the Court at *Rome*, cauſed the ſaid inſtruments procured from ſo many Vniuerſities, together with the opinions of ſo many learned men, and of his two Vniuerſities of *Oxford* and of *Cambridge*, publikely to be ſhewed in both the houſes of his Parliament: which being done by diuers honourable Lords, both ſpirituall and temporall, he cauſed them to bee ſhewed to the Queene, and the queſtion to bee demanded of her, whether ſhe would relinquiſh her appeale to the See of *Rome*, and referre her ſelfe and her cauſe to any Nobles and Biſhops within this Kingdome? whoſe anſwere was, that ſhe would not: whereupon the King reſoluing in his conſcience, that his ſaid mariage was void in Law, began to bend his loue and kinde affections to a goodly, faire, and beautifull Ladie in his Court, named *Anne Bullen*. Her hee created a Marchioneſſe of *Pembroke*, and after tooke her to his wife. And ſome few moneths after, the Arch-biſhop of *Canterburie* (being accompanied with the Biſhops of *London*, *Bath*, *Lincolne*, and ſome others, together with diuers Doctors, Aduocates, Proctors, and Officers of the Eccleſiaſticall Court) repaired to *Dunſtable*, where the Princeſſe Dowager (for ſo ſhee was then called) lay. Her the Arch-biſhop peremptorily aſcited perſonally to appeare before him in a caſe of matrimonie: and the like he did for fifteene daies together. And then vpon the default and contumacie of the ſaid Princeſſe, the Arch-biſhop pronounced the ſaid mariage (being againſt the Law of God) to be meerely and vtterly void, the Popes diſpenſation notwithſtanding.

1531. 23. *The King marieth Anne Bullen.*

1532. 24. *The King is diuorced from Queene Katherine.*

1516. 8 *The Author returneth to the hiſtorie, which is interrupted by the relation & connecting together of the deeds and actions of Cardinall Wolſey.*

Hauing diſcourſed of all things memorable which were done by *Thomas Wolſey* Cardinall of *Yorke*, and concluded the contention touching the mariage of King *Henry* with Ladie *Katherine* his brothers wife, it will be very expedient and fitting that wee now returne to the narration of ſuch other things as are worthie to bee compriſed in this Storie, and which were done whileſt King *Henry* liued.

1517. 9 *A riot on Merchant ſtrangers.*

Firſt therefore we may vnderſtand, that in the end of the eighth yeare, and in the beginning of the ninth yeare of his raigne, the Citizens of *London* heartily hated ſuch Merchant ſtrangers and ſtrangers

ſtrangers Artificers as dwelt among them; partly becauſe by their great wealth and extraordinarie labour and induſtrie they tooke from them the greateſt meanes whereby they were to liue, and partly becauſe their riches made them ſo proud, that in deriſion and in ſcorne, priuately and publikely, they would depraue and abuſe the Citizens with many mockes and frumpes: ſo that they (being reſolued no longer to endure or to beare them) vpon May day many hundreds of them riotouſly aſſembled themſelues together, and with great outrage and violence rifled, robbed, and ranſacked the houſes and the ſhops of all ſtrangers, and intended to haue done more miſchiefe, if the prouident care and induſtrie of the Lord Maior and chiefeſt Citizens had not ſuppreſſed them. For ſome of the malefactors (by flying) ſhifted for themſelues, and many (who were moſt of all notoriouſly faultie) were committed to ſeuerall Gaoles and priſons; and being afterwards indicted, arraigned, and found guiltie, were condemned of high Treaſon, becauſe their iniurie and wrong tended to the breach of the League which was betwixt the King and their Soueraignes. Wherefore ſome of them were executed as Traitors, according to their iudgement; and the reſidue of them (being about foure hundred) were pardoned by the King, who in his owne perſon ſate in the Guild-hall of *London*. And then all things were againe ſetled in proſperitie and in peace.

Euill May day.

Treaſon.

1518. 10

The *French* King now longed to be againe owner of the faire Citie of *Tourney*, which by conqueſt was poſſeſſed by King *Henry*. Wherefore by his Ambaſſadors he not only deſired the ratification of the peace which was betwixt the King and him, but alſo a reſtitution of the ſaid Citie, for money to be vnto him paid. The King ſo louingly accepted of this meſſage, that forthwith the peace was confirmed, and further it was concluded, that for 60000. Crownes to be paid for the Towne, and for 400000. Crownes more to be paid for the Caſtle, which by King *Henry* was erected, and almoſt finiſhed, and for 24000. pounds ſterling to bee paid in diſcharge of a debt due and owing by the Citizens for the preſeruation and redemption of their Liberties, according to the compoſition and their owne agreement, the Towne and Caſtle ſhould be ſurrendred vp into the hands of the *French* King. Whereupon foure great hoſtages (for the true paiment of the ſaid ſummes of money at the appointed daies) were ſent ouer, and accepted by the King. And then the Earle of *Worceſter*, Sir *Edward Belknap*, and ſome others, were ſent ouer, who deliuered the Towne and Caſtle (according to both the ſaid Kings Commiſſions) to Monſieur

A peace with the French King.

Tourney is deliuered vp by compoſition.

Hoſtages.

ſieur *Chaſtilion*, who was not ſuffered to make his entrie with Banners diſplaied, but rolled vp, becauſe it was not wonne, nor conquered, but yeelded vp by compoſition.

The ſurrendring of this Citie was much diſliked by many wiſe and prudent men for two reaſons. Firſt, becauſe that the holding thereof was a curbe and a bridle to the *French* Nation. And ſecondly, becauſe the Garriſon of that place was a very profitable Nurſerie for the training vp of Gentlemen and younger brothers in feats of Armes, and in Martiall Diſcipline. 1. 2.

About the ſame time the Emperor *Maximilian* died, and *Charles* King of *Caſtile* (Nephew to Queene *Katherine*) was elected in his ſtead; who ſhortly after comming out of *Spaine* towards the Citie of *Acon*, where he was to receiue his firſt Crowne, came into *England*, and was with all pompe and princely magnificence welcommed and entertained by the King and Queene, to his good liking and contentment. *Maximilian dieth.* *Charles is elected Emperour.* *He commeth into England*

The Lords of the Counſell of Eſtate perceiuing that certaine Gentlemen of the Kings Priuie Chamber (who were the Kings Minions) were ſo much Frenchified, that they were ſcoffed and derided by all wiſe men, and that they were ouer-bold, ſaucie, and malapertly familiar with the King, to his great diſgrace, beſought his Maieſtie to reforme them and himſelfe therein. The King not only thanked them heartily for this their friendly admonition and fatherly care of his well-doing, but alſo referred to them the abſolute ordering and diſpoſing of thoſe metamorphized Gentlemen. Wherefore they baniſhed them from the Court, and placed in their roomes Sir *Richard Wingfield*, Sir *Richard Iernyngham*, Sir *Richard Weſton*, and Sir *William Kingſton*, who were diſcreet, temperate, and valiant men, of whom the King graciouſly accepted, and receiued them into his extraordinarie fauour. 1519. 11 *A rare example.* *A wiſe King.*

The King and Queene hauing made large and coſtly prouiſion for the meeting of the *French* King and Queene, according to promiſe, neere vnto *Arde*, ſhipped themſelues at *Douer*, and with their ſtately and honourable traine they landed at *Calice*, and afterwards effected their iourney in princely faſhion, as formerly in this diſcourſe it is more particularly ſet downe. 1520. 12 *The King and Queene ſaile into France.*

Within few daies after the King and Queenes returne from *Arde* vnto *Calice*, he with an honourable traine rode to the Towne of *Graueling* in the Low Countries, to ſee and to viſit the Emperour, and his great Aunt the Ladie *Margaret* Ducheſſe of *Sauoy*, by whom he was receiued with great familiaritie and bountie, and was by them both brought backe againe to *Calice*, where their welcome, *The King viſiteth the Emperour.* *They come to Calice.*

welcome, cheere, and entertainment farre exceeded meaſure and their owne deſires and expectation. But this exchange of loue and of kindneſſe greeued the *French* King at the heart, who was inwardly diſpleaſed and reuengefull, becauſe he practiſed, but could not be elected Emperour according to his hopes. Yet becauſe he could flatter and diſſemble, therefore he ſent vnto them the Lord *de la Roch*, not only to congratulate for former courteſies receiued, but alſo to conclude a peace betwixt them three, which for his part he neuer intended to obſerue. But the peace was fully agreed vnto, with this condition, that he who firſt made breach thereof, ſhould be warred on by the other two.

The French King is angrie.

A peace.

A condition.

1521. 13 *The Duke of Buckinghams ouerthrow.*

Not long after the Kings returne into *England*, he was ſecretly informed (and it was true) that by a Monke the haughtie and ambitious Duke of *Buckingham* was much abuſed in this, that hee was by him perſwaded, and did beleeue, that he ſhould be the King of this Realme, which could not be, but by vſurpation, and the confuſion of the Kings royall perſon. And this conceit ſo pleaſed him, that he now and then would babble and reueale it to ſome of his inward and familiar friends, and ſome of them diſcouered it, to his deſtruction and vtter ouerthrow. Likewiſe this hope framed him to a more ambitious courſe in his cariage, and made him negligent of his ſeruice and dutie to the King; inſomuch that his Maieſtie, by his Letters, required him with all conuenient expedition (priuately) to repaire vnto the Court. But as he was in his Barge vpon the *Thames*, hee was by Sir *Henry Marney* Captaine of the Kings Guard (who had with him an hundred of the Kings Yeomen ſubiect to his command) attached and arreſted of high treaſon, and as a priſoner conueied to the Tower. And being afterwards legally and according to the due forme of Law indicted by ſundrie Knights and Gentlemen, for that (as much as in him lay) he had conſpired and contriued the Kings death, to make himſelfe his ſucceſſour, hee was brought to a Barre at *Weſtminſter* Hall, before the Duke of *Norfolke*, high Steward of *England*, and his chiefeſt Iudge. And hauing holden vp his hand, he was arraigned of treaſon vpon the ſaid indictment, and pleaded thereunto that hee was not guiltie, and did referre himſelfe for his triall to God and to his Peeres, who were theſe, the Duke of *Suffolke*, the Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, the Earles of *Oxford*, *Deuon*, *Darbie*, *Shrewesburie*, *Eſſex*, *Worceſter*, and *Kent*, and the Lords *De la Ware*, *Fitz-Warren*, *Willoughbie*, *Harbert*, *Cobham*, *Brooke*, and *Morley*. Theſe Noble men, in the preſence of the Priſoner, had witneſſes face to face, (who were all priſoners for concealments of the ſame offence) and depoſition

ſition in writing; which when they had done, they aroſe from the Bench, retired into a priuate roome, and after a ſhort abſence returned againe to their places: and the Duke of *Buckingham* being againe brought vnto the Barre, the ſaid Lords, one by one, proteſted with great ſolemnitie, and proteſtations on their honour, that they thought him to bee guiltie, according to the indictment. And thereupon the Lord high Steward, with many teares, pronounced againſt him that iudgement which againſt meaner offenders in that nature is giuen. Whereupon hee was taken from the Barre, and hauing an Axe borne before him, with the edge thereof turned towards him, becauſe he had his iudgement to die, he was conueied by water to the Temple ſtaires, and was there receiued on land by Sir *Nicholas Vaux* and Sir *William Sands*, both Baronets, who conducted him thorow the Citie of *London* to the Tower: and within two or three daies after he was beheaded on a Scaffold at the Tower Hill.

About the ſame time the King himſelfe wrote and publiſhed in the Latine tongue a booke againſt *Martin Luthers* Aſſertions, Diſputes, and Argumentes, touching Indulgences and the Sacraments of the Church; for which cauſe he was by the Pope enſtiled *Defenſor Fidei*, *Defender of the Faith*. Yet ſome doe affirme that he was ſo entituled in requitall of the aide and ſuccour which by the gift of exceſſiue ſummes of money (when he and his Cardinals were priſoners to the Emperour) was extended to him and them.

The King writeth againſt Martin Luther.

Defenſor Fidei.

1522. 14

We haue alreadie heard, how that Cardinall *Wolſey*, being ſent to *Calice*, to ratifie, and to confirme the Peace, which not long before was concluded there betwixt the Emperor & the two Kings, did therein little good. And wee muſt now know, that the firſt breach of that peace was made by the *French* King, who began to warre ſharply on the Emperor, both by Sea and Land: And becauſe he ſuſpected that King *Henrie* (partly for affinities ſake, and partly by reaſon of the condition of part-taking, annexed to the ſaid peace) did ſecretly ſide with the Emperor againſt him, therefore he dealt thus vnkindly with King *Henrie*.

The French King firſt breaketh the peace.

1 Firſt of all (contrarie to his faith and promiſe) hee ſent *Iohn* Duke of *Albanie* into *Scotland*, to raiſe new warres, and many miſchiefs againſt this Realme, to the end, that the King might not haue any leiſure to ioyne with the Emperour, and to make warre vpon him.

The French King wrongeth King Henry.

2 Secondly, he detayned and kept from the King, that yearely Tribute, which for *Normandie*, *Aquitaine*, and other the Kings inheritance

heritance in thoſe Countries, was due and payable by the Kings of *France*.

3 Thirdly, contrarie to his promiſe, and ſafe conduct giuen to the Marchants of *England*, no warre betwixt the two Kings being proclaimed, he ſeiſed on all their wares, and marchandizes in *Burdeaux*, and committed them to priſon.

4 Fourthly, vpon the Seas he riffled, robbed, and ſpoiled the Marchants of *England* daily; and vpon complaints promiſed liberall reſtitution, but made none.

5 Fiftly, he refuſed to pay to Queen *Mary*, Dowager of *France*, her yearly penſion, contrarie to the agreement made betwixt king *Henrie*, and the whole eſtate of *France*.

6 And laſt of all (neglecting his Hoſtages, and making a wilfull breach of his promiſe) he would not pay thoſe ſummes of money which were concluded to be paid, for the ſurrendring and yeelding vp of the Citie and Caſtle of *Tourney* into his hands.

1. *King Henries courſe for requitall.*

Theſe iniuries and wrongs, firſt of all procured the King to make generall Muſters through his whole kingdome, and then to apparell, prouide, and furniſh his Nauie Royall, and to commit them to the charge and gouernment of the Earle of *Surrey*, his high Admirall, the ſcourger of the *French* King for all his faults. To him hee gaue ample and large commiſſion, to vexe, and to annoy the *French* King, and his Subiects, both by Sea and Land.

2. He alſo reſtrained the *French* Embaſſador of his libertie, not permitting him to goe abroad without his leaue.

3. He alſo cauſed the marchandizes, wares, goods, and money of all *Frenchmen* within his kingdome (not being Denizens) to be attached to his owne vſe.

4. Alſo hee committed their bodies to Gaoles, and Priſons, vſing them in the like ſort, as his Subiects, and Marchants, were miſvſed in *France*.

A French Armie vaniſheth.

King *Henrie* (being informed that the *French* King hauing leuied an Armie, houered vp and downe, neare vnto the marches of *Calice*) to preuent danger, and to meet with him at all aſſaies, ſent many thouſands of gallant, and braue Souldiers, to the Sea, which were by the Admirall receiued into his Fleet, ſo that (vpon any occaſion or neede) they might quickly bee ſet on land. But when they perceiued that *Calice* was not in any hazard, for that the *French* Armie was vaniſhed and diſſolued: then the Admirall (becauſe he loathed to be idle) landed many of his men vpon the coaſt of *Brittaine*, and with great confidence and reſolution, conducted them to *Morleys*, where (a principall gate of the Citie being

Morleys taken & burnt.

ing battered and beaten open with ſome great ſhot) the braue *Engliſh* men boldly entred in, riffled, ranſacked, and ſpoiled the town, and by the cõmandement of the Admirall, they conſumed it with fire, & razed it to the ground. This ſeruice was by diuers Gentlemen ſo gallantly performed, that in honour thereof the Admirall dignified with the honour of Knighthood, theſe worthy Gentlemen, *Francis Brian*, *Iohn Ruſſel*, *Anthonie Browne*, *Iohn Rainsford*, *George Cobham*, *Giles Huſſey*, *Richard Cornwal*, *Iohn Cornwallis*, *Thomas Moore*, and ſome others. And daily other braue and warlike exploits, were ſtill made and performed in *Brittaine*, neare vnto the Sea coaſts: Of which it will be too tedious to make particular relation, neither will wee much buſie our ſelues with the diſcourſe of ſuch things as hapned betwixt the Emperour, and the *French* king, in their warres; becauſe they doe not properly belong to the Hiſtorie of this kingdome.

The Scots are troubleſome.

The King (who was informed that the Duke of *Albanie* intended to invade the Northren marches of his Realme) commanded the Lord *Roos.* and the Lord *Dacres* of the South (by an anticipating warre) to enter into the Borders of *Scotland*, with a ſlight Armie, which they did, and burnt foureſcore Hamblets, Villages, and Townes, razed, and deſtroyed diuers Caſtles, Bulwarkes, and Towers; forraged their fields, and without any encounter returned into *England*. The King likewiſe made the Earle of *Shrewsbury* Lieftenant generall of the North, whoſe charge was, to make ſtrong prouiſion, to withſtand all ſodaine invaſions, which the *Scots* ſhould attempt to make.

Another Armie ſent into France.

And likewiſe, hee leuied an Armie of twelue thouſand men, which hee commended to the Gouernement of the Admirall, for the ſupply and maintenance of his warres in *France*.

Priuie ſeales.

Thus the King, being daily imployed, and wanting money to defray his charge; by way of loan vpon priuie Seales, hee borrowed of the Citie of *London* twentie thouſand pounds. And of many others great ſummes of money; In all Shires and Prouinces within his kingdome, whereat his Subiects much grieued: But afterwards they were much more diſpleaſed thereat, becauſe the ſaid loanes by an Act of Parliament, were clearely releaſed to the King. And yet for all this, *Wolſey* (by ſtrange commiſſions, and by other vnlawfull meanes, without the Kings conſent or notice) endeuoured to raiſe, and to leauie more money, as formerly wee haue heard.

They are releaſed.

Braue ſeruice in France.

The Admirall, who (maugre his Enemies, hauing landed his Armie at *Callice*) Marched from thence, and

paſſed in good order of Battaile ouer *Newnam* Bridge, waſting, ſpoiling, burning, and ranſacking ſundrie Townes, Villages, Caſtles, and Forts; as namely *Selloys*, *Brunbridge*, *Senkerke*, *Frynge*, *Blanioy*, *Dorlans*, and other places as they paſſed by) ſo terrified the people, that they would not abide his fight. And in thoſe ſeruices theſe Gentlemen (as chiefe Captaines, and worthie of the beſt praiſe) are principally to be noted, Sir *William Sands*, Sir *William Fitz-William*, Sir *Maurice Barkley*, Sir *Iohn Wallop*, Sir *Richard Iernyngham*, Captaine *Coo*, and Captaine *Thwayts*. The three former of them (among other imploiments) were by the Admirall ſent with three thouſand men to the ſtrong Towne of *Marquiſon*, which was newly builded, fortified, and well defended for a while. But at length they tooke it, ranſacked it, and vtterly conſumed it with fire. The like they did at the Townes of *S. Iohns Rhode*, and *Temple*, and with great ſpoiles returned to their Generall. Then all the Armie being collected, the Admirall marched vnto *Calice*, and brought thither with him 14000. Sheepe, 1400. Oxen and Kine, 1300. Hogges, and 700. Horſes, Geldings, and Mares. And then hee commended and rewarded his ſouldiers, diſſolued his Armie, and with great honour, and in the eſpeciall fauour of his Soueraigne, he returned into *England*.

Chiefe Gentlemen of ſeruice.

A great booty.

Whileſt theſe things were thus ordered in *France*, the Kings profeſſed enemie, *Iohn* Duke of *Albanie*, Protector to the young King, and of his Realme, by the procurement of the *French* King, leuied a great Armie, purpoſing with fire and ſword to haue entred into the Weſt Marches of *England*. But the Lord *Dacres*, and the Lord *Roos*, and many other Knights and Gentlemen, hauing carefully prouided and wel furniſhed an Armie of eight and twentie thouſand men, to make head againſt him; and likewiſe the Earle of *Shrewesburie* hauing leuied another Armie of great ſtrength, and appearing boldly into the *Scots* ſight, the *Scots* began wiſely to doubt of their ſucceſſe, and the rather becauſe the moſt of them knew not the cauſe or ground of that quarrell, and therefore would not fight, but (leauing to aſſiſt their Captaine) they returned home, and were not purſued by the *Engliſh*, who by their Commiſſion were not authorized to inuade, but to defend themſelues.

The Scots inuade.

They will not fight.

1523. 15 The next yeare, *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolke*, was ſent to *Calice* with an Armie of thirteene thouſand men, with which he marched forth, burning, ſpoiling, & foraging without compaſſion, vntill he came to the ſtrong Caſtle of *Bell*, which (after many gallant and braue aſſaults) was yeelded, and razed to the ground.

The Duke of Suffolke warreth in France.

Bell Caſtle.

Thither

Thither repaired to the Dukes Armie, as ſeruants to the Emperour, three thouſand footmen, and fiue hundred horſemen, being *Burgundians*, *Flemings*, and of their neighbouring Nations: all which beſieged the ſtrong Towne of *Bray*, which was well fortified, and furniſhed with goodly Ordinance, and with two thouſand men. This Towne they tooke, not by compoſition, but by aſſault. But becauſe the *Frenchmen* themſelues had firſt fired it, and were runne away, the *Engliſhmen* and their friends (beſides the winning of it) receiued ſmall commoditie thereby.

Aide from the Emperor.

Bray.

Then with vndaunted courage they paſſed ouer the Riuer of *Some* into *France*: and to them (vpon ſeuerall ſummons) were yeelded vp the Townes of *Roy* and *Lyhome*. But they were compelled to beſiege the warlike Towne of *Mount dedyer*, in which were two thouſand men, and fiue hundred horſe. This Towne they daily battered with the continuall ſhot of their great Ordinance, ſo that it was made aſſaultable, and then the *Frenchmen* (vpon compoſition to depart with bagge, baggage, and with their Armes) yeelded the Towne to the Dukes forces, in which there was exceeding plentie of coſtly linnen, arras, tapeſtrie, bedding, and of choice houſhold ſtuffe. Afterwards they tooke the Caſtle of *Boghan*, which (had not the Mariſhes beene exceſſiuely hardned by a continuall froſt) was not acceſſable, nor pregnable by any ſtrength. This Caſtle they razed to the ground, becauſe it was not commodious to their ſeruice.

Roy.

Lyhome.

Mount dedyer.

Boghan.

Theſe atchieuements being thus manfully and honourably performed, the *Engliſh* ſouldiers (by reaſon of the extremitie of the weather, and the ſharpneſſe of the Winter, long nights, and ſhort daies) were altogether vnwilling to proceed any further at that time, and the rather for theſe two other cauſes: Firſt, for that the Duke of *Burbon* (who was reuolted from the *French* King to the Emperour) came not (according to his promiſe) to the Dukes Armie with ten thouſand men, but applied them about *Marcelles*, and by them they had no helpe. And ſecondly, becauſe the *Burgundians*, *Flemings*, and their companions, hauing Carts, Waggons, and other carriages, and being neere vnto their owne Countries, tooke and were able to carrie away the greater and the better part of all their ſpoiles, and yet they would ſeldome fight, as the *Engliſhmen* were compelled and enforced to doe. The Duke (not knowing what allowance the King would giue to the diſſoluing of the Armie without his conſent) ſent the Lord *Sands* and Sir *Richard Ierningham* to the King, to informe him of the ſtate of his Armie, and alſo to know his pleaſure touching the breaking of it

Engliſh ſouldiers returne without leaue of the Generall.

1.

2.

vp. But the King would not in any ſort aſſent to their returne, but prepared the Lord *Mountioy* with an Armie of 6000. men, money, and ſtore of victuals, and of other neceſſaries, to haſten vnto their aide. But before the returne of thoſe two meſſengers, the ſouldiers (without the Dukes leaue) wilfully departed home thorow *Burgundie* and *Flanders*. And becauſe the greater number of them had ſo done, therefore the Duke was compelled to breake vp his whole Armie; whereat the King was highly diſpleaſed for a while: but at length (finding the Duke and chiefeſt Captaines faultleſſe) they returned home, and were by his Maieſtie receiued into his eſpeciall grace and fauour.

The Armie is diſſolued.

The Scots are againe buſie.

Whileſt the Duke of *Suffolke* was thus buſied in *France*, the Duke of *Albanie* raiſed another Armie of 80000. men. But to reſiſt and to fight with them, the Lord Admirall and Treaſurer of *England* marched forth with an Armie of fortie thouſand. But the *Scots* (not well enduring the ſight of ſuch powerfull and well appointed enemies) preſently ran away, and would not ſtrike one ſtroke. And had the Earles commiſſion beene enlarged, and giuen them leaue to haue followed them into their owne Countrie, vndoubtedly the *Scots* had receiued a fatall blow at that time: but by quicke meſſage, the Queene of *Scots* (who was the Kings eldeſt ſiſter) againe obtained a truce: ſo that in the meane time a triall might be made, whether a peace woulde be concluded, and agreed on, or no. Betwixt the Marches of *Bulleyn*, and of *Calice*, diuers feats of Armes were euermore valiantly performed for honors ſake: in which, ſometimes the vanquiſhed were againe victors, and ſuch as preuailed now, were by and by ouercome.

A truce.

1524.
16

The Duke of *Albanie* perceiuing, that the Nobilitie of *Scotland* would no longer endure, that hee (being a *Frenchman* borne, and (next to the King) the inheritor of that Crowne) ſhould haue the rule and gouernement of their King and Countrie: Feared, leaſt any miſchiefe might befall him, or leaſt by ſome deuiſe, he ſhould be deliuered to the King: Wherefore hee ſecretly fled into *France*, vpon whoſe departure, much peace and quietneſſe enſued betwixt the King and that kingdome. For the Queene and Nobles of the Realme of *Scotland*, by their Embaſſadors deſired Peace: And that the Ladie *Marie* (who was then the only daughter of King *Henrie*, and Heire apparant to his Crowne) might be giuen in mariage to *Iames* their yong King. To this motion, it was anſwered: that touching the ſaid Peace (if honorable and fit conditions might be propoſed and concluded) the King would willingly aſſent thereto: But concerning the other point of their demaund, hee ſaid: That hee

The Duke of Albanie forſaketh Scotland.

The Scots deſire peace.

hee was not yet reſolued how to diſpoſe of his ſaid daughter, for that ſhee was but yong: yet in the end a peace was aſſented vnto, and proclaymed in both thoſe Realmes.

The Emperours Regent craueth peace.

Likewiſe the Ladie *Margaret*, Duches of *Sauoy*, and great Aunt to the Emperour, and (in his abſence) the Gouernour of the Low Countries, by her Embaſſadours, propoſed to his Maieſtie theſe requeſts.

1. Firſt, that the Lady *Marie*, his daughter, might bee giuen in mariage to the Emperour, who longed for her with his beſt affections, and reſpected her with his heartie loue.

2. Secondly, that (becauſe the Emperour intended to giue vnto her for her Dowrie, the Provinces of the Low Countries) his deſire was, that forthwith ſhee might be ſent thether to officiate the Protectorſhip of them in his abſence.

3. Thirdly, that ſuch ſummes of money as the King intended to giue vnto her as her mariage portion, might preſently bee diſburſed for the maintenance of the Emperors warres.

4. And laſt of all, that the King himſelfe would be pleaſed (in his owne perſon) the next ſpring to enter with a Royall Armie into *France*, vpon the territories of the *French* King, who (in contempt of them both) did diuers iniuries and wrongs vnto their Subiects, and had made the firſt breach of the Peace, which was concluded, and by their oathes confirmed betwixt them three.

The French deſire to renew the peace

But, becauſe King *Henrie* was ſecretly diſpleaſed with the Emperor, for that he (by the raiſing and enhauncing of the prices and value of this gold, and other coines, within the Prouinces of the Low Countries) had politikely drawne the greateſt part of his money out of this Realme, and in ſome other things, had not reſpected him, as his inleagued friend, therefore hee only returned thanks for a faſhions ſake: but made anſwere, That his daughter was too yong to be maried to the Emperour, and was (as yet) vnfit to be coupled with any Prince.

At the ſame time alſo, the *French* King, by his Embaſſadours, deſired, that the ſaid Ladie might bee eſpouſed to his ſonne the Dolphin. And that the former peace (betwixt the King and him) might be renewed, and reviued, during both their liues.

Theſe his motions (to ſpeake truly) were beſt receiued and digeſted, and were moſt likely to haue taken place, if the *French* king himſelfe, and his children, had not (ſhortly after) beene taken priſoners, by the Duke of *Burbons* Armie, and by the Marques of *Peſcarie*, as he lay at the ſiege of *Pauia*, where he loſt fourteen thouſand men, and was defeated: although he had then in his Armie almoſt fiftie thouſand men.

Among

The King in danger of death.

Among theſe friendly motions for peace and mariages, an euill chance hapned to the King. For one day, as he hawked for his recreation and delight, hee offered to leap ouer a wide and a watrie ditch, but his ſtaffe brake in ſunder, and his head pitched faſt into the clay; ſo that hee had aſſuredly dyed there, if a footman of his owne, named *Edmund Moody*, had not quickly plucked his head out of the dirt.

About this time dyed the moſt Noble, and Victorious, *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolke*, and was honourably buried at *Thetford* in his owne Countrie.

1525. 17. *Noble men created.*

The King (who for a long time had wantonly converſed with a beautifull, and a laſciuious Gentlewoman of his Court, named *Elizabeth Blunt*) begate on her a ſonne, who by the King was called *Henrie Fitz Roy*: This yong Gentleman (being now of the age of ſixe yeares) was by the King created Earle of *Nottingham*, and forthwith Duke of *Richmond*. And at the ſame time the Lord *Henrie Courtney*, Coſen german to the King, was made Marques of *Exeter*: the Lord *Henrie Brandon*, the eldeſt ſonne of the Duke of *Suffolke*, and of the *French* Queene *Marie* his wife (being but two yeares old) was created Earle of *Lincolne*. Sir *Thomas Manners* Lord *Roos*, was made Earle of *Rutland*: and Sir *Henrie Clifford* was created Earle of *Cumberland*: and Sir *Robert Ratclife*, Lord *Fitz Water*, was made Earle of *Suſſex*: and Sir *Thomas Bullein*, the Treaſurer of the Kings houſhold, was made Lord *Rochford*: And thus, in regard of great ſeruices honorably performed, the king requited them with ſuch honours, as were anſwerable to their deſerts and callings.

The French were humble to ſerue their owne turnes.

The Queene Regent of *France* (foreſeeing what preſent miſery was likely to ruinate that Eſtate and Kingdome, if in time by carefull prouidence it were not preuented) ſent Monſieur de *Bryond*, chiefe Preſident of *Paris*, and ſome other Lords, Ambaſſadors into *England*: who not only (according to their commiſſion) in a moſt ſubmiſſiue and an humble ſort confeſſed the iniuries, and the wrongs done by the *French* Nation, to King *Henry*, and to his ſubiects, both by ſea and land, in the abſence of King *Francis*, but (for a requitall and ſatisfaction thereof) and for the arrerage of his tribute, they made offer to pay vnto the King the ſumme of twenty hundred thouſand crownes, whereof fiftie thouſand pounds ſterling ſhould be paid in hand, and fitting ſecuritie ſhould bee giuen for the reſt: they alſo promiſed the continuance of the ſaid tribute, and aſſumed to pay Queene *Marie* her dowrie, and all the arrerages thereof, if the King would grant them peace, and receiue them into his loue and fauour.

The

Peace concluded.

The King and his Counſel hauing ſeriouſly conſidered of theſe motions and large offers (for many important cauſes) aſſented to their requeſts, and cauſed thoſe his concluſions and agreements to be proclaimed ſolemnely, both in *England* and in *France*, and receiued both money and good ſecuritie accordingly.

1526. 18 *Warres betweene the King Henry and Emperor*

But betwixt King *Henrie* and his nephew the Emperour (by the ſubtill practiſes and craftie jugglings of *Thomas Wolſey*, Cardinall of *Yorke*) warres were denounced with euill termes, but little or nothing was done thereon, ſauing that in *England*, *Spaine*, and in the Low-Countries, the Merchants of either Nation, and their goods and ſubſtance were attached, to the infinite loſſe and damage of them all: but vpon ſeuerall truces oftentimes concluded, and againe broken, they were releaſed, and againe arreſted; whereby the ancient ſaying of the Poet was truly verified:

Merchants vexed.

Quicquid Delirant Reges, Plectuntur Achiui:
When Princes iarre, and for reuenge doe ſeeke,
The meaner ſort muſt pay for their diſlike.

But in this place we muſt now obſerue, That in regard of thoſe often concluded truces, and in regard of the peace which vnited the kingdomes of *England*, *France* and *Scotland* in one minde; little or nothing worthie of our diſcourſe (more then hath formerly beene written) hapned in ſixe of the next enſuing yeares, for the greater part of that time was ſpent and conſumed in debatings, enquirings, ordering, handling, and diſpoſing of the buſineſſe of the Kings marriage with the Ladie *Katherine* of *Spaine*, ſometime his brothers wife.

1532. 24 *The Popes authoritie curbed.*

And now the King (who in a manner was wholly guided and directed by the priuate aduice and counſell of his chiefe fauorite, *Thomas Cromwel* (ſomtimes ſeruant to Cardinall *Wolſey*) whom he had made a Baron, and a Counſeller of State, proceeded daily more and more to diminiſh, nay (by ſucceeding degrees) clearely and abſolutely to abrogate, and to make voide the claimed power and authoritie of the Pope within this Realme. In ſo much, that in his Parliament he procured it to be enacted for a law, That the penaltie of the Premunire ſhould bee inflicted vpon the bodies, lands and goods of euery ſuch perſon, as for any matter, thing, or cauſe whatſoeuer, appealed to the See of *Rome*, or did procure from thence any Proceſſe, Citation, Inhibition, Suſpenſion, Sentence, or Iudgement whatſoeuer.

And in the next Seſſion of the ſame Parliament (to pleaſe, and to

to content him) the whole Clergie of this kingdom freely ſubmitted themſelues to the King, touching their Spirituall and Eccleſiaſticall affaires and buſines: and the Pope was vtterly depriued of all Annates and firſt fruits; which formerly for Biſhoprickes, and other ſpirituall promotions and dignities, had vſually been payed vnto him: and likewiſe to eſtabliſh and to confirme the lawfulnes of his marriage with Queene *Anne*, and to ſettle the inheritance of his Crowne vpon her iſſue: he procured it by Parliament to bee enacted, That his former mariage with his brothers wife was abſolutely void, and of none effect in Law, becauſe it was contrarie to the Law of God, and that the Popes diſpenſation had none effect or power to make it good: and by the ſame Act, the Crowne of this kingdome was entailed to the King, and to his heires of his bodie (out of which the Ladie *Marie* was incluſiuely excluded) and to this Act all the Lords & Burgeſſes there preſent, were particularly ſworne, ſauing Doctor *Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, and Sir *Thomas Moore* Knight (ſometimes Chancellor of *England*) who ſome few yeares before diſliking the Kings proceeding againſt Queene *Katherine*, and againſt the authoritie and iuriſdiction of the Pope, had deliuered vp the great Seale of *England* into the kings hands. Theſe two not only refuſed to ſweare, as the reſt did; but publikely conteſted, and proteſted, againſt the ſaid Act of Parliament, which nullified the kings ſaid firſt mariage, by reaſon of the Popes diſpenſation giuen to inable the ſame, and to make it lawfull. For which cauſes the ſaid Biſhop, and Knight, were ſent vnto the Tower, where they remayned, vntill (as Traitors) they loſt their heads, for denying of the kings Supremacie in Eccleſiaſticall things and cauſes, and attributing it to the Pope of *Rome*: of which the kings ſupremacie a Statute was made in Parliament the next yeare after.

The Kings marriage made voide.

The Crowne entaile d.

B. Fiſher.

Sir Thomas Moore.

They are beheaded.

About this time, diuers treaſonable practizes (by malicious and lewd Conſpirators) were ſurmiſed and intimated to haue beene intended, and contriued, againſt the kings perſon, by the Lord *Dacres* of the North. And thereupon he was Indicted and arraigned; but the guiltleſſe and well affected Lord (with ſuch a temperate boldneſſe, and with ſuch a modeſt courage) ſo diſcreetly, and ſo wiſely defended his innocencie, againſt thoſe falſe ſuggeſters, that he was freely acquited, and diſcharged, from all ſuſpition, and from all blame. But (by the whole Parliament) *Elizabeth Burton* (nick named the *holy maid of Kent*) and her Companions in miſchiefe (who vnder an hipocriticall ſhew and ſhadow of Religious deuotion, and of holineſſe, had conſpired the Kings death) being attainted

The Lord Dacres.

The holy maid of Kent

tainted and condemned, were executed as Traitors according to their deserts.

1534. 26 *The Supremacie of the King.*

The next yeare the King in Parliament was made and acknowledged to be the supreme head of the Church within all his Countries and Dominions, in all Spirituall and Ecclesiasticall things and causes: and the Popes Bulles, Pardons, Indulgences, and other Instruments of the like nature, were vtterly banished, frustrated, made void, and of none effect, validitie, or force, concerning the King and his Subiects. And likewise the First Fruits and Tenths of all Benefices and Ecclesiasticall dignities and promotions were in the same Parliament giuen and granted to the King, and to his heires and successors for euer.

1535. 27 *Queen Anne Bulleine beheaded.*

And not long after, Queene *Anne* (sometimes the Kings dearest wife) was beheaded; yet innocently, as at her death shee religiously protested, and as all men present did beleeue, for that it was vniustly surmised, and falsly testified, that she had incestuously conuersed with and prostituted her bodie to the Lord *Rochford*, her owne brother, who likewise (with some others) receiued the like sentence, and were put to death.

Execution.

This Tragedie being thus ended, the King (within twentie daies after) maried a vertuous and a faire Gentlewoman, whose name was *Iane*, the daughter of Sir *Iohn Seymor* Knight, who bare vnto him a goodly Prince, named *Edward*, who succeeded, and was King. But within few daies after his birth the good Queene died.

The King marieth.

We haue formerly heard, that *Iames* the Fourth, King of *Scots*, was slaine at *Flodden* Field. And wee must now know, that Queene *Margaret* his wife, being the eldest sister of King *Henry*, was maried afterwards vnto *Archibald Douglas* Earle of *Angus*, who by her had a daughter named *Margaret*. This Ladie, the Lord *Howard* (without the Kings notice or consent) tooke to wife; for which vnaduised boldnesse and offence (she being of the bloud royall) he was condemned as a Traitor, and lost his head.

The Lord Th. Howard is beheaded.

The King, who within his owne Territories and Dominions daily furthered his owne intentions to abrogate the authoritie, power, and iurisdiction of the Bishop of *Rome*, procured it by Parliament to be enacted, that thirtie and two such persons spirituall and temporall as his Maiestie should vnder his great Seale nominate and appoint, should haue authoritie and power to make and establish Lawes and Ordinances Ecclesiasticall, which should binde the Subiects of this Kingdome. And by the same Parliament all religious houses, whose possessions in yearly reuenue exceeded not the summe of two hundred pounds, were suppressed and dissolued,

The 32. Commissioners.

Petit houses of Religion suppressed.

ſolued, and all their ſcites and poſſeſſions what ſoeuer were giuen for euer to the King.

The booke of Articles.

The Clergie alſo (at the ſame time, of their owne accord, and to inſinuate themſelues into grace and fauour with the King) compoſed and publiſhed in printed bookes, certaine Articles for the ordering and gouerning of the Church, in which mention was made of three Sacraments only : and the reſt of them (which former times ſuperſtitiouſly receiued and did maintaine) were left out of the ſaid bookes.

A rebellion in Lincolnſhire.

Theſe proceedings of the King and Clergie againſt the Pope and holy Church, were ſo generally diſliked by the rude, ignorant, and wilfull people, that in many places their lauiſh tongues were witneſſes of their inward griefe and diſcontent, ſo that they publikely affirmed, that the Kings Counſell irreligiouſly and abſurdly aduiſed and directed him amiſſe, and that the ſoothing, ſmoothing, and temporizing Clergie of this Land, prophanely and wickedly practiſed by all meanes poſſible to extinguiſh all deuotion, and vtterly to ſubuert the ancient rites, ceremonies, and commendable gouernment of the Church. And in madde humour, and franticke faſhion, the rude and vnrulie people in *Lincolnſhire*, to the number of 20000. aſſembled themſelues in armes, taking vpon themſelues to frame and to deuiſe better orders for the gouerning of the Church and Common-weale.

The King marcheth againſt the Rebels.

The King (who ſcorned to be thus checked by his owne Vaſſals, and loathing to proue himſelfe a coward at home, ſeeing that forraine Nations had found him to be valiant and full of courage) leuied a ſtrong and a puiſſant Armie, with which (in his owne perſon) he marched with princely magnanimitie againſt thoſe rebellious people, who (as he drew towards them) by their petition craued a reformation of thoſe things which lately had beene done and concluded againſt Religious Houſes, and againſt the former and ancient gouernment of the Church ; which things being conſented and yeelded to, they ſolemnly proteſted their humble dutie and ſeruice to the King.

The Rebels petition.

The King is ſtout.

But hee (who highly diſdained that ſuch plaine Swads and ruſticke people ſhould preſume to giue inſtructions vnto him, and vnto his whole Clergie and Court of Parliament, in matters ſo farre aboue their vnderſtanding and capacitie) reiected their petition, and reſolued (by an exemplarie courſe of iuſtice, to be by the ſword martially vſed in the open Field) to puniſh and to correct them, except one hundred of thoſe their chiefeſt Conſpirators might be ſent and deliuered abſolutely into his hands. This reſolution

lution and quicke demand ſo appalled the fainting hearts of the rude and headleſſe multitude, that they (ſuſpecting each other of being to be ſent vnto the King) forſooke the Field, and with all ſpeed reſorted to their owne houſes. But Captaine *Cobler* (their chiefeſt Ring-leader being indeed Doctor *Makarell*) with ſome others, were ſhortly after apprehended, and executed according to their merits and deſerts.

The Rebels flie.
Captaine Cobler.
Execution.

The King (who now ſuppoſed that all things had beene ſettled in a ſure and in a firme peace) was ſuddenly informed of another Inſurrection in the North, and that their greeuance was grounded vpon the ſame points, and that the number of thoſe Rebels exceeded the number of 40000. men, who termed themſelues the *Holy Pilgrims*, who intended nothing but the eſtabliſhing of true Religion, and the reformation of great abuſes, which defaced the gouernment of the Church.

A rebellion in the North.

The holy Pilgrims.

To encounter theſe men, and to correct their braine-ſicke humour and fooliſh madneſſe, the King appointed the two Dukes of *Norfolke* and of *Suffolke*, and ſome other Lords, with a ſtrong and well appointed Armie, to march againſt them with all ſpeed. And the Rebels (expreſſing much ioy becauſe they were to fight) came neere vnto the Dukes Armie, and before them expreſſed many ſignes and tokens of vndaunted courage and deſperate boldneſſe. But in the night before the two Armies intended to haue ioined together in handie ſtrokes, a little brooke which ranne betwixt them, and which with a drie foot might the day before haue beene paſſed ouer, grew ſo outragiouſly great and violent, by the fall of immoderate and continuall ſhowres of raine, that the Armies could not meet as they determined. This miraculous pitie, and this mercifull compaſſion, which by Almightie God himſelfe was immediately extended towards his people for the preſeruation of their liues, ſo effectually wrought in the hearts and mindes of the two Armies, that (vpon the faithfull promiſe of the two Dukes, that the Kings free and ample pardon ſhould remit and acquite them all) the Rebels left the Field, and quietly departed to their owne houſes. And thus was this Kingdome and Commonweale deliuered the ſecond time without blowes, from as great danger and perill as at any time before had threatned the ruine and deſtruction of the people of this Land. By meanes whereof the King waxed more abſolute and more ſtrong in his gouernment then he was in former times, eſpecially concerning his Clergie, and the ordering of the Church, wherein hee diſpoſed of all things (vncontrolled) according to his owne will.

The Kings Armie.

A ſtrange accident.

The Rebels quietly doe depart home.

A third rebellion.

Yet as a lightning, ſo on a ſudden in *Weſtmerland Thomas Tilbie* and *Nicholas Muſgraue*, with ſome others, (for the oncly cauſes aboue mentioned, and for none other) brake forth into an open Rebellion, with eight thouſand men, againſt the King. But by the Duke of *Norfolke* many of them were ſlaine, the reſt were ouerthrowen, and threeſcore and fourteene of their Commanders and chiefeſt Actors in that Rebellion, were (as Traitors) by Martiall Law and Iudgement executed in ſundrie places in the North.

The Rebels ouerthrowen.

Execution.

1536. 28

At this time (before *Henry Courtney*, Earle of *Deuonſhire*, Marqueſſe of *Exeter*, coſen german to the King, and Lord High Steward for that day) were brought, arraigned, found guiltie, and condemned, the Lord *Darcy*, and the Lord *Huſſey*, and both of them were executed accordingly; the former for a Murder, and the latter for High Treaſon. Likewiſe Sir *Robert Conſtable*, Sir *Thomas Percie*, Sir *Francis Bigot*, Sir *Steuen Hambleton*, and Sir *Iohn Bulmer*, Knights, *William Lomley*, *Nicholas Tempeſt*, *Robert Aske*, two Abbots, and ſome others, being condemned as Traitors for denying of the Kings Supremacie, were executed in diuers places of this Realme: and Frier *Foreſt* for the ſame matter, and alſo for maintaining certaine Hereſies with an obſtinate and vnrepentant reſolution, receiued the iudgement of a Traitor, and of an Hereticke, and (being hanged in irons vpon a Gibbet) he was burnt.

The Lord Darcy.
The Lord Huſſey.
Execution touching the Supremacie.

Frier Foreſt.

The King being gratious to ſome whom he much fauoured, and who had deſerued well, beſtowed Titles of Honour on them. For the Viſcount *Beauchampe* was created Earle of *Hartford*, Sir *William Fitz-William*, high Admirall of *England*, was made Earle of *Southhampton*, Sir *William Paulet*, Treaſurer of the Kings houſhold, was made Lord *S. Iohn*, Sir *Iohn Ruſſel* Knight was made Lord *Ruſſel*, and Sir *Thomas Cromwel*, a Counſellor of Eſtate, Knight of the Garter, Lord Priuie Seale, Lord *Cromwel*, was made the Kings Vice-gerent in all caſes and matters Eccleſiaſticall and Spirituall, by vertue whereof, both in Parliament and elſewhere, he had the precedence of the Arch-biſhop of *Canterburie*, and (almoſt in all things) did all in all: ſo that (by reaſon of that authoritie) hee vterly defaced, burnt, and deſtroied all ſenſeleſſe and dumme Images and Shrines, to whom any thing was ſuperſtitiouſly offred, or vnto whom Praiers, Inuocations, or Pilgrimages, were fantaſtically and fooliſhly made. Hee alſo ſuppreſſed the Orders of Begging and Craftie Friers, and Puling Nunnes, whoſe houſes and poſſeſſions came vnto the King. And about the ſame time, the Marqueſſe of *Exeter*, *Henry Poole*, Lord *Montague*, and Sir *Nicholas Carew* of *Beddington* in the Countie of *Surrey*, Knight of the Gar-

Noblemen created.

The Lord Cromwell is made Vicegerent in Eccleſiaſticall matters and things.

1537. 29

Images and Shrines are ſuppreſſed.

Attainders

ter,

ter, and maſter of the Kings horſes, were attainted and executed for high Treaſons, eſpecially becauſe that with Cardinall *Poole* (brother to the Lord *Montague*) they endeuoured to procure forraine Princes (in the Popes aide) to inuade this Land, and to reforme the buſineſſes of the Church by the Apoſtolicall authoritie of the See of *Rome*. For this offence the ſaid Cardinall (being beyond the Seas) was by Parliament attainted: and within a few moneths after, his mother, the Ladie *Margaret* Counteſſe of *Salisburie*, (who was the laſt of the princely line of the *Plantagenets*, the ſaid Cardinall only excepted; for ſhee was the daughter of *George* the laſt Duke of *Clarence*) together with *Gerthrude* the widow of the late Marqueſſe of *Exeter*, Sir *Adrian Foskew*, and diuers others, were alſo attainted of high Treaſon for the ſame Conſpiracie: and ſo were the Abbots of *Reading*, *Colcheſter*, and *Glaſtenburie*, with many Monkes, Friers, and religious men, becauſe they obſtinately denied the Kings Supremacie, and confidently attributed it vnto the Pope. And all theſe (except the Cardinall, who came not home whileſt the King liued) were afterwards executed in ſundrie places of this Realme. Many others alſo (for the ſame offence) ſuffered the like deaths, whoſe names (by reaſon of their meane eſtate, and vndignified qualities) may not (in this our Hiſtorie) challenge a place of particular remembrance.

1539. 31

Whileſt the King was thus buſily imploied in cutting off his Subiects heads, the great *Oneyle* and *Odoneyle*, with a rude rabble of ſauage Out-lawes, wilde Kernes, and deſperate *Iriſhmen*, entred more then twentie miles within the *Engliſh* Pale, and did much miſchiefe. But by the Lord Deputie (being the Lord *Leonard Gray*, brother to the Marqueſſe *Dorſet*) they were ſo well fought with in the open field, that he obtained the victorie. But ſuch was the nimbleneſſe of thoſe Rebels, that when by blowes they failed to maintaine their match, then (according to their common vſe and cuſtome) they ſwiftly ran ouer the bogges and marſhes into the woods and rockes, vnto which the more ſober and well ordered *Engliſhmen* could not approch, without apparant hazard and danger to their liues.

A rebellion in Ireland.

The King (who in a manner was wholly directed and gouerned by the Lord *Cromwel* now Earle of *Eſſex*, and made high Chamberlaine of *England*) pretended many quarrels againſt the fat Abbots, Priors, Monkes, Friers, Nunnes, and Cloiſterers of this Kingdome, for many exorbitant miſdemeanours daily by them committed and done, eſpecially becauſe they were abominably lecherous,

Religious houſes ſuppreſſed.

rous, and vnmeaſurably idle, and ſlow-bellies, *fruges conſumere nati*, vnprofitable, yea a burden to the Church and Common-weale.

Thoſe faults the King endeuoured not (like a good Magiſtrate) by correction to amend, but he reſolued, with the deluge of his diſpleaſure to waſh them cleane away. And ſo he did indeed. For his high Court of Parliament (which was then holden at *Weſtminſter*) vtterly diſſolued and cleerely ſuppreſſed all Abbies, Monaſteries, Priories, and other religious houſes, (ſome few being only excepted) and gaue their houſes, ſcites, Lordſhips, and poſſeſſions (which in yearely reuenue amounted to more then two hundred thouſand pounds) vnto the King, who with his worldly policie (to the intent that future poſteritie ſhould not bee enabled to reſtore them backe againe to their former vſes) exchanged them liberally for other lands, with his Nobles and Gentrie of his Kingdome, many of whoſe Eſtates at this day doe wholly conſiſt of poſſeſſions of that nature, or elſe are greatly aduanced by thoſe lands.

Policie.

This hauocke thus made on Churchmen, and of their poſſeſſions, proceeded not (as moſt men thought) from the loue which the King bare vnto the reformation of Religion, out of extraordinarie deuotion, nor from the puritie of his minde, deſiring the extirpation of that wickedneſſe and ſinne, which indeede abundantly raigned and ruled among thoſe irreligious religious men, but from the couetous humour of his Nobles, and from the ſecret grudge and vnreconcileable hatred which he bare vnto the Pope. But thus the world then fared, and thus was the Church pared, and pruned, and made a prey, euery bird being deſirous to beautifie her ſelfe with her faire feathers.

Cromwels match for the King with Anne of Cleue.

When the Lord *Cromwel* had thus effected that great buſineſſe, then he vndertooke another, which in the end brake his owne necke. For vpon his perſwaſiue motions, ſtrengthened by the view of flattering pictures, and of vnmerited immoderate commendations, the King tooke to wife the Ladie *Anne* of *Cleue*, who was exceeding religious, and repleniſhed with many vertues: but in her perſon and countenance, ſhe was neither well compoſed, faire, nor louely.

The King likes not his match.

Her religion and her vertues were not much reſpected by the King. For when he firſt ſaw her, he liked her not; inſomuch that albeit he were maried vnto her foure moneths and ſomwhat more, yet his amorous appetite towards her was ſo amated, and ſo inſenſible was he of wanton paſſions when he was priuate in her companie, that he neuer did nor could know her as his wife.

Where-

Whereupon the Biſhops and Clergie of this Land (who for feare of after-claps, were well pleaſed to daunce after the Kings pipe) in their ſolemne Conuocation, publiſhed an authenticall Inſtrument in writing, vnder the Seales of the two Arch-biſhops, by which they made it knowen to the Chriſtian world, that the Kings mariage with the ſaid Ladie *Anne* of *Cleue*, was a nullitie, void, fruſtrate, and of none effect, becauſe the ſaid Ladie (vnder her owne hand) had (vpon due examination) confeſſed, that the king neuer had nor could performe to her that beneuolence which by a husband was due vnto his wife.

His mariage is diſſolued.

The like ſentence was enacted, pronounced, and publiſhed by the Parliament, with theſe additions, that it was lawfull for his Maieſtie, whenſoeuer and with whomſoeuer, to marie and to take another wife, according to the Eccleſiaſticall Lawes of this Realme: and likewiſe that it was lawfull for the ſaid Ladie *Anne* of *Cleue*, to marie and take another husband when ſhee ſhould pleaſe, according to the Lawes of the holy Church. And further it was then enacted, that all ſuch as (by writing, printing, ſpeaking, or by any other ouert act) did expreſſe or maintaine the contrary, ſhould be guiltie of Treaſon, and receiue puniſhment accordingly.

Treaſon.

The King (who was thus enlarged and freed from his bonds of diſcontented matrimonie) tooke to wife (within twentie daies after) *Katherine Howard*, the daughter of the Lord *Edmund Howard*, brother to the Duke of *Norfolke*: and from thenceforth he began to alter the copie of his countenance, and looked diſcontentedly vpon his great fauourite and inward Counſellor the Lord *Cromwel*, who had fettered him in thoſe his former troubles. And becauſe this alteration in the King was quickly perceiued by many, who longed for his ruine and his downefall, a long and a tedious Bill (by ſome of them) was vnexpectedly preferred againſt him into the Parliament, in which (rather in a generalitie then by many particulars) hee was accuſed of ſundrie Treaſons, Miſpriſions, and of Hereſie. And among other obiections laid vnto his charge, it was ſuggeſted, that (ioining with the laſt Queene *Anne*) hee fauoured the *Lutherans* aboue meaſure, and ſo ſtrongly ſupported them againſt the Catholike Prieſts and Prelates of this Kingdome, that when by ſome of the Clergie hee was told, that they doubted not but that the King would ſhortly curbe their boldneſſe and preſumption, the ſaid Lord *Cromwell* did replie, that the King ſhould allow of their Religion whether he would or no. But how true or how falſe ſoeuer theſe ſurmiſes were, the ſaid bill was found. Yet was hee not called to make his anſwere or defence there-

The King marieth againe.

The King frowneth on Cromwel.

Cromwels downefall.

thereto; ſo that being by the ſaid Parliament attainted of Hereſie and of Treaſon: He with the Lord *Hungerford* was beheaded on a ſcaffold, on the Tower hill, whereat his enemies did reioyce: ſome of them attributing the cauſe to his haughtineſſe, and pride; and ſome of them affirming, that it was Gods reuenge and puniſhment for his hatefull defacing and waſting of the Church.

The Lord Leonard Gray executed.

And neare about the ſame time, the Lord *Leonard Gray* (who not long before had beene the kings deputie in *Ireland*) was condemned for many treaſons, by him committed in that Countrie, during the time of his Gouernement: eſpecially, for that ſecretly he had once procured the *Iriſh* Rebels, to enter into, and to make havock within the *Engliſh* Pale; all which hee (of his owne accord) confeſſed to bee true: wherefore hee receaued his iudgement, and loſt his head.

1541. 33. *Queene Katherine beheaded.*

The King (who was but newly married to Queene *Katherine*) was now informed by ſome who preſumed that they knew it wel, that before her mariage with the King, ſhee had liued a licentious, and an euill life, with a Gentleman named *Francis Dyrham*: And furthermore, it was much preſumed and ſuſpected, that ſince ſhee was the Kings wife, ſhee had vnchaſtly converſed with another Gentleman, whoſe name was *Thomas Culpeper*, for it was fully proued, that in her laſt Progreſſe, the ſaid *Thomas* was ſecretly brought by the Ladie *Rochford* into the Queenes chamber, at eleuen of the clock in the night, and that hee remayned there almoſt fiue hours: And that (at his departure) he was gifted with a chaine of gold, and a rich wrought cap. For theſe offences, the ſaid two Gentlemen, at *Tyborne* ſuffered death. And not long after, the Queene by Parliament was attainted, and ſo was the Lady *Rochford*, and ſome others, and loſt their heads for the ſaid offence. And in the ſame Parliament, the King was proclaimed King of *Ireland*, which Title his Predeceſſors neuer had.

Francis Dyrham, Thomas Culpeper, The Lady Rochford.

King of Ireland.

The King marieth againe.

The King likewiſe, tooke to wife the Lady *Katherine Parre*, ſiſter to the Marques of *Northampton*, and ſometimes the wife of the Lord *Lattimer*: who in the latter end of the Kings raigne, was in a faire poſſibilitie to haue loſt her head, if her owne vertue, modeſtie, and the Kings ſodaine ſickneſſe and death, had not reſerued her for a better fortune.

1542. 34. *Earle of Tyron.*

At this time *Euſtace* the Great *Oneyl*, and *Matthias* his ſonne, repaired to the Kings Court, and (with all ſubmiſſiue, and humble contrition) they confeſſed their late rebellion, and treaſons; and ſo gratious was the King vnto them both, that hee not only gaue them his free pardon, but (in hope of future ſeruice according to their

their promiſe) he created him Earle of *Tyron*, and made his ſonne Lord of *Duncan*.

Contention with the Scotiſh King.

The *Scots* (who for a long time had beene quiet) did now beginne to ſwagger, and by ſodaine invaſions, to hurt, and damnifie the Subiects of this Land; which occaſioned the King.

1 To require of their king *Iames* the Fifth, and Nephew to the king, theſe things. Firſt, That the ſaid king *Iames*, ſhould doe his homage, and his fealtie, to king *Henrie*, for his kingdom of *Scotland*, as his Auncеſtors in former times had often done: But the *Scottiſh* king (with great obſtinacie, and with froward meſſages) refuſed to yeeld thereunto.

2 King *Henrie* likewiſe required the deliuerie of ſome ſmall, and triffling Territories, bordering cloſe vpon the inheritance of the ſaid *Scottiſh* king. And for the proofe of his rightfull Title thereunto: Hee cauſed certaine auncient and old euidences to bee ſhewed forth: But the *Scottiſh* Commiſſioners (with taunts and skornes) reiected them: Saying, that they were written and ſealed by *Engliſhmen*, who (for their owne profit and gaine) might write and ſeale what they liſted.

3 Vpon theſe, and ſome other grieuances, king *Henrie* (who rather deſired a friendly reconciliation, betwixt himſelfe and his Nephew, then by the dint of ſword to ſhed Chriſtian bloud) concluded to meet, and to conferre with king *Iames* in kinde manner, vpon the borders of either kingdome: For which purpoſe, king *Henrie* made his Progreſſe vnto *Yorke*; and was there certified, that the *Scottiſh* king intended not (according to his promiſe) to meet with him: But would (by Commiſſion) authorize ſome of his Counſellors of eſtate, to conferre, and to conclude with his Maieſties Commiſſioners of *England*, touching the matters, then in difference betwixt them two.

4 The king (though he were thus deluded) yet did he not expreſſe any touch of impacience for that wrong, but (authorizing certaine Commiſſioners in that behalfe) hee ended his Progreſſe and returned home. All theſe Commiſſioners met; but whileſt they were in Parlee, two notorious and great deſpights were offered to king *Henrie*.

5 For though the Commiſſioners daily communed of vnitie, and of peace, yet at the ſame time the *Scots* invaded the Weſterne marches of this Realme, burnt, ſlue, ſpoiled, and riffled, beyond charitie and reaſon; and yet no warre was then denounced betwixt the ſaid two kings. For this iniurie, and for this wrong, ſufficient, and liberall amends, and recompence was promiſed, by the ſaid

ſaid Commiſſioners, but no manner of reſtitution, or ſatisfaction, was made in that behalfe.

6 And laſtly, although the King of *Scots* commiſſion was very large and ample, and authorized thoſe his Agents, to doe (almoſt) whatſoeuer they themſelues pleaſed, yet did the ſaid Commiſſioners ſo ſtrictly ſtand vpon ſundrie points (which were too too much vnreaſonable, and diſhonorable for king *Henrie* to yeeld vnto) that by the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners (who had throughly viewed and perуſed their authoritie and power) they were condemned as enemies to the peace, and to their owne Countrie: For that (by the meanes of their frowardneſſe) there would be warres. Whereupon, the *Scottiſh* Commiſſioners (to cleare themſelues of this blame, imputed to their obſtinacie and follie) ſhewed forth their priuate inſtructions from their King, which (for feare of death) they dared not to exceede: By which inſtructions it appeared plainly, that their authority, expreſſed in their ſaid Commiſſion, was (in all things) curbed, and made of little, or of no force; except the ſaid *Engliſh* Commiſſioners would yeeld to ſuch demands, as were vnprofitable, and diſhonourable, to their king.

Warres in Scotland.

Theſe notorious iniuries and wrongs, and this daliance, and craftie diſſimulation, enforced King *Henrie*, to ſend an Armie of twentie thouſand men into *Scotland*, vnder the command of the Duke of *Northfolk*, who was accompanied by the Earles of *Shrewsburie*, *Darby*, *Cumberland*, *Surrey*, *Hertford*, *Angus*, and *Rutland*, and with the greateſt part of the Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of the North: All theſe marched on their iourney, and for eight daies ſpace (being vnreſiſted, and vnfought with) they killed, riffled, burned, forraged, and ſpoiled the *Scottiſh* Townes, Caſtles, Fortreſſes, Houſes, and Fields, with as much crueltie, violence, and furie, as the extremitie of warres could execute in ſo ſhort a time: Which when they had done, the Armie retyred, was diſſolued, and euery man repaired (loaden with ſpoiles) to his owne home.

The Engliſh Armie returneth.

The Scots inuade England.

With this deſerued and ſeuere reuenge, the King of *Scots* was infinitely grieued, and perplexed, at the heart; In ſo much, that he cauſed (with all expedition) to be raiſed an Armie of fifteene thouſand men, which was ſent into the Weſt marches of this kingdome; where they began to ſpoile, and did much miſchiefe. But *Thomas*, the Baſtard *Dacres*; *William Muſgraue*, and the Lord *Thomas Wharton* (hauing at a ſhort warning collected a ſmall number of approued, and valiant men at armes) taking with them ſome part thereof, and leauing the reſt for a ſecret ſtale, or ambuſh, to annoy their enemies, when time ſhould ſerue, encountred vnexpectedly

A notable ouerthrow.

pectedly with the *Scots*, vpon whom in the Rereward, the ſaid ambuſh, valiantly iſſued; which did ſo terrifie and affright them, that they ſuppoſed verily, the Duke of *Norfolke*, with a great Armie did fall on them, wherefore (to ſaue themſelues) they fled; and in the purſuite there were taken priſoners, the Earles of *Caſſels*, and *Glancarne*; the Lords *Maxwel*, *Fleming*, *Sommerwel*, *Oliphant*, *Gray*, and *Oragy*, and the Lord *Carre* of *Gredon*; two hundred Gentlemen, and about eight hundred common Souldiers; ſo that euery *Engliſh* man had two or three priſoners, to recompence their aduenterous paines, and trauaile: The *Engliſhmen* alſo tooke, & brought away, foure and twentie peeces of Ordinance, and foure Carts loaden with Speares: this ouerthrow, many men then imputed (and peraduenture truly) to the *Scottiſh* Kings vnaduiſed and indiſcreet direction, who made ſo meane a Springall the Generall in that armie, in which ſo many Lords, Earles, and worthy Captaines were, who ſcorned to be commanded by ſuch an Vnderling; and therefore hazarded their owne liues, by a willing flight, rather then (by obtayning the Victorie) to lay on him ſuch honour as they knew, he was not able to deſerue.

Priſoners.

Diſdaine.

Of theſe priſoners, foure and twentie of the chiefeſt, were ſent to the Tower of *London*; from whence (after two dayes) they were remoued, and committed to the care and cuſtodie of diuers Noblemen, Knights, and Gentlemen of worth: at whoſe hands, they receiued ſuch kinde welcome, and bountifull entertainment, that (with multiplyed wordes of extraordinary praiſe and commendation) they ceaſed not to extoll their friendly, and good vſage, to the skies.

This vnexpected, ſtrange, and vnfortunate ouerthrow of ſo faire an Armie, with ſo ſmall a handfull: ſo much diſturbed the patient diſpoſition of the *Scottiſh* King, that (with melancholy, and inward griefe) he dyed within few weekes after. Leauing behinde him (as to ſucceed) his only daughter and heire Queene *Marie*; a child who was then but newly borne.

The King of Scots dieth.

Marie queen of Scots.

When the newes of this Kings death was voiced to the *Scottiſh* Priſoners, it is not to be maruailed at, if penſiue ſorrow and anguiſh much appaled them for a while: But at length (making a vertue of neceſſitie, and recomforting themſelues with ſome hope which they conceaued of future happineſſe) they counſailed king *Henrie* to procure their ſaid yong Queene, to be by the State of *Scotland*, giuen in mariage vnto Prince *Edward* his ſon: For the furtherance whereof, they all proteſted, ſwore, and promiſed, to imploy their beſt trauailes, and their chiefeſt friends.

A motion for mariage.

The

Scottiſh priſoners releaſed.

The King ſo thankfully entertayned this their motion, and profered ſeruice for the furtherance thereof, that he not only enlarged them all without ranſoms; but alſo gaue vnto them rich and great gifts, for which they were exceeding thankfull; and departed ioyfully into their owne Countrie.

The French men breake the peace.

Now muſt we know, that as the *Scots* without cauſe, had made breach of the former peace; ſo did the *French* King: who ſuffered his ſubiects (vpon the Seas) to robbe and ſpoile the Marchants of this kingdome. And thereupon King *Henrie* permitted his ſubiects to doe the like. Diuers complaints for theſe iniuries and wrongs, were firſt made vnto the *French* King; becauſe his ſubiects had firſt tranſgreſſed: but he neither afforded anſwere, redreſſe, or recompence therein. And by reaſon of this debate and variance betwixt the two Kings, the Marchants of either Nation were arreſted and impriſoned, and their goods, and marchandizes were attached, and ſeiſed on in each Kingdome. Likewiſe the *French* and *Engliſh* Embaſſadors, were (for a time) reſtrayned of their liberties, but were quickly ſet at large againe: yet ſtill, the poore Marchants on either part, were compelled to pay the reckoning, although they fared ill, and were enforced to ſuſtaine puniſhment for the faults of other men. Such was the iniquitie of thoſe times, wherein Warre and Rapine did beare the chiefeſt ſway, and ſuch were the miſeries which harmeleſſe men ſuſtayned: becauſe Peace and Iuſtice were not ſuffered to moderate, betwixt Right and Wrong. For the *French* King did vtterly forget, in what a deſperate caſe his kingdome ſtood, when King *Henrie* (vpon the humble ſupplication of the Queene Regent, and of his Nobles, when he, and his children were priſoners in *Italie*) gaue vnto him peace. Wherefore, to correct his monſterous ingratitude, and to be reuenged of daily wrongs, The King (to defie him) ſent his Heralds towards *France*. But the *French* King would not in any ſort permit them, to come into his kingdome: Whereupon King *Henrie* (vnder the principall command of Sir *Iohn Wallop*, Sir *Thomas Seymour*, and Sir *Richard Cromwel*) tranſported a ſtrong Armie, who (preſently vpon their landing) beſieged the Towne of *Landerſey*, and by continuall battries, and fierce aſſaults, brought it into ſome neceſſities, and danger: but the *French* king knowing well the diſtreſſed eſtate in which the Towne then ſtood; in his owne perſon, with a huge Armie, came to releeue it: by meanes whereof, the *Engliſh* Generals raiſed the ſiege, and made themſelues ſtrong, and ready to encounter the *French* King in battaile: of which, hee made great brags. This expectation of a bloudy skirmiſh, cauſed

Vnthankefull Frenchmen.

1543. 35.

An Armie ſent into France.

Landerſey beſieged.

The ſiege abandoned.

the

the *Engliſh* Armie (who would not then diſorder nor incumber themſelues with other imploiments) to ſuffer the ſaid Towne to be newly victualled and releeued. But in the middeſt of the night before it was intended by the *Engliſh* Armie that this battaile ſhould haue beene fought, the *French* King (being ſhrowded in the darke) ran away, and all his companies returned with ſpeede vnto their owne Countries; inſomuch that for that time no more was done, but (by command) the *Engliſh* Armie returned into *England*.

A mariage concluded with Scotland.

In this meane while, the aforeſaid motion concerning the mariage of the young Prince with the Infant Queene of *Scotland*, was ſo well applauded and entertained by the *Scots*, that in their Parliament it was firſt concluded, and then confirmed by an Inſtrument in writing, vnder the hands and ſeales of their Nobilitie, and ratified by their oathes, that the ſaid intended match ſhould bee effected, and that their young Queene (for that purpoſe) ſhould bee conueied into *England*. But within few moneths after, by the ſecret and cunning plots and practiſes of the *French* King, the Nobilitie of *Scotland* neglected their Law, their promiſe, and their oath, which occaſioned King *Henry* with all ſpeed to make new and vnwonted preparations and prouiſions, not onely to inuade that Countrey, but alſo to make warre vpon his enemie the King of *France*.

The Scots doe breake their oath.

1544.
36

An Armie ſpoileth Scotland.

And to effect his purpoſe in that behalfe, firſt he ſent a puiſſant Armie (which was tranſported in two hundred warlike ſhips) into *Scotland*, vnder the generall command (by Sea) of his high Admirall the Viſcount *Liſle*, and vnder the generall command (by land) of the noble and right valiant Earle of *Hartford*.

All theſe ſhips ſafely entred into the Fryth, where they tooke many good Veſſels, which were exceeding ſeruiceable to their proceedings. And then was the whole Armie ſet on land: and being well ordered into three battailes, and marching towards *Leyth*, they firſt tooke view of ſix thouſand *Scottiſh* horſemen, with whom they encountred for a while. But when the *Scots* perceiued that the *Engliſhmen* tooke more delight to fight with courage, then to dallie, as being fearefull of their liues, they made a quicke retrait, and ſuddenly fled away, leauing their Artillerie and that Towne to their enemies, who appropriated to themſelues euery good thing which they found there, and then conſumed the towne with fire. From thence they marched towards *Edenborough*, the principall Citie of that Kingdome. But on the way the Prouoſt and ſome of the chiefeſt Burgeſſes of that Towne, made offer to the

the Earle of *Hartford* (Generall of the Field) to deliuer to him the keies, conditionally that he would preſerue it from fire, and ſuffer the ſouldiers and the Inhabitants thereof with bagge and baggage to depart.

But the Generall made anſwere thus: That hee was ſent into that Countrey to take reuenge vpon that Nation, becauſe their Nobilitie (with one conſent) by the peruerſe and vnfriendly inſtigation of the *French* King, had violated their owne Law, their promiſe, and their oath, touching the mariage agreed on, to be ſolemnized betweene Prince *Edward* and their young Queene. And therefore if all the Souldiers and all the Inhabitants of that Citie would come diſarmed into the open Field, and yeeld their ſubſtance and their liues to bee ordered according to his pleaſure and will, he then would doe as he thought good: but if they refuſed ſo to doe, he then proteſted to viſit the Towne and them with all the extremities which were incident to ſuch a warre.

This quicke anſwere ſo little pleaſed the Townesmen, that they returned, purpoſing to reſiſt: and ſo they did. But by ſtrong batteries and fierce aſſaults, their gates and their walles were beaten downe and entred, ſo that many thouſands of the *Scots* were ſlaine, their riches were poſſeſſed by the *Engliſh* Armie, and a great part of that Citie was conſumed by fire. Now whileſt the Armie was thus buſied, there came vnto them from the King foure thouſand *Engliſh* horſemen: ſo that when the ſpoiles and booties were by the ſouldiers imbarked, and by water ſent into *England*, the *Engliſh* Armie coaſted thorow a great part of thoſe Countries, vnfought with, burning, killing, and foraging in all places, as they pleaſed: ſo that they hauing taken, ranſacked, and burnt a good part of the Citie of *Edenborough*, *Holy-rood houſe*, and the Kings Palace there, and hauing rifled and defaced the Townes of *Leyth*, *Haddington*, *Dumbarre*, *Dyrlaw*, *Broughton*, *Dudiſton*, *Beuerton*, *Markle*, *Hatherwike*, *Bowland*, *Blackborne*, *Weſt-Crage*, *Cheſter-fels*, *Stonehouſe*, *Trauent*, *Trapren*, *Belton*, *Butterden*, *Raunto*, *Enderleigh*, *Crawenden*, *Shenſton*, the *Fycket*, *Eaſt-barne*, *Kyrklandhill*, *Quickwood*, part of *Muſkelborough*, and many other Villages, beſides Abbies, Monaſteries, and Religious Houſes, (which particularly wee cannot name) they returned powerfully, with rich booties, and with the only loſſe of fortie men, into *England*.

Two Armies ſent into France.

And thus did King *Henry* in ſome ſharpe meaſure correct and puniſh the vnſtable dealings of the *Scots*. Which troubles when he had finiſhed, hee then forthwith made ſuch plentifull preparations to inuade *France*, that he ſent vnto the *French* Kings Dominions

ons two ſtrong Armies, of which the one was commanded by the Duke of *Norfolke*, and by the gentle Lord *Ruſſell*, who was then newly made Lord Priuie Seale, who therewithall beſieged the ſtrong Towne of *Muttrell*, where they loſt much time, and much labour, and were enforced to leaue it in the end. And the other of the ſaid two Armies was commanded by the Duke of *Suffolke*, with which the ſaid former Armie inbodied it ſelfe: and then they all encamped about the ſtrong and warlike Citie of *Bulleine*, and after many ſharpe conflicts and hot skirmiſhes, they firſt tooke the *Old man*, and ſhortly after baſe *Bulleine*.

Muttrell beſieged and abandoned.

Bulleine is beſieged.

To this ſiege King *Henry* himſelfe (being attended by many a worthie man) repaired, and after his comming thither, ſo long as the light gaue leaue, for the ſpace of one whole moneth together, he cauſed the walles of the Towne and Caſtle ſo cruelly to be battered, and the Towne it ſelfe to be ſo beaten, and the breaches and the trenches to be ſo furiouſly aſſaulted, that the walles in many places lay almoſt leuell with the ground. No houſe eſcaped vnhurted: and the Inhabitants with continuall labour, vexation, and trauell, were almoſt tired and worne out: ſo that at length, vpon compoſition that all the Souldiers and Inhabitants ſhould ſafely depart with bagge and baggage, the ſtrong and ſtately Towne and Caſtle of *Bulleine* was deliuered into the Kings hands: out of which iſſued (vpon the ſaid agreement) threeſcore and ſeuen horſemen, fifteene hundred, threeſcore and three footmen, eight hundred Gunners, foureſcore and ſeuen men who were hurt, and nineteene hundred twentie and ſeuen men, women, and children, they all being in number 4444. ſoules. But many (who by reaſon of their greeuous wounds could not depart) were found, and well cheriſhed and releeued in the Towne.

The King commeth to Bulleine.

Bulleine is yeelded.

Now whileſt the King thus lay at the ſiege of *Bulleine*, the Emperour (without the Kings knowledge or conſent) ſecretly concluded a peace with the *French* King; whereat King *Henry* much greeued: ſo that (after hee had taken an exact order for the repairing and fortifying of that Towne and Caſtle) hee diſmiſſed his Armie, and with great ioy, honour, and triumph, he returned into *England*.

King Henry returneth.

And becauſe his daily warres (which required continuall ſupplies) had waſted and conſumed his treaſure, which (for the preuenting of future miſchiefes, and in eſpeciall ſuch as were daily offred vnto him by the *Scots*) he endeuoured to augment, hee therefore demanded a Beneuolence of all his Subiects both Spirituall and Temporall. For which purpoſe Sir *Thomas Wryotheſley*, Lord

Iohn Stow. 993.

A Beneuolence.

Chancellor of *England*, the Duke of *Suffolke*, and others of his Maieſties Counſell of Eſtate, (ſitting as Commiſſioners in *Bainards* Caſtle in *London*) taxed the Citizens and Inhabitants according to their wiſdomes and diſcretions. And becauſe one Alderman (whoſe name was *Richard Read*) refuſed to pay what they had ordered, he was therefore by them required (on a great paine) perſonally to ſerue the King in his warres againſt the *Scots*; which cheerefully he performed, and was (with many others) taken priſoner and detained by his enemies, vntill that for his ranſome hee was enlarged and ſet free.

Alderman Read.

After the King was departed home, the Dolphin (taking the benefit of a darke night) came with a great power ſo ſuddenly into *Baſe Bulleine*, that he tooke it. But ſuch as fled, and had ſaued their liues, being aided by the ſouldiers of the vpper Towne and Caſtle, came fiercely on the Dolphin, and ſo manfully aſſailed him, that (to ſaue himſelfe and his) he in all the haſte departed, and left the Towne with his great loſſe.

The Dolphins ſucceſſe.

Within few daies after, Monſieur *de Bees* came on the other ſide of the water before the Towne, with an Armie of fifteene thouſand men, and began to erect a Fortreſſe there. But by the valiant Earle of *Hartford*, the Viſcount *Liſle*, the Lord *Gray*, and diuers others, they were aſſailed, fought with, and ſhamefully put to flight, and were compelled to leaue behinde them their Ordinance, Tents, and other good prouiſions, to their great ignominie and reproch.

The French are ouerthrowen.

1545. 37.

The *French* King (intending to worke wonders in *England*, by way of a reuenge, for that his ſtrong Towne of *Bulleine* was loſt) ſent to the Sea a mightie Fleet, of two hundred tall ſhips, and ſeuen and twentie ſtrong Gallies, all which were ſtuffed (as it was reported) with threeſcore thouſand men. All theſe came in good order, and ancoured before the Iſle of *Wight*, and were oftentimes beaten with the great Ordinance which the Admirall of *England* liberally beſtowed on them. But as the *Engliſh* Fleet paſſed out of the Hauen of *Portſmouth* into the Sea, a ſtately, ſtrong, and a goodly ſhip, named the *Marie Roſe*, belonging to the King, (in which was Captaine Sir *George Carew* Knight, with more then foure hundred men beſides) was drowned almoſt in an inſtant, by the groſſe follie of the Gunners, and of the Mariners, the former of them hauing left their Ordinance vntrigged, and the latter hauing left the vnder port holes open, by meanes whereof when the ſhip turned, the Ordinance ran backe to the one ſide, and bare the port holes vnder water, ſo that the ſea violently and abundantly flowed in, and in a moment

The French Kings Nauie doth nothing.

The Marie Roſe drowned

moment ſwallowed vp both ſhip, Captaine, Men, Ordinance, and all other things there to the great griefe and ſorrow of the King himſelfe, and of all ſuch as were preſent, and beheld it.

The Lord *Dambalt*, high Admirall of *France*, being by certaine poore Fiſhermen, whom he had taken, informed, that the King in his owne perſon, being accompanied with an infinite number of valiant men of warre; expected and longed to be made victorious and rich by their landing, feared to hazard all his fortunes in ſo deſperate and hot a ſeruice: Wherefore he hoiſed Ancors, and without Fame or Honor, returned baſely into *France*.

The Scots invade England.

Now muſt wee know, that no ſooner was King *Henrie* departed out of *England* to the ſiege of *Bullein* (as wee haue heard) but the *Scottiſh* Nation (obſeruing their old cuſtome) entred, riffled, ſpoiled, and burnt many Houſes, Villages, and ſmall Townes, in the marches of *England*, without pitty: Wherefore, King *Henrie* (after his returne) reſolued to correct their madneſſe, and their folly, and to take reuenge for thoſe iniuries and wrongs: And for that purpoſe, he ſent the Noble Earle of *Hartford* into that Kingdome, with an Armie of twelue thouſand men, where hee hauoked Men, Townes, Caſtles, and the Countrie, in ſuch a furious and fierce manner, that the *Scots* were extremely damnified thereby; and thouſands of them were vtterly vndone.

An Armie ſent into Scotland.

About the ſame time, the valiant Lord *Liſle*, Lord high Admirall of *England*, entred into and landed within the Hauen of *Treport*, and burnt the ſuburbs of that towne, and many other houſes, Villages, and Townes, which bordered vpon the Sea coaſts: And at his returne from thence (as a rich prey) he caried with him many Ships, Barges, Boats, and Veſſels, which he found there.

Treport.

1546.
38

Now (like as after many ruffe and boiſterous ſtormes, a ſweet, and a delectable calme doth follow: ſo after theſe buſie conflicts, and martiall contentions, whereof wee haue already taken a perfect view: A peace was louingly concluded, and ioyfully proclaymed, betweene the two kingdomes of *England* and of *France*. But this joy (as in humane affaires it often hapneth) was quickly checked with an other ſorrow: for the moſt victorious, faithfull, and euer to be honored Captaine, the Duke of *Northfolke*, and his ſonne, the moſt illuſtrious Earle of *Surrey* (both which, in this Kings raigne, performed many memorable, and braue ſeruices, in *Scotland*, *England*, and in *France*) were ſodainely apprehended, and ſent vnto the Tower; For none other thing, but becauſe they quartered, and bare in their Eſcoucheon certaine Armes, which were pretended, properly, and only to belong vnto the King and Prince

The Duke of Northfolke and the Earle of Surrey committed.

Prince (which Armes notwithſtanding, they and their Auncеſters time out of minde had ſo borne without controlment, reproofe, or check. For this offence, the ſaid Earle was indicted of high Treaſon, arraigned thereon, and tryed by a Iurie of Knights, and Gentlemen, (and not by his peeres) becauſe he was no Lord of the Parliament) by whom he was found guiltie, and then receiued his iudgement, and loſt his head, to the great griefe and ſorrow of many thouſands, who lamented the cauſeleſſe death of ſuch a worthy man, as had ſo well deſerued of the King, and of the common weale.

The Earle of Surrey beheaded.

But the Duke his father (by reaſon of the Kings ſickneſſe, and death, which followed ſhortly after) was preſerued by God from that danger, for better fortunes.

The King dieth.

The Preſence of this King was amiable, and Princely: for hee was ſomewhat more then ordinarie tall, ſtrongly limmed, proportionably compoſed, faire in his complexion, nimble, and full of agilitie in his yonger yeares; and alwaies as reſolutely valiant as a man might bee: Hee had a pregnant and a ſharpe wit, and was generally held to bee well learned, becauſe hee could, and vſed to ſpeake well: He was exceeding humble, and paſſing ſtout; applying the former to gentle ſpirits; and oppoſing the latter againſt prowd, inſolent, and rough Mates: He was bountifull, and magnificently liberall (if occaſion ſo required) Yet in regard that hee was a man: He was not free from all faults; For he was too too much familiar and converſant with wanton and light women: And delighted too much in varietie, and in change, as moſt men did conieƈture, becauſe he had ſixe wiues. From two of them he was ſeuered, becauſe his mariages were held to be void, fruſtrate, and of no force: other two of them (for the obieƈted crime of incontinencie) loſt their heads: A fifth died in her child-bed: and the ſixt eſcaped fairely by his death. Finally, hee (oftentimes) much pleaſed himſelfe, to be ouer-familiar in the ſwaggering companie of looſe Fellowes; yet in moſt reſpeƈts, he was a famous, a worthie, and a moſt noble King: Thus ended he his life; and thus doe I conclude this Hiſtorie of theſe twentie Kings; hoping that ſome other (who ſhall be better able) will (with more ſufficiencie) write the reſt.

He is deſcribed.

FINIS.

THE SVCCES-
SIONS OF THE DVKES
AND EARLES OF THIS
KINGDOME OF
ENGLAND:

FROM THE CONQVEST
vntill the twelfth yeare of the famous Raigne
of the mightie Monarch King
IAMES
THE FIRST.



LONDON,
Printed by *W. Stansby* for *Henrie Fetherſtone*.
1615.

Iohn Speede
97

Princes of VVales

ſince the Con-queſt.

1 EDward *Caer-Nervon*, ſonne to King *Edward* the Firſt, afterwards king *Edward* the Second.

2 *Edward* of *Windſour*, ſonne to king *Edward* the Second, afterwards king *Edward* the Third.

3 *Edward* the *Black Prince*, ſonne to king *Edward* the Third.

4 *Richard* of *Bordeaux*, ſonne to the *Black Prince*, afterwards king *Richard* the Second.

5 *Henrie* of *Monmoth*, ſonne to king *Henrie* the Fourth, afterwards king *Henrie* the Fifth.

6 *Henrie* of *Windſour*, ſonne to king *Henrie* the Fifth, afterwards king *Henrie* the Sixth.

7 *Edward* of *Weſtminſter*, ſonne to king *Henrie* the Sixth.

8 *Edward* of *Weſtminſter*, ſonne to king *Edward* the Fourth, afterwards king *Edward* the Fifth.

9 *Edward Plantagenet*, ſonne to king *Richard* the Third.

10 *Arthur Tuther*, ſonne to king *Henrie* the Seuenth.

11 *Henrie Tuther*, ſonne to king *Henrie* the Seuenth, afterwards king *Henrie* the Eighth.

12 *Edward*, the ſonne of king *Henrie* the Eighth, afterwards king *Edward* the Sixth.

13 *Henrie*, the ſonne of king *Iames*.

14 *Charles*, the ſonne of king *Iames*.

THE

THE SVCCESSIONS OF THE DVKES AND *EARLES OF THIS KING-* DOME OF ENGLAND.

From the Conqueſt vntill the twelfth yeare *of the famous Raigne of the mightie Monarch* King IAMES the Firſt.

Albemarle and Holdernes.

EVDO (Sonne to the Earle of *Champaigne*) married one of the Conquerours ſiſters, and was by him created Earle of *Albemarle*, and of *Holdernes*. *Conq.*

Stephen, their ſonne, ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Albemarle*, and of *Holdernes*.

William ſurnamed *Le Groſe* (being his ſonne) ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Albemarle* and of *Holdernes*. *K. Steph.*

William de Fortibus, maried *Hawſe* or *Avice*, the daughter and heire of the aforenamed *Stephen*, and was in her right created Earle of *Albemarle*, and of *Holdernes*, by King *Stephen*.

William de Fortibus, their ſonne ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Albemarle* and of *Holderneſſe*.

William de Fortibus, his ſonne, was Earle of *Albemarle* and *Holdernes*, and dyed without iſſue Male.

R.2. *Thomas Plantagenet*, otherwiſe called *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, a yonger ſonne to King *Edward* the Third, was by his Nephew King *Richard* the Second, created Earle of *Albemarle*, *Holdernes*, *Darby*, *Lancaſter*, and *Leiceſter*.

Henrie Plantagenet his ſonne, was Earle of *Albemarle*, *Holdernes*, *Darby*, *Lancaſter*, and of *Leiceſter*.

R.2. *Edmund Plantagenet*, the ſonne of *Edmund* of *Langley*, an other of the yonger ſonnes of King *Edward* the Third, and Duke of *Yorke*, was by king *Richard* the Second, his Coſen, created Earle of *Rutland*, and Duke of *Albemarle*.

Thomas Plantagenet, Duke of *Clarence*, and ſonne to King *Henrie* the Fourth, was by him created Earle of *Warwick*, and of *Albemarle*.

Arundell.

Conq. ROger *Mountgomery*, was by *William* the Conquerour, created Earle of *Arundell*, and of *Shrewsbury*.

Hugh Mountgomery, his ſonne, ſucceeded him, and died without iſſue.

Robert Mountgomery, his brother, (being Earle of *Beleſme*) ſucceeded, and dyed without iſſue.

Mauld. *William de Albeney*, was by *Mawld* the Empreſſe created Earle of *Arundell*, and *Suſſex*, becauſe he tooke her part againſt King *Stephen*, he maried *Adeliza*, the widdow of King *Henrie* the Firſt, and

H.2. was confirmed in his honors, by king *Henrie* the Second.

William de Albeney, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honors:

R.1. *William de Albeney*, his ſonne, was by King *Richard* the Firſt, reſtored to the ſaid Earledomes, which for diſpleaſure had been kept from him by *Henrie* the Second.

William de Albeney, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe Earledomes.

Hugh de Albeney, was Earle after his brother, and dyed without iſſue.

H.3. *William de Albenetto*, was created Earle of *Arundell*, by king *Henrie* the Third, and dyed without iſſue.

E.1. *Richard Fitz-Alen*, maried *Iſabel*, (who was one of the daughters of the laſt Earle *William*) and was by king *Edward* the Firſt, created Earle of *Arundell*, hee was (before that time) Lord of *Clun*, and *Oſwaldſtry*.

Edmund Fitz-Alen, their ſonne, was Lord of *Clun* and *Oſwaldſtry*, and ſucceeded in the Earledome of *Arundell*; but was beheaded on

on disp leasure, and by the commandement of Queene *Isabel*, the wife of king *Edward* the second.

Richard Fitz-Alen, his sonne, succeeded in all those honors, hee was also Earle of *Warren*, and of *Surrey*.

Richard Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Lord of *Clun* and *Oswaldstry*, and Earle of *Arundell*, *Warren*, and of *Surrey*: hee was also Lord of *Bromfield*, and *Yale*; and was beheaded at *Bristow*, whilst king *Richard* the second liued.

Thomas Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Lord of *Clun*, *Oswaldstry*, *Bromflet*, and *Yale*, and Earle of *Arundell*, *Warren*, and of *Surrey*, and died without issue Male.

Iohn Fitz-Alen, and Lord *Maltrauers*, being the next heire Male to the said *Thomas*, was by King *Henrie* the sixt created Earle of *Arundell*, and Duke of *Torayne*. *H. 6.*

Humfrey Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Earle of *Arundell*, and dyed without issue.

William Fitz-Alen, his Vncle, and brother to the last Earle *Iohn*, was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltrauers*, and Earle of *Arundell*.

Thomas Fitz-Alen, his sonne, succeeded, and was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltrauers*, and Earle of *Arundell*.

William Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltrauers*, and Earle of *Arundell*.

Henrie Fitz-Alen, his sonne, was Lord of *Clun*, and *Maltrauers*, and Earle of *Arundell*, and dyed without issue Male.

Thomas Howard Earle of *Surrey*, and the fourth and last Duke of *Northfolke*, maried *Marie*, one of the daughters and coheires of the said *Henrie Fitz-Alen*, and was in her right Lord *Maltrauers*, and Earle of *Arundell*. The other moytie descended to the Lord *Barkley*.

Philip Howard, his sonne, was Lord *Maltrauers*, and Earle of *Arundell*, and of *Surrey*.

Thomas Arundell, his sonne, is Lord *Maltrauers*, and Earle of *Arundell*: to which honours hee was restored by the mightie Prince King *Iames*. *K. Ia.*

Bathe.

Philbert de Chandew, a *Britton* borne, was by King *Henrie* the first created Earle of *Bath*: he dyed without issue Male. *H. 1.*

John Bourchier, Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towstock* in *Deuon*, being the

ſonne of *Foulke Bourchier*, Lord *Fitz-Warren*, who was the ſonne of *William Bourchier*, Lord *Fitz-Warren*, who was the yonger ſonne of
H. 8. *William Bourchier*, Earle of *Ewe* in *Normandie*; who was the yonger brother of *Henry* the firſt Earle of *Ewe*, was by king *Henry* the eight, created Earle of *Bath*.

Iohn Bourchier, his ſonne, was Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towſtock*, and Earle of *Bath*.

William Bourchier, the ſonne of *Iohn Bourchier*, who was the ſonne of the ſaid *Iohn*, laſt Earle of *Bath*, is now Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towſtock*, and hath iſſue one ſonne only, who is named *Edward*, Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towſtock*.

Bedford.

E. 3. INgram, Lord *Concy*, a *Frenchman* borne, maried *Iſabel*, the daughter of king *Edward* the third: and being by him created Earle of *Bedford*, he dyed without iſſue Male.

H. 4. *Iohn Plantagenet*, the third ſonne of king *Henrie* the fourth, was (by his father) created Duke of *Bedford*; and whilſt king *Henrie* the ſixt liued (to whom he was Vncle) he was Regent of *France*, Ruled it with great wiſedome, and valour; and dyed without iſſue.

E. 4. *George Neuil*, was by king *Edward* the fourth, created Duke of *Bedford*, and dyed without iſſue.

H. 7. *Iaſpar Tuthar*, ſurnamed *Iaſpar* of *Hatfield*, ſonne to *Owen Tuthar*, and of Queene *Katherine*, the widdow of king *Henrie* the fifth, was (by his halfe brother, king *Henrie* the ſixt) created Earle of *Pembroke*, and was after (by his Nephew, king *Henrie* the ſeuenth) created Duke of *Bedford*, and dyed without iſſue.

E. 6. *Iohn Ruſſel*, was by king *Henrie* the eight, made Lord *Ruſſel*, and by king *Edward* the ſixt, he was created Earle of *Bedford*.

Francis, Lord *Ruſſel*, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Bedford*.

Edward, Lord *Ruſſel*, his ſonnes ſonne, *viz.* the ſonne of *Francis* third ſonne to the ſaid Earle *Francis*, is now Earle of *Bedford*.

Bridgewater.

Gilles Dawbeney was by king *Henrie* the Seuenth made Lord *Dawbeney*, and his ſonne *Henrie* was (after his fathers death) created Earle of *Bridgewater* by king *Henrie* the Eighth, and died without iſſue. But *Alice* his ſiſter and heire was maried to *Iohn Bourchier*, Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towſtocke* in *Deuon*, from whom *William* Lord *Fitz-Warren* of *Towſtocke* and Earle of *Bath* is deſcended. *H. 8.*

Buckingham.

Walter Gifford, Earle of *Longuile* in *Normandie*, and coſen to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle of *Buckingham* and *Pembroke*. *Conq.*

Walter Gifford his ſonne ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

Thomas Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Thomas of Woodſtocke*, the ſixth ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, was by his nephew King *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Buckingham*, *Northampton*, and *Eſſex*: and afterwards he made him Duke of *Gloceſter*. And for his good counſell to the ſame King, he was ſent priſoner to *Calice*, and there murdered. *R. 2.*

Humfrey Plantagenet, his ſonne, was Earle of *Buckingham*, *Northhampton*, and *Eſſex*, and died without iſſue.

Humfrey Stafford, Lord of *Brecknocke* and *Holdernes*, and being Earle of *Stafford*, was by King *Henrie* the Sixth created the firſt Duke of *Buckingham*. *H. 6.*

Henrie Stafford his ſonne, being Lord of *Brecknocke* and *Holdernes*, was Earle of *Stafford*, and Duke of *Buckingham*, and was beheaded by King *Richard* the Third.

Edward Stafford his ſonne, being Lord of *Brecknocke* and *Holdernes*, and Earle of *Stafford*, by reſtitution from King *Henrie* the eight, was the third and laſt Duke of *Buckingham*, and was beheaded whileſt King *Henrie* the Eighth raigned. *H. 7.*

Cambridge.

E. 3. *Iohn* of *Henault*, brother to *William* Earle of *Henault*, and vncle to Queene *Philip* the wife of King *Edward* the Third, was by him created Earle of *Cambridge*. But hee reuolted to the *French* King, and thereby loſt his honour.

E. 3. *William* Marqueſſe of *Iulier*, *Bergen*, and *Cleueland*, was by King *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Cambridge*.

E. 3. *Edmund Plantagenet*, ſurnamed *Edmund of Langley*, being the fifth ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, and Duke of *Yorke*, was by his father created Earle of *Cambridge*.

Edward Plantagenet his ſonne, was Duke of *Yorke* and *Albemarle*, Earle of *Rutland* and of *Cambridge*, and being ſlaine in the battaile of *Edgingcourt*, he died without iſſue.

Richard Plantagenet, his brother, was Earle of *Cambridge*, and had iſſue, *Richard*.

Richard Plantagenet was Lord of *Clare*, and of *Wigmore*, Duke of *Yorke*, and Earle of *Vlſter*, *March*, and *Cambridge*, and was ſlaine in his warres againſt King *Henrie* the Sixth.

Edward Plantagenet his ſonne ſucceeded him in all thoſe honourable dignities, and was afterwards King *Edward* the Fourth.

Cheſter.

Conq. *Hvgo Lupus*, Viſcount of *Aurenges* in *Normandie*, nephew to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*.

Richard Lupus his ſonne ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

H. 1. *Ralphe Meſchynes* (being the ſonne of *Margaret* the ſiſter and heire of *Hugo Lupus*) was by King *Henrie* the Firſt created Earle of *Cheſter*.

Ralphe Meſchynes his ſonne ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Cheſter*.

Hugh Meſchynes, ſurnamed *Keuelliocke*, becauſe hee was there borne, ſucceeded his father in the Earledome of *Cheſter*.

Ralphe Meſchynes, ſurnamed *Blundeuile*, his ſonne, being Lord of *Little Britaine*, was Earle of *Cheſter*, *Lincolne*, and of *Richmond*.

K. Iohn. *Iohn*, ſurnamed *Scot*, was by King *Iohn* created Earle of *Cheſter*, and died without iſſue male.

Edmund Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Crowch-backe*, the ſecond ſonne of

of king *Henrie* the Third, and brother to king *Edward* the First, was by his father created Earle Palatine of *Chester*. *H.* 3.

Edward the Prince, sonne and heire apparant to king *Edward* the First, was by his father created Earle Palatine of *Chester*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Prince of *Wales*. He was afterwards king *Edward* the Second. *E.* 1.

Edward the Third was in his fathers daies created Earle Palatine of *Chester*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Prince of *Wales*, and was afterwards king *Edward* the Third. *E.* 2.

Edward Plantagenet, surnamed *The Blacke Prince*, the eldest sonne of king *Edward* the Third, was in Parliament created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*.

Richard Plantagenet, sonne to the *Blacke Prince*, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and was after that king *Richard* the Second.

Henrie Plantagenet, the eldest sonne of king *Henrie* the Fourth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill he was king *Henrie* the Fifth.

Edward the sonne of king *Henrie* the Sixth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill hee was shamefully murdered.

Edward Plantagenet, the sonne of king *Richard* the Third, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and died without issue.

Arthur Tuther, the eldest sonne of king *Henrie* the Seuenth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and died without issue.

Henrie Tuther, the second sonne of king *Henrie* the Seuenth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill he was king *Henrie* the Eighth.

Edward Tuther, his sonne, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, vntill he was king *Edward* the Sixth. He died without issue.

Henrie Stewart, the eldest sonne of the illustrious Prince, King *Iames* the First, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*, and died without issue.

Charles Stewart, his brother, is Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Yorke*, *Cornwall*, and *Rossay*, and Earle Palatine of *Chester*.

Clarence.

Clarence.

K. Steph. *Gilbert de Clare* was by king *Stephen* created Earle of *Clarence*.
Roger de Clare, his brother, ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Clare*.
Richard de Clare, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Clare*.

E. 3. *Lionel Plantagenet*, the third ſonne of king *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Duke of *Clarence*. He had no iſſue male: but his daughter and heire *Philip* was maried to *Edmund Mortimer* Earle of *March*, from whom the Familie of *Yorke* did lineally deſcend.

H. 4. *Thomas Plantagenet*, the ſecond ſonne of king *Henrie* the Fourth, was by his father created Earle of *Albemarle*, and Duke of *Clarence*.

George Plantagenet, the third ſonne of *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*, and brother to king *Edward* the Fourth, was by him created Duke of *Clarence*, and was murdered in the Tower.

Cornwall.

Candor a *Briton* was Earle of *Cornwall* at the time of the Conqueſt, and did homage to the Conquerour for the ſame.
Candor his ſonne was the ſecond Earle of *Cornwall*.

Conq. *Robert* Earle of *Mortaigne* in *Normandie* was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Cornwall*.
William his ſonne, being Earle of *Mortaigne*, was alſo Earle of *Cornwall*.

K. Steph. *Reynold* the baſe ſonne of king *Henrie* the Firſt, was by king *Steuen* created Earle of *Cornwall*.

H. 2. *Iohn* the ſecond ſonne of king *Henrie* the Second, was by his father created Earle of *Cornwall*. He was afterwards king *Iohn*.

H. 3. *Richard*, the ſecond ſonne of king *Iohn*, was by his brother king *Henrie* the Third created Earle of *Cornwall*. Hee was alſo king of the *Romans*.
Henrie Plantagenet his ſonne ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Cornwall*, and died without iſſue.

E. 1. *Edward Plantagenet*, the eldeſt ſonne of king *Edward* the Firſt, was by his father created Prince of *Wales*, Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, and Duke of *Cornwall*, and hee was afterwards king *Edward* the Second.

Pierce Gaueſton, a *Gaſcoigne* borne, was by king *Edward* the Second created Lord of *Wallingfold*, and Earle of *Cornwall* and *Glocester*. He was beheaded by the Barons, becauſe hee miſſe-lead the king. He died without iſſue. *E.* 2.

John Plantagenet, ſecond ſonne to king *Edward* the ſecond, was by his father created Earle of *Cornwall*. He died without iſſue. *E.* 2.

Edward Plantagenet, the eldeſt ſonne of king *Edward* the Second, was by his father created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle of *Cheſter*, which hee enioied vntill hee was king *Edward* the Third. *E.* 2.

Edward Plantagenet, ſurnamed *The Blacke Prince*, was by his father king *Edward* the Third in Parliament created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*. *E.* 3.

Richard Plantagenet, ſonne to the blacke Prince, was by his Grandfather king *Edward* the Third created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, which hee enioied vntill he was King *Richard* the Second. *E.* 3.

Henry Plantagenet, the eldeſt ſonne of king *Henry* the Fourth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, vntill he was king *Henry* the Fifth.

Edward, the ſonne of king *Henry* the Sixth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, and was murdered.

Edward, the ſonne and heire apparant of King *Richard* the third, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, and died without iſſue.

Arthur Tuther, the eldeſt ſonne of king *Henry* the Seuenth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, and died without iſſue.

Henry Tuther, his brother, enioied the Principalitie of *Wales*, the Duchie of *Cornwall*, and the Earledome of the Palatinate of *Cheſter*, vntill he was king *Henry* the Eighth.

Edward Tuther, the ſonne of king *Henry* the Eighth, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, vntill hee was King *Edward* the Sixth.

Henry Stewart, the eldeſt ſonne of King *Iames* the Firſt, was Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, vntill hee died without iſſue.

Charles Stewart, his brother, is Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*, Duke of *Roſſay*, *Yorke*, and *Cornwall*, and Prince of *Wales*.

Cumberland.

Cumberland.

Conq. RAlphe *Meſchynes*, a *Norman*, was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Cumberland* and *Carlile*.

H. 8. *Henry*, Lord *Clifford*, *Bromflet*, and *Veſſey*, was by King *Henry* the Eighth created Earle of *Cumberland*.

George, Lord *Clifford*, *Bromflet*, and *Veſſey*, being his ſonne, was Earle of *Cumberland*, and died without iſſue male.

Francis, Lord *Clifford*, his brother, is Earle of *Cumberland*.

Darbie.

Conq. WIlliam *Peuerell*, baſe ſonne to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle of *Darbie* and of *Nottingham*.

William Peuerell, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe Earledomes.

K. Steph. *Robert de Ferrers*, Lord of *Tedburie*, and Earle of *Ferrers* and of *Nottingham*, was alſo Earle of *Darbie*.

William de Ferrers ſucceeded his father in thoſe honours.

William de Ferrers, his ſonne, was Lord of *Tedburie*, *Chartley*, and *Groby*, and Earle of *Ferrers*, *Nottingham*, and of *Darbie*.

Robert de Ferrers, his ſonne, poſſeſſed his fathers dignities. Hee was diſherited, becauſe he ſided with the Barons againſt King *Henrie* the Third.

H. 3. *Edmund Plantagenet*, ſurnamed *Crowch-backe*, being Earle of *Lancaſter*, ſecond ſonne to King *Henry* the Third, and brother to king *Edward* the Firſt, was by his ſaid father created Earle of *Leceſter* and of *Darbie*.

Thomas Plantagenet, his ſonne, being Earle of *Lancaſter*, *Leceſter*, *Lincolne*, and *Salisburie*, was by deſcent Earle of *Darbie*, and died without iſſue.

Henry Plantagenet, his brother, was dignified with all thoſe honours.

E. 3. *Henry Plantagenet*, his ſonne, enioying thoſe Earledomes, together with the Earledomes of *Albemarle* and *Holdernes*, was by king *Edward* the Third created Duke of *Lancaſter*. And his daughter and heire, named *Blanch*, was maried to *Iohn of Gaunt*, the fourth ſonne of the ſame King.

Iohn Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Iohn of Gaunt*, being Duke of *Lancaſter*,

ſter, Earle of *Leiceſter*, *Lincolne*, and *Salisbury*, was alſo Earle of *Darby*.

Henrie Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Bullingbroke*, being his ſonne, was Duke of *Lancaſter*, and *Hereford*, and Earle of *Leiceſter*, *Lincolne*, and of *Salisbury*; he was likewiſe Earle of *Darby*, and was king, by the name of king *Henrie* the Fourth.

Thomas Stanley, Lord *Stanley*, (whoſe Father *Thomas* was by king *Henrie* the Sixth, made Lord *Stanley*) was by king *Henrie* the Seuenth, created Earle of *Darby*. *H. 7.*

Thomas Stanley, his Grand-child, *viz.* the ſonne of his ſonne *Henrie*, who married *Ione*, the daughter and heire of *Iohn*, Lord *Strange*, and *Knoking*; being Lord *Stanley*, and *Strange*, was alſo Earle of *Darby*.

Edward, Lord *Stanley*, *Strange*, and *Knoking*, being his ſonne, ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Darby*.

Henrie, Lord *Stanley*, *Strange*, and *Knoking*, being his ſonne, was Earle of *Darby*.

Ferdinando, Lord *Stanley*, *Strange*, and *Knoking*, being his ſonne, was Earle of *Darby*, and dyed without iſſue Male.

William, Lord *Stanley*, *Strange*, and *Knoking*, his brother, is now Earle of *Darby*.

Deuonſhire.

Richard de Bruer, ſurnamed *Richard of the Heath*, being a *Norman*, was by the Conqueror created Earle of *Deuonſhire*, hee dyed without iſſue. *Conq.*

Adela de Bruer, his ſiſter and heire, was by the Conqueror created Vicounteſſe of *Deuonſhire*. *Conq.*

Baldwine de Riuers, being Earle of *Exeter*, was by King *Henrie* the ſecond created Earle of *Deuonſhire*. *H. 2.*

Richard Riuers, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honors.

Baldwine Riuers, his ſonne, was Earle after him, and dyed without iſſue.

Richard Riuers, his brother, was Earle, and dyed without iſſue.

William Riuers, ſurnamed *de Valentia*, was their Nephew, and heire, was after them Earle of *Deuonſhire*.

Baldwine Riuers, his ſonne, was Earle of *Deuon*.

Iohn Riuers, his ſonne, being Earle, dyed without iſſue.

Iſabel Riuers, ſurnamed *de Fortibus*, being the Generall heire of

the Earles of *Deuonſhire*, did enioy the ſaid Earledome. Shee married one who was named *William de Fortibus*, Earle of *Albemarle* and Lord of *Holdernes*; by whom ſhee had a plentifull iſſue. But King *Edward* the Third would not permit them to enioy the ſaid Earledome of *Deuonſhire*.

E. 3. *Hugh Courtney* Knight, who was deſcended from the before named Earles of *Deuonſhire*, was by King *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Deuonſhire*.

Hugh Courtney, his ſonne, was Earle after him.

Edward Courtney, ſurnamed the *Blinde*, (who was the ſonne of *Edward*, the ſonne of the laſt *Hugh Courtney*) was Earle of *Deuonſhire*.

Hugh Courtney, his ſonne, was Earle of *Deuonſhire*.

Thomas Courtney, his ſonne, being Lord of *Okehampt*, in *Deuon*, was alſo Earle of *Deuonſhire*. Hee tooke part in the warres with King *Henrie* the ſixt, and being taken priſoner at the battaile of *Towton* in *Yorkeſhire*, he loſt his head.

E. 4. *Humfrey Stafford* Eſquire, was by King *Edward* the Fourth, firſt made Lord *Stafford* of *Southweeke*, and afterward Earle of *Deuonſhire*: and becauſe he cowardly left the field at *Banbury* in the ciuill warres; at *Bridgewater* hee was beheaded by the commandement of the ſaid King.

H. 7. *Edward Courtney*, Lord of *Hackham*, being Coſen and heire to the ſaid *Thomas Courtney*, was by king *Henry* the ſeuenth created Earle of *Deuonſhire*.

William Courtney, his ſonne, married the Lady *Katherine* (one of the daughters of king *Edward* the Fourth) and was Earle of *Deuonſhire*.

H. 8. *Henrie Courtney*, his ſonne, was Earle of *Deuonſhire*, and by his Coſen German king *Henrie* the Eight, hee was created Marques of *Exeter*, but loſt his head.

Q. Ma. *Edward Courtney*, his ſonne, was by Queene *Marie* reſtored to the Earledome of *Deuonſhire*, but dyed at *Padua* without iſſue.

K. Ia. *Charles Blunt*, Lord *Mountioy*, was by King *Iames* the Firſt created Earle of *Deuon*; he dyed without iſſue.

Dorſet.

Conq. OSmond a *Norman*, being by the Conquerour created Earle of *Dorſet*, dyed without iſſue.

Thomas

Thomas Beauford, the ſonne of *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, by *Katherine Swinsford*, his third wife, was by king *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Somerſet*, and Marques *Dorſet*, which latter dignitie was taken from him in Parliament, *in An.* 1. *H.* 4.

Iohn *of* Gaunt *called all his Children by that Wife, by the name of* Beaufords.

Iohn Beauford, his brother, was Earle of *Somerſet* only, and was afterward by king *Henrie* the Fourth created Marques *Dorſet*, and by king *Henrie* the Sixt hee was created Duke of *Somerſet*. His daughter and heire named *Margaret*, was married to *Edmund Tuther*, Earle of *Richmond*; and they two had iſſue king *Henrie* the ſeuenth. *H.4.*

Edmund Beauford, his brother, was Earle of *Somerſet*, and by king *Henrie* the Fifth hee was created Earle of *Mortoigne* in *Normandie*, and by king *Henrie* the Sixt, Marques *Dorſet*, and Duke of *Somerſet*. *H.6.*

Henrie Beauford, his ſonne, was Earle of *Mortaigne*, Marques *Dorſet*, and Duke of *Somerſet*, and dyed without iſſue.

Thomas Grey, the ſonne of Sir *Iohn Grey* knight, and of the Lady *Elizabeth* his wife, and widdow; who was afterwards married to king *Edward* the Fourth, was by the ſame king created Marques *Dorſet*: he was alſo Lord of *Groby*, *Aſtley*, *Bonduile*, and *Harrington*. *E.4.*

Thomas Grey, ſucceeded his father in thoſe honors.

Henrie Grey, his ſonne, being Lord *Ferrers* of *Groby*, Lord *Harrington*, *Bonduile*, and *Aſtley*, was after his fathers death Marques *Dorſet*, and by king *Edward* the Sixt, he was created Duke of *Suffolke*, and was executed in Queene *Maries* raigne.

Thomas Sackvile, Lord *Buckhurſt*, and Lord Treaſuror of *England*, was by king *Iames* created Earle of *Dorſet*. *K. Ia.*

Robert Sackvile, his ſonne, was Lord *Buckhurſt*, and Earle of *Dorſet*.

Richard Sackvile, his ſonne, is Lord *Buckhurſt*, and Earle of *Dorſet*.

Eſſex.

GEoffrey *de Magna Villa*, otherwiſe *Mandevile*, was by king *Stephen* created Earle of *Eſſex*. *K. Steph.*

Geoffrey, his ſonne, was Earle of *Eſſex*, and dyed without iſſue.

William, his brother, was Earle of *Eſſex*, and dyed without iſſue.

Geoffrey Fitz-Peirce, otherwiſe *Ludgarſhall*, married *Beatrice* the heire of the ſaid *William Mandevile*, and was by king *Iohn* created *K. Ioh.*

Earle of *Eſſex*, ſhee had by him two ſonnes, *Geoffrey* and *William*, whom (at his wiues requeſt) hee named *Mandeviles*, according to the name of their Grand-father.

Geoffrey Mandevile, their ſonne, was Earle, and dyed without iſſue.

William Mandevile, his brother, was Earle, and died without iſſue

H. 3. *Humfrey Bohun*, was by King *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Eſſex*, and of *Hereford*.

Humfrey Bohun, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honors.

Humfrey Bohun, his ſonne, was Earle after him.

Humfrey Bohun, his ſonne, was Earle of *Eſſex* and of *Hereford*.

Iohn Bohun, his ſonne, was Earle, and dyed without iſſue.

Humfrey Bohun, the ſonne of *William Bohun*, who was the ſonne of the laſt *Humfrey*, was Earle of *Eſſex*, *Hereford*, and *Northampton*, and died without iſſue Male. And *Eleanor*, his eldeſt ſiſter, was maried vnto *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, one of the ſonnes of king *Edward* the Third.

E. 3. *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, the ſixt ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Eſſex*, *Buckingham*, *Hereford*, and *Northampton*, and by his Nephew king *Richard* the Second, he was created Duke of *Gloceſter*, and murdred in priſon at *Calice*, becauſe he had warned the king friendly of his faults.

Humfrey Plantagenet, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe Earledomes, and dyed without iſſue Male.

Henrie de Burgo Caro, otherwiſe *Bourchier*, being Earle of *Ewe* in *Normandie*, who was the ſonne of *William Bourchier*, who by king *Henrie* the Fift, was at *Maunt* in *Normandie*, created Earle of *Ewe*,

E. 4. was by king *Edward* the Fourth, created Viſcount *Bourchier*, and Earle of *Eſſex*, his ſonne *William* had iſſue *Henrie*, and dyed whileſt his father liued.

Henrie Bourchier, was Viſcount, and Earle, and died without iſſue.

H. 8. *Thomas Cromwel*, was by King *Henrie* the eighth, made Lord *Cromwel*, and was by him created Earle of *Eſſex*, but loſt his head.

H. 8. *William Parre*, was by king *Henrie* the eighth, made Lord *Parre* of *Kendall*, and Earle of *Eſſex*; and by king *Edward* the Sixt, he was made Marques of *Northampton*, and dyed without iſſue.

Walter Deuereux, Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartly*, and Viſcount *Hereford*,

Q. Eliz. was by Queene *Elizabeth*, created Earle of *Eſſex*.

Robert Deuereux, his ſonne, was Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartly*, Viſcount *Hereford*, and Earle of *Eſſex*.

Robert Deuereux, his ſonne, was reſtored to all his fathers honors,

K. Ia. by king *Iames* the Firſt, and now liueth.

Exeter.

Exeter.

John Holland, halfe-brother to King *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Huntington*, and Duke of *Exeter*. Hee was executed becauſe he conſpired againſt King *Henrie* the Fourth. — *R.* 2.

Thomas Beauford, one of the ſonnes of *John of Gaunt*, by his third wife, *Katherine Swinford*, was by his brother K. *Henry* the Fourth created Earle of *Dorſet*, and Duke of *Exeter*. He died without iſſue. — *H.* 4.

John Holland, the ſonne of the aforenamed *John*, was by King *Henrie* the Fifth reſtored to his Earledome of *Huntington*, and by King *Henrie* the Sixth to his Duchie of *Exeter*. — *H.* 6.

Henry Holland, his ſonne, was attainted when King *Edward* the Fourth raigned, and was drowned on *Calice* Sands.

Henry Courtney, Earle of *Deuonſhire*, was by king *Henrie* the Eighth created Marqueſſe of *Exeter*, and loſt his head. — *H.* 8.

Thomas Cecil, Lord *Burleigh*, was by King *Iames* the Firſt created Earle of *Exeter*, and yet liueth. — *K. Iames.*

Gloceſter.

William Fitz-Euſtace, being by the Conquerour created Earle of *Gloceſter*, died without iſſue. — *Conq.*

Robert Fitz-Hamon, Lord of *Aſtreuile* in *Normandie*, was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Gloceſter*. — *Conq.*

William Fitz-Hamon, his ſonne, was Earle of *Gloceſter*.

Robert de Millent, baſe ſonne to king *Henry* the Firſt, was by him created Earle of *Gloceſter*. He died without iſſue. — *H.* 1.

Iohn Plantagenet, the ſonne of king *Henry* the Second, was by his father created Duke of *Gloceſter*. But hee was afterwards King of *England*. — *H.* 2.

Geoffrey Mandeuile, the laſt of that name, Earle of *Eſſex*, was by King *Iohn* created Earle of *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue. — *K. Iohn.*

Almericus, Earle of *Eureux*, was by King *Iohn* created Earle of *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue. — *K. Iohn.*

Gilbert de Clare, being Earle of *Hartford*, was created Earle of *Gloceſter* by King *Henry* the Third. — *H.* 3.

Richard, his ſonne, was Earle of *Clare*, and *Gloceſter*, and *Hartford*.

Gilbert de Clare, his ſonne, had thoſe three Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his ſonne, was Earle of *Hartford*, *Clare*, and *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue male.

E. 1. *Ralphe Mounthermer*, who maried *Ione* of *Acres*, one of the daughters of King *Edward* the Firſt, and who was widow to the laſt *Gilbert de Clare*, was by the ſame King created Earle of *Hartford* and *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue.

E. 2. *Pierce Gaueſton*, a *Gaſcoigne* borne, was by King *Edward* the Second created Lord of *Wallingford*, Earle of *Cornwall* and *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue, being executed by the Barons.

Hugh Spencer, the younger, was by King *Edward* the Second created Earle of *Gloceſter*, and was executed at *London*.

E. 3. *Hugh Awdley*, Lord *Awdley* of *Helie Caſtle*, was by King *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue.

R. 2. *Thomas Plantagenet*, ſurnamed *Thomas of Woodſtocke*, the ſixth ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Eſſex*, *Buckingham*, and *Northampton*, and by King *Richard* the Second, his nephew, hee was created Duke of *Gloceſter*: but was murdered at *Calice* in priſon for reprouing the King friendly of his faults.

R. 2. *Thomas* Lord *Spencer*, the grand-childe of the afore named *Hugh Spencer*, was by King *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue male.

H. 4. *Humfrey Plantagenet*, the fourth ſonne of king *Henrie* the Fourth, being Earle of *Pembroke*, was by his father created Duke of *Gloceſter*, and died without iſſue.

E. 4. *Richard Plantagenet*, the ſonne of *Richard Plantagenet* Duke of *Yorke*, and brother to King *Edward* the Fourth, was by the ſame King created Duke of *Gloceſter*. Hee was alſo King *Richard* the Third, and died without iſſue.

Hartford.

H. 2. *Roger de Clare*, Earle of *Clarence*, was by King *Henrie* the Second created Earle of *Hartford*.

Richard de Clare, his ſonne, enioied both thoſe Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his ſonne, was Earle of *Clare*, *Hartford*, and of *Gloceſter*.

Richard de Clare, his ſonne, enioied thoſe three Earledomes.

Gilbert de Clare, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honours.

Gilbert de Clare, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and died without iſſue male.

Ralphe de Mounthermer, who maried *Ione* of *Acres*, one of the daughters

daughters of king *Edward* the First, was by him created Earle of *Gloceſter*, and of *Hartford*, he dyed without iſſue. *E.1.*

Edward Saint-Maure, alias *Seymour*, was by king *Henrie* the Eight made Viſcount *Beauchamp*, and Earle of *Hartford*; hee was Vncle and Protector to king *Edward* the Sixt, by whom hee was created Duke of *Somerſet*, and loſt his head. *H.8.*

Edward Saint-Maure, alias *Seymour*, his ſonne, was by Queene *Elizabeth* created Viſcount *Beauchamp*, and Earle of *Hartford*, and he now liueth. *Q.Eliz.*

Hereford.

WIlliam *Fitz-Osborne*, who firſt perſwaded the Conqueror to vndertake that weightie buſineſſe, was by him created Earle of *Hereford*, and Lord of the Iſle of *Waight*; becauſe he made the firſt Conqueſt thereof. *Conq.*

Roger Fitz-Osborne, his ſonne, who ſucceeded, was attainted of Treaſon, and dyed a priſoner without iſſue.

Miles Fitz-Water, was by King *Henrie* the Firſt, created Earle of *Hereford*. *H.1.*

Roger Fitz-Water, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and dyed without iſſue.

Walter Fitz-Water, his brother, was Earle, and dyed without iſſue.

Henrie Fitz-Water, his brother, ſucceeded, and dyed without iſſue.

Humfrey Bohun, was by king *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Hereford*, and of *Eſſex*. *H.3.*

Humfrey Bohun, ſucceeded his father in thoſe Earledomes.

Humfrey Bohun, his ſonne, was Earle after him.

Humfrey Bohun, his ſonne, was his ſucceſſour in thoſe Dignities.

Iohn Bohun, his ſonne, was Earle, and dyed without iſſue.

Humfrey Bohun, his Nephew, *viz.* the ſonne of *William*, brother to the ſaid *Iohn*, was Earle of *Hereford*, *Eſſex*, and *Northampton*, and dyed without iſſue Male.

Thomas of *Woodſtock*, the ſixt ſonne of king *Edward* the Third, married *Eleanor*, the eldeſt ſiſter of the ſaid *Humfrey*, and was by his Father created Earle of *Hereford*, *Eſſex*, *Buckingham*, and *Northampton*: he was afterwards by his Nephew, king *Richard* the Second, created Duke of *Gloceſter*, and was murdred in priſon at *Calice*, becauſe he informed the king friendly of his faults. *E.3.*

Humfrey

Humfrey Plantagenet, his ſonne, was Earle, and dyed without iſſueMal e.

Henrie Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Bullingbroke*, the ſonne and heire apparant of *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaſter*, being Earle of *Darby*,
R.2. was by his Coſen, king *Richard* the Second, created Duke of *Hereford*, and was afterwards king *Henry* the Fourth.

Humfrey Stafford, was Earle of *Stafford*, *Northampton*, and *Hereford*, and was by king *Henrie* the Sixt, created Duke of *Buckingham*, but he loſt his head.

Huntington.

Conq. *Waldolf* a *Saxon*, married *Iudith*, the Conquerors Neece, and was by him created Earle of *Huntington*; hee dyed without iſſue Male.

Rufus. *Simon de S. Lize*, otherwiſe *Saint-Leger*, married *Mawld*, one of the daughters of *Waldolf*, and was by *William Rufus*, created Earle of *Huntington*, and *Northampton*: and (hauing iſſue *Simon*) hee dyed.

Steph. *Dauid*, Prince of *Scotland*, and ſonne to *Malcolme* the Third, being Earle of *Northumberland*, and *Cumberland*, was by king *Stephen* made Earle of *Huntington*, for *Simon* was but a child, and vniuſtly kept from his Inheritance.

Henrie, Prince of *Wales*, (aſſoone as *Dauid* his father was king of *Scotland*) enioyed the Earledomes of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Huntington*.

After the death of King *Stephen*, the ſaid *Simon* (being ſonne to the ſaid *Simon*) entred into his Earledomes of *Huntington*, and *Northampton*, and enioyed the ſame in peace, during his life.

Malcolme, Prince of *Scotland*, and ſonne to the before named *Henrie* (becauſe the rightfull Earle of *Huntington* was in his mino-
H. 2. ritie) was by king *Henrie* the Second, made Earle of *Huntington*, as he was Earle of *Northumberland*, and of *Cumberland*.

William, his brother, being Prince of *Scotland*, and Earle of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and of *Huntington*, made warres vpon King *Henrie* the Second, after he was king of the *Scots*, and was taken priſoner in the field, ranſomed, and loſt thoſe honors.

Simon de S. Lize, otherwiſe *Saint-Leger*, the third of that name, was by king *Henrie* the Second, reſtored to his Earledome of *Huntington*, and was alſo Earle of *Northampton*, and died without iſſue.

Dauid

Dauid, the brother of the aforenamed *William*, was by the fauour of king *Richard* the Second reſtored to the Earledome of *Huntington.* — *R.* 1.

Iohn, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Huntington*, and died without iſſue male. He was ſurnamed *Scot.*

William Clinton was by king *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Huntington*, and died without iſſue. — *E.* 3.

Guiſchard, a *Gaſcoigne* borne in *Angoleſme*, was by king *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Huntington*, and died without iſſue. — *R.* 2.

Iohn Holland, halfe-brother to King *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Huntington*, and Duke of *Exeter*, and loſt his head for conſpiring againſt king *Henrie* the Fourth. — *R.* 2.

Iohn Holland, his ſonne, was reſtored to his Earledome by King *Henrie* the Fifth, and by king *Henrie* the Sixth to his Duchie of *Exeter.* — *H.* 5.

Henry Holland, his ſonne, was attainted when king *Edward* the Fourth raigned, and was drowned on the coaſt of *Calice.*

Thomas Grey, ſonne in Law to king *Edward* the Fourth, was by him created Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, and Earle of *Huntington.*

Thomas Grey, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honours.

William Herbert, the eldeſt ſonne of *William Herbert*, whom king *Edward* the Fourth had made Earle of *Pembroke*, was by the ſame King made Earle of *Huntington.* — *E.* 4.

George Haſtings, Lord *Haſtings*, *Botreaux*, and *Molines*, was by king *Henrie* the Eighth created Earle of *Huntington.* — *H.* 8.

Francis Haſtings, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honours.

Henry Haſtings, his ſonne, being Lord *Haſtings*, *Hungerford*, *Botreux*, *Molines*, and *Moeles*, was alſo Earle of *Huntington.*

George Haſtings, his brother, ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

Henry Haſtings, the ſonne of *Francis Haſtings*, who was the ſonne of the ſaid *George*, now liueth, and doth enioy the ſaid Lordſhips, and Earledome of *Huntington.*

Kendall.

Gaſcoigne de Foix, a *Gaſcoigne borne*, was at *Maunt* in *Normandie* created by king *Henrie* the Fifth Earle of *Longuile* and *Kendall.* He reuolted, and became *French.* — *H.* 5.

Iohn de Foys, his ſonne, maried the Neece of *William de la Pole* Duke

H. 6. Duke of *Suffolke*, by whoſe mediation he was by king *Henrie* the Sixth reſtored. But he became *French*.

H. 6. *Capdaw de Beuffs* was by king *Henry* the Sixth created Earle of *Kendall*. But he reuolted to the *French* King.

Kent.

Wilnotus (at the Conqueſt being brother to King *Harold*) was Earle of *Kent*. But (for feare) he fled into *Denmarke*, and died without iſſue.

Conq. *Odo*, Biſhop of *Bayon*, and halfe-brother to the Conquerour, was by him created Earle of *Kent*, and he died without iſſue.

K. Steph. *William de Ipre*, Earle of *Flanders*, was by King *Stephen* created Earle of *Kent*, and died without iſſue.

H. 3. *Hubert de Burgh*, being Lord chiefe Iuſtice of *England*, was by king *Henrie* the Third created Earle of *Kent*, and died without iſſue male.

E. 2. *Edmund Plantagenet*, ſurnamed *Edmund of Woodſtocke*, being ſonne to king *Edward* the Firſt, and brother to king *Edward* the Second, was by his brother created Earle of *Kent*, but loſt his head in the raigne of his nephew king *Edward* the Third.

R. 2. *Thomas Holland*, halfe-brother to King *Richard* the Second, was by him created Earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*.

Thomas Holland, his ſonne, was Earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*, and died without iſſue.

Edmund Holland, brother to the ſaid *Thomas*, was Earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*, and died without iſſue.

E. 4. *William Neuil*, Lord *Fawconbridge*, a younger brother to *Ralphe Neuil*, the firſt of that Familie, Earle of *Weſtmorland*, was by king *Edward* the Fourth created Earle of *Kent*, and died without iſſue male.

E. 4. *Edmund Grey*, Lord *Grey* of *Ruthen*, was by king *Edward* the Fourth created Earle of *Kent*.

Richard Grey, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

Q. Eliz. *Reynold Grey*, who was deſcended lineally from the ſaid *Edmund*, was reſtored to the Earledome of *Kent* by Queene *Elizabeth*, and died without iſſue.

Henry Grey, his brother, is now Earle of *Kent*.

Lancaſter.

Iohn Plantagenet, brother to king *Richard* the Firſt, was by him created Earle of *Lancaſter*, *Leceſter*, and *Darbie*. Hee was afterwards King of *England*. *R.* 1.

Edmund Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Crowch-backe*, the ſecond ſonne of king *Henry* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Lancaſter*, *Leceſter*, and *Darbie*. He maried *Blanch* the Queene of *Nauarre*, and had iſſue by her, *Thomas* and *Henry*. *H.* 3.

Thomas Plantagenet, his ſonne, was Earle of *Lancaſter*, *Leceſter*, *Lincolne*, *Salisburie*, and *Dorſet*, and died without iſſue.

Henry Plantagenet, his brother, was dignified with all thoſe honours.

Henry Plantagenet, his ſonne, enioying all thoſe Earledomes, together with the Earledomes of *Albemarle* and *Holdernes*, was by king *Edward* the Third created Duke of *Lancaſter*. His daughter and heire, named *Blanch*, maried *Iohn of Gaunt*, the fourth ſonne of king *Edward* the Third. *E.* 3.

Iohn Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Iohn of Gaunt*, enioied all thoſe Earledomes, and was Duke of *Lancaſter*.

Henry Plantagenet, his ſonne, ſurnamed *Bolingbroke*, held all thoſe Earledomes, and was Duke of *Lancaſter* and *Hereford*, and was king *Henry* the Fourth, by depoſing of king *Richard* the Second.

Leceſter.

Leofrick was Earle of *Leceſter* when *Edward* the Confeſſor liued.

Algarus, his ſonne, ſucceeded in that Earledome.

Edwin, his ſonne, was Earle at the Conqueſt.

Robert de Beamont was created Earle of *Leceſter* by king *Henrie* the Firſt. *H.* 1.

Robert de Beamont, his ſonne, was Earle after him.

Robert, his ſonne, ſurnamed *Blanch-Maynes*, was his ſucceſſor.

Robert, his [illegible], was Earle, and died without iſſue.

Simon de Mountfort was by king *Iohn* created Earle of *Leceſter*, and was ſlaine at the ſiege of *Tholouſe*. *K. Iohn.*

Simon de Mountfort was Earle of *Leceſter*. He tooke king *Henrie* the Third priſoner in the Barons warres. But the young Prince

Edward

Edward, ſet his Father at libertie, and ſlue this *Simon*, with many more, at the battaile of *Everſham*, and his poſſeſſions were confiſcate to the king.

Edmund Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Crowchback*, ſecond ſonne to king *Henrie* the Third, was by his Father created Earle of *Leceſter*, *Lancaſter*, &c.

Thomas Plantagenet, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

Henrie Plantagenet, his brother, poſſeſſed all thoſe honors.

Henrie Plantagenet, his ſonne, was Earle of *Leceſter*, *&c.* and was
E.3. by King *Edward* the Third, created Duke of *Lancaſter*; his daughter and heire, named *Blanch*, was married to *Iohn* of *Gaunt*.

Iohn Plantagenet, ſurnamed *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, the fourth ſonne of king *Edward* the Third, married *Blanch*, and was Earle of *Leceſter*, *&c.* and Duke of *Lancaſter*.

Henrie of *Bullingbroke*, his ſonne, was Earle of *Leceſter*, *&c.* and Duke of *Lancaſter*, and of *Hereford*, and was afterwards king *Henry* the Fourth.

Robert Sutton, otherwiſe *Dudley*, a yonger ſonne to *Iohn* Duke of *Northumberland*, was by Queene *Elizabeth*, created Earle of *Leceſter*, and dyed without any lawfull iſſue.

Lincolne.

Marcarus, being Earle of *Lincolne*, and *Northumberland*, at the time of the Conqueſt, rebelled, and dyed in priſon without iſſue.

Ruſus. *William de Romara*, was by King *William Ruſus* created Earle of *Lincolne*, and died without iſſue.

Steph. *Gilbert de Gaunt*, was in the right of *Avis*, his wife, created Earle of *Lincolne*, and died without iſſue Male.

Lewis. *Gilbert de Gaunt*, in the troubleſome times of King *Iohn*, was created Earle of *Lincolne*, by the Dolphin *Lewis*, ſon to the *French* King.

Ralf de Meſchynes, ſurnamed *Blundevile*, being the ſixt Earle of
H.3. *Cheſter*, was by king *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Lincolne*, and of *Richmond*, becauſe he tooke his part againſt the Barons: he dyed without iſſue.

Iohn Lacy, Baron of *Haulton*, was by king *Henrie* the Third, created Earle of *Lincolne*.

Henrie

Henrie Lacy, the ſonne of *Edmund Lacy*, ſonne to the ſaid *Iohn*, ſucceeded, and was Earle of *Lincolne*.

Thomas Plantagenet, the ſonne of *Edmund Crowchback*, was Earle of *Lancaſter*, *Leiceſter*, *Darby*, and *Salisbury*: Hee married *Alice* the daughter and heire of *Henrie Lacy*, and was (in her right) Earle of *Lincolne*, and died without iſſue.

Iohn de la Pole, the ſonne of *Iohn de la Pole*, the ſecond of that name, Duke of *Suffolke*, was created Earle of *Lincolne*, by king *Edward* the Fourth, and dyed without iſſue. *E.* 4.

Henrie Brandon, the ſonne and heire apparant of *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolke*, was by his Vncle king *Henrie* the eighth, created Earle of *Lincolne*; he dyed a child without iſſue. *H.*8.

Edward Fines, Lord *Clinton*, was by Queene *Elizabeth*, created Earle of *Lincolne*. *Q. Eliz.*

Henrie Fines, Lord *Clinton*, the ſonne of the ſaid *Edward*, was Earle of *Lincolne* after his Father, and yet liueth.

March.

Edwin a *Saxon*, at the time of the Conqueſt, was Earle of *March*; hee with *Marcarus* and *Swardus*, kept the Iſle of *Waight*, againſt the Conqueror, and was baniſhed.

Roger Mortimer, Lord *Mortimer* of *Wigmore*, was by king *Edward* the Third, created Earle of *March*, and was executed for Treaſon. *E.* 3.

Roger Mortimer, the ſonne of *Edmund Mortimer*, who was the ſonne of the ſaid Earle *Roger*, was by the ſame king reſtored to the Baronie of *Wigmore*, and to the Earledome of *March*. *E.* 3.

Edmund Mortimer, his ſonne, married *Philip*, the daughter and heire of *Lionel*, Duke of *Clarence*, the third ſonne of king *Edward* the Third, and was Earle of *March*, and from them two, did deſcend the heires of the Familie of *Yorke*.

Roger Mortimer, their ſonne, was Earle of *March*, and of *Vlſter* in *Ireland*, and by king *Richard* the Second, was proclaimed heire apparant to the Crowne of *England*, and was ſlaine long after in *Ireland*.

Edmund Mortimer, his ſonne, was Earle of *March*, and after one and twentie yeares impriſonment in *Wales*, and elſewhere: he died without iſſue.

Richard Plantagenet, Earle of *Cambridge*, was the ſonne of *Ed-*

mund of *Langley*, Duke of *Yorke*, the fift ſonne of King *Edward* the third) hee maried *Anne* the ſiſter and heire of the ſaid *Edmund*, & daughter to the ſaid laſt Earle *Roger*, and in her right, he was Earle of *March*, and they two had iſſue, *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*, who was father to King *Edward* the fourth.

Richard Plantagenet, ſonne to *Richard* Earle of *Cambridge*, was Earle of *March*, and Duke of *Yorke*, and had iſſue *Edward* the fourth.

Edward his ſonne was firſt, Earle of *March*, then by his Fathers death, he was Duke of *Yorke*, and by his victorie at *Barnet* field hee attained the Kingdome of *England*, and was King *Edward* the fourth.

Mountgomery.

K. Ia. SIr *Philip Herbert* Knight, the ſecond ſonne of *Henry* late Earle of *Pembroke*, and younger brother to *William* Lord *Herbert* now Earle of *Pembroke*, was by K. *Iames* created Earle of *Mountgomery*.

Northfolke.

RAlph *Waer*, at the time of the Conqueſt, was Earle of *Norfolke*, and *Suffolke*, and fled for treaſon.

Conq. *Ralph Bygot*, Preſident of the *Eaſt Angles*, was by the Conqueror, created Earle of *Northfolke*, but hee was diſherited for conſpiring againſt him.

H. 1. *Hugh Bygot*, was by King *Henry* the firſt, created Earle of *Northfolke*,

Roger Bygot, his ſonne was Earle after him.

Hugh Bygot, his ſonne, was Earle of *Northfolke*.

Roger Bygot, his ſonne, ſucceeded in that Earledome.

Roger Bygot, (his Nephew, *vizt.* the ſonne of his brother *Robert*) was Earle of *Northfolke*, and dyed without iſſue.

E. 2. *Thomas Plantagenet*, ſurnamed *Brotherton*, who was a yonger ſon to King *Edward* the firſt, and brother to King *Edward* the ſecond, was by his brother created Earle of *Northfolk*, he had one daughter and heire; who was named *Margaret*.

Iohn

Iohn Lord *Segraue* maried the ſaid *Margaret*, & they two had iſſue *Margaret*, which *Margaret* was by King *Richard* the ſecond created Ducheſſe of *Northfolke* after her huſbands death, and then ſhe maried *Iohn* Lord *Mowbray*. R. 2.

Thomas Lord *Mowbray*, their ſonne, was by King *Richard* the ſecond created Earle of *Nottingham*, Marſhall of *England*, and Duke of *Norfolke*, hee dyed without iſſue. Hee complained of *Henry* of *Bullinbrooke* to King *Richard* the ſecond, and ſhould haue fought a combate with him, but died at *Venice* in his baniſhment. R. 2.

Thomas Lord *Mowbray*, his ſonne, was neuer Duke of *Northfolk*, but was in his fathers life time only Earle of *Nottingham*, and was executed for treaſon with *Richard Scroop* Archbiſhop of *Yorke* by King *Henry* the fourth, and his brother *Iohn* ſucceeded their father aud was Marſhall of *England*, Earle of *Nottingham*, and Duke of *Northfolke*.

Iohn Lord *Mowbray*, his ſonne, was Earle of *Nottingham*, *Warren*, and *Surrey*, High Marſhall of *England*, and Duke of *Northfolke*.

Iohn Lord *Mowbray*, his ſonne, ſucceeded his father in all thoſe honourable Dignities, he died, and had iſſue *Anne*.

Richard Plantagenet, Duke of *Yorke*, and ſecond ſonne to King *Edward* the fourth, was maried in his childhood to the ſaid *Anne*, and was in her right poſſeſſor of all thoſe honors. But he was murdred by his Vncle King *Richard* the third, and died without iſſue. The ſaid *Anne* alſo died without iſſue, whereby all the Lordſhippes of the *Mowbrays*, by courſe of inheritance was devolued to *Iohn* Lord *Howard*, and to *William* Lord *Barkley*.

Iohn Lord *Howard*, who by his mothers ſide, was diſcended from the before named *Mowbreyes*, was by King *Richard* the third created Duke of *Northfolke*, and loſt his life in the ſaid Kings quarell at *Boſworth* field. R. 3.

Thomas Howard, his ſonne, who by King *Richard* the third was made Earle of *Surrey*, was created Duke of *Northfolke*, by King *Henry* the eighth. H. 8.

Thomas Howard, his ſon, ſucceeded and was Duke of *Northfolk*.

Thomas Howard, (the ſonne of *Henry*, who was the ſonne of the laſt *Thomas* Duke of *Northfolke*) was Duke of *Northfolke*, and Earle Marſhall of *England*. He was alſo (in the right of his wife *Marie* the eldeſt daughter of *Henry Fitz-Allen*) Earle of *Arundell*.

Northumberland.

MArcarns, at the time of the Conqueſt, was Earle of *Northumberland* and *Lincolne*, he with others kept the Ile of *Wighte* againſt the Conqueror, and was taken, dyed in priſon, and had no iſſue.

Conq. *Robert de Cumine*, was by the Conqueror created Earle of *Northumberland*, but was ſlaine by the *Northumbers*.

Conq. *Goſpatrick*, was created Earle of *Northumberland* by the Conqueror, but he tooke it from him againe.

Conq. *Waldroſe*, was by the Conqueror created Earle of *Northumberland*, but loſt his head for treaſon.

Conq. *Walcher*, Biſhop of *Durham*, bought the Earledome of *Northumberland* of the Conqueror, and died without iſſue.

Conq. *Robert de Mowbray*, was by the Conqueror created Earle of *Northumberland*, but he rebelled, and loſt it.

Steph. *Dauid*, Prince of *Scotland*, ſonne to King *Malcolme* the third, was Earle of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Huntington*.

Henrie, his ſonne (aſſoone as his father was King) enioyed all thoſe Earledomes.

Malcolme, his ſon, was Earle of *Northumberland*, and of *Cumberland*, and *Huntington*.

William, his brother, ſucceeded him in his Kingdome, and was Earle of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Huntington*, he warred againſt King *Henry* the ſecond, was taken Priſoner, ranſomed, and loſt thoſe honors.

R.1 *Hugh de Puddſey*, Biſhop of *Durham*, was by King *Richard* the firſt created Earle of *Northumberland*, and died without iſſue.

R.2. *Henry Percy*, was by King *Richard* the ſecond, created Earle of *Northumberland*. hee was father to *Henry* ſurnamed *Hotſpurre*, who was ſlaine in their rebellion againſt King *Henry* the fourth.

H.5. *Henry*, the ſonne of *Henry Hotſpur*, was by King *Henry* the fifth reſtored to the Earledome of *Northumberland*.

Henry Percy his ſonne, was Earle of *Northumberland*. Hee and his ſon *Henry* tooke part with King *Henry* the ſixt, and in his quarrell he was ſlaine at *Towton* field, but *Henrie* his ſonne fled with the king into *Scotland*.

E. 4. *Iohn*, Lord *Mountacute*, brother to *Richard* Earle of *Warwick*, was by king *Edward* the fourth created Earle of *Northumberland*, but the ſaid *Henry Percy* obtained the kings fauour, by his friends mediation, ſo that *Iohn* Lord *Mountacute* ſurrendred his Patent to the

the King, And was created Marqnes *Mountacute.*

Henry Percy, was by King *Edward* the fourth, restored to the Earledome of *Northumberland*, and was slaine by the Common People there, because he leuied a tax for the King which much displeased them. *E. 4.*

Henry Percy, Lord *Percy*, *Crockermouth*, *Petworth*, *Poynings*, *Fitz-Payne*, and *Brian*, his sonne succeeded and was Earle of *Northumberland.*

Henry Percy, his sonne, enioyed all those honorable titles and possessions, and died without issue.

Iohn Dudley, Earle of *Warwick*, and Viscount *Lisle*, Lord *Basset* & *Tyes*, was created Duke of *Northumberland* by King *Edward* the sixt, and lost his head in the raigne of Queene *Mary.*

Thomas Percy, being the heire male of the house of the Earles *Percies* was restored by Queene *Mary*, to the Earledome of *Northumberland*, and for default of issue male of his bodie, it was entayled to his Brother *Henry Percy*, and to the heires males of his body. And whilest Queene *Elizabeth* raigned, the said *Thomas* died without issue male. *Q. Ma.*

Henry Percy, his brother (according to the aforesaid entailement) was Earle of *Northumberland* and died.

Henry Percy, his sonne, is now Lord of *Petworth*, *Crockermouth*, *Poynings*, *Fitz-Paine*, and *Brian*, and Earle of *Northumberland.*

Nottingham.

WIlliam *Peuerel*, base sonne to the Conqueror, was by him created Earle of *Nottingham*, and of *Darby.* *Conq.*

William Peuerel, his sonne, was Earle of *Nottingham*, and *Darby.*

Robert, Earle of *Ferrers* in *Normandie*, and Lord of *Tedbery* in *Staffordshire*, was by King *Stephen* created Earle of *Nottingham.* *K. Steph.*

William, his sonne, was Earle of *Nottingham*, and by King *Iohn*, he was also created Earle of *Darby.*

Iohn de Mowbray, was by King *Richard* the second, created Earle of *Nottingham*, and died without issue. *R. 2.*

Thomas de Mowbray, his brother, was by K. *Richard* the second, first created Earle of *Nottingham*, and then Duke of *Northfolk:* hee was challenged by *Henry* of *Bullingbroke*, Duke of *Hereford*, to a single combate, for his false reports to the King, and was banished, and died in his exile. *R. 2.*

Thomas Mowbray, his ſonne, was Earle of *Nottingham*, and executed for treaſon with *Richard Scroop*, Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, In the Raigne of King *Henry* the fourth.

Iohn Mowbray, his brother, was by King *Henry* the ſixt, created
H.6. Earle of *Nottingham*, and Duke of *Northfolke*.

Iohn Mowbray, his ſonne, was Earle of *Nottingham*, *Warren*, and *Surrey*, and Duke of *Northfolke*.

Iohn Mowbray, his ſonne, enioyed all thoſe honours, and died without iſſue male.

R.3. *William*, Lord *Barkley*, being one of his Generall heires, was by King *Edward* the fourth, made Viſcount *Barkley*, and by King *Richard* the third, he was created Earle of *Nottingham*, and by King *Henry* the ſeuenth, Marques *Barkley*.

Henry Fitz-Roy, the baſe ſonne of King *Henry* the eighth, and of *Elizabeth Blount*, was by the ſame King created Earle of *Notting-*
H.8. *ham*, and Duke of *Richmond*, and died without iſſue.

Charles Lord *Howard*, of *Effingham*, was by King *Iames*, created Earle of *Nottingham*.

Oxford.

EDgar *Atheling*, (the ſonne of *Edward* the Out-law, who was the ſonne of *Edmund Ironſide*) was at the Conqueſt Earle of *Oxford*, and was by the Conqueror depriued of that honour.

Mauld. *Awbrey de Vere*, was by *Mauld* the Empreſſe created, and by her ſonne King *Henry* the ſecond, confirmed Lord High Chamberlaine of *England* in feee and Earle of *Oxford*.

Awbrey de Vere, his ſonne enioyed thoſe honors, and dyed in the dayes of King *Iohn*, without iſſue.

Robert de Vere, his brother was High Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*, and ſided with the Barons in their warres, againſt King *Iohn*, when they tooke part with the *Dolphin* of *France*, by reaſon of the Popes Curſe.

Hugh de Vere, his ſonne, was high Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*; he was Viſcount *Bolbeck*, and Lord *Samford*.

Robert de Vere, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe Honors.

Robert de Vere, his ſonne, enioyed the ſame, and dyed without iſſue.

Iohn de Vere, the ſonne of *Alphonſus de Vere*, brother to the laſt *Robert*,

Robert, was Lord *Samford*, Vicount *Bolbeck*, High Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*.

Thomas de Vere, his ſonne, held all thoſe honorable dignities.

Robert de Vere, his ſonne, being Lord *Samford*, Viſcount *Bolbeck*, Earle of *Oxford*, and high Chamberlaine of *England*, was by king *Richard* the Second, created Marques of *Dublin*, and Duke of *Ireland*: he died without iſſue.

Awbrey de Vere, his Vncle, was Lord *Samford*, Viſcount *Bolbeck*, and Earle of *Oxford*: But the inheritance of his high Chamberlainſhip of *England*, hee voluntarily ſurrendred to king *Richard* the Second, who gaue it to his halfe brother, *Iohn Holland*, Duke of *Exeter*.

Richard de Vere, his ſonne, was Lord *Samford*, Viſcount *Bolbeck*, and Earle of *Oxford*.

Iohn de Vere, his ſonne, enioyed thoſe Honors: He and his eldeſt ſonne *Awbrey de Vere*, were attainted, and executed in the time of king *Edward* the Fourth.

Iohn de Vere, his ſonne, was by King *Henry* the Seuenth, reſtored to the honors of *Bolbeck*, *Samford*, and *Scales*, was made high Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*. *H. 7.*

Iohn de Vere, his Nephew, by *George* his brother, ſucceeded him in all thoſe Honors: and dyed without iſſue.

Iohn de Vere, the ſonne of *Iohn de Vere*, who was the ſonne of *Robert de Vere*, who was brother to *Iohn de Vere*, the twelfth Earle of *Oxford*, of that name, who was Father to the before named *George*, enioyed all thoſe dignities.

Iohn de Vere, being the heire male of that Familie, was the ſixth Earle of that Chriſtian name: He was alſo Lord *Samford*, and *Badilſmere*, Viſcount *Bolbeck*, and high Chamberlaine of *England*.

Edward de Vere, his ſonne, enioyed all thoſe Honors.

Henrie de Vere, his ſonne, is Lord *Samford*, and *Badilſmere*, Viſcount *Bolbeck*, High Chamberlaine of *England*, and Earle of *Oxford*.

Pembroke.

WAlter *Gifford*, was by the Conquetour, created Earle of *Pembroke*, and *Buckingham*. *Conq.*

Walter Gifford, his ſonne, ſucceeded and died without iſſue.

Gilbert

Gilbert de Clare was by King *Stephen* created Earle of *Pembroke*.

Richard de Clare, ſurnamed *Strongbow*, being his ſonne, was Earle of *Pembroke*, and died without iſſue male.

K. Iohn. *William Marſhall*, Earle *Marſhall* of *England*, was by King *Iohn* created Earle of *Pembroke*.

William Marſhall, his ſonne, enioied all thoſe honours, and died without iſſue.

Richard Marſhall, his brother, ſucceeded him, and was ſlaine, and died in *Ireland* without iſſue.

Gilbert Marſhall, his brother, was Earle *Marſhall*, and of *Pembroke*, and died without iſſue.

Walter Marſhall, his brother, was Earle *Marſhall*, and of *Pembroke*, and died without iſſue.

H. 3. *William de Valentia*, the ſonne of King *Iohns* wife *Iſabel*, and of her ſecond husband *Hugh de Brun*, was by his halfe-brother King *Henrie* the Third created Earle of *Pembroke*.

Aymer de Valentia, his ſonne, was Earle of *Pembroke*, and was by King *Edward* the Firſt made Vice-roy of *Scotland*, and died without iſſue.

Laurence, Lord *Haſtings*, was by King *Edward* the Third created Lord of *Abergauenny* and Earle of *Pembroke*.

Iohn, Lord *Haſtings* and *Abergauenny*, was Earle of *Pembroke*.

Iohn his ſonne ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

H. 5. *Humfrey Plantagenet*, the youngeſt ſonne of King *Henry* the Fourth, and brother to King *Henry* the Fifth, was by his brother created Earle of *Pembroke*, and Duke of *Gloceſter*. He was alſo Protector to his Nephew King *Henrie* the Sixth, and died without iſſue.

H. 6. *William de la Pole* was by King *Henry* the Sixth created Earle of *Pembroke*, Earle, Marqueſſe, and Duke of *Suffolke*.

H. 6. *Iaſpar* of *Hatfield*, the ſecond ſonne of *Owen Tuthar*, and of Queene *Katherine* his wife (widow to King *Henry* the Fifth) and being halfe-brother to King *Henry* the Sixth, was by him created Earle of *Pembroke*, and by King *Henry* the Seuenth Duke of *Bedford*. He died without iſſue.

E. 4. *William Herbert* was by King *Edward* the Fourth made Lord of *Cardiffe*, and Earle of *Pembroke*, and was ſlaine at *Banburie* field.

William Herbert, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and reſigned the ſaid Earledome to King *Edward* the Fourth.

E. 4. *Edward* the Prince, being ſonne and heire apparant to King *Edward* the fourth, was by his father created Earle of *Pembroke*, *Flint*, and *March*. He was King *Edward* the Fifth.

Anne

Anne Bullen, who was afterwards maried to King *Henry* the Eighth, was by him created Marchioneſſe of *Pembroke*, and loſt her head. *H.* 8.

William Lord *Herbert*, ſonne to *Richard Herbert*, who was brother to the laſt Earle *William*, was by King *Edward* the Sixth created Earle of *Pembroke*. *E.* 6.

Henry Lord *Herbert*, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honours.

William Lord *Herbert*, his ſonne, is Lord of *Cardiffe*, *Fitz-Hugh*, *Marmion*, and *S. Quintens*, and Earle of *Pembroke*.

Richmond.

EVdo was by the Conqueror made Lord of *Middleham* and Earle of *Richmond*. *Conq.*

Allen Fergaunt, ſurnamed *The Red*, being his ſonne, was Lord of *Middleham*, and Earle of *Britaine*, and of *Richmond*. He died without iſſue.

Allen, ſurnamed *The Blacke*, being his brother, ſucceeded him, and died without iſſue.

Stephen, his brother, poſſeſſed all thoſe honours.

Allen, his ſonne, by deſcent enioied the ſaid dignities.

Conan, his ſonne, ſucceeded him, and had iſſue, *Conſtance*.

Geoffrey Plantagenet, the third ſonne of King *Henry* the Second, maried the ſaid *Conſtance*, and was in her right Earle of *Richmond*.

Arthur Plantagenet, his ſonne, was Earle of *Richmond*, and died without iſſue.

Ralphe Blundeuile, being Count Palatine of *Cheſter*, was by King *Iohn* created Earle of *Richmond*. *K. Iohn.*

Peter Earle of *Sauoy*, who built the *Sauoy*, was by King *Henrie* the Third created Earle of *Richmond*. *H.* 3.

John de Dreux, Duke of *Britaine*, ſonne to *Iohn* the firſt Duke of *Britaine*, was by King *Edward* the Firſt created Earle of *Richmond*. *E.* 1.

John de Dreux, his ſonne, was Earle of *Richmond*.

John de Dreux, his ſonne, ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

Robert de Arthoys, ſometimes Earle of *Arthoys*, but diſinherited by *Philip de Valoys* the *French* King, was by King *Edward* the Third created Earle of *Richmond*. *E.* 3.

John Plantagenet, the ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, being ſurnamed *Iohn of Gaunt*, being Duke of *Lancaſter*, was by his father created Earle of *Richmond*. *E.* 3.

Henry

Henry of *Bollingbroke*, his ſonne, was Duke of *Lancaſter* and *Hereford*, and Earle of *Richmond*, vntill he was King *Henry* the Fourth.

H. 4. *Ralphe* Lord *Neuil* of *Rabie Caſtle*, the firſt Earle of *Weſtmorland*, was by King *Henry* the Fourth created Earle of *Pembroke* for his life only.

H. 4. *Iohn Plantagenet*, Duke of *Bedford*, and brother to King *Henry* the Fifth, was by his father created Earle of *Richmond*. He died without iſſue.

H. 6. *Edmund* of *Hadham*, called *Edmund Tuthar*, the eldeſt ſonne of *Owen Tuthar*, and of Queene *Katherine* his wife, the widow of King *Henry* the Fifth, and daughter to *Charles* the Sixth of *France*, and halfe brother to King *Henry* the Sixth, was by him created Earle of *Richmond*. He maried *Margaret* the daughter and heire of *Iohn Beauford*, Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, and Duke of *Somerſet*, who was the ſonne of *Iohn Beauford*, who was the ſonne of *Iohn of Gaunt*, by *Katherine Swinsford* his third wife, and had iſſue *Henry*, who was king *Henry* the Seuenth.

Henry Tuthar, their ſonne, was Earle of *Richmond*, vntill hee obtained the Crowne, and was King *Henry* the Seuenth.

H. 8. *Henry Fitz-Roy*, baſe ſonne to King *Henry* the Eighth, was by him created Earle of *Nottingham*, and Duke of *Richmond*, and died without iſſue in the ſixteenth yeare of his age.

Rutland.

R. 2. EDward *Plantagenet*, the ſonne of *Edmund* of *Langley*, the fifth ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, and Duke of *Yorke*, was by his coſen King *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Rutland*, and Duke of *Albemarle*. After his fathers death he was Duke of *Yorke*, and was ſlaine at *Agencourt* field.

Edmund Plantagenet, brother to *Edward*, who was afterward King *Edward* the Fourth, was Earle of *Rutland*, and died in his childhood, without iſſue, being ſlaine.

H. 8. *Thomas Mannors*, Lord *Roos* of *Hamlake*, *Beluoyr*, and *Trusbut*, was created Earle of *Rutland* by King *Henry* the Eighth.

Henry Mannors, his ſonne, ſucceeded his ſaid father.

Edward Mannors, his ſonne, enioied thoſe honours, and died without iſſue male.

Iohn Mannors, his brother, ſucceeded him.

Roger

Roger Mannors, his ſonne, enioied thoſe honours, and died without iſſue.

Sir *Francis Mannors*, his brother, is now Lord *Roos*, *Hamlake*, and *Trusbote*, and Earle of *Rutland*.

Ryuers.

Richard Wooduile of *Grafton*, Knight, maried *Iaquet* the widow of *Iohn* Duke of *Bedford*, Regent of *France*, and daughter to *Peter* of *Luxenburgh*, Earle of *S. Paul*. He was by King *Henry* the ſixth made Lord *Ryuers*. Afterwards king *Edward* the Fourth maried his daughter, the Ladie *Elizabeth Grey*, the widow of Sir *Iohn Grey* deceaſed, by whom he was made Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and Earle *Ryuers*. He and his ſonne *Iohn* were ſlaine by the Commons in an vprore.

Anthonie Wooduile, his ſonne, being Lord *Scales*, and Earle *Ryuers*, was by King *Richard* the Third beheaded vniuſtly at *Pomfret* Caſtle, and died without iſſue.

Richard Wooduile, his brother, ſucceeded him in that Earledome, and died without iſſue.

Salisburie.

Stephen Patrick of *Eureux* was by the Conquerour created Earle of *Salisburie*. *Conq.*

William, his ſonne, was Earle of *Salisburie*, and died without iſſue male.

William Longſpée, the baſe ſonne of King *Henry* the Second, by the faire *Roſamond Clifford* his Concubine, was by King *Richard* the Firſt, his halfe-brother, created Earle of *Salisburie*. *R. 1.*

William Longſpee, his ſonne, was Earle of *Salisburie* after his father, and was ſlaine in the warres in the *Holy Land*.

Henry Lacy was by King *Henrie* the Third created Earle of *Salisburie*, and died without iſſue. *H. 3.*

Thomas Plantagenet, the ſonne of *Edmund Crowch-backe*, being Earle of *Lancaſter*, was alſo Earle of *Salisburie*, *Leceſter*, and *Lincolne*, and died without iſſue.

Henry

Henry Plantagenet, his brother, was Earle of *Salisburie*, *Leceſter*, *Lincolne*, and *Lancaſter*.

Henry Plantagenet, his ſonne, was created Duke of *Lancaſter*. He was alſo inheritor to all thoſe Earledomes. His daughter and heire, called *Blanch*, was maried to *Iohn of Gaunt*: and from them deſcended the houſe of the *Lancaſtrians*.

E. 4. *William Mountague*, Lord of the Ile of *Man*, was by King *Edward* the Fourth created Earle of *Salusburie*.

William Mountague, his ſonne, being Lord of the Ile of *Man*, and Lord *Mounthermer*, was alſo Earle of *Salisburie*, and died without iſſue.

Iohn Mountague, ſonne to Sir *Iohn Mountague*, brother to the ſaid *William*, was Lord *Mounthermer*, and Earle of *Salisburie*. Hee with others conſpired the death of King *Edward* the Fourth at *Oxford*, and was ſlaine.

Thomas Mountague, his ſonne, was Lord *Mounthermer*, and Earle of *Salisburie*.

Richard Neuil, the ſecond ſonne of *Ralphe Neuil*, who was the firſt Earle of *Weſtmorland*, maried *Alice* the eldeſt daughter and coheire of the ſaid *Thomas*, and was by King *Henry* the Sixth created Earle of *Salisburie*. He was taken priſoner in the battaile of *Wakefield*, by Queene *Margaret*, wife to King *Henry* the Sixth, and loſt his head.

H. 6.

Richard Neuil, his ſonne, was Earle of *Salisburie*, and of *Warwicke* alſo in the right of *Anne* his wife, who was the daughter and heire of *William Beauchampe* Earle of *Warwicke*. This was that great Earle of *Warwicke*, who depoſed and raiſed King *Henry* the Sixth, and was ſlaine at *Barnet Field* by King *Edward* the Fourth.

Richard Pole, a Knight of *Wales*, maried *Margaret Plantagenet*, the daughter of *George* Duke of *Clarence*, brother to King *Edward* the Fourth, which the ſaid *George* begot on *Iſabel* the eldeſt daughter and coheire of the laſt *Richard* Earle of *Warwicke* and *Salisburie*. She was by Parliament in the fifth yeare of King *Henry* the Eighth reſtored to thoſe Earledomes: but in Parliament in the one and thirtieth yeare of King *Henry* the Eighth, ſhee with *Gertbrude* the widow of *Henry Courtney*, Marqueſſe of *Exeter*, *Reynold Pole* Cardinall, being her ſonne, and others, were attainted of treaſon, and ſhe loſt her head. She was the laſt of the name and royall ſtocke of the Familie of the *Plantagenets*, out of which had iſſued ſucceſſiuely fourteene Kings of *England*.

H. 8.

Robert Cecil, the ſecond ſonne of *William Cecil*, Lord *Burleigh*, and Treaſurer of *England*, was by King *Iames* created Lord *Cecil* of

of *Essenden*, in *Rutlandshire*, Viscount *Cranborne*, in *Dorsetshire*, and Earle of *Salisbury*.

William Cecil, his sonne is now Lord of *Essenden*, Viscount *Cranborne*, and Earle of *Salisbury*.

Shrewsburie.

Edrick, a *Saxon* sirnamed the wilde, being Earle of *Shrewsbury*, was by the Conqueror dishinherited.

Roger de Mountgomery, Earle of *Belesme*, in *Normandy*, was by the Conqueror made Earle of *Arundel*, and of *Shrewsbury*. *Conq.*

Hugh de Mountgomery, his sonne, succeeded, and died without issue.

Robert Mountgomery, his brother, being Earle of *Shrewsbury*, and of *Arundel*, was taken by king *Henry* the first, and depriued of his eyes.

John, Lord *Talbot*, *Strange*, *Blackmore*, *Furnivall*, and *Verdon*, was by *Henry* the sixth, created Earle of *Shrewsbury*. *H.6.*

John Talbot, his sonne succeeded in those honors.

John Talbot, his sonne, was Lord, &c. and Earle of *Shrewsbury*.

George Talbot, his sonne, was Lord, &c. and Earle of *Shrewsbury*.

Francis Talbot, his sonne, was Lord. &c. and Earle of *Salisbury*.

George, Lord *Talbot*, his sonne, succeeded in those honors.

Gilbert, Lord *Talbot*, his sonne, is Lord *Talbot*, *Strange*, *Blackmore*, *Furnival*, and *Verdon*, and Earle of *Shrewsbury*.

Somerset.

Osmond, Bishop of *Salisbury*, was by the Conqueror, made earle of *Somerset*. *Conq.*

William de Mohun, was by King *Henry* the first, created Earle of *Somerset*. *H.1*

Reynold de Mohun, in King *Iohns* time, receiued the inheritance of his Grandfather Earle *William*, and was created Earle of *Somerset*, he was disinherited by King *Henry* the third, because he tooke part against him with the Barons in their warres. *K. Ioh.*

John Beauford, the sonne of *Iohn* of *Gaunt*, by *Katherine Swinsford*

ford his third wife, was by King *Richard* the ſecond, created Earle of *Somerſet*, and Marques *Dorſet*, but the latter of thoſe two, hee voluntarily did renounce.

H.5. *Henry Beauford*, his ſonne, was Earle after him.

Iohn Beauford, his brother, was created Earle of *Somerſet*, by K. *Henry* the fifth.

H.6. *Edmund Beauford*, his brother, was Earle of *Somerſet*, and by king *Henry* the ſixt, was created Marques *Dorſet*, and Duke of *Somerſet*, and was ſlaine at Saint *Albons* by *Richard* Duke of *Yorke*.

Henry Beauford, his ſonne, was Duke of *Somerſet*, hee revolted from King *H.* the ſixth, to King *Edward* the fourth, and afterward from King *Edward* the fourth, to King *H.* the ſixth, and was by the *Yorkiſh* faction, taken Priſoner at *Hexhamfield*, and loſt his head.

Edmund Beauford, his brother, was Duke of *Somerſet*, and being taken priſoner at *Tewkisbery-field* by king *Edward* the fourth, he loſt his head, and had no iſſue.

H.7. *Edmund Tuther*, a yonger ſonne to king *Henry* the ſeuenth, was at fiue yeares of his age, created Duke of *Somerſet*, and died without iſſue at that age.

Henry Fitz-Roy, baſe ſon to king *H.* the eight, was created Earle of *Nottingham*, and Duke of *Somerſet*, and *Richmond*, and died without iſſue.

Edward Seymour, Earle of *Hartford*, was by his Nephew King *Edward* the ſixth, created Duke of *Somerſet*, and loſt his head.

Sir *Robert Carre*, was by king *Iames* created Viſcount *Rocheſter*, & Earle of *Somerſet*.

Southampton.

B*Eavoys*, was (at the Conqueſt) Earle of *Southampton*.

E.1. *William Gobion*, was by King *Edward* the firſt, created Earle of
H.8. *Southampton*, and died without iſſue male.

William Fitz-William, was by King *Heury* the eight, created Earle of *Southampton*, and died without iſſue male.

E.6. *Thomas Wryotheſley*, Lord Chancelor of *England*, was by King *Henry* the eighth, created Baron of *Tichfield* in *Hamſhire*, and by King *Edward* the ſixt, hee was created Earle of *Southampton*.

Henry Wryotheſley, his ſonne, was Lord *Tichfield*, and Earle of *Southampton*.

Henry

Henry Wryothesley, his sonne, is Lord *Tichfield*, and Earle of *Southamton*.

Stafford.

RAlph *Stafford*, was by King *Edward* the third, created Earle of *Stafford*. E. 3.

Hugh Stafford, his sonne succeeded in that Earledome.

Thomas Stafford, his Grandchild, by *Ralph* his sonne, was Earle of *Stafford*.

William Stafford, his brother, was Earle of *Stafford* after him.

Edmund Stafford, his brother, was Earle and died without issue.

Humfrey Stafford, his sonne, was Earle, and by king *Henry* the sixt, he was created Duke of *Buckingham*, and was slaine in *Yorkeshire*, in the said kings quarrell.

Humfrey Stafford, his son, was dignified with those honors.

Hnmfrey Stafford, his sonne, succeeded and was beheaded by king *Richard* the third. H. 7.

Edward Stafford, his son, was restored by king *Henry* the seuenth, and lost his head in the raigne of king *Henry* the eighth.

Suffolke.

RAlph *Glandvile*, Lord of *Bromhelme*, was by king *Henry* the second, created Earle of *Suffolke*. H. 2.

William Glandvile, his sonne, being Lord of *Bromhelme* was Earle of *Suffolke*.

Gilbert Glandvile, his sonne, enioyed those Honors.

Ralph Glandvile, his son, was Lord *Bromhelme*, and Earle of *Suffolke*, and died without issue.

William de Vessey, who maried *Mauld* his Daughter and Heire, was by King *Edward* the second, created Earle of *Suffolke*. E. 2.

Robert de Vfford who married *Sarah* daughter and heire of the said *William*, was by King *Edward* the third, created Earle of *Suffolke*. E. 3.

William de Vfford, his son, being Lord of *Eay*, and *Framlingham*, was Earle of *Suffolke*.

Michael de la Poole, a man more rich then honorably discended, R. 2.

R. 2. was Chancelor to king *Richard* the ſecond, and by him created Earle of *Suffolke*, and was baniſhed as a corrupter of him, by his lewd counſell, he died with griefe at *Paris*.

Michael de la Poole, his ſon, was Lord *Wingfield*, and Earle of *Suffolke*, and dyed at the ſiege of *Harflew*.

Michael de la Poole, his ſon, ſucceeded his father, but died within one moneth after.

H.6. *William de la Poole*, his brother was Lord *Wingfield*, and Earle of *Suffolke*, he was by king *Henry* the ſixt, created Earle of *Pembrooke*, then Marques of *Suffolke*, and laſt of all Duke of *Suffolke*, hee was baniſhed, taken at Sea, and loſt his head on a boats ſide.

Iohn de la Poole, his ſonne, was Lord *Wingfield*, Earle of *Pembrooke*, and Duke of *Suffolke*.

Edmund de la Poole, his ſonne was of a turbulent diſpoſition, & in the fifth yeare of *Henry* the eighth, he was executed for treaſon.

H.7. *Charles Brandon*, the ſonne of Sir *William Brandon*, knight (who was Standard-bearer to the Earle of *Richmond*, in *Boſworth* field, & was ſlaine by king *Richard* the third) was by *Henry* the ſeuenth, made Viſcount *Liſle*, and hauing maried king *Henry* the eight his

H.8. ſecond ſiſter *Mary* Queen Dowager of *France*, he was by *Henry* the eight created Duke of *Suffolke*.

Henry Brandon, his ſonne, was Earle of *Lincolne*, and Duke of *Suffolke*, and died without iſſue.

Henry Grey, Lord *Ferrers* of *Groby*, Lord of *Aſtley*, *Harington*, & *Bonvile*, being alſo Marques *Dorſet*, and hauing maried *Francis* who

E6. was one of the Daughters and Coheires of *Charles Brandon*, was by king *Edward* the ſixth, created Duke of *Suffolke*, and was attainted of treaſon whileſt Queene *Mary* raigned: their daughter was the Lady *Iane*, who maried *Guilford Dudley* the fourth ſon of the Earle

K. Ia. of *Northumberland*, who loſt her head.

Thomas Lord *Howard*, of *Walden*, ſecond ſonne to *Thomas* the laſt Duke of *Northfolke*, was by king *Iames* created Earle of *Suffolke*.

Surrey.

Rufus. *William Warren*, Earle of *Warren* in *Normandie*, maried one of the Conquerors daughters named *Goundred*, and was by king *William Rufus*, created Earle of *Surrey*.

William Warren, his ſonne, ſucceeded and was Earle of *Surrey*.

William

William Warren, his ſonne, was Earle, and dyed without iſſue male.

William de Blois, ſonne to king *Stephen*, being Earle of *Mortaigne*, *Bolloigne*, and *Eagle*, and being Lord of *Lancaſter*, maried *Iſabel* the daughter and heire of the laſt Earle *William*, and was in her right Earle of *Surrey*, and died without iſſue,

Hamlyn Plantagenet, brother to king *Henry* the ſecond, maried the ſaid Ladie *Iſabel*, and was in her right Earle of *Surrey*, and king *Henry* the ſecond created him Earle of *Warwick*.

William Plantagenet, their ſonne, was Earle of *Surrey*, and of *Warwicke*.

Iohn Plantagenet, his ſonne, was Earle of *Surrey*, *Warren*, and *Suſſex*, and died without iſſue male.

Iohn Plantagenet, his brother ſuccceded him in thoſe Earledomes and died without iſſue.

Edmund Fitz-allen, Earle of *Arundel*, maried *Alice* the daughter of the aforeſaid *William*, and was in her right Earle of *Surrey*, and of *Warren*.

Richard Fitz-allen, their ſonne was earle of *Arundel*, *Surrey*, and *Suſſex*.

Richard Fitz-allen, his ſonne, was earle of *Arundel*, *Surrey*, and *Suſſex*.

Thomas Fitz-allen, his ſonne, was earle of *Surrey*, *Arundel*, and *Suſſex*, and died without iſſue.

Thomas Holland, halfe brother to king *Richard* the ſecond was by him created earle of *Kent*, and Duke of *Surrey*. *R.2.*

Edmund Holland, his ſonne, was earle and Duke.

Iohn, Lord *Mowbray*, ſonne to the Duke of *Northfolke*, was diſcended from the earles of *Warren* and *Surrey*, and was by king *Henry* the ſixth, dignified with thoſe honors, and alſo after his fathers death, he was Duke of *Northfolke*. *H.6.*

Thomas Howard, the ſonne of *Iohn Howard*, whome King *Richard* the third had created Duke of *Northfolke*, was by the ſame King created earle of *Surrey*, and by king *Henry* the eighth, Duke of *Northfolke*. *R.3.*

Thomas Howard, his ſonne, by *Anne* daughter to king *Edward* the fourth, was by the ſame King created earle Marſhal of *England*, and earle of *Surrey*. *E.4.*

Henry Howard, earle of *Surrey*, was in his fathers life time, attainted and executed and had iſſue *Thomas*.

Thomas Howard, his ſonne was Duke of *Northfolke*, and earle of *Surrey*, after his Grandfathers death, being reſtored by Q. *Mary*. *Q. Ma.*

Philip Howard, his ſonne, was Earle of *Surrey*, and of *Arundel*.
Thomas Howard, his ſonne, is Earle of *Arundel*, and of *Surrey*.

Suſſex.

H. 2. VVIlliam de Albaney, was Earle of *Suſſex*, and of *Arundel*, by his mariage with Queene *Adeliza*, the widdow of king *H.* the firſt, which Earledomes were her joynture, and thoſe honours were giuen to him by king *Henry* the ſecond.

William de Albaney, their ſonne ſucceeded and was Earle.

VVilliam de Albaney, his ſonne, was Earle of *Suſſex*, and of *Arundel*.

William de Albaney, his ſonne, ſucceeded his father.

Hugh de Albaney, his brother enioyed thoſe Earledomes, and died without iſſue.

John Plantagenet, the ſeuenth Earle of *Surrey*, was Earle of *Suſſex*, and died without iſſue male.

John Plantagenet, his brother enioyed thoſe honours, and died without iſſue.

H. 8. *Robert Ratclife* Lord *Fitzwater*, *Egremount* and *Burnel*, was by King *Henry* the eighth, created Viſcount *Fitzwater*, and Earle of *Suſſex*.

Henry Ratclife, his ſonne, enioyed all thoſe honors.

Thomas Ratclife, his ſon, was Lord, Viſcount, and Earle, and died without iſſue.

Henry Ratclife, his brother ſucceeded in thoſe dignities.

Robert Ratclife, his ſonne, is Lord *Egremount* and *Burnel*, Viſcount *Fitz-water*, and Earle of *Suſſex*.

Warwicke.

TArquinius, a *Saxon*, was Earle of *Warwick* at the Conqueſt, hee was baniſhed and died without iſſue.

Conq. *Henry Beamount*, alias *Newburgh* (brother to *Robert* Earle of *Millent*, and of *Leiceſter*) was by the Conqueror created Earle of *Warwick*.

Roger Beamount, alias *Newburgh* his ſonne was Earle of *Warwick*.

William Beamont, alias *Newburgh*, his ſonne, was Earle of *Warwick*.

Walteran

Walteran Beamounnt, alias *Newburgh*, his brother, was Earle of *Warwicke* after him.

Henry Beamounnt, alias *Newburgh*, his ſonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Thomas Beamount, alias *Newburgh*, his ſonne, ſucceeded his father.

Iohn Marſhall maried *Margerie* the ſiſter and heire of the ſaid *Thomas*, and was Earle of *Warwicke* in her right, but died without iſſue.

Iohn de Pleſſetis, the ſecond husband of the ſaid *Margerie*, was in her right Earle of *Warwicke*.

Hugh de Pleſſetis, their ſonne, ſucceeded, and died without iſſue.

William Maledoctus, otherwiſe *Manduyt*, Lord of *Hanſlop*, coſen and heire to the ſaid *Margerie*, Counteſſe of *Warwicke*, was Earle of *Warwicke*, and died without iſſue.

William de Beauchampe maried *Iſabel*, ſiſter and heire to the ſaid *William*, and had iſſue, *William*.

William Beauchampe, their ſonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Guido de Beauchampe, his ſonne, ſucceeded his father.

Thomas de Beauchampe, his ſonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Thomas de Beauchampe, his ſonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Richard de Beauchampe, his ſonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*. He was Lieu-tenant of *Munſter* in *Ireland*, and a great Warriour in *France* in the daies of King *Henry* the Fifth, and King *Henry* the Sixth.

Henry Beauchampe, his ſonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*, and by King *Henry* the Sixth he was created Duke of *Warwicke*. Hee died without iſſue male. *H. 6.*

Richard Neuil, the eldeſt ſonne of *Richard Neuil* Earle of *Saliſburie*, maried *Anne* the daughter and heire of *Richard Beauchampe*, and was (in her right) Earle of *Warwicke*. Hee is termed, *The great Earle of Warwicke*: for he was ſo powerfull, that he aduanced King *Edward* the Fourth, depoſed King *Henry* the Sixth, and made him King againe; but was at laſt ſlaine by King *Edward* the Fourth at *Barnet* Field.

George Plantagenet, Duke of *Clarence*, and brother to King *Edward* the Fourth, maried *Iſabel*, the eldeſt daughter of the ſaid Earle *Richard*, and was (in her right) Earle of *Warwicke*. They had iſſue, *Edward*, who was beheaded by King *Henry* the Seuenth, and *Margaret*, maried to Sir *Richard Pole*. She loſt her head in the one and thirtieth yeare of the raigne of King *Henry* the Eighth.

Edward Plantagenet, their ſonne, was Earle of *Warwicke*. He liued a priſoner from his infancie, and was beheaded by King *Henry* the Seuenth, becauſe he ſought to eſcape with *Perkin Warbecke* out of the Tower: and died without iſſue.

Iohn

E. 6. *Iohn Dudley*, Lord *Somery*, *Baſſet*, and *Tays*, and Viſcount *Liſle*, was by King *Edward* the Sixth created Earle of *Warwicke*, and Duke of *Northumberland*. But in Queene *Maries* daies hee loſt his head.

Iohn Dudley, his ſonne, died in his fathers life time, but was Earle of *Warwicke*, and had iſſue, *Ambroſe*.

Ambroſe Dudley, his ſonne, was Lord *Somery*, *Baſſet*, and *Tays*, and Earle of *Warwicke*, and died without iſſue.

Weſtmorland.

RAlphe *Neuil*, Lord *Neuil* of *Rabie Caſtle*, *Standrop*, and *Branſpeth*, was by King *Richard* the Second created Earle of *Weſtmorland*.

Ralphe Neuil, his grand-childe, *viz.* the ſonne of Sir *Iohn Neuil*, was Lord *Neuil* of *Rabie*, *Standrop*, *Branſpeth*, *Warkworth*, and *Sherrie-hutton*, and was Earle of *Warwicke*.

Ralphe Neuil, his Nephew, by Sir *Iohn Neuil* his brother, ſucceeded his vncle in all thoſe honours.

Ralphe Neuil, his grand-childe, by *Ralphe* Lord *Neuil* his ſonne, enioied thoſe Lordſhips, and was the fourth Earle of *Weſtmorland*.

Henry Neuil, his ſonne, was Lord *Neuil* of *Rabie*, *Standrop*, *Branſpeth*, *Warkley*, *Sherrie-hutton*, and *Middleham*, and Earle of *Weſtmorland*.

Charles Neuil, his ſonne, ſucceeded in all thoſe honours, and was in the raigne of Queene *Elizabeth* attainted of Treaſon (by Parliament) with others.

Wilſhire.

R. 2. WIlliam *le Scrope* was an euill Counſellor to King *Richard* the Second, and was by him created Earle of *Wilſhire*. But hee loſt his head.

H. 6. *Aymer Butler*, the ſonne and heire apparant of *Iames Butler*, the fourth Earle of *Ormond* in *Ireland*, was by King *Henry* the Sixth created Earle of *Wilſhire*. He died without iſſue.

Iohn Stafford, the younger ſonne of *Humfrey* the firſt Duke of *Buckingham*,

Buckingham, was by K. *Edward* the Fourth created Earle of *Wilſhire*. E. 4.

Edward Stafford, his ſonne, was Earle after him, and died without iſſue.

Henry Stafford, of the houſe of *Buckingham*, was by King *Henry* the Eighth created Earle of *Wilſhire*. H. 8.

Thomas Bullen was by King *Henry* the Eighth made Viſcount *Bullen*, and Earle of *Wilſhire*. Hee was father to Queene *Anne Bullen*, and grandfather to Queene *Elizabeth*. H. 8.

William Pawlet was by King *Henry* the Eighth made Lord *S. Iohn* of *Baſing*, and by King *Edward* the Sixth he was created Earle of *Wilſhire*, and Marqueſſe of *Wincheſter*. E. 6.

Iohn Lord *S. Iohn*, his ſonne, enioied all thoſe honours.

William Pawlet, his ſonne, ſucceeded his father, and was Lord *S. Iohn* of *Baſing*, Earle of *Wilſhire*, and Marqueſſe of *Wincheſter*.

William Pawlet, his ſonne, is Lord *S. Iohn* of *Baſing*, Earle of *Wilſhire*, and Marqueſſe of *Wincheſter*.

Wincheſter.

CLyton, a Saxon, was at the Conqueſt Earle of *Wincheſter*, and was baniſhed, and died without iſſue.

Saer de Quincy, Lord *Quincy* of *Groby*, was by King *Iohn* created Earle of *Wincheſter*. K. *Iohn*.

Ralphe Quincy, his ſonne, was Earle after him, and died without iſſue male.

Hugh, Lord *le Deſpencer*, was by King *Edward* the Second created Earle of *Wincheſter*, and died without iſſue, being beheaded. E. 2.

Lewys de Burgh, a *Burgundian*, and Lord of *Granthouſe*, was by King *Edward* the Fourth in Parliament created Earle of *Wincheſter*, becauſe hee had highly fauoured and releeued King *Edward* when he fled from the great Earle of *Warwicke*, and from King *Henry* the Sixth. This Earledome he afterwards ſurrendred to King *Henry* the Seuenth. E. 4.

William Pawlet was by King *Henry* the eighth made Lord *S. Iohn* of *Baſing*, and by King *Edward* the Sixth Earle of *Wilſhire*, and Marqueſſe of *wincheſter*. E. 6.

Iohn Pawlet, his ſonne, ſucceeded in thoſe honours.

William Pawlet ſucceeded, and was Lord, Earle, and Marqueſſe.

William Pawlet, his ſonne, is Lord *S. Iohn* of *Baſing*, Earle of *Wilſhire*, and Marqueſſe of *Wincheſter*.

Worceſter.

Ruſus. VRſus de *Abtot* was by King *William Ruſus* created Earle of *Worceſter*.

K. Steph. *Walteran de Beamount*, Earle of *Millent* in *Normandie*, was by King *Stephen* created Earle of *Worceſter*.

R. 2. *Thomas Percie*, brother to *Henrie*, the firſt Earle of *Northumberland*, was by King *Richard* the Second created Earle of *worceſter*. Hee conſpired with his Nephew, *Henry Hotſpurre*, againſt King *Henry* the Fourth, and loſt his head.

H. 5. *Richard Beauchampe* was by King *Henry* the Fifth created Earle of *Worceſter*, and died without iſſue male.

H. 6. *Iohn*, Lord *Tiptoſt*, was by King *Henrie* the Sixth created firſt Viſcount, and then Earle of *Worceſter*, but was beheaded for taking part againſt the ſaid King, with *Edward* Earle of *March*, who was afterwards king *Edward* the Fourth.

E. 4. *Edward Tiptoſt*, his ſonne, was by King *Edward* the Fourth reſtored to his Viſcountſhip, and to the Earledome of *Worceſter*, and died withour iſſue.

H. 8. *Charles Somerſet*, Lord *Herbert* and *Gower*, was by King *Henrie* the eighth created Earle of *Worceſter*.

Henry Somerſet, his ſonne, was Lord *Herbert*, *Chepſtow*, *Ragland*, and *Gower*, and was alſo Earle of *Worceſter*.

William Somerſet, his ſonne, ſucceeded in all thoſe honours.

Edward Somerſet, his ſonne, is Lord *Herbert*, *Chepſtow*, *Gower*, and *Ragland*, and Earle of *Worceſter*.

Yorke.

EDrick, a *Saxon*, was Earle of *Yorke* at the Conqueſt. He loſt his eies, and died a priſoner.

H. 1. *Robert Eſcouyle* was by King *Henry* the Firſt created Viſcount of *Yorke*.

Robert Eſcouyle, his ſonne, was Viſcount of *Yorke*.

R. 2. *Edmund Plantagenet*, otherwiſe *Edmund of Langley*, the fifth ſonne of King *Edward* the Third, was by his father created Earle of *Cambridge*: and by his Nephew, King *Richard* the Second, he was made Duke of *Yorke*.

Edward

Edward Plantagenet, his ſonne, was Earle of *Rutland*, and Duke of *Albemarle*, and of *Yorke*, and was ſlaine at *Agincourt* Field.

Richard Plantagenet, his brother, another of the ſonnes of the ſaid *Edmund*, was Earle of *Cambridge*, *March*, and *Clare*.

Richard Plantagenet, his brother, was Duke of *Yorke*, &c. and was father to King *Edward* the Fourth, and was ſlaine in the warres againſt King *Henry* the Sixth.

Edward, his ſonne, was Earle of *March* and *Vlſter*, and Duke of *Yorke*. He depoſed King *Henry* the Sixth, and was himſelfe King *Edward* the Fourth.

Richard Plantagenet, his younger ſonne, was Duke of *Yorke*, and was with his brother King *Edward* the Fifth murdered in the Tower by king *Richard* the Third. *E. 4.*

Henry Tuthar, the ſecond ſonne of King *Henry* the Seuenth, was by his father created Duke of *Yorke*, and himſelfe was King *Henry* the Eighth. *H. 7.*

Charles Stewart, the only ſonne, and heire apparant of the illuſtrious Prince, King *Iames* the Firſt, is now Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, *Yorke*, and *Roſſay*, and Earle Palatine of *Cheſter*.

The Nobilitie of ENGLAND, ranked according to their degrees and creations.

THe Marqueſſe of *Winche-ſter*.

EARLES.

1 EArle of *Arundell*.
2 Earle of *Oxford*.
3 Earle of *Northumberland*.
4 Earle of *Shrewesburie*.
5 Earle of *Kent*.
6 Earle of *Darbie*.
7 Earle of *Worceſter*.
8 Earle of *Rutland*.
9 Earle of *Cumberland*.
10 Earle of *Suſſex*.
11 Earle of *Huntington*.
12 Earle of *Bathe*.
13 Earle of *Southampton*.
14 Earle of *Bedford*.
15 Earle of *Penbroke*.
16 Earle of *Hartford*.
17 Earle of *Eſſex*.
18 Earle of *Lincolne*.
19 Earle of *Nottingham*.
20 Earle of *Suffolke*.
21 Earle of *Northampton*.
22 Earle of *Dorſet*.
23 Earle of *Salisburie*.
24 Earle of *Exeter*.
25 Earle of *Mountgomerie*.

VICE-

The Nobilitie of England ranked

VICECOVNTS.

1 VIcecount *Mountague.*
2 Vicecount *Liſley.*
3 Vicecount *Rocheſter.*
4 Vicecount *Cramborne.*

BARONS.

1 LOrd *Abergauennie.*
2 Lord *Audeley.*
3 Lord *Zouch.*
4 Lord *Willoughbie* of *Ereſbie.*
5 Lord *Laware.*
6 Lord *Barkley.*
7 Lord *Morley.*
8 Lord *Stafford.*
9 Lord *Scroope.*
10 Lord *Dudley.*
11 Lord *Sturton.*
12 Lord *Herbert* of *Chepſtow.*
13 Lord *Darey* of the North.
14 Lord *Mounteagle.*
15 Lord *Sands.*
16 Lord *Vaux.*
17 Lord *Wyndſor.*
18 Lord *Wentworth.*
19 Lord *Mordant.*
20 Lord *Cromwell.*
21 Lord *Euers.*
22 Lord *Wharton.*
23 Lord *Rich.*
24 Lord *Willoughbie* of *Parham.*
25 Lord *Sheffield.*
26 Lord *Paget.*
27 Lord *Darcy* of *Chiche.*
28 Lord *Howard* of *Effingham.*
29 Lord *North.*
30 Lord *Chandos.*
31 Lord *Hunſdon.*
32 Lord *S. Iohn* of *Bletſho.*
33 Lord *Burleigh.*
34 Lord *Compton.*
35 Lord *Norris.*
36 Lord *Howard* of *Walden.*
37 Lord *Knowles.*
38 Lord *Wotton.*
39 Lord *Elſmer*, Lord Chancelor of *England.*
40 Lord *Ruſſell.*
41 Lord *Grey* of *Groby.*
42 Lord *Peter.*
43 Lord *Harrington.*
44 Lord *Dawvers.*
45 Lord *Gerard.*
46 Lord *Spencer.*
47 Lord *Say* and *Sele.*
48 Lord *Denny.*
49 Lord *Stanhope.*
50 Lord *Carew.*
51 Lord *Arundell* of *Warden.*
52 Lord *Cauendiſh.*
53 Lord *Knyuet.*
54 Lord *Clifton.*

The

The names of Baronets made by his Maieſtie at ſeuerall times, as followeth.

1 SIr *Nicholas Bacon*, of *Redgraue*, in the Countie of *Suff.* Knight.
2 Sir *Richard Mollenceux*, of *Seſton*, in the Countie of *Lancaſter*, knight.
3 Sir *Thomas Manucel*, of *Margan*, in the Countie of *Clamorgan*, knight.
4 *George Sherley*, of *Staunton*, in the Countie of *Leiceſter*, Eſquire.
5 Sir *Iohn Stradling*, of S. *Donats*, in the Countie of *Clamorgan*, knight.
6 Sir *Francis Leake*, of *Sutton*, in the Countie of *Darby*, knight.
7 *Thomas Pelham*, of *Laughton*, in the Countie of *Suſſex*, Eſquire.
8 Sir *Thomas Howghton*, of *Howghton* Towre in the Countie of *Lancaſter*, knight.
9 Sir *Henry Hobart*, of *Intwod*, in the Countie of *Northfolk*, knight.
10 Sir *George Booth*, of *Dunham Maſſie*, in the Countie of *Cheſter*, knight.
11 Sir *Iohn Payton*, of *Iſelham*, in the Countie of *Cambridge* knight.
12 *Lyonel Talmach*, of *Helmingham*, in the Countie of *Suffolke*, Eſquire.
13 Sir *Gervaſe Clifton*, of *Clifton* in the Countie of *Notting.* knight.
14 Sir *Thomas Gerard*, of *Bryn*, in the Countie of *Lancaſter*, knight.
15 Sir *Walter Aſton*, of *Tyxhal*, in the Countie of *Stafford*, knight.
16 Sir *George Trenchard*, of *Wolueton* in the Countie of *Dorſ.* knig.
17 *Philip Knevit*, of *Buckinham*, in the Countie of *Northfolk*, Eſquire.
18 Sir *Iohn Strangewayes* of *Melbury*, in the Countie of---knight.
19 Sir *Iohn S. Iohn* of *Lydeard Tregoſe*, in the Countie of *Wilteſh.* k^t.
20 *Iohn Shelley*, of *Michelgroue*, in the Countie of *Suſſex*, Eſquire.

1 SIr *Iohn Sauage*, of *Rock-Sauage*, in the Countie of *Cheſt.* knight.
2 Sir *Francis Barrington*, of *Barrington* Hall in *Eſſex*, Knight.
3 *Henry Barkley*, of *Wymondham*, in the Countie of *Leiceſt.* Eſquire.
4 *William Wentworth*, of *Wentworth Woodhouſe*, in the Countie of *Yorke.* Eſquire.
5 Sir *Richard Muſgraue*, of *Hartley Caſtle* in the Countie of *Weſtmerland*, knight.
6 *Edward Seymor* of *Bury Caſtle*, in the Countie of *Devon.* Eſquire.
7 Sir *Moyle Finee*, of *Caſtwel*, in the Countie of *Kent*, knight.
8 Sir *Anthony Coap*, of *Hanwel*, in the Countie of *Oxford*, knight.

9 Sir *Thomas Vavasor*, of *Skellingthorp*, in the Countie of *Lincolne*, knight.
10 *George Greysley*, of *Drakelow*, in the Countie of *Darby*, Esquire.
11 *Paul Tracy*, of *Stanway*, in the Countie of *Gloster*, Esquire.
12 Sir *Iohn Wentworth*, of *Gossfield*, in the Countie of *Essex*, knight.
13 Sir *Henry Bellasis*, of *Newborough*, in the Countie of *Yorke*, Knight.
14 *William Constable*, of *Flamborough*, in the Countie of *York*, Esquire.
15 Sir *Thomas Leigh*, of *Stoneley*, in the Countie of *Warw.* knight.
16 Sir *Edward Noel*, of *Brooke*, in the Countie of *Rutland*, knight.
17 Sir *Robert Cotton*, of *Cunnington*, in the Countie of *Huntington*, Knight.
18 Sir *Robert Cholmondleigh*, of *Cholmondleigh*, in the Countie of *Chester*, knight.
19 *Iohn Molleneux* of *Teuershalt*, in the Countie of *Notting.* Esquire.
20 Sir *Francis Wortley*, of *Wortley*, in the Countie of *York*, knight.
21 Sir *George Sauile*, the elder of *Thornhil*, in the Countie of *Yorke*, knight.
22 *William Knyueton*, of *Myrraston*, in the Countie of *Darb.* Esquire:
23 Sir *Philip Woodhouse*, of *Kemberley Hall*, in the Countie of *Northfolke*, knight.
24 Sir *William Pope*, of *Wilcot*, in the Countie of *Oxford*, knight.
25 Sir *Iames Harington*, of *Ridlington*, in the Countie of *Rutl.* knight.
26 Sir *Henry Sauile*, of *Metherley*, in the Countie of *Yorke*, knight.
27 *Henry Willoughby*, of *Ryseley*, in the Countie of *Darby*, Esquire.
28 Sir *Robert Dormer*, of *Wing*, in the Countie of *Bucking.* knight.
29 *Lodwick Tresham*, of *Rushton*, in the Countie of *Northampton.* Esq.
30 *Thomas Blundeuel* of *Dene*, in the Countie of *Northampt.* Esquire.
31 Sir *George* Saint *Paul* of *Snaresford* in the Countie of *Lincolne*, knight.
32 Sir *Philip Tirwhite* of *Stamessield*, in the Countie of *Linc.* knight.
33 Sir *Roger Dallison*, of *Lawghton*, in the Countie of *Linc.* knight.
34 Sir *Edward Carre*, of *Slesford*, in the Countie of *Lincolne*, knight.
35 Sir *Edward Hussey*, of *Hommington*, in the Countie of *Lincolne*, knight
36 *Le Strange Mordont*, of *Massingham parua*, in the Countie of *Northfolke*, Esquire.
37 *Thomas Bendish*, of *Steeple Bamsteed*, in the Countie of *Essex*, Esq.
38 Sir *Iohn Winne*, of *Guidder*, in the Countie of *Carnaruon*, knight.
39 Sir *William Throgmorton*, of *Tortworth*, in the Countie of *Gloucester*, knight.
40 Sir *Richard Worsley*, of *Appl.dorcombe*, in the Countie of *Southampton*, knight.

41 *Iohn*

41 *John Reade* of *Mitton*, in the Countie of *Worceſter*, Eſquire.
42 *Richard Fleetwood*, of *Calwiſh*, in the Countie of *Stafford*, Eſquire.
43 *Thomas Spencer*, of *Yardington*, in the Countie of *Oxford*, Eſq.
44 Sir *John Tuffton*, of *Hothefield*, in the Countie of *Kent* knight.
45 Sir *Samuel Payton*, of *Knowleton* in the Countie of *Kent* knight.
46 Sir *Charles Morriſon*, of *Coſhiobury*, in the Countie of *Hertford*, knight.
47 Sir *Henry Baker*, of *Siſsinghurſt*, in the Countie of *Kent* knight.
48 *Roger Appleton*, of *Southbemflete*, in the Countie of *Eſſex* Eſquire.
49 Sir *William Sidley*, of *Aliſford*, in the Countie of *Kent*. knight.
50 Sir *William Twiſden*, of *East Peckham*, in the Countie of *Kent*, Knight.
51 Sir *Edward Hales*, of *Woodchurch*, in the Countie of *Kent*, knight.
52 *William Monings*, of *Walwarcher*, in the Countie of *Kent*, Eſquire.
53 *Thomas Maldemay*, of *Maſham*, in the Countie of *Eſſex*, Eſquire.
54 Sir *Will. Mainard*, of *Eaſton parua*, in the Countie of *Eſſex*, knight.
55 *Henry Lee*, of *Quarrendam*, in the Countie of *Bucking*. Eſquire.

1 *John Portman*, of *Orchard*, in the Countie of *Somerſet*, Eſquire.
2 Sir *Nicholas Saunderſon*, of *Saxby*, in the Countie of *Lin*. knight.
3 Sir *Miles Sands* of *Willerton*, in the Ile of *Elie*.
4 *William Goſwick*, of *Willington*, in the Countie of *Bedf*. Eſquire,
5 *Thomas Puckering*, of *Weſton*, in the Countie of *Hartford*, Eſquire.
6 *John Wray*, of *Glentworth*, in the Countie of *Lincolne*, Eſquire.
7 Sir *William Ayloffe*, of *Braxſteed magna* in the Countie of *Eſſex*, Knight.
8 Sir *Marmaduke Wyuell*, of *Conſtable Burton*, in the Countie of *York*, Knight.
9 *John Peſhall*, of *Horſley* in the Countie of *Stafford*, Eſquire.
10 *Francis Inglefield* of *Wotton Baſſet*, in the Countie of *Wilt*. Eſquire.
11 Sir *Thomas Ridgway* of *Torre*, in the Countie of *Deuon*. Knight.
12 *William Eſſex*, of *Beaucot*, in the Countie of *Berk*. Eſquire.
13 Sir *Edward Gorges*, of *Langford*, in the Countie of *Wilt*. Knight.
14 *Edward Deuereux*, of *Caſtle Bramwide*, in the Countie of *Warwick*, Eſquire.
15 Sir *Reynold Methum*, of *Buckconnock*, in the Countie of *Cornwal*, Knight.
16 Sir *Thomas Holte*, of *Aſton*, neere *Brimingham*, in the Countie of *Warwick*. Knight.
17 Sir *Harbotle Grimſton*, of in the Countie of *Eſſex*, Knight.

Honor virtutis præmium.

Iohn Speed, 5.

Bishopricks.	*Counties subiect to their seuerall Iurisdictions.*	*Parishes in each seuerall Bishoprick.*
Canterbury Arch. Bish.	Kent.	257
Rochester.		98
London.	Essex, Middlesex, Hertfordshire part.	623
Lincolne.	Lincolneshire, Leicestershire, Huntington, Bedfordshire, Buckinghamshire, Hertfordshire part.	1255
Chichester.	Hertfordshire part, Sussex.	250
Winchester.	Hamshire, Surrey, Weight Isle, Gernsey Isle, Iersey Isle.	362
Salisbury.	Wilshire, Barkshire.	248
Exeter.	Devon, Cornwall, Exeter Citie.	623
Bath and *Wells.*	)(Somerset.	)(388
Glocester.	)(Glocestershire.	)(267
Worcester.	Worcestershire, Warwickshire part	241
Lichfield and *Couentrey.*	Warwickshire part, Staffordshire, Darbyshire, Shropshire part.	557

Hereford.

Biſhopricks and Pariſhes.

Biſhopricks.	*Counties ſubiect to their ſeuerall Iuriſdictions.*	*Pariſhes in each ſeuerall Biſhoprick.*
Hereford.	Shropſhire part. Herefordſhire.	313
Ely.	Cambridgeſhire, Ely Iſle.	141
Norwich.	Northfolke, Suffolke.	1121
Oxford.	Oxfordſhire.	195
Peterborough	Northamptonſhire Rutlandſhire.	293
Briſtow.	Dorſetſhire, Briſtow.	236
Landaff.	Glamorganſhire, Monmothſhire, Brecknockſhire, Radnorſhire.	177
S. Dauid.	Pembrokeſhire, Caermardenſhire.	308
Bangor.	Caernervonſhire, Angleſey Iſle, Merioneth, *and* Denbighſhire part.	107
S. Aſſaph.	Denbighſhire part. Flintſhire part.	121

Biſhopricks and Pariſhes.

Biſhopricks.	*Counties ſubiect to their ſeuerall Iuriſdictions.*	*Pariſhes in each ſeuerall Biſhoprick.*

Yorke Province.

Yorke Archbiſh.	Yorkeſhire, Nottinghamſhire.	581
Cheſter.	Cheſhire, Richmondſhire, Cumberland part, Lancaſhire, Flintſhire part.	256
Carelyell.	Cumberlandſhire part. Weſtmerland.	93
Durham.	Durham, Northumberland, Man Iſle,	135

Biſhopricks in England and Wales	Shires in England and in Wales	Pariſhes in England and in Wales
26.	63.	8083.

Iohn Speed, 801.

At the time of the firſt diſſoluing of Religious houſes in England, there were

Archbiſhopricks and Biſhopricks,	21.
Deanries,	11.
Arch-deaconries,	60.
Dignities and Prebends in Cathed: Churches,	364.
Benefices,	8803.
Religious Houſes,	65:
Hoſpitals,	110.
Colleges,	96.
Chauntries and free-Chappells,	2374.
Their Rates were *per annum*	320180.

John Speed, 858. *Richard Hakluyt.*

A Table contayning the prouiſions of the *Spaniſh Armado, againſt England, in Anno Domini* 1588. *& Anno* ELIZ. REG. 30.

Leaders	Prouinces ayding.	Galliaſſes and gallions	Ships and Hulks.	Pinaces and Caruels	Great Ordinance.	Saylors.	Souldiers.	Galley ſlaues.
D. Medina Sidonia.	*Portugal.*	10	2		300	1300	3300	
Diego de Mandrana.	*Portugal,*	4			20	360		888
Ioh. Martynes de Richaldes.	*Biſcai,*	10		4	250	700	2000	
Michael de Oquendo,	*Guipuſco,*	10		4	310	700	2000	
Pedro de Valdez,	*Andolozia,*	10		1	280	800	2400	
Martin de Vertendona,	*Italy,*	10			310	800	2000	
Diego Floris de Valdez,	*Caſtile*	14		2	380	1700	2400	
Iohn Lopez de Medina,	*Medina.*		23		400	700	3200	
Hugo de Moncado.	*Naples*	4			200	460	870	1200
Antonio Buccado.	*Mendoza.*		22		193	574	488	

Shires in England.

Barkeſhire.
Bedfordſhire.
Buckinghamſhire.
Cambridgeſhire.
Cheſhire.
Cornwall.
Cumberlandſhire.
Darbyſhire.
Deuonſhire.
Dorſetſhire.
Durham, B.
Eſſex.
Glouceſter.
Hampſhire.
Hereford ſhire.
Hertfordſhire.
Huntingtonſhire.
Kent.
Lancaſter.
Leceiſterſhire.
Lincolneſhire
Middleſex.
Northamptonſhire.
Northfolke.
Northumberland.
Nottinghamſhire.
Oxfordſhire.
Rutlandſhire.
Shropſhire.
Somerſetſhire.
Staffordſhire.
Suffolke.
Surrey.
Suſſex.
Warwick.
Weſtmerland.
Wilſhire.
Worceſterſhire.
Yorkeſhire.

Shires in Wales.

Angleſey.
Brecknock.
Carmarden.
Carnaruon.
Cardigan.
Denbigh.
Flint.
Clamorgan.
Merioneth.
Monmoth.
Mountgomery.
Pembroke.
Radnor.

1. *Conq.* The battaile betwixt the Conquerour, and King *Harold*, was ſtricken the 14 of October **1066.** *in which were ſlaine about* **68000** Engliſh men. *Speed*, 415. and almoſt aboue 6000. *Stow.* 128.

48 *H.*3.	Lewis.	1263
49 *H.*3.	Euerſham.	1264
25 *Edw.*1.	Barwick.	1296
7 *Edw.*2.	Eſtriuelin.	1313
13 *Edw.*2.	Burgh-bridge.	1320
27 *Edw.*2.	Fanrike.	1298
20 *Edw.*3.	Creſſey.	1345
30 *Edw.*3.	Poyters.	1355
3 *H.*4	Shrewſbury.	1401
3 *H.*5.	Agencourt.	1414
9 *H.*5.	Blangy.	1420
3 *H.*6.	Vernoyle.	1423
6 *H.*6.	Herings.	1427
34 *H*6.	Saint Albons.	1456
37 *H.*6.	Bloar-heath.	1459
38 *H.*6.	Northampton.	1460
39 *H.*6.	Wakefield.	1460
39 *H.*6.	Saint Albons.	1460
39 *H.*6.	Towton	1460

in which were 109000. Engliſhmen and of them were ſlaine 37000. men.

2 *Edw.*4.	Exham.	1462
8 *Edw.*4.	Banbery.	1468
8 *Edw.*4.	Looſcotes.	1468

in it 10000 men were ſlaine.

10 *Edw.*4.	Barnet.	1470

in it were ſlaine 10000. men.

10 *Edw.*4.	Tewkſbury.	1470
3 *Rich.*3.	Boſworth.	1485
3 *H.*7.	Stoke.	1487
5 *H.*7.	Fongiers.	1488
12 *H.*7.	Black-heath.	1496
5 *H.*8.	Flodden.	1513
34 *H.*8.	Solemne Maſſe.	1542

Eſpeciall

Especiall notes worthy of observation.

13	*H.*1.	The first parliament was in——— Anno	1112
19	*H.*2.	Ireland was conquered in——— Anno	1172
4	Iohannis,	Normandy was lost by King Iohn	1202
43	*H.*3.	and the title thereto released	1258
11	*E.*1.	Wales was subdued——— Anno	1283
25	*E.*1.	Scotland surrndred to King *E.* the third as to the supreame Lord thereof.	1296
19	*E.*3	The order of the Garter deuised———	1344
14	*E.*3.	England first quartred the armes of France---	1339
21	*E.*3.	Calice was wonne in——— Anno	1346
5	*Mariæ.*	Calice was lost in——— Anno	1557
34	*E.*3.	The French title on Composition was released———	1359
5	*H.*5	Normandy was wonne in——— Anno	1416
8	*H.*5	King *H.* the fifth was proclaimed heire apparant and Regent of France in——— Anno	1419
10	*H.*6.	*Henry* the sixth was crowned King of France in the Citie of Paris.	1431
27	*H.*6.	France was lost in——— Anno	1449
28	*H.*6.	Normandy was lost in——— Anno	1449
31	*H.*6.	Aquitaine, &c. were lost in——— Anno	1453
4	*R.*2.	Wat Tylors rebellion———	1380
29	*H.*6.	Iack Cades Rebellion———	1450
4	*H.*8.	Nauarre surprized by the Spaniards———	1512

A TABLE FOR THE READY

finding of all the materiall things which are con-
tained in the Hiſtories of the before named
TWENTIE KINGS.

A

ADela. 8
Affabilitie. 297
Agencourt. 182
Aid pur file marrier. 23
Albanie Duke forſakes Scotland. 398
Alexander King of Scots. 81
Ambuſh. 184
Anne Bullen. 389.403
Anne of Cleue. 408
Anſelmus. 14.15.20
Appeales to Rome. 14.54
Appleyard. 362
Archb. ſtriue. 7
Archers. 184
Armes of France. 109
Armes of London. 140
Armies great. 182.235. 260.145
Armies. 3. in France. 361
Armies afflicted. 98
Armies two in France. 416
Arthur Plantagenet. 51
He is drowned. 53
Articles of peace. 129. 200.286.335
Articles againſt King Richard the Second. 156
Articles againſt King Henry the Fourth. 169
Articles againſt the Duke of Somerſet. 244
Articles againſt the Clergie. 381.404
Articles againſt Wolſey. 383
Arundell beheaded. 100
Arundell Archb. 144
Aske. Robert. 406
Aſſiſes. 34
Auricular confeſſion. 58
Awdley. 254

B

BAgot. 155
Bailiol. 82.83
Baniſhment. 86.91 95. 152.150.154.157.246
Bardolph. 173.365
Barkley. 362.365.396
Barons wars. 66. Diſtreſſed, 58. Ouerthrowen, 72.74 96. Executed, 97
Barnes. Lord. 365
Baſſet. 69
Battailes of
The Conqueror, in which were ſlaine of the Engliſh 6797 4. and of the Normans 6013. Iohn Stow, pag. 128.
Nice. 22
Lewys. 72.74
Euerſham. 74
Fanrike. 85
Eſtryulin. 93
Creſſey. 119
Poyters. 126
Shrewesburie. 191
Agencourt. 182
Blangy. 206
Vernoyle. 215
Herings. 221
S. Albons. 250
Bloar-heath. 254
Wakefield. 259
Northampton.

THE TABLE.

Northampton. 257
Exham. 264
Banburie. 271
Looſe-coats. 273
Barnet. 280
Tewkesburie. 283
Boſworth. 324
Stoke. 331
Blackheath. 344
Flodden. 363
Beauchampe. 231.233
Beauchamp Duke of Warwicke. 237
Beamount. 183.257
Becket, and his doings. 37. *&c.*
Belaſme. 20
Beneuolence. 284.325. 374.417.
Betraied. 301
Biſhop made an Earle. 10
Blunt. 254
Body of King Edward the Fourth. 178
Bold. 363
Bolleyn, 336. *taken.* 417
Bolleyn. Anne. 389.403
Bolleyn. Sir Tho. 365
Bolleyn. Lord Rochford. 400
Bollingbroke in Armes. 155
Boothe. 363
Bootie, rich. 396
Borrowing. 109
Bountie. 45.18.121.128 186.288
Bourchier. 198.282.233 363.344.392
Brandon. 325.365
Is valiant in France. 396
Brandon, Henry Earle of Lincolne. 400
Breſt yeelded vp. 151
Brearton. 363
Brembere. 147.149
Briberie. 99
Briſtow. 100
Britaine.
Brooke, Lo. Cobham. 248 256. *Lo. Brooke.* 392
Buckingham Duke. 257
Buckingham Duke beheaded. 393
Buildings of Forts. 4.28
Bulles from Rome. 68.69 387
Bull, Sir Stephen. 362
Bulmer. 362.406
Burbon ranſomed. 227
Burgh, Lord. 62
Burgoine, 285. *is angrie,* 286
Buriall denied. 8
Buriall maligned. 228
Burnell, Lord. 181
Burning. 358
Butler. 324.363
Bygot, Sir Fra. 406

C

CAde Iacke. 247
Calice. 121.123.124 173.230
Cambridge, Richard. 180
Camoys, Lord. 174
Campeius, 367. *&c.* 379 380
Cane. 190.243
Captaine Cobler. 405
Carre. 365
Cardinall of Wincheſter. 217.218
Cardinall Wolſey. 365. *&c.*
Cardinall Poole. 406.407
Carew, Sir Iohn. 358
Carew, Sir Nicholas. 406
Carew, Sir George. 418
Caſtles builded. 28.178
Caſtles razed. 35
Challenges. 173.223
Charles is Emperour. 391
Charters. 208
Chayre of Scotland. 86
Cheſter Palatine. 64
Children diſobedient. 36
Cholmley. 363
Churches robbed, and wronged. 4.14.49 80. 138
Circuits. 34
Clare, Gilbert. 76
Clarence. 268.275.290
Clarvys. 363
Clergie articled. 381
Clergie feare the Premunire. 388. *and are liberall.* 388
Clifford. 138. 260. 281. 339.340
Clifford Earle of Cumberland. 400
Clifton, Sir Geruaſe. 233 282
Colledges, of woolſey. 386
Combats. 125.154
Commiſſion de les douz pyers. 67. *&c.*
Commiſſioners Traitors. 145.368
Commiſſioners. 114.152 32.

THE TABLE.

32 Commissioners, 403
Compassion, 44
Complaint of the Parliament, 133
Coniers, 270
Constable, 262.406
Constable of London, 71
Constancie, 279
Contention with the Scots 411
Coo, 396
Copland, 122
Cornwall, 89
Cornish Rebels, 345
Couer le siew, 4
Counsell receiued, 91.391
Counterfeits, Poydras, 93 Magdalen, 165. Lambert, 234. Warbecke, 333. &c.
Courtney, E. of Devõ. 392
Courtesie. 297
Cowardize. 84
Courage. 171.223.233 234
Croffts 289
Crowne. 164.225.258. 277.328.402
Crowned twice. 49
Crowne resigned. 156
Crowne on the pillow. 174
Cornwall. 406.407.409
Crueltie. 138.13.343
Cuer de Lyon. 44
Culpepper. 410
Cumberlund Scottish. 28
Curse. 41.55.57.62 67 107
Curthose rebelleth. 7. invadeth and compoundeth. 9. He rebelleth & compoundeth. 12.19 He is subdued. 19. and dis-eyed. 20
Cyprus. 46.47

D

DAcres acquitted, 402
Dacres. 412
Damnation. 58
Danes. 6
Dane gelt. 18.28
Dacres. 260
Darcie. 262
Dartmouth. 136.276
Dartwell. 110. 114 115
Dawney. 363
Defensor fidei. 357.393
Degrading. 265
Delawarre, Lord 392
Delues. 283
Demaunds. 235.411
Depopulation. 5
Deposed. 101.160
Derby. E. 392
Descriptions. 8.59.239 297 298.420
Deuorce. 389
Disarming. 3
Discipline Warlike. 35
Discord. 73.132
Disdained. 413
Disobedient children. 36
Disobedience punished. 36 49
Dissention. 89.128 189 191.229
Distrust. 64
Dolphin scoffeth. 179
Donn. 363
Dorset Marques 392
Douglas mariage 430
Douz Pyers. 66.69
Drunkennesse. 22
Drowned. 22.30.53.359 H. 8. almost drowned. 400. Mary Rose. 118
Dudly. 351.356
Duglas 171
Duke of Guyan. 68
Duke of Ireland. 149
Durant. 55
Durham burnt. 111
Dyet moderate. 18.28
Dymock. 273
Dynham. 256
Dyrham executed. 410

E

EAarnesly. 84
Echinham. 363
Egremount. 257
Elianor Queene 43
Emperor debased. 59. and excommunicated. 14
Emperor Charles. 391
Empson. 351.356
England giuen to the Pope 56
England is admired. 225
Englishmen oppressed. 6 10.14
Enclosures 364
Enlargement. 73.85.128 277
Enteruiew. 200 227.273
Escape. 272
Escape of Morton. 317
Escape of King Edward the fourth, pag. 271
Escape of Warbeck 350
Escape of Edward E. of 81 W. 350
Estrevlin. 85

THE TABLE.

Eueringham 362
Excommunication. 14.58
Execution of
Lluellin. 81
Arundel. 100.152
Spencers. 100
Gaueſton. 91
Poydras. 93
Warbeck, 350
Edward Earle of Warw. 350
Two and twentie Barons. 92
Harkley, Earle of Carlyel. 98
Stapleton, D. of Exeter, 99
Earle of Kent. 104
Mortimer. 104.105
Fifteene hundred Rebels, 141
Brembre, 149
Treſilian, 149
Greene, 155
Buſh, 155
Scroop, Earle of Wilſhire, 155
Earle of Worceſter, 171
Scroop Archbiſhop of York 173
Mowbrey D. of Norfolk, 173
Percy Earle of Northum. 171.174
Haſtings Lord. 173
Fawconbridge, 173
Bardolf, 174
Rich. Earle of Cambridge, 180
Henry Lord Scroop, 180
Sir Thomas Grey, 18
Inhabitants of Cane, 191
At Montz. 219
Frr Periury, 232
Michael de la Poole, 246
Lord Scales, 258
Rich. Neuil, Earle of Saliſbury, 259
Owen Tuthar, 260
Courtney, Earle of Devon. 260
Suffolke, 244
Earle of Oxford, 263
Sir Awbrey de Vere, 263
Hen. D. of Somerſet, 265
Tayboys, 265
Roos, 265
Molines, 265
Hungerford, 265.410
Henry Neuil, 265
Wentworth, 265
Tunſtall, 265
Sir Ralph Grey, 265
Earle Riuers, 271
Humfrey Lord Stafford, 171
Lord Wels, 273
Sir Thomas Dymock, 273
Sir Robert Wells, 274
Sir Henry Stafford, 529
L. Haſtings in the Tower, 307
Earle Riuers, 307
Richard Lord Grey, 307
Sir Thomas Vaughan, 307
Duke of Buckingham, 317 393
Sir William Stanley, 341
Humfrey Stafford, 329
Empſon, 356
Dudly, 356
Sir Thomas Moore, 402
Fiſher Biſhop of Rocheſter 402
Queen Anne Bullen, 403 *and Queene Katherine Howard,* 410
Lord Howard for his mariage, 403
Execution of Rebels, 406
Marques of Exeter, 406
Lord Dacres, 406
Lord Huſſey, 406
Fryar Foreſt, 406
Carew, Sir Nich. 406
Margaret Counteſſe of Salisbury, 407
Gerthrude Marchiones of Exeter, 407
Leonard Lord Grey, 410
Cromwel, 410
Francis Dyrham, & Thomas Culpeper, 410
Lady Rochford. 410
Thomas Earle of Surrey, 420
Exeter, 349.347
Exeter Marqueſſe, 400
Exton, Sir Nich. 142
Extortion, 86

F

Falſe friend, 153
Famine, 172.94.193
Fanhope 183
Faſtolfe, 183
Fawconbridge, 165.173 131.164
Feaſt ſolemne, 113
Ferdinando, 357
Fiſher wrongs the Parliament, 382
Fifteenes denied, 142

THE TABLE.

Fifteenes conditionall. 144
Fitz-William. 161.196. 406
Fitz-Warren. 192
Fitz-Water. 112.206
Flatterers. 18
Flatterie. 151
Flight. 277
Flodden Field. 161
Forguſa. 206
French title. 105.178
Frenchmen in Wales. 167
French faint-harted. 181
French vnthankfull. 414
Friar Foreſt. 406
Funerals. 178

G

GArd, Yeomen. 327
Gaſcoine reconered. 63
Gaſcoine, Sir William. 362
Gauelkind. 3
Gaueſton. 86.89.90.91. 92
Glendor. 166.172
Gloceſters practiſes. 299
Gloceſter murdred. 240
Glottenry. 18
Gouernment changed. 290
Gough. 242
Greene. 155
Grey degraded. 265
Grey, Sir Thomas. 180
Grey, Lord Richard. 307
Grey, Lord Leonard. 407 410
Griffith. 324.362
Grobyn of Grace. 118

H

HAll, Sir Philip, 215
Hall, Sir Dauid, 243
Hampton Court. 375
Harflew. 241
Harkley. 98
Harold. 1.2
Hartford Earle. 406 415
Haſtings. 173.307
Haſtings, Lord. 305
Haſtings Earles of Huntington. 385
Henalt reuolteth. 156
Henry Hotſpurre. 167. 169
Henry Fitz-Roy. 400
Herbert, Earle of Pembroke. 270
Herbert, Lord. 392
Herings. 221
Holland, Sir Thomas, 117 153.164.181
Holland, Sir Iohn.
Holy Land. 45.77.108. 174.141.153.164.189
Holy Pilgrims. 405
Hongerford. 222.265
Hoſtages. 3.73.130.390
Howard, Sir Edw. 358 359
Howard, Sir Tho. Earle of Surrey. 360.361. 394. *He dieth.* 400
Howard, Lord, executed for marying, &c. 403
Hunters. 5.6.16
Hunting. 5

I

IAcke Cade. 247
Iane, Counteſſe of Henalt. 109.111
Iaques Dartuell. 110.114 115
Ierningham. 396.397
Ieruſalem. 17.47
Ieſt. 284
Iewels. 90
Images defaced. 406
Iohn of Gaunt. 132.150
Ingratitude. 14.44
Inſanum Parliamentū. 66
Interdiction. 55.58
Inueſture of Biſhop. 22.23
Ireland conquered. 36. *rebelleth.* 407. *King of Ireland.* 410
Iudges followed the Court. 5
Iudges and Iuſtices. 355
Iudges baniſhed. 150

K

KEntiſhmen. 3
Holy maid of Kent. 402
King Henry the Eighth ſtout. 404
Keryell. 232.242
King Knighted. 217
King Richard the Second called

THE TABLE.

called to a reckoning. 143
King of Castile entertained. 352
King of Ireland. 410
Knights Fees. 6
Knowles. 132.166
Knyuet, Sir Thomas. 358

L

Lambert. 324
Landoys. 289.317
Langton. 54
Lanfrank. 9
Laterane. 58
Lawes seuere. 4
Lawes mitigated. 18
Lawes restored. 18.63
Lawes against robbers. 18
Lawes refined. 34
Lawrence. 363
League broken. 64.213
Legates. 38 41.55
Lewknor. 283
Liberalitie. 18.45.121 128.186.288
Little Iohn. 50
Lluellen. 80
Lomley. 406
London against Mauld the Empresse. 29
London with the Barons, 70.149
Londoners submit themselues. 75
London should haue been burnt. .74
A rebellion in London. 71.76
Londons liberties restored. 85
London pleaseth the Rebels. 138
Londons Armes. 140
Constables of London. 71
London receiues King Edward the Fourth. 280
London. 84. 140. 148. 180
Londoners graced by king Edward the Fourth. 297
Londons Maior. 59
London bridge. 59
Longchampe. 46.47.48
Louell, Lord. 329.331
Luther. 393
Lion, Richard. 138

M

Magistrates ouer Priests. 28.38
Magna Charta. 63
Malcolme slaine. 11
Manners Earle of Rutland. 400
Manors. 5
Manny, Sir Walter. 124
Marchants, 353. vexed, 401.414
Marchant strangers. 34 251.389.489
Marquesse Dorset. 357
Mariages of Wards. 63
Mariage of K. Henry the Seuenth. 327
Mariage of K. Edward the Fourth. 267
Mariage of Prince Arthur. 350
King Henry the Eighth his widow. 355
Mariage with Scotland, 351
Mariage with Anne of Cleue. 404
Mariage with Lewys the 12. of France. 364
Mariage with Scotland broken off. 415
Mart in Flanders. 125 340.346
Marney, Sir Henrie. 392
Martiall feats. 103
Martin Sward, 331
Mary Rose drowned. 418
Mauld marieth Plantagenet. 24
Mauld the Empresse. 19 23.24.29
Measures. 18
Mercie. 44
Metham. 302
Miracle. 405
Michael de la Pole. 142 144
Molynes. 181.265
Money scarce. 108
Money borrowed. 109
Morbeck. 127
Morgan. 324
Morley, Lord. 392
Morleys taken and burnt. 393
Morton, 332. 311.315. 317.331
Mortimer, Sir Roger. 71 103
Mortimer beheaded. 105

THE TABLE.

Mortimer proclaimed, 141.
Mortmaine, 82
Mountague, or Mountacute, 216.220 216. 265.266
Mountford, 72
Mountioy, 398

Murders of.

Becket, 41
Edward the second, pag. 101.105
Iaques Dartwell, 114
Richard the second, pag. 160
Ho. D. of Gloceſter, 240 158
Lord Scales, 258
Archbiſhop of Canterburie, 139
Iohn Duke of Burgoine, 199
Henry the ſixth pag. 283
George Duke of Clarence, 290.295
Lord Wenlock, 295
Prince Edward, 293
Edward the fift, and Richard Duke of Yorke, 312
Rutland, 281
Murder by the Lord Darcy, 406
Murder reuenged, 307 318.328
Muſgraue William, 412

N

Nauarre taken, 357
Neck broken, 8.81
Neuill Sir Iohn, 260
New Forreſt, 5
Nobles created, 152 240.363.267.327.385 400.406
Nobilitie deſpiſed, 142
Nobilitie waſted, 497
Mowbray, 242
Normandy, 53.68.117
Normandy loſt 53. *wonne* 168. *loſt* 238
Normauile, 363
Northfolk Duke High Steward, 392
Notes eſpeciall, 293
Niceneſſe banſhed, 18

O

Oath to the ſucceſsion, and of fidelitie, 24 56.69
Oath to obſerue &c, 24
Oath broken, 27.145.279 34
Oath of the Scots, 86
Oath touching Gaveſton, 89
Obſtinacie, 41
Odo, 10
Officers examined in Parliament, 144
Officers euill, 133
Officers diſplaced, 144 170
Opinion of the Vniuerſities, 386.389

Ouerthrowes of

Harold, 2
Rebels, 6.7.273
Scots, 11.83.171
Welſhmen, 11.12 13
Robert Mowbray, 13
Barons, 20.96
Prince Edwnrd, 71
King Stephen, 29
Fifteene thouſand Genowayes, 119
French, 58.371.120. 187
King Edward 2, pag. 93 94
Percies, 171
Engliſh, 206.222.242
Miraculous, 216
King H. 6 pag. 250.257 266.280
Duke of Yorke, 259
Iames the fourth King of Scots, 362
Frenchmen, 418
Owen Glendor, 166. *famiſhed*, 172
Owen Tuthar, 260
Earle of Oxford, 133
Duke of Burgundie thrice ouer-

THE TABLE.

ouerthrowne in one yeare. 289
Iohn Earle of Oxford, 144
Oxford Earle,

P

PAgeants, 376
Pandulphus. 55.56
Partialitie, 71
Pardon craftie, 153
Parents honored, 43
Paris is Englisht, 204. and reuolteth, 229
Parliament and the King striue, 142.143
Parliament the first, 23
Parliament once a yeare, 142
Parliament complaines, 133
Parliament threatned 143
Parliament makes a King, 160
Parliamentum insanum, 60
Parliament breakes vppe suddenly, 256
Parliament wronged by Bishop Fisher 382
Pawlet made Lord Saint Iohn, 406
Peace; 52.64.285.333 336.364.392
Penall lawes, 290.351
Penance, 42
People wasted, 14
Percies, 171.362.363
Percies will not deliuer Scottish Prisoners, 67
Percies doe ransome Edmund Mortimer, 169
Percie Sir Thomas, 406
Periury, 232
Perkin Werbeck, 337.&c.
Peter Landoys, 289.315
Petition of the Rebelles, 404
Pickering, 363
Pilgrims holy, 405
Piracie, 96
Pitie, 44
Plantagenet Geoffry, 24
Plantagenet Arthur, 51 53
Plimouth, 136
Poydras, 93
Pollicies, 3.4.5.6.7.12.18 23.29.35. 82. 117.140 212.215.233.246.250 299.331.339.340 408.
Pollicies touching Warbeck, 339.340.341
Pollicies touching Lambert, 331
Pollicie touching Cade, 247
Pollicie by fire, 347
Pomfret, 301
Pontlarch, 241
Popham, Sir Iohn, 113
Pope, 14.15.18.53.150
curbed, 401
Popish blindnesse, 57
Popish pride, 54
Poynings, 341.361
Poysoned, 59
Poyters, 63
Practises of Richard Duke of Gloceſter, 299.&c.
Premunire, 380. feared by the Cleargy, 388
Prerogatiue crossed, 66
Presumption, 140
Preyrich, 395
Pride, 396
Pride of Longchamp, 46 47.48
Primacie, 7
Prince of Chester.
Prince imprisoned, 86 177
Prince of Wales, 114
Prince reclaimed, 177
Prior Iohn, 364

Prisoners:

Marcarus, 7
Edwinus, 7
Egelwinus, 7
Mowbray, 13
Curthose, 20
Belesme, 20
King Stephen, 29
Queene Elianor, 43
King Richard the first, p. 48
Bayliol, 84
The Prince, 86.177
Queene Isabel, 105
King David, 122
King Iohn of France, 127
Earle of Pembroke, 132
King Richard the second pag.156
Edmund Mortimer, 166
French Pris. slaine, 185
Lord Talbot, 222
Lord Scales, 222

Lord

THE TABLE.

Lord Hongerford, 222
Duke of Suffolke, 22[illegible]
King Henry the Sixth, 257.266.281
King Edward the fourth, 271
Duke of Burbon, 277
Duke of Orleance, 235
Scottish prisoners, 413
Mordack Earle of Fife, 167
Archibald Douglas, 167
Earle Murrey, 167
Priuie Seales, 397.398
Proclamations, 192.276 387
Proclaimed heire of Fra. 141.200.204
Proscribed, 248.319
Protector, 61.251
Protector displaced, 240

Q.

Quartered, 345
Queen Anne beheaded, 403
Queene Katherine beheaded, 410

R

Ragman, 104
Ramsey, 136
King Richard the First ransomed, 48
Douglas ransomelesse, 171
King of Scots ransomed, 214
Duke of Burbon ransomed, 227
Duke of Orleance ransomed, 235
Edmund Mortimer ransomed, 164
Queene Margaret ransömed. 283
Raine, 405
Rebellions, 6.7.10.11.12 13.20.22. *In London*, 71.76. *Lluellen*, 80 *Wat Tilar*, 137. *In Kent*, 277. *Owen Glendor*, 166. *Percies*, 170 171. *In Ireland*, 241. *Iacke Cade*, 247. 264. 273. 328. 334. *Cornishmen*, 345. 347. 349. *In Yorkshire*, 269. *In Lincolnshire*, 404. *In the North*, 405. *In Ireland*, 407
Rebels flie, 405. *quietly depart*, 405
Reconcilement, 64.279
Reformation, 66.69.64 153
Regents, 43.201
Regent dieth, 228
Regent drowned, 358
Religious houses, 178.374 403.403
Repayment, 327
Repeales, 4.263.328
Repentance, 8.353
Reprofe, 167
Reseisure, 35.34
Resolution 15.34.95
Restitution, 18
Returne vnlicenced, 358 359
Reuenge, 49
Reuolt, 214.242.244
Renulph, 81
Ribamont, 124
Rice ap Thomas, 344
King Richard the First valiant, 46.47
Rich Souldiers, 191
King Henry the Second Rich, 37
Richmond Earle in danger, 289. 317. *sweareth*, 320. *landeth*, 323 *and is victorious*, 325
Risling, 389
Roan, 192.193.197.241
Robberies, 14.18.33
Robin Hood, 50
Robinet of Bonuile, 187
Rochford, 400.410.411
Bolloigne, Viscount Rochford, 385
Rokesbie, 174
Rosamond Clifford, 37
Rosbrough, 112.130
Rowclif, 363
Rufus slaine, 16
Russell, Lord, 406
Rutland murdered, 281
Rutland Earle, 400
Kyuers, 256

S

Sanctuarie, 302.303 304
Saluo honore Dei, 41
Sands, 365.396.397

Sarum

THE TABLE.

Sarum ſecundum vſum 7
Sauadge, 324
Scales, 218.222.257.258
Scot, Earle *of Cheſter*, 64
Scottiſh homage, 11.214
Scots, 25000. *ſlaine*, 83
Scots ſweare obedience. 86
Scots ouerthrowne in Ireland, 97
Scots ouerthrow K. Edw. *the Second*, 93 94
Scots inuade England, 11 28.111.122.167.171. 251. 291. 361. *their crueltie*, 343. *They inuade*, 345. *and are ſlaine*, 346 412
Scots miſuſe the French, 147
Scots aide Warbecke, 342 345
Scottiſh King ſlaine, 363
Scotland ſurrendred, 81 82.84
Scotland gouerned by England, 84
Scotland waſted, 346
Scotland inuaded, 97.103 306. 111. 147. 174. 412.415.416.419
Scotland diſpoſed by King Edward *the Third*. 106
Scotland claimed by the Pope, 86
Scottiſh King ranſomed, 214
Scottiſh tenure releaſed, 106
Scottiſh chaire, 86
Scottiſh priſoners, 413
Scroope, 155.173. 180. 265
Sea victories, 62.110.125 188.189
Seales Priuie, 394
Secrecie, 107
Secundum vſum Sarum, 7
Securitie, 221.271
Seiſure, 3.35
Seymour, Earle *of Hartford*, 406.415
Seymor, Sir Iohn, and Ladie Iane, 403
Shawes Sermon, 408
Shepard Iacke, 137
Sherborne, Sir Henrie, 361
Ships, 300. *taken*, 56 500. *Ships*, 188 1200. *Ships*, 146
Ships in Sandwitch, 256
Sheepe, 268
Sheriffe of Northumberland, 174
Shores wife, 309
Shrewesburie, Earle, 392
Shrines deſtroied, 406
Sickneſſe, 181

Slaine,
King William Rufus. 5.16
Malcolme. 11
King Edward the Second. 101
King Richard the firſt. 50
King Richard the ſecond. 160
Simon Montfort. 74
Lord Beamont. 113
Peter of Caſtile. 131
Wat Tilar. 140
Vere, Duke of Ireland. 149
Priſoners, French. 185
Thirtie ſix ſlaine by King Henry the Fourth. 171
Edward Duke of Yorke. 187
Richard Duke of Yorke. 259
Duke of Suffolke. 187
Iohn Earle of Shrewesburie. 249
Earle of Salisburie. 220
Clarence. 206
Earle of Warwicke. 281
Arundell. 226
Marqueſſe Montacute. 281
Courtney, Earle of Deuon. 283
Wooduile. 333
Iames the Fourth, King of Scots. 362
Stafford. 329
Humfrey Duke of Buckingham. 257
Thomas, Lo. Egremount. 257
Iohn, Viſcount Beamont. 257
Northumberland. 260
Weſtmorland. 260
Lord Dacres. 260
Lord Welles. 260
Lord Clifford. 260
Somerſet, Sir Charles. 360
Spencers. 92.94.96.99
Northumberland. 334
Spencer, chiefe Iuſtice. 74.68
Speeches. 194 195.209

THE TABLE.

Spencers executed. 100
Souldiers vnlicenſed returne. 358.397
Sonnes diſobedient. 36
Southampton Earle. 406
Stafford Earle. 181
Stakes. 183
Stanley. 341.344
Stapleton B. of Exeter. 99
Stapleton. 363
Stoutneſſe of K. H. 8. 404
Strangers Marchants. 34 251.138
Subiects dutie. 25
Submiſsiō of K. Io 56.66
Submiſsion of the Barons. 58
Submiſsion of King Richard the Second. 155
Submiſsion of Londoners. 75
Submiſsion of Lluellen 80
Supremacie. 403
Duke of Suffolke. 237. 238.244.392.418
Duke of Suffolke warreth valiantly in France. 396
Surfet. 24
Surrey beheaded. 420
Surpriſall. 173
Suſſex, Earle. 385
Swanus. 6
Swimming. 48 149
Sword giuen to Exeter. 349
Syaney. 362

T

Ale-bearers. 227
Talbots name terrible. 226
Talbot. 106.324
Talbot ſlaine. 220
Talbot, Gilbert. 192
Talbot, Lord George. 360
Taxes. 5.10.97.109
Taxes cauſing rebellions. 6.7.136.333.335.343
Taxes loſt Aquitaine, &c. 130
Taxes pleaſing. 12.52. 189
Taxes releaſed. 18.28
Taxes not demanded. 37 45
Tax on Wools and Hides. 83
Tempeſt, Nicholas. 406
Temporalties. 20.21
Terryll. 312
Terwyn. 360.361
Thankfulneſſe. 24.297
Thankſgiuing. 171.186 190.282.325
Theeues. 50.93
Thorp. 258
Thwaits. 396
Title to France, 105.107 *relinquiſhed.* 129
Title, King of Ireland. 410
Title, Defenſor Fidei. 357.393
Tournay taken. 361. *redelliuered.* 380
Trade reſtored. 346
Tranſlation. 7
Tranſubſtantiation. 58
Traitor, Archb. of Cant. 151
Treaſons. 64.164.180 226
Treaſon to ſpeake, &c. 409
Treaſon at Oxford. 164
Traitors. 145.173
Trecherie. 152.213.252
Trenchard. 352
Treport. 364
Treſham. 283
Treſilian. 147.149
Treyl-Baſton. 86
Tuthar. 260.249
Tylar, Wat. 137
Tylney. 362
Tyrell, Earle. 410
Tyrwyn taken and burnt. 361

V

Valour. 33.46.47. 124
Vaughan. 283.307
Vere. 142.149.242
Vernoyle. 205
Vicar generall. 107
Victorie in Caſtile. 130
King Edward the Fourth victorious. 281
Victorie without blowes. 168
Victorie miraculous. 216
Victorie ouer the Percies. 171
Victories at Sea. 62.110 125.188.189
Vicegerent Cromwell 406
Victuals cheape. 108
Viſited by three Kings. 130
Vmfreuyle. 192.206

THE TABLE.

Vniuerſitie opinions. 386
Vnthankfulneſſe. 14.44
Vnthankfull Frenchmen. 414

Vſurpers.

Rufus, 9
Henricus Primus, 17
Stephanus, 27
Edwardus Tertius, 101
Henricus Quartus, 160
Henricus Quintus. 177
Henricus Sextus, 211
Richardus Tertius, 311

W

Waights, 18
Wales, 86. *Prince,* 114
Wallop, 364.396
Warres in the Holy Land, 45. &c. 77
Wars with Arthur Plantagenet, 51
Hee is drowned, 53
Wars incommodious, 272
Wars with Charles the Emperour. 401
Ward, Sir Chriſtopher, 362
Wardſhips, 63
Warbeck, 337. &c.
Warlike diſcipline, 35
Warwicke Protector, 251
Warwicke ſlaine, 281
Warrens, 18
Watermen, 258
Welles, 260.273
Welſhmen rebell, 11. 12. 13. 22. 80. 81. 83. 84. 85 166
Wenlocke, 283
Wharton, Lord, 412
Whipped, 42
Wife, a good one, 43
Willoughbie, 363. 183. 392
Witchcraft, 236
Wiues paid for, 24
Wooduile, 231. 333
Woods in Wales burnt, 81
Woolſey, 365. &c. *vntill pag.* 388
Wounding, 77
Worceſter Earle, 392
Wryotheſley, 417

Errata.

PAg. 305. lin. 4. for *daughter to the Dukes ſon,* reade *ſon to the Dukes daughter.*
Pag. 324. lin. 3. for *George Stanley* reade *George Talbot.*